# START

# TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

# VOL 12 CONT

# 1932 — 33

# MICROFILMED

## BY

# The FREDERIC LUTHER COMPANY

## Microfilm Sales and Contract Service

## 2803 EAST 56TH STREET, INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA

160

Paper #15

# IN DEFENSE OF AMERICAN DEMOCRACY

Fred E. Brengle

11/16/33

# In Defense of American Democracy

In certain respects this may be an inopportune time to come to the defense of Democracy. What with widespread unemployment, bread lines, the prevalence of crime, political ineptitude and corruption, high taxes and chaotic finances many are convinced that Democracy has failed. It is, perhaps, hardly a defense of Democracy to say that some, at least, of these evils obtain in other parts of the world and under different forms of government. This fact, however, would seem to indicate that no form of government yet devised by man is perfect. It is my purpose to try to show that the American system of government, despite its many recognized weaknesses, is superior to any other system thus far experimented with.

Man is not now satisfied, never has been for very long periods of time and, it is hoped, never will be. Throughout our history there have always been larger or smaller disgruntled elements. Although many of these have been more destructive than constructive, yet others have been responsible for the progress we have made. All this was as true in the "good old days", whenever they were, as now. This matter of the "good old days" is largely a myth. The best days in all history for us are here and now. And I say this, not as a confirmed optimist. I am not blind to all the evils and unhappiness about me, but the statement can be substantiated by historical and contemporary comparison.

American Democracy has its defects; they cannot, nor should they be slighted or ignored. But fundamentally it is sound. Its basic principles should be maintained and adhered to. Change in details, in policies, should be made from time to time to meet

d conditions and by the safe and evolutionary process. ur Constitution is not too easily amended and yet perhaps easily enough: laws, state and national, can be made and unmade with perhaps too little effort; theoretically at least the representatives of the people are ready and willing to listen to any and all of them; elections are frequent and popular, all of which put the government in the hands of the people. They and their representatives make mistakes but, says C. D. Burns, their "incompetence today is trivial by comparison with the incompetence of monarchs and their ministers in the past." Democracy, in fact, is the only form of government that permits the people to make their own mistakes and then to turn upon themselves with biting criticism and recommendations for a "new deal."

Every era of historical progress has tended to concentrate upon one thing and produce something of distinction in that . The greatest contribution of the Ancient Orient was religion, finding in Christianity. While it contributed other things, architecture, some phases of science and a literature of no mean proportions yet it added little to government or social betterment. Greece gave us art, philosophy and important principles of government but they invented very few and crude instruments and machines. The Romans developed law and jurisprudence to a high but industry remained primitive and social well-being was totally neglected. The renaissance produced paintings unsurpassed; it developed a considerable literature and but religion and morality were at a low ebb. The Reformation ed on religion--the development of Protestantism--and art and science in the main. Superstition held sway of science and human emotions were given expression in

religious form rather than in art. Then came Rationalism with its prevailing tendency to substitute reason for emotion. Or it might be more correct to say that men found their highest emotion in an essay at pure reason. Rationalism produced its philosophies, its political theories, its systems, but no machines. Agriculture and industry were still as primitive as in the Ancient Orient. Men had no sooner become rational than they entered into the era of Revolution, a struggle for political liberty--as the Renaissance had given them mental and the Reformation, religious freedom. The predominant contributions to civilization of the modern era are science and the machine. And just as the world had to adjust itself successively to the Renaissance, the Reformation and to political Revolution so today we are still in the period of adjustment to the Industrial Revolution. Our form of government, given time, is sufficiently pliable, I feel, to adapt itself to the unusual situation in which we find ourselves.

A fundamental feature of our government is that it is a representative Democracy. In the early years of the operation of the Constitution the representatives considered themselves discretionary officers. Soon, however, this attitude changed and they became agents of the people, their function being to carry out the popular will. This function they have performed remarkably well in the light of a widely diversified and ever-changing public opinion. When they have, at times, failed to serve the best interests of the greatest number the protests have been loud and long. Today the representatives of the people are less subject to control by special groups and predatory individuals than they were twenty-five years ago. Representative democracy reduces to a minimum the gap between the governed and

164

those who govern. This gap is less now than was originally intended by the Fathers of the Constitution.

The Constitution was originally rather undemocratic. The framers were afraid to place too much power directly in the hands of the masses. And yet the government provided for by this Constitution was unique and revolutionary in itself. It constituted a noble and daring break with the traditional forms of illiberal governments.

Although written the American Constitution has proved to be very flexible. Originally the Presidential election was once removed from the people by the electoral college, the Senate by State legislatures and judges were appointed by the president. Representatives were the only officers elected directly by the people. Today, as the result of amendment, broad interpretation and accepted practice the electoral college is merely a rubber stamp and United States Senators are elected by popular vote.

At the turn of the last century when judges, by a narrow interpretation of antequated laws, were inclined to place property rights above human rights, the courts came in for their share of severe criticism. Various reforms of the courts were offered and seriously considered. The judges and those who appoint them were duly impressed. Today the Supreme Court is majority liberal. In the light of more recent decisions the prospects are that purely human rights will receive their just consideration in the courts. It can be demonstrated that even the courts and their inflexible law can be bent to the popular will.

Many features of our government are extra-legal. A reading of the Constitution will give one only a comparatively small understanding of its organization and operation. This extra-legality has been worked out and added primarily in the interests

165

people. Much of it is represented by boards and commissions for the purpose of protecting the people from exploitation ...atory interests. Today the railroads are, economically, ...ther bad way but as a result of the work of the Interstate ... Commission and supporting legislation they must operate ... interests of the public.

The multiplication of boards and commissions is criticized, ..., on the grounds that it is bureaucratic and paternalistic. ... is at least some justification for the criticism. But it ... the attitude of boards, not in their multiplication, that ... lies the chief danger of bureaucracy. In our Democracy ... is the servant not the master of the people. They are ... by the will of the people and can be destroyed in the ...ay. A Federal board serves much the same purpose to the ... as a whole as the policeman serves to the local community. ...ction of both is to protect the public. A superior, dic- ...l attitude on the part of any public official cannot be ... in the United States except for the protection of life ...perty. If a policeman gets rough with me it must be solely ...round that he is protecting either myself or somebody else. ...mocracy means a minimum of force on the part of the state, ...um of repression. It affords the freest opportunity for ...l observation, both destructive and constructive, from ...ntest number. It makes possible the exercise of latent ... on the part of the masses not otherwise available.

...erican Democracy is an exhilerating experiment in self- ...ment. The experiment did not cease with the making and ...on of the Constitution. It is more or less a continuous

ress. It is based on the sound asumption that men individually
in the mass know what is best for them in the matter of govern-
ment and in the long run. It is no less an experiment than the
present Russian regime and predicated upon a much nobler conception.
As John Jay said a hundred and fifty years ago, "It takes time
to make sovereigns of subjects."

Political parties began and operated for some time as extra-
legal institutions. In recent years, however, state and Federal
laws have been passed to control and regulate them. "The essence
of democracy," says Frank Paddock, "is the control of the policies
of the government by the people." Political parties are the instru-
ment of the people through which they exercise this control.
Now formerly self-appointed so-called representatives of the
people nominated presidential candidates and determined upon prin-
ciples and policies, today delegates to our national conventions
are elected by the people. Such conventions, with perhaps occasional
exceptions, function as nearly as it is humanly possible in accordance
with popular wishes. In other words, public officials in the United
States are nominated and elected by the people in so far as that
is possible in such a populous and complex country.

Not infrequently somebody says, in speaking of an election
or the adoption of a policy, that the public will has been thwarted.
It may be that in most such cases such a person belongs to a minority
group. On the other hand one common criticism of our government
is that it allows itself to be unduly influenced by well organized
minority groups. Evidence likely could be adduced to show that
some of these things have occurred, but the significant thing
about all these and similar evils (if they are evils) is that we
know about them. They immediately fall into the glare of publicity

the meanest of us have the privilege of broadcasting our grievances. Publicity at once gets in its licks and the wrong is righted. Other evils will at once arise to be combatted, but that's life, on this earth at least. History is simply a long story of alternate periods of varied evils and reform. We have made progress because each period of reform has raised the general standard of life a little higher.

Government as the servant of the people, the State, in the last fifty years, has rendered services in their behalf that have increased immeasurably the happiness and general welfare of all. The list is long and impressive. "The average citizen today," said Albert Beveridge, "actually lives in greater comfort than kings and princes of bygone ages." This, to be sure, is the result of commercial, industrial and political development. But the character of our government has made it possible for the people to enjoy the blessings of our industrial system to a fuller extent than would have been possible under any other form of government.

This is not to say that there is still no room for a more equitable distribution of the blessings of our economic system. Democracy is not static. It is a living growth. One of the most remarkable phases of evolutionary change which it has exhibited in recent years has been its gradual adoption of paternalism. This has been the will of the people. It became necessary because of the density of population, the complexity of modern life and the mechanized and industrialized character of our civilization. It was forced upon the government by the people as a means of protecting themselves from the machinations of the malefactors of great wealth." Where such radical and benevolent changes can be made peaceably obviates the necessity of a resort

revolution.

cry for reform and after achieving it discover that it not as efficacious as we dreamed it would be. The initiative, referendum, the primary, woman suffrage and the rest of them not resulted in all the improvements that were predicted advocates. But conditions are better because of them. . Hicks, writing in 1931, said, "Thanks to (the) triumph Populist principles, one may almost say that, in so far as ...ical devices can insure it, the people now rule. Political ...esty has not altogether disappeared and the people may ... betrayed by the men they elect to office, but on the whole ...ts of government have come to reflect fairly clearly the ... of the people. Efforts to assert this newly won power in ... way as to crush the economic supremacy of the predatory ... have also been numerous and not wholly unsuccessful. The ...ntic corporations of today, dwarfing into insignificance ... trusts of yesterday, are, in spite of their size, far more ...rcumspect in their conduct than their predecessors. If in the ... analysis "big business" controls, it is because it has public ...inion on its side and not merely the party bosses." Beveridge, ... was something of a radical in his day, put it a little stronger ... he said that "The average American business man does less ...profiteering today than ever was practiced by any business men ... this or any other country."

Basically our system of government is sound. Not the least ... its virtues is that privilege the people have of trying reform ... then to reject or retain it in accordance with its failure or ...ess. Democracy has a reputation for inefficiency. Much of

167

... a matter of trial and error. But far better a government ... by ourselves with all its trial and error than a govern- ... handed down to us by king, dictator, oligarchy, or soviet ... "Half-baked theories foreign to our makeup and traditions ... people will do us no good." Quoting Paddock again: ... that (the people) will always choose wisely, but that in ... run, and in the great majority of cases, the decisions ... by the people, will be more in their interests than if ... any other way."

The problems we face today are not necessarily the faults ... peculiar to Democracy. It seems to be a phase of human ... that as we solve one problem we find ourselves confronted ... a score of new ones. Technological development has banished ... but at the same time they say it has intensified the prob- ... of distribution, the inequitable division of wealth and un- ...ment, problems really as old as recorded history. Unemployment ...icative of release from the earlier long hours of human ... What to do with the extra hours is now a vital question. ... a question however that the people of a Democracy might ... take pleasure in tackling.

...hen civilization was chiefly agricultural, famines were ... and civilization was backward. Feudalism means division ...lasses, lords at the top and serfs at the bottom. Today, ... the serious plight of our farmers, they are far from ...erfs and our bloated millionaires are far from being feudal ... We do not have a caste system although there are those ... we might as well have because of the distinction between ... poor. But the doors of one group are not closed against ... rs of the other. There is more or less continuous passage

...e to the other, by family contacts and personal failure ... achievement. Political and educational Democracy have resulted ... leveling of society but not to the extent of stultification. ... variety yet remains and should remain to add incentive ... life. The dead level of mediocre uniformity would rob us of ... stimulus which is essential to progress.

... difference between rich and poor is an inherent part ... racy. It is when men are deprived of equal opportunities ... government ceases to function as it should. Some men are ... in America then, and some are poor not altogether because ... lack of opportunity but because of differing talents and ... ons. To permit more to an individual than a fair chance ... alism. To permit more is to destroy his morale.

... Not famine but depression in the midst of plenty is the ... that confronts this technological age. Panics are the ... of the accumulation of wealth, but that is no argument ... aboliton of wealth, no more than that the Ten Commandments ... be done away with because they have been violated. Nor ... certain persons should be deprived of the privilege of ...ulating wealth honestly and to be used properly. But it does ... argue that some sort of financial readjustment should ...

... accumulation of wealth solved certain problems only to ... others. Our unparalelled industrial development is the ...lt of the concentration of wealth in the hands of a few capable ...rs and builders. This was the result of individualism made ...le by a Democratic form of government. To be sure there ...n graft and corruption along the line upward--some of them ... the people--but in the general result the good far outweighs

... bad. In spite of glaring defects the average standard of ... today is higher than it has ever been at any other time ... history under any other form of government. Machinery has not proved a curse but a blessing. The general mass of people ... things today that a hundred years ago would have been luxuries ... the chosen few, not to mention hundreds of things they never ... dreamed of.

... conditions are basically Utopian if we knew how to face and ... them. Our inability to do so is not the fault of our sys- ... of government. We can erect eighty story skyscrapers but we ... stop crime; we can fly through the air but we cannot stop ... mental and physical suffering; we can travel under the seas ... cannot stop human hate and greed; we can pick out of the ... sound waves started thousands of miles away but we cannot ... locate human misery and want; most any moron among us can travel ... high speed of fifty to seventy miles an hour over our great ... always but we cannot balance the budget, prevent bank failures ... handle properly our financial affairs generally. Yet we have ... progress in all these social and financial matters.

Take crime for instance. According to Gustavus Myers, "during centuries of aristocratic government gross corruption ... rampant. But aristocracy was usually able to suppress any disclosure of its malfeasance; it shielded itself with drastic ... statutes, excluding inquirers from its councils and legis- ... bodies and prohibiting reports of its proceedings in the ... press." When we have such corruption in America, and it ... ordinarily on a small scale, it is immediately followed by ... exposure, investigation and prosecution. Publicity is the first ... in the direction of a clean-up. Democracy is responsible

for the publication of the proceedings of legislative and other governmental bodies. Secret maneuvering is thereby reduced to a minimum.

Corruption was the rule rather than the exception in the courts of European monarchs. George III made Parliament his pliant tool by the exercise of the patronage and the outright purchase of votes. "Lauded aristocrats dismissed tenants and boycotted shopkeepers who voted contrary to orders. For the same reason industrial employers discharged workers." Sir Robert Walpole's cynical remark, "Every man has his poise," was characteristic of the official life of his day. From "the patrician blackmailers who ruled ancient Rome" to the Panama Canal embezzlers of France no government has been free from corruption. Speaking of the situation in the eighteenth century England Myers says: "No known system of political graft can approach in effectiveness the elaborate network of corruption then flourishing. Under democracy graft is condemned both in law and morals; it goes on, but its practice is recognized as hazardous." The political criminal, common in the past and at present in Italy and Russia, is an extinct species in America.

Crime has been a problem of all forms of government at all times in history. It simply varies in form and intensity from age to decade; piracy is succeeded by boot-legging, the James gang by the Capone racketeers, but fundamentally the same crimes persist. We have been much exercised in recent years over kidnaping. But by 1677, 10,000 persons were being kidnapped annually in England and shipped to America. Murder, robbery, even gangs were common in the eighteenth century England. The stories of Defoe give us an accurate picture of criminal conditions in eighteenth century London. Crime in America today cannot com-

...[illegible] scope and intensity with crime in eighteenth and nineteenth ...[illegible]ries England and Europe. After an intensive study of three ...[illegible] President Hoover's Research Committee on Social Trends con-...[illegible]s that "whether crime is increasing or not is difficult to ...[illegible]mine. The data seem to show an increase of crime since the ...[illegible]nning of the century, but hardly a crime wave, if by that is ...[illegible]nt an extraordinary rise in the number of criminal acts committed."

Although we may be hard and cynical today yet Democracy has ...[illegible]olished most of the cruel and brutal treatment of criminals. ...[illegible]king of eighteenth century England Cross says that "Prisoners ...[illegible] in chains all over the land;----heads were seen rotting on ...[illegible] Bar-----(and) women guilty of murder or treason were to ...[illegible] publicly burnt, though in practice they were usually strangled ...[illegible]. Men convicted of treason were still cut down before they ...[illegible] half dead and their bowels burned before their eyes." Such ...[illegible]arity began to decline simultaneously with the rise of Democracy.

Internationally we have played no little part and much of it ...[illegible] a benevolent character. We have not been over-grasping ter-...[illegible]orially except in what now constitute the forty-eight states. ...[illegible]equired Alaska and smaller possessions by legitimate purchase. ...[illegible]ook the Philippines, then paid for them and have since improved ...[illegible]r conditions in many respects. It seems now only a matter of ...[illegible] when they will be given their independence.

...[illegible]mitted that the Monroe Doctrine was in part a selfish dictum ...[illegible]hat it has been interpreted to our own advantage yet it has ...[illegible]n of untold value to the Americas. Admitted that the Open Door ...[illegible]olicy was perhaps in the main in the interests of our own commerce ...[illegible] it was instrumental in checking the partitioning of backward

among the powers of Europe.

Theodore Roosevelt, on his own confession, took Panama, yet the Canal has greatly facilitated the commerce of the world. It has lowered the cost of certain food products thereby making them available to a much larger consuming public. True we forced the League of Nations on Europe and then refused to subscribe to it ourselves, but the greatest good may yet be served by this policy. This program has only slightly, if at all, reduced our influence in International affairs.

We have not recognized Russia. And this is as it should be. A system of government that makes the repudiation of God a deliberate part of its program; that substitutes individualism for virtual mass slavery; that suppresses speech and press and executes for violation of these prohibitions; that crushes the individual and subordinates home life in the interests of a greedy economic plan, does not deserve recognition. The Russians borrowed a page from our record of mechanization; the greatest lesson we can learn from Bolshevism is that a dictated communism of the Lenin-Stalin type is a poor substitute for the individualistic Democracy of the Washington-Lincoln type. Their planned society is functioning less satisfactorily than our so-called unplanned order. Their factories are behind in production, food and clothing are scarce their 60 to 80% socialized forms are producing no more than the agricultural system of the pre-Lenin days. Like the government of the Czarist regime the Soviet government is at present highly bureaucratic. It seems now to be chiefly interested in maintaining and perpetuating itself. Held under by a few at the top the people, except by revolution, have no power to change the Soviet system.

175

To say that Russian sovietism has these weaknesses does not ... to say that American Democracy does not have certain glaring ...ts. We may tacitly have repudiated God in large measure, ... have freedom of religion. The spread of atheistic propa- ... not a part of the policy of our government. We have at ... time freedom of speech and press, exercised frankly and ...rainedly in the criticism of our government.

...uch has been said in recent months, in a critical and sneering ... of way of "rugged individualism." But no one can deny that ... have arrived where we are on the basis of the policy of laissez ...re. It has brought untold blessings to us and too much misery. ... have risen to the top while all to many have been mercilessly ... under foot. The object of the near future should be to ...rve the good and eradicate the evils of individualism. Dem- ...n, if it will and without sacrificing its preeminent ...ities, make this reform and without revolution. The Depression ...dy bringing out much propaganda to this end. Men--most ...--are thinking about and proposing remedies and solutions. ...racy permits this.

...hat we need is more, not less, "rugged individualism." The ...ent qualities of individualism are too valuable to be abolished ...ther or exchanged for fascism, communism or any other fad ...ctionary system. Since individual leadership, backed by ...r lassitude if not actual connivance, got us into the present ... of affairs, I have faith to believe that individual leadership, ... by popular support, can get us out of it. A group of men ...uch interested in their own private properties founded this ...racy by making the Constitution and putting it into operation. ... with a sufficiently critical situation those with property, ...ss acumen, intelligence and consideration for the welfare of

will get together to save the situation.

et the business man, the industrialist, the professional
an individualist. His talents should not be suppressed
dictatorship or lost in mass communism. Intelligent individ-
ism properly controlled and restricted will yet make the world
better place to live in. If we are to reap the rewards of
present civilization to the fullest it can best be done in
accordance with a program of individualism. Human and spiritual
values are fundamentally individualistic. Our Democracy should
take stock of its present status, a thing being forced on it by
depression, and plan for the future. And as J. R. Drummand
says "----a planned economy which a Democratic nation adopts
is desirable and necessary need not be coercive, as in Russia,
but voluntarily to give up a certain measure of individualism
is one of the highest expressions of individualism."

Our territorial frontier disappeared a long generation ago.
We seem to have reached the Pacific Ocean of industrial develop-
ment. The spiritual frontier lies far ahead of us. There is
room and big opportunity in America for a spiritual ren-
aissance. It should be left to individual leadership. All great
movements in history have been started in this way.

The stock objection to practically all other forms of govern-
ment, with the exception of anarchy (if anarchy can be called a
form of government) has been that they stifled individualism.
Democracy stands preeminently for the individual in matters of
life, liberty, pursuit of happiness, freedom of speech and religion
and the ownership of property. But individualism run rampant is
a different thing. Not exploitation of the many by the few but
equality of opportunity was the original intent of American Democracy.

...oes not mean that all will be equally rich in this world's ... because many do not take advantage of their opportunities ... others haven't the ability. Theoretically Democracy allows ... individual to develop as far and as rapidly as he can but ... the law and in accordance with just and humane principles.

...ne of our crying needs is a closer harmony between the theory ...ractice of Democracy. Despite our immense area and large ...ation it is already closer than many are willing to admit. ... many other things we face it is a problem--an enormous problem. ... would life be without problems? There are those who ... give up and turn the matter over to a dictator only later ...ret their surrender. Whether we should adopt a fascist ...oletariat dictatorship the remedy would be worse than the ... we seek to cure.

The faults of Democracy do not lie so much in its machinery ...ganization as in the imperfect individuals who compose it. ... the problems of the hour we need, above everything else, ..., intelligent and just leadership. It is not infrequently ...nowadays, and the world-wide depression is cited as evidence, ... we lack such leadership. This may be due, in part at least, ... too great success of our ideal of mass education. Or per- ...haps what is equally true the masses are just sufficiently educated ... poor followers. Honest, intelligent and just leadership ...Democracy must have back of it an honest, intelligent and ... followership. The problem then would seem to devolve upon ...educational system.

... firmer faith in Democracy is needed. The school is best ... to become the agency for instilling such faith not as a

128

...of propaganda as is the case with both Italian fascism ...sian communism, each of which begins with a fixed idea ...ved to be absolute truth, but with a fixed purpose to seek ...ruth, scouting neither the good nor the bad in our history ...t... of government. If an educational program to this end ...worked out and if man is teachable--two formidable but ...surable postulates--then American Democracy is safe.

BLANK PAGE

R 1

1/23/33

Paper #16.

# Psychology of Advertising

## from the Consumer's Point of View as well as that of the Salesman.

I have taken the liberty of changing the title of this paper slightly so as to enable me to deal with advertising from the point of view of the consumer as well as from the standpoint of the salesman. As a rule, the point of view of the salesman has received the lion's share of attention from all agencies and the consumer has been made to shift for himself. "Caviat emptor," or the consumer buys at his own risk, has been the accepted motto of all advertising. It has been entirely a question of selling and any person has been regarded as a legitimate victim if he could only be persuaded to buy. Any method of overcoming his sales resistance was regarded as legitimate. Is it not about time for the consumer to turn, as did the worm, and examine this thing called advertising so that he can in a measure immunize himself against this modern commercial microbe and spend his money as best suits his and his family's welfare. Instead of succumbing to the appeals of the highly trained experts in selling.

That there is a proper place for advertising in the modern business and commercial world, there can be no doubt. We are all entitled to know what is on the market, what the latest labor-saving devices are, what the latest scientific discoveries have contributed to man's welfare--in short we are entitled to know what any one, anywhere, has to contribute to the welfare of the group. But it is quite another matter to develop such high-pressure salesmanship

nd use such devices and appeals to control the buying power of the consumer that his entire earning power and income are spent for commodities which he would often be better off without, while the more worth while things, such as health, education, moral and ethical values, religion and the church go begging. Under the high-pressure salesmanship and advertising, relative values are lost sight of and there is real danger of undermining the very structure of civilization, which legitimate advertising should aim to support. It has grown to be one of the most highly developed enterprises of the modern commercial world. The amount of money that is spent in various forms of advertising is alarming, if not appalling. It has been estimated that in a normal year the following colossal sums are spent for various forms of advertising annually:

| | |
|---|---|
| In daily and weekly newspapers..... | $900,000,000 |
| By direct mail..... | 550,000,000 |
| In business papers..... | 100,000,000 |
| In magazines..... | 280,000,000 |
| On out-of-doors ads, bill boards, etc..... | 90,000,000 |
| In programs, directories, etc..... | 30,000,000 |
| In street cars, railroads, etc..... | 30,000,000 |
| In radio advertising..... | 35,000,000 |

A grand total of well over $2,000,000,000, annually--almost enough to balance our national budget. In addition to this, there are hundreds of research laboratories all over the country, whose one object is to determine how to spend this money most effectively. That much of this money is spent ineffectively there can be no doubt. Advertising has

but one object in view and that is to control and direct the buying power of the consumer. It acts as a gigantic power in social control. How can the consumer be influenced to spend his money as the advertiser wants him to spend it? That is the sole and only purpose of this enormous expenditure of money. Not the taste of the fisherman, but the taste of the fish, the sucker, that is the advertiser's great concern. How can he bait the hook so as to make a good catch in terms of sales--that is the one object of all ads. The basic assumption is that human beings can be influenced to spend their money as the advertiser wishes them to spend it. Are there laws and principles governing human behavior which may be utilized in such a way that the consumer's buying tendencies can be aroused and shunted into definite channels to the ultimate benefit of the advertiser? This brings us to the psychology of advertising. There are certain basic, native, instinctive human tendencies which are constantly starving for satisfaction and which may always be appealed to, to attract attention and govern conduct.

The first of these is the desire for food. The extent to which this natural tendency has been exploited and appealed to by the professional advertiser is evidenced by the large amount of space given to it in all daily papers, magazines, on bill boards and over the radio. Our daily eating habits have been directed, modified, controlled, and in some instances disordered beyond all reason. Due to advertising many people have come to live almost entirely out of tin cans. Breakfast foods have been

so well advertised that we are willing to pay for cornflakes at the rate of about $20 a bushel when corn is selling at 12 and 15¢ a bushel. Cream of wheat, puffed wheat and shredded wheat increase the price from 40¢ per bushel for wheat to about $25. per bushel. The advertising agencies have studied our tendencies to hurry and have capitalized on it by preparing quick-cooking breakfast foods and other prepared food stuffs, the use of which is greatly on the increase. The cream of wheat ad is a work of art which is paid for handsomely by the manufacturers. Health and hygiene, the gastric welfare of the public, economy of living, and the general wellbeing of the people receive small consideration in these matters.

The sex, or mating, tendency is another native drive that has been worked overtime by every type of advertising. The moving picture ads have cashed in on this tendency in a most effective and disgusting manner. Scarcely a picture is advertised without the main characters being shown in love's embrace. Every possible position of the lovers is shown in such a way as to attract and arouse the most morbid and sensual passions; for here is a theme that is sure to attract the old as well as the young. The sex theme and appeal are woven into hundreds of other advertisements in a most alluring fashion. The face and form of a beautiful young woman can be depended upon to arrest the attention of the great masses, especially the men. The picture may really have nothing to do with the article advertised, but when once the attention is arrested the message of the ad in the form of a slogan, phrase or suggestion is driven home by

means of the principle of the conditioned reflex. In this way many impressions are bootlegged into the mind of the observer entirely unconsciously to him. A pleasing mental state, resulting from the observation of a picture, unconsciously attaches itself to all other stimuli in the picture. In this way commercial commodities create a favorable attitude on the part of the observer towards these commodities without the slightest merit in themselves.

A third basic tendency that can always be depended upon to catch the attention and make an impression is the insatiable desire to be attractive, to show off, to have the approval of friends. Advertisers count heavily upon the fact that any appeal that tends to make the individual attractive is sure to hold the attention and lead to action. The following expressions used in connection with ads illustrate clearly this point: "pearly white teeth," "that school girl complexion," "dainty ankles," "sweet breath," "prolongation of youth and beauty," "smart fashionable dress," "beauty sleep," "soft lily-white hands," "clear skin," "new and abundant hair growth," "eyes sparkle and cheeks glow," In looking over the advertisements in magazines and newspapers, as well as listening to the radio, it is surprising to what extent these appeals to the native desire to be attractive are made, the results they bring.

Thousands of laboratory experiments have been worked out to test the most efficient means of getting results from advertising in newspapers, magazines, bill boards and by means of the radio. Some of these findings are as follows:

Differences of stimuli are effective in proportion to their suddenness and the greatness of the contrast. For example, if a section of a magazine has advertisements in black and white and there appears some part of it in color, that will attract more attention than if it were all in black and white. But if the whole ad is in color that is not so effective.

A full page ad among half page ads attracts more attention than if all were full page ads. Any form of motion attracts attention as the revolving barber pole illustrates. But even a suggested motion in a still picture is more effective than an attitude of non-motion. Contrasts are effective in attracting attention. Novelty, such as large type, white space, or black space, ~~left~~ blank space, except for some small inscription or slogan, animals fighting as in the picture, "nature in the raw is seldom mild," are especially effective in attracting attention.

The radio is proving a most effective means of advertising. It makes an appeal through the ear, the natural avenue of communication. Much attention has been given to the value of the various hours of the day for advertising. Morning hours seem to bring the best results, especially in rural communities. When we think that there are in this country at the present time over twelve million radios, we get some idea of the number of people that may be reached by this means of advertising. It has been found that the radio is tremendously effective in increasing the sale of low-priced articles of almost universal

usefulness. One advantage of the radio as a means of advertising is that is lends itself to dramatization in ways that are not possible in other types of advertising. In this way amusement may be woven into the story, which adds greatly to the interest, and is almost sure to hold the attention of those listening. As a means of driving home sales talks, the radio has almost limitless possibilities, for it sends the message into the home when an agent could not possibly get a hearing.

One of the perennial experiences of life is the conflict between reason and desire. Reason says one thing; desire urges in the opposite direction. Reason is really the balance wheel of life. It steadies conduct. It prevents unreasonable extremes in behavior. Now one test of effective advertising, whether in the daily newspaper, the magazine, the bill board, or over the radio, is that it must not appeal to the reason or logic, it must not present both sides of the argument, but must arouse the emotions, desires, wants of the person to be influenced. Slogans, catch phrases, that are made to stick by sheer repetition, short, snappy, suggestive terms are best. For example: "It's toasted," "it is kind to your throat;" "treat yourself to the best;" "it kills germs three times as fast as other mouth washes;" "that school irl complexion;" "when better cars are made Buick will build them;" "when you are healthy you are happy;" "keep regular with x Lax;" "the world's finest;" "a little Sloan's will soon put an end to that pain;" "let Nunsing cover you with satisfaction;" "everyone is saying Plymouth is America's next No. 1 car;" "now you can Wake up with a smile;" "undies must fit to perfection;" "spend and grow rich;" "no more bed tossing with ovaltine;" "get well with Dr. Miles nervine;" "enjoy your purchase while paying for it." These might be extended

almost indefinitely and in every case they aim to fix in the mind of the consumer a favorable attitude towards the article advertised without any logic or reason for the attitude. And, of course, it works. Thinking is a rare phenomenon and the advertiser knows it.

A new movement is now on foot among advertisers to study each consumer more intensively so that his sales resistance can be more readily overcome. His disposition, his ambitions, his family, his neighbors, his salary or income all receive careful attention so as to find his soft spot and the more easily have him sign on the dotted line. One of the most extreme and ridiculous illustrations of this intense study of the possible purchaser was the thirty or more articles in the Indianapolis News recently on Sight Sense. In these articles salesmen were instructed to observe carefully the complexion of the intended victim, his breadth of head, the length of his face, the texture of his skin, or any combination of these. In each of these cases the approach and line of attack was to be different, but in every case the procedure must conform to the make-up of the individual as reavealed by these external features. It seems incredible that a paper with the standing of this paper would feature such nonsense as this. These supposed indices of character and disposition have been exploded long ago in dozens of carefully carried on scientific experiments.

Now in the face of all this high-powered advertising and high-powered salesmanship, what is going to become of the poor consumer? Isn't it about time that he take steps

to defend himself against these commercial pirates who seek in every way possible to find the weak spot in the consumer's armor of self defense and thus control the expenditure of his entire present and future income? It is,of course, entirely impossible for the consumer to pass discriminative judgment on the value and worth of the myriads of commodities on the market today. This the advertiser takes full advantage of by using every art and device to deceive and mislead him so that he will the more easily fall into the trap set for him. Pepsodent tooth paste and mouth wash have had a phenomenal sale since the Amos and Andy program. Yet it is a fact that this tooth paste has a grit in it which actually cuts and destroys the enamel of the teeth and will certainly ruin them if its use is continued. The mouth wash is equally deceptive. It kills germs from 3 to 11 times faster than other mouth washes, they say. But any mouth wash is utterly incapable of keeping the mouth free from germs. Then,too, we are learning today that the condition of the teeth depends entirely upon the kind of food eaten and the vitamins taken into the body and not at all upon either tooth paste or mouth wash. Some of the primitive people of the world have the soundest teeth in the world though they never heard of tooth paste or mouth wash. The subtle suggestion on the part of this company that you see your dentist twice a year has led many a dentist to reciprocate by recommending Pepsodent mouth wash and tooth paste.

The advertising of Lucky Strike cigarettes illustrates the same point. They say, "It's toasted", "They are easy on your throat," the implication being that the nicotine has

been removed at least to a degree by this process. But the facts are that Lucky Strike cigarettes have about as much nicotine in them as have other commonly used brands and much more than several brands now on the market. Yet the sale of Luckys has leaped far in advance of practically all other brands.

It is an interesting fact that the quality of an article has little to do with its salability if the proper steps are taken to advertise it. Recently a very elaborate investigation was carried on to see what factors entered into the sale of automobile lubricants. I shall not go into the details of the investigation but here are some of the conclusions drawn from this investigation:

1. The actual quality of an oil is a very unimportant factor in its sale but belief in its superior quality is very important.

2. The use of one brand of oil dominates the choice of an oil station rather than vice versa.

3. Price is a factor of quite secondary importance.

4. The effects of advertising are traceable in terms of familiarity with the product.

Here again it is evident that the consumer is easily misled by the advertiser so that he purchases cheap oil at high prices whenever it is sufficiently advertised and misrepresented.

Expert engineers in the automobile industry report

the same thing. Automobile manufacturers are not at all concerned with serviceability but greatly concerned with salability. And there is a vast difference between the two. Automobiles are now made to look good to the eye, to use a phrase from Lowell Thomas in describing the New York Auto Show the other night. Very little improvement has taken place in the fundamental parts of an automobile in the past ten years; but a vast change has taken place in their appearance. Here again we have evidence in abundance that the consumer is completely at sea and entirely unable to tell when he is getting his money's worth. The automobiles are all dolled up so that the cheapest looks as good as the best and this is what counts in their sale. New models have some distinguishing mark so that the recency of their make can easily be detected as they pass along the street. This tickles the vanity, both of those who can afford one, and those who can not but still drive one.

One of the best illustrations of how fictitious values can be created and put over on the unsuspecting consumer is that of Best & Co., a New York firm generally conceded to be the foremost fashion merchants in this country. The way they capitalized their reputation as the leading fashion merchants is amazing. The decade previous to 1926 had seen cottons more and more subordinated to silks and rayons in popularity. Cotton dresses had been regarded as work or house dresses mainly and had sold as low as one and two dollars each. In 1926, Best & Co. brought out their shirt-maker frock on the lines of a man's shirt and made them out of shirting madras

which had hitherto been used only in men's shirts. This frock was placed on sale at $19.50, an unheard-of price for cotton dresses that had sold as low as one dollar. Due to the reputation of this firm, this dress was copied all over the country and the demand could scarcely be supplied. The following year this house brought out the Liberty Lawns, also made of cotton. This was priced at $29.50. Where they had sold hundreds of the shirt-maker frock, they now sold thousands of the Liberty Lawns.

In 1931 this same house brought out an evening gown made of cotton net, muslin and lace, a picture frock, for $89.50. This also sold in unheard-of numbers.

Now this is simply another illustration of how the consumer is controlled in the expenditure of his money. Best & Co. are proud of their sales. They understand fully the psychology of fashion and capitalize it for all it is worth. Fashion has little to do with either good taste or economy. All that is necessary to create a fashion is for the social elite to introduce it and then it is sure to spread very rapidly down the social levels as far as economic conditions will permit. When the great tobacco manufacturers once made up their minds that their cigarette sales could be greatly increased by making it fashionable for women to smoke, all they had to do was to show a few screen stars with cigarettes in their hands and the trick was done. It probably cost them thousands of dollars to show these screen stars in the act of smoking but that was a minor matter in the light of subsequent profits. It was good business, good advertising.

My contention is that modern advertising has reached the point where it actually controls and directs the consumer's buying, his expenditure of all his earnings. Now the difficulty which arises from this condition of affairs is that many of life's most worth while blessings, objectives and possessions are crowded entirely off the map by these high-powered salesmethods. Proper food for the children, dental and ocular care, musical education, and general education with all that pertains thereto, libraries in the home, church support, missionary support, support of charitable programs and the alleviation of want of all kinds, and most important of all, a fine, balanced, healthy-minded, altruistic citizenship--all these suffer because the earnings of the great mass of people flow into the wrong channels due to the high-pressure advertising. A groceryman told me just the other day that a wage earner came into his place of business some time ago and handed him $3 and asked him to select that amount of food to tide him over the next two weeks for himself, his wife and three children. The three dollars was all he had left after making his payment on his automobile. Recently a man with a family, who was on charity received $800, compensation for an injury he had received in an accident in a mine. Twenty-four hours after he had received this money a salesman had sold him an automobile and had taken practically the entire amount from him. This was, of course, entirely legal; but socially and morally the effect is not greatly different from that of the hold up man or the bank robber. Can we build up a contented, happy, wholesome, civilization under these conditions? What is more, will our present

so-called democracy long endure with this type of rugged individualism running rampant? I suggest the introduction of a new type of salesresisting education so that the consumer may have a better way of combating this insiduous commercial evil. This will also require a set-up of scientific investigators, whose duty it will be to investigate actual values and place them in the hands of the consumer for his protection and guidance.

194

Paper # 17,
Jan 30, 1933.

ROME: STRATIFIED HISTORY

by F.H. Heinz

The city of Rome has played a prominent part in the history of Europe from the date of its founding, which tradition places at 753 B.C., to the present time. And, what is more, its influence on the life of Western Europe has been a continuous one. Most other cities that had a predominant place in history, have come and gone, have played their part on the stage of history and then disappeared. Rome like the Phoenix, that fabulous bird of antiquity, has always arisen from its own ashes. The city was sacked and burned to the ground in 390 B.C. by the Gauls under their king Brennus. Then came the glorious period of Rome's history. It gradually attained its power till under the early emperors in the first century A.D. it was the ruler of the entire civilized world. The empire stretched from Spain to Mesopotamia, three thousand miles, east and west, and from Scotland to the Nile, north and south. For eight hundred years after the sack of the city by Brennus no foreign enemy ever reached the city of Rome. But in 410 A.D. the Gauls under their king Alaric burst into the city and pillaged it for three days. This was but the beginning of its downfall. Two centuries later "the city had suffered so unspeakably from famine, pestilence, assault, and desertion, that it was a vast and empty mass of trembling ruins among which dwelt in misery the merest handful of despairing men", Showerman, "Eternal Rome".

Then followed a thousand years of ruinous life for the city throughout the Middle Ages, when the proud Forum of the Caesars became a pasture for cattle and when the poor squatter who had built himself a ramshack dwelling underneath one of the vast ruins of an ancient arch wondered what the half-buried columns and arches in this valley between the Palatine and Capitoline hills might represent. The city which boasted of a population of more than a million during its hey-day under the Empire had shrunk to a town of less than ~~three~~ thirty-five thousand, ~~five hundred~~. But the city was still there and it was still exerting an influence upon all Christian nations because it was now the home of the head of the church. Annual pilgrimages to the city were made by the faithful worshippers from all parts of Christendom. With the Renaissance in the fifteenth century a brighter day dawned for Rome. "The papal court was the magnet which drew and encouraged the talent of the world, and Rome was the Alma Mater from whom it drank in vigor",(Eternal Rome, p 405). Still politically Italy was not independent; Spaniards, Frenchmen, and Teutons were at various times and in varying degree her masters. Several times Rome was plundered by these foreign conquerors. It was only in 1870 that the modern nation of Italy was established. From then till now Rome has had a steady growth, now slowly under the patronage of the powerful Mussolini it again will be the glory of the city of the Caesars with a million inhabitants. Perhaps Vergil and Horace and Ovid and the later poets were right when they spoke of Rome as the Eternal City. It has had a continuous history on its site on the left bank of the Tiber for nearly three thousand years, and it is looking to the future with every prospect of indefinite continuance.

I have given this brief sketch of Rome's political vicissitudes as a back groung for its stratified history. Ashermann's pictures the situation nicely and gives a concise explanation for it on page 348 of his Eternal Rome which I shall quote:

"The visitor to modern Rome who comes upon arches and columns sunk two-thirds of their height in soil, or who finds the Forum an excavation thirty feet deep, its floor covered by the minute fragments that represent a score of famous imperial structures none of which now rises above its foundations, or who from the southern brow of the Palatine contemplates the valley where stood once the gigantic banks of seats containing 150,000 cheering Romans, is struck with amazement at the utter ruin of the ancient city. The disappearance of statuary or of the lesser monuments and smaller private houses, he can easily imagine; but what power broke into pieces the invincible masses of Roman concrete that formed the foundations, walls, and vaulting of the circus maxima and the baths of Diocletian? Whither have disappeared the temples of solid marble and travertine, the veneer and ornaments of palace and basilica, and the millions or cubic yars of masonry; and how came the visible remnants of all the city's magnificence to be so deeply buried?

"As he reviews the vicissitudes of the city's history, he finds the answer in a variety of causes. He finds it, first and last, in the devastation, direct and indirect, of the wars and feuds of a thousand years. He finds it in the natural decay and neglect of time, and in earthquake, flood, and fire. He finds it in the ignorance, indifference, and selfishness of thirty generations of men who laid barbarous hands on ancient

Rome to build a mediaeval and a modern Rome."

A few details will make these general statements more concrete. Rome was sacked first by Alaric in 410, then by Genseric in 455, who carried on a systematic plundering, taking all portable objects, even the bronze roof of the temple of the Capitoline. Next by Ricimer in 472, but Rome suffered most during the twenty years of warfare between the Goths and Byzantines in the sixth century. At this time the aqueducts were broken down and for the next 500 years the Roman's only water supply was from the river, cisterns, and wells. Siege, famine, and desertion left Rome an impoverished and almost empty city.

Then there were the natural causes of decay. "The pressure of the root in the crannied wall" weakened many a mighty structure above while torrents of water sweeping down the hillsides undermined the foundations below. Neglect of dikes and levees permitted costly overflows of the river. There is record of thirty floods in the first five hundred years of the Christian era, an average of one flood for every sixteen years. Without adequate fire protection, Rome suffered many conflagration throughout its long history in ancient and mediaeval times.

But even as these forces of ruin were, the hand of man himself, even in times of peace, was the greatest destroyer. For more than a thousand years the fallen and crumbling remains of classic times were a vast and inexhaustible quarry, of which rich material princes and builders alike availed themselves. Whatever was built was built at the cost of the ancient city. Most of the splendid churches of Rome were

197

...ornes with ancient columns of temples and porticos, and the stones of their walls have been removed from ancient foundations.

For the building of churches and other buildings a vast amount of lime was required. This was procured by burning the ancient marbles in lime-kilns. In the Middle Ages there was no real act for the beauty of ancient art and no sentiment for the association of statuary and architecture with the life of the classic civilization that had flourished in the Roman world. Wherever there was any ruin of importance, lime-kilns were to be found. There were several in the Roman Forum, two being located in a single building there, in the basilica of Julius Caesar. In the palace of the emperor Tiberius and in the house of the Vestal Virgins hundreds of fragments of statues have been found in the kilns ready for firing, but for some unknown reason were never burned. Several almost complete statues have since been pieced together from these fragments.

But the marble-cutters were even more destructive than the lime-burners. The Goths and Vandals in the fifth century were times of great building activity and there are still several beautiful churches in Rome (Miller's Rome): "Some of these Showman's Rome (Gold): "Some are not only without aisles, but without transepts or even of regularity. Two hundred ancient churches, with the exception of 3 still existing Corporate, [illegible] in the San Paolo Fuori le Mura. Tombs, altars, [illegible] shafts were hewn out of ancient pedestals, columns, and blocks,

199

... the choice colored marbles, granites, alabasters, ... entines, and porphyry which had come to the city of ... ns and his successors from every part of the world ... cut and polished for use in the mosaics and other decor- ... ork which made the churches of Rome the richest in the ... ld. The Aracoeli, within and without, is an example of it ... of the time: its floor is a vast and rich-colored ... of slabs and mosaics in every line of ancient glory, ... staircase of 1564 that leads to its lofty portal, the ... most imposing in the world, is composed of one hundred ... -four marble steps from various ancient monuments."

One other fact must be kept in mind when we think of ... estruction and excavation of ancient Rome. When old ... buildings were torn down to make room for new buildings on ... same site, the debris was not hauled away, as is done to-d... it was leveled out and served as a foundation for the new ... ings. The floor of the new building would thus be few ... t higher than the floor of the old building. So when ... ve have revealed the floor of a house or of a temple ... which buildings they do not find it filled with ... d that soil, but they have a portion of the lo... ... floor, and often all the floor of the houses ... them. In it I have had ... the house of Livi... the hall co... ... the same hall, in the house of Nero ... the Palatine, at several places in the Forum, in the ... excavated houses in Ostia. In most rooms of the houses ... all the Museums.

Before we consider the artistic history of the artist- ... ce in Rome, I should like to mention ... fire

200

...mes quite unexpectedly. Heretofore it has been quite ...ult ot go from the Capitoline hill to the Colosseum, through this region of the city is in the direct line of communication for a good deal of the city's trade. So two or three years ago Mussolini began the construction of a ... street to connect these two points. This street was to be straight and its grade level. This necessitated tearing ...ildings four and five stories high and cutting through ...derable intervening hill. On May 21, 1931, a little ... of the Basilica of Constantine, the excavators found a ... bone feet by two feet four inches in circumference at its large end, and a part of an elephant's cranium and a ... tooth. This elephant must have been much larger than ...hants are now, and it is supposed to have been one of a ... of elephants that was the progenitor of the elephants of ...a and Africa. It belonged ot prehistoric times as its ...ition in the earth indicates. It was found sixty-five feet below the ... level, but there were about thirty feet of debris at this ...int. The strata found below this from top to bottom were: (1) Thirteen feet of vegetable humus and debris, (2) Fifteen ... of tufa(a volcanic conglomerate of scoriae, ashes, ... ..., making it a rather soft stone. Being a native product, it was used very extensively in Roman buildings.) (3) Ten ... of clay, (4) Four teen feet of sand. (5) More clay. In this the fossil was found. There were probably no human ... in this region when this beast lived. It has been ...timated that the time of its existence was about twenty-five thousand years ago. It is now housed in the prehistoric ...seum near the Forum.

The stratified history of Rome, of course, is the result

...n's handiwork. Rome was an old city two thousand years ago. ...ceding generation have built their houses, their temples, their ...ilicas, their theaters and amphitheaters, their palaces and ...rtals on the same ground. Naturally, there were some remains ...e indestructible material of the older generations was melted ...to the foundations of the structures of later generations, ...ut are found in greatest abundance in the layers of those ...ods when men were most active in stone building and architectural ...ork, or in mining and smelting of ores, i.e., iron, gold, ...e materials that can withstand the ravages of time.

The glorified history of Rome could be studied in the ...rum. This has been excavated to the level across which Caesar ...e in triumphs and on which Cicero harangued the people. It ...s on it is level, too, that Mark Antony displayed to the populace ...e wounds of the murdered Caesar and aroused them to civil war, ...e horrors of which have scarcely been equaled in the annals of ...istory. A modern tourist walking along the road that crosses ...e west end of the Forum wonders why this pavement should lie ...t, root beneath him. He would not be surprised if he knew ...t it was built by Augustus early or seventy years before his time ...ut if time and he settled into a trot as they crossed the Forum, so that it soon ...ed to be a stroll, he would be ...ertain to ...

...ere is the greatest cemetery in the world, the Columbarium ...und in the Esquiline cemetery. It was ... of ... of ...ave. Fifty-two graves ... have been ... to ... Some of these graves ... The ... of the dead were burned, ... as was common. All ... those ... all ... Above ... There ... of ... ...ere ... small vessels for ... gifts.

This pottery was all made by hand, without a potter's wheel, of ... found in the neighborhood as we should expect. Besides the ... of the dead, charred grains of wheat and bronze ornaments ... found in these urns. Evidently inhumation was practiced ... that cremation because the circular tombs were often ... into the rectangular ones. But that [people] omitted all ... on one time is a surprising fact.

... at one place in the Forum there is a pavement of black ... twelve feet long and nend feet wide. Excavations beneath ... another pavement tont sex feet below this level ... it there is a square stone of brown tufa, which has an ... inscription on it that has not yet been deciphered. The letters run in different directions in alternate lines, from ... end of the stone to the other. Only a few words can be made ... with certainty, and no agreement has yet been reached by ... as to its meaning. Under this black marble pavement there ... two lines of altars and between them there is an area ... where there is no foundation but a bottom of soil and ... This is supposed by some to have been the site of the ... of Romulus, but without much evidence to support that view.

... ancient home had only one prison, and that a small one, ... the Tullianum. It did not need more prisons because ... as to detain criminals here till their trial might ... If the prisoner was condemned he was at once taken into ... for execution. This prison shows stratified history. There ... four walls, one on top of the other. Originally ... a spring on this site at the foot of the Capitoline ..., from which the name Tullianum was derived, as the Latin word "tullius" meant a jet of water or a spring. People hollowed this ... and made a public well of it. Later as more springs were

[illegible] in the neighborhood, this one became less important as a [illegible] was converted into a small prison. When they needed [illegible] ace they built another story over it. This was done in [illegible] 100 B.C. A facade was added by Tiberius in 20 A.D. In the [illegible] century the prison was still in use. The lower and more [illegible] part of this prison is as old as any structure in Rome. [illegible] circular chamber about twenty-one feet in diameter. This [illegible] ion below the ground. The upper room is trapezoidal in [illegible], owing to the convergence of two streets here. Its [illegible] side is forty-five feet in length. This part is generally [illegible] er to as the "career" or prison. There is a stone seat [illegible] e Tullianum to which Saints Peter and Paul are said to have [illegible] chained, but there is no proof of this. The story appears [illegible] about (1000 A.D.?) Likewise, at one side of the stairway there [illegible] a cavity dent in the stone wall where Peter is said to have [illegible] od his head. It was in this underground prison that Jugurtha, [illegible] Numidian king, perished in 104 B.C.; Lentulus, Cethegus, [illegible] the other conspirators in 63 B.C.; Vercingetorix, the national [illegible] of France, in 49 B.C.; and here probably Peter and Paul were [illegible] In later times many Christians were executed. [illegible] the fourteenth century the Tullianum has been a sanctuary [illegible] of Paul. The old well hole is still there. There is [illegible] all [illegible] with a picture above it of Jesus [illegible] while Jesus stands beside him with [illegible] hand [illegible] giving his blessing to the [illegible]. Two small churches [illegible] above these prisons in the sixteenth and seventeenth [illegible]. Naturally, I had a deep feeling of awe and reverence [illegible] as I passed from one to the other of these sanctuaries. [illegible] walls of Rome's stratified history extending from the dawn [illegible] civilization in this region down to late Christian history it

continuous line. (What a fire there would be if all our [illegible] could be converted into churches as this one has been!)

Nearly every part of the Palatine hill shows stratified [illegible]. His hill ~~adjoins~~ the Forum on the south side and [illegible] the Forum. In the first century A.D. the [illegible] on the hill here. Augustus, Tiberius, and Claudius, [illegible] did here. When came the great fire of Nero [illegible] destroyed nearly all the buildings in this part of the city. [illegible] reconstruction Nero built his famous Golden House. This [illegible] not merely a house, but a big city villa property [illegible] long and nearly as wide. There [illegible] artificial lake in [illegible] the present site of the Colosseum and this park extended [illegible] over to the Esquiline hill. It had a triple colonnade more [illegible] a mile long. The dining room had a ceiling that could be [illegible] in such a way as to drop flowers on every sprinkle of [illegible] perfumes. No wonder the tyrant's last words were a bewailing [illegible] lamentation, "Qualis artifex pereo"--what an artist is [illegible] with me.

After Nero several other emperors built their palaces on [illegible] hill. Excavations here show that the early private houses [illegible] destroyed partly were used for the later [illegible]. About six feet below the level there [illegible] level, about Nero's. The pavement here would be [illegible] into a foundation concrete. Here and about [illegible] feet or more below the level of Nero's will be [illegible] was built over and into by the later structures. The rooms [illegible] house are like row on all the hills are connected [illegible] passages built on an every big scheme, below which there [illegible] are about five feet wide, vaulted with arches giving [illegible] corridor effect. The pavement generally consists of litter- [illegible] tiles and white blocks of stone.

... the rooms h... double walls fo... heating. The archeologist ... thought this was the house of Catiline.

On the Palatine are found the remains of the only well-... example of a Roman private dwelling extant ... to the ... century B.C. It is the house of Livia, the mother ... Tiberius. On account of its ... it was ... incorporated into the later imperial ... the original form ... covers exterior. The ... of this house are constructed ... reticulatum. The inner walls ... covered with stucco ... frieze. The entrance hall leads ... large front room, ... the atrium, back of which there are three smaller rooms. ... central one of these was a reception room, which was richly ... decorated. One of the other two rooms was a dining room and the ... possibly a bedroom. All of these rooms are floored with ... and white mosaic, except the reception room, where there ... colored marble. On the walls of the rooms there are ... frescos, which are said to have been originally fresh in color ... but are deteriorated, but they are commendable. The re-... of the floor decorations, columns, fruit trees, etc., which ... large ... rooms. ... of ... rooms ... are ... rooms.

... hill ... visit ... of ... two ... of ... ancient ... the ... of ... Tiberius, built about forty years later. Both were of ... style of ora's Golden House, ... constructed for the same ... two centuries which

I shall quote from the note book I kept last summer shows:

"[illegible] fortunate in being admitted to the portions of the Golden [illegible] recently excavated and not yet open to the public. They lie [illegible] part of the baths of TrAjan, and a dozen or more rooms [illegible] well preserved with their mosaic floors [illegible] excellent [illegible]. These rooms are entirely underground now and they are [illegible] the tunnels of a coal mine except for the light that is [illegible] air shafts and occasional larger openings. Our guide [illegible] us with torches to light our way. Of course, at one time [illegible] these was all above the ground. Twenty-five years ago books [illegible] archaeology said that there were extensive remains of the Golden House of Nero, but very portions of it were to be seen in [illegible] places. I may say, parenthetically, that I now find myself [illegible] carried on more extensively at the present time than they [illegible] are at any time in the past in many parts of Italy. Mussolini is enthusiastic in his efforts to reveal the grandeur of [illegible] Rome and to learn more about the life of the people who [illegible] the world's finest. Incidentally, he is also helping [illegible] solve the unemployment problem by getting his men at work [illegible] on these ancient remains with [illegible], shovel, [illegible] and [illegible].

[illegible] might discuss the structural history of one of the forums [illegible], in the forum of Trajan, in the same fashion, or in [illegible] other forum, but here is not a better place to do for the [illegible], than the ancient authorities, as can be found in all of them. [illegible] will be there are over four columns standing in one [illegible], and two every block in the pit. Many of these are [illegible] monolithic, and all of them are remaining intact. It is [illegible] at all uncommon to find churches which were built five [illegible], or even one thousand years ago. I shall discuss ~~only~~

[illegible] hose as my last illustration of stratified history; it [illegible] church of Saint Clement, situated on the Via Giovanni [illegible] the Colosseum and the Lateran. I shall describe it at [illegible] small on account of its historical importance. The tourist usually pass it by as merely another church. The building [illegible] large or imposing, but it is one of the most remarkable [illegible] ancient in Rome, at least this is true of the part that [illegible] underground.

The church is dedicated to Saint Clement, a Roman nobleman, [illegible] baptized, and ordained Priest and Bishop, and even con- [illegible] ted Bishop by St. Peter about 92 A.D. for in the Apostolic [illegible]", Nolan,"The Basilica of St. Clement", p. 1. In fact, the [illegible] which is erected above St. Clement's house, as we shall see [illegible] shortly. But first let us enter the church, the floor of which [illegible] almost flush with the street level. We find that the church is [illegible] ear in construction, having a nave and two aisles. The nave [illegible] divided from the aisle on either side by eight columns and a [illegible]. Five of the columns are of Parian marble, four of which are [illegible] ted, one is smooth; five are of Numidian marble; six are granite. [illegible] ll pl[illegible] e has noticed the column[illegible] ding the door of the [illegible] ance through which we entered, we would have seen that three [illegible] ere are one is striated, and that two had leaves and two [illegible] Corinthian. How would account for this variety? [illegible] hing that is not peculiar in this. Builders of course may [illegible] ver to contain every old ancient items. The columns, [illegible] columns have come from various [illegible] ildings that were [illegible] for a trial to this [illegible]. I have it [illegible] e, at the intersection of the transepts in the center of the [illegible] e is the high altar beneath which rest the relics of St. Ignatius,

[illegible]ld. "St. Ignatius, bishop of Antioch was condemned to death [illegible] about the year 107 A.D. He was brought to Rome on [illegible] to kill beasts in the arena of the Colosseum where he was [illegible] by lions, nothing of him remained but the larger bones [illegible] were devoutly gathered up and carried to Antioch. When [illegible]ity fell into the power of the Saracens in 638, the remains [illegible] martyr were brought back to Rome and [illegible] in San [illegible]e". Nolan pg1. There are several symbolic features in the [illegible]rch, these style of painting place them only in the Middle [illegible]. There is other reliable evidence that places the time of the [illegible]ion of this church soon after the year 1100, though of [illegible], it must have been rebuilt at least in part since that [illegible], more than eight hundred years ago. But the church has [illegible]en there all this time and has been continuously used as a [illegible]e of worship.

For centuries people worshiped here, never suspecting [illegible]ything of historical significance lay beneath their feet. [illegible] In 1857, Joseph Mullooly, the prior of the convent adjoining [illegible] church, made excavations that revealed a church which dated [illegible] to the fourth century. It still [illegible] a part [illegible]. St. Jerome mentions this church in one of his letters of [illegible] A.D. Some would like to [illegible] it [illegible] time [illegible], to the emperor [illegible]. [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible], while all the pictures of Jesus after the ninth century
[illegible] sent him with a beard. Jesus is also beardless in the ancient
[illegible] of St. Mary which was built into one of the rooms of the
[illegible] monastery at the foot of the Palatine hill. This
[illegible] also dates back to some time prior to the ninth century.

After describing all the pictures in the [illegible] chapel Nolan
[illegible] the following significant comment on the place of pictures
[illegible] rules: "Our frescoes at San Clemente have a special interest
[illegible] as a valuable didactic composition, the subjects of [illegible]
[illegible] of above without purpose, and for the use [illegible] retreat
[illegible] faithful in the truths of our religion. They were painted,
[illegible] must remember, in ages long before the invention of printing,
[illegible] the great masses of people were unable to read one thereof
[illegible] to be instructed otherwise than by the use of words.
'Painting', then, as Saint Gregory the Great so aptly states
[illegible], 'was for the unlearned what writing is
[illegible] who can read'."

We have [illegible] visited two churches, one above the other.
[illegible] let us record the stairway of twenty some steps leading
[illegible] from the left [illegible] of the [illegible] birth, and we there find
[illegible] between the [illegible] one of the [illegible] rooms.
[illegible] but only partially covered, and the floor is very
[illegible]. To the rear of the room is the door, there
[illegible] which is [illegible] of the [illegible]. Cubicle
[illegible] record, one [illegible], is [illegible] on
[illegible] wall [illegible] of [illegible] is [illegible] on
[illegible], on the [illegible] wall [illegible]. [illegible] was
[illegible] one", i.e. model. "One [illegible] to be [illegible] of
[illegible] of [illegible] painted on [illegible] [illegible] marble
[illegible] of the primitive church."

At a later time, probably in the second or third century, the Christian shrine was appropriated by the worshippers of Mithras, a Persian deity whose worship gained a strange foothold all over the Roman empire in the second and third centuries and became one of the various kind of Christianity, in the early history of the Church. There was a great deal of secrecy and mystery connected with the worship of Mithras, so that very little is definitely known about it. Certainly the religion was extensively known in remnants of it have been found in early excavations of Mithraic temples in various parts of the Roman Empire on their military stations. An altar, found in one of the rooms of this temple, has been restored, including the fragments that had been broken off and it is now readable. On its front side it represents Mithras slaying the bull. "He is done in a short tunic with sleeves flowing over his left shoulder, and a Persian cap. He has his left knee on the bull stretched on the ground before him; his right leg is [illegible]

[illegible] the other [illegible] ori-
[illegible] the mysteries of Zoroaster, practices which could be described
[illegible] about the exact meaning of John that I have just quoted.

[illegible] sometimes the dog or the snake or the scorpion, or all [illegible] are missing. These animals must have portrayed some symbolical [illegible]ing that is not fully understood at present.

This altar was found in a corridor, but in all probability [illegible]principally stood in a room which seems to have been deliberately [illegible]formed into a cave for the celebration of the Mithraic [illegible]ies. It has a vaulted roof decorated with stone slabs and [illegible] with circles of mosaic work. Many caves have been found [illegible] these places which had served as places of worship of Mithras, [illegible] this is said to be the only one in which the roof is intact. [illegible] statues were found in the rubbish of the house of St. [illegible]ment, three of which are well preserved: a bust of the sun-[illegible]; a statue of Mithras rising from a rock, his legs from the [illegible]s down being still imbedded in the rock; and a statue of a [illegible] carrying a lamb on his shoulders. For a long time it [illegible] supposed that this shepherd representes St. Peter because of [illegible] curly hair, furrowed cheeks and full beard, but it has lately [illegible] observed that the style of carving on it is the same as that [illegible] the Mithras altar and that it consists of Parian marble, [illegible] kind of which the altar and all the Mithraic statues consist. [illegible]erefore, it was discovered in the same place where the other [illegible] and the altar were found, and where there were no Christ-[illegible] ornaments. So we must have in this lamb another symbol of the [illegible] of Mithras.

One other find was made on this present work for [illegible] archaeologists but for which no satisfactory explanation [illegible] been offered. The excavations revealed that the north [illegible] of the subterranean church referred to above is rather [illegible] a plastic wall composed of great masses of tufa blocks. [illegible]ortar was used in the construction of this wall showing that

...probably goes back to early Republican times of the Roman state. ...it looks like it goes back to the time of Kings in Rome - six or ... hundred years before Christ, and that it is a part of the ... Servian Wall, which encircled the seven hills of the city; ... some of which have been found under the floor of the ... on the Palatine hill. Tradition says that the ... built it, King Servius Tullius, or at least after ... Roman, rate, whatever this wall might be, it is deep under ... on the feet without finding a termination at the surface. ...fore it is said to be buried in the ground to the depth ... out twenty feet, below the pavement of the streets. ...ly infer from this how low must have been the original level ... one.

So we have here in the case of the street-- the church ... t. Clement an epitome of the long history of Rome. The wall ... the pavement into regions not yet explored may symbolize the ... stant past in an era when writing and writing materials ... still unknown, and the only records of the spiritual life ... were the spoken and chanted word. This is the time, ... to be set by tradition as long ... ul. Since ... ...olite are still shown in the crypt, a little ... of Pius IX. The top of the wall of the Basilica now ... floor of St. Clement. So, to enter, one goes down ... on the inside of the Basilica, but one leaves the ... stone. The house itself with its columns and ... entire at its height. Though its marble is ... bare, ... removed to decorate some imperial palace or villa, ... ch, we can still imagine it with artistic statues, ... niches with ivory and gold, high backed chairs for the ...

...n chairs for the men, all ex...ept it is said ... be us... ...eir many-col red marbles.

...ter this house was confiscated ... rude ...diers ...t going ... ...pera...ls over eastern nations and brought back with them ... ...sion of Persia. These soldiers converted the temple ... ... ...ilitated by the presence of saints and martyrs into ... ... for their newly erected god Mithras. They celebrate one ... of their services, where they may be initiated in the myster... ... this mystery cult, and another for the initiation, where ... are performed or the occasion of the advancement of an ... ...ate from a lower to a higher degree within the temple vault, ... ...ine are washed away in the blood of the bull, and where ... ...cred meal is eaten by the holy assembly on the anniversary ... the birth of their sun-god Mithras, on December 25, the day ... ... winter solstice is clearly at and the sun and its ... Mithras begin their new course of revived power.

Our building next epitomizes the dominant notion of Christ... ...ity. This pagan nonsense has broken pieces and bricks on the ... ... A coating of concrete or mortar is spread over it, so that ... ...ll of the heathen cult is to be seen in the Christian ... ...hich is built upon this foundation. But what our ... ...enth century church, though the embodiment of Christ's teachings ... ... fountain-head of the ecclesiastical practices that ... ... ...ity, in this work is to reflect the true light of a ... ... should have felt honored to have shared its existence and ... ... would exhibit its walls, when in 1084, Robert Guiscard ... ...istian king, came to the relief of Rome, the center and ... ...ical head of the Christian Church, who was being besieged ... ... Christian emperor, "while emperor in merciless clemency ... ... ...ood to a sack more severe than that of the Vandals, a fire

tinative than Nero's. (Eternal Rome, p. 360)

It was this fire that ruined the old church and filled its ... ware with debris and dust which was possible a ... of this rebuilds the foundation of the new church that ... designed to last for many centuries. There it lays ... , a mysterious and unknown tiny to the ... tourist. ... its side door, walks by the nearest ... , ... ably ... , to inspect the high altar with its ... ured ... tures, ... this ... probably continue his walk to ... the ... inspect ... curve wall of the apse which ... the front of ... church. ... leaving, he might sit ... or ... of the ... vendors ... ire the old paintings on the ... and the ... ... hood of former church dignitaries. I say "old", and aren't ... al ? The church was built more than a thousand years ago, ... time when America was still unknown to the white man; ... mmas had not yet been born, the Magna Charta had not yet been ... ed by King John, and Dante had not yet written his Divine ... dy. It was the age of Mediaeval feudalism.

And so our tourist, as he leaves, carries with him the ... t of having visited an old church, little realizing that ... ... l ... ction, owing his ... to the ... of modern civilization ... to ... fact as he ... down that ... ... o vio ... ... ...

HSH. 2/27/23

~~H 22/32~~

Paper #18.

## SAM HOUSTON, THE GREATEST COMEBACK

Sam Houston, American soldier and statesman, the man whom the South honored by naming a city in his honor, was born in Virginia in 1793. In 1803, after the death of his father, the family moved to Tennessee. Some years later he left home, crossed the Tennessee River, and took up his abode with the Indians by whom he was kindly received, and with whom he lived after their fashion for several years.

In 1813 he enlisted as a private soldier in the United States army, was soon promoted to ensign, then lieutenant. He fought under General Andrew Jackson, who from then on became his admirer and friend. In the battle of Horsehoe Bend he fought with reckless bravery. During that fearful struggle he received a wound in the thigh. His commander, Jackson, then ordered him to stop fighting, but Houston refused to obey and was leading a desperate charge against the enemy when his right arm was shattered. It was a long time before he was well and strong again, but his indomitable courage had made a firm friend in Andrew Jackson.

Houston, fearless to the point of recklessness at times, was very eccentric in manner of dress. After the war of 1812, Houston wearing the garb of his adopted Cherokee tribe, went with some of them to Washington.

At a later date a description of his attire gives evidence of his romantic nature: "A tall beaver hat crowned his head of long hair, ruffled shirt front, black satin vest, black silk pants, a huge

red sash, silver-buckled pumps and silk stockings with all the colors of the rainbow".

The soundness of his character seemed to justify the many friends that swept him into power as governor of Tennessee in 1827 at 34 years of age with every member of both houses of the Legislature his friend.

In looks, as well as in dress, Houston was an individual to invite a second look; six feet two inches tall, brown hair, and light complexion, graceful of movement,and of superb build.

The peculiar but fascinating character of Houston came to light when he came within eleven votes of defeating John Bell, the Constitutional Union nominee for President at Baltimore in 1860, for the simple reason he refused to personally ask Virginia for her votes, giving as his excuse "I never ask for anything I could not rightfully take". Should he have been nominated at that time the history of the next four years might have been written in violet instead of red. On account of his persuasive personality of Union achievements and loyalty to his friends his presence seemed a monument of confidence.

Houston's inauguration as Governor of Tennessee, October 1, 1827, in an old Baptist Church, (as the State House was not built), was followed by the greatest military and civic parade ever attempted by man of that day. A year later the Governor added to the power of his position by marrying Eliza Allen, the beautiful daughter of Colonel John Allen, of Sumner County, Tennessee.

The Allen family being of high character and achievements were personal friends of Andrew Jackson because Col.Robert H.Allen,brother

of John, father-in-law of Houston, was one of Andrew Jackson's outstanding generals in the Creek war.

The bride was lovely and gentle as Houston was brilliant, courageous and handsome; this made the couple seem an ideal match, and they had the approval of hosts of friends. But a domestic storm arose, and six months before his office expired, and only a few months after the marriage, the lovely bride went to visit her father in a nearby town, never to return. When the fact became known to Houston, he wrote a letter to her father as follows,in part:

> "Eliza stands acquitted by me. I have received her as a virtuous, chaste wife, and as such I pray God I may ever regard her, and I trust I shall. She was cold to me, and I thought did not love me; that was one cause of my unhappiness. You can think how unhappy I was united to a woman that did not love me. That time is now passed and my future happiness can only exist in the assurance Eliza and myself can be more happy, and that your wife and yourself will forget the past, forget all, and find your lost peace; and you may rest assured that nothing on my part shall be wanting to restore it. Let me know what is to be done".

The character of the letter is emblematic of the stern and peculiar character which Houston possessed; but with all his brief, frank truthfulness, he lacked the ability to retain the love of the woman he had chosen.

To this letter no answer came. He immediately made a fruitless personal appeal to the wife. He returned to Nashville and did the Houstonic thing that queered his whole life's story. He abandoned his friends, his office. He threw his honor to the winds, and between two suns he left for the far west and joined the half-savage Indians to be a squaw man,deserting not only his duties and trust, family and friends, but his race.

This act for a time made Houston infamous, with no par in American history. His behavior was too tragic to escape the pen of those that wrote biographies of the linens left overnight on the clothesline of history. One sees only broken vows, and unfaithfulness triangular in form; and since that date, the writers have been busy dry-cleaning the garments of Washington, Adams, Jackson and Lincoln. They have gauged even the morals of their good women by their unstandardized spelling, not realizing that the genius is the child of its race, and not its parents, as in Jackson, Washington, Hamilton or Shakespeare bloomed the flower of heredity.

The distorted pictures of Houston still prevail even when the reverse of the man is revealed, and the proof of the mistakes of the poisonous biographical pens seem to make the tragedy of his silence as noble as there is in history. Tonight we shall glance briefly at the record of his comeback. He was the only man in American history who won the governorship and membership in the National Congress from two states, and the presidency of an American Republic.

He was the only general in American history whose one and only battle was so far-reaching and decisive that it added an empire to his country, and made possible the annexation of thousands of miles of territory along the Pacific.

Houston, like Jackson,was a member of the John Knox faith. He was born in northern Ireland, and in the historic siege of Derry, the Houston clan died almost to a fighting man in defense of their

religion and their liberties. The remaining few emigrated to America and were received as the best of raw material, men endowed with brave hearts and honest souls.

The family tree runs as follows: John Houston and his wife Margaret Cunningham Houston, came from Londonderry in North Ireland; his son, Robert Houston and wife Margaret Davidson Houston; his son, Samuel Houston and wife Elizabeth Paxton Houston, who were the parents of Gen. Sam Houston, settled in Rockbridge County, Virginia, where Sam was born March 2, 1793.

The Paxtons were also of the Scotch-Irish stock, the same as the Houstons; typical of their breed they were lofty in bearing, high-minded, daringly religious, and had a natural talent for leadership.

Among the records in Maryville, Blont County, Tennessee, we find some illuminating facts about the Houston family. With two of them we are particularly concerned, since their tragic deaths are typical of what so nearly happened to their famous brother. Mary Houston, sister of Samuel, the favored son of two states, typical to the instinct of the true mother in those days, married General Mathew Williams. Losing her only child this woman died insane. On the tomb of Robert Houston, born 1788, is carved, DIED BY HIS OWN HAND OVER A LOVE AFFAIR, AFTER THE WAR OF 1812.

I mention this as there seems to be no middle ground where this kind of virus has a lodging such honorable men and women, even when all have passed into what might be called nothing, save Sam, the unusual brilliant, romantic hero of a boy who would not go to

school because he was not allowed to start in Greek classics.

The older people, I might say the occupants of the whittler's bench, that knew Sam well, made the prediction that Sam Houston would either be a big Indian Chief, Governor of the State, or that he would die in the mad house. Two of these prophecies came true; and how near he came to the third is told in his daring exploits with the Indians for their relief in Washington.

History tells us that in the year 1813-1814 things were desperate. Detroit had been captured, and with all that is now Michigan went British. Captains, unequal to the task, and senile brigadiers led brave men to defeats. The red coats had not only beaten us, but allowed the savages to massacre after the surrender of Kentucky neighbors. The Capitol was burned and the President was chased across the Potomac.

Our turn had come. Nearly five hundred men, women and children had been massacred at Fort Minn. near Mobile by the Creek Indians and they were on the warpath in Tennessee. The opposing general knew that Andrew Jackson, loyal son of Tennessee, was in the field leading 2500 Tennesseeans into the Creek country.

As the Flag moved down the street, the squad stopped. Some bright silver dollars were placed on the drum head and the squad sergeant said,"Come up and join boys;your Country calls. Put a silver dollar in your pocket and you are enlisted". Houston stepped up and put a dollar in his pocket and enlisted. As no man ever heard of Houston playing second fiddle to any one, he took up the drum and beat it as it had never been beaten before; and as they reached his

widowed mother's door she quickly stepped forward and handed him his father's musket, saying what had been said 3000 years before by Spartan mothers, "Here, take your father's gun and don't disgrace it. Remember, I would rather all my sons fill one honorable grave than that one should turn his back to save his life".

Houston was promoted rapidly. From sergeant he was made lieutenant. At the final battle of Topeka, where Jackson destroyed the Creek Warriors that made possible the treaty of Ghent, Houston was the first over the barricade. Col. Montgomery, leading him, fell with a ball through his brain. Houston fell with a barbed arrow in his thigh. He forced a soldier to pull it out, barb and all. It brought its pound of flesh. Jackson saw it all, and ordered him to the rear. A little later he seized a rifle and led the men into the Creek pen of death. This wound never healed and after traveling 500 miles on a stretcher, without a surgeon, he finally reached his mother's cabin. The good woman said she recognized nothing about him but his fierce, flashing, fearless eyes.

Houston's next move was to study law six months. He got his license, and went out after the Attorney General's office, and got it. Major General of Militia, Congressman, Governor of Tennessee--a steady, upward climb.

Next to Jackson, he fought the most noted duel in the pioneer Southwest, with General William White at Nashville.

The life lines of Jackson and Houston have no parallel in history. Both families were Scotch-Irish from the same section of northern Ireland. Both suffered martyrdom for their religious and civil liberties. Both emigrated to America and became citizens of the new state of Tennessee. Both won their first fame in Indian war; both studied law six months. Both were elected Attorney Generals, both Congressmen, both Governors: Jackson of Florida, and Houston of Tennessee and Texas. Each had his bloody duel; each a great tragedy in his love affair, Jackson marrying a divorced woman; Houston divorcing his wife that she might marry another. Each was president of an American Republic. Each fought a decisive and far-reaching battle, utterly destroying or capturing the army before him, inflicting the greatest loss to the enemy with a minimum to his own. And most remarkable, each of these battles ended in less than an hour with a loss of ten men in his own ranks. Such a parallel would be uncanny, if it did not fit in with their convictions of pre-destination.

Houston's letter of resignation from the governorship of Tennessee, a fine specimen of penmanship and rhetoric, yet the poorest in logic, reads in part as follows:

"Though shielded by perfect consciousness of an undiminished claim to the confidence and support of my fellow citizens, and by my own misfortune, overwhelmed by sudden calamities, it is certainly due myself and more respectful to the world that I retire from a position that in the public judgment I might seem to occupy by questionable authority".

This last sentence seems to refer us back to the prophecy of the old men of his boyhood days. "He will either be governor or die in the mad house". The fringe of insanity is shown plainly in this sentence when one asks the question, "Why should the desertion of a Governor's bride be the cause of his resignation, on the ground that he was holding the office by questionable authority when he had been duly elected?"

If insanity were not the cause of his actions, then in all probability, the reason was that owing to his past record and great faith in and devotion to his religion, he could not stand the overwhelming humiliation. But when we read in another letter to a friend where he says "it is a painful but private affair," he at the same time fully exonerates the lady. He not only did not justify his actions but he said he would make it a personal matter with any one who spoke illy of his wife.

However, he sealed his lips, rushed to the wilderness in solitude along with the relaxing contents of a bottle, and took for himself a wife, Thalahina Rogers, the half breed daughter of Captian John Rogers, who had likewise married into the Indian tribe.

Thalahina was a woman of stateliness and charm, and had known Houston from childhood on the Tennessee. It might be interesting to note here that our well known Will Rogers is a descendant of Capt. John Rogers referred to as the father-in-law of Col.Sam Houston.

Houston entered the tribe a Rover, but the common warriors admired him for his more strenuous traits and dubbed him "Big Drunk", as they thought whatever he did would be big.

As it was not possible in 1830 to take whiskey into the Indian nation without a permit from the Secretary of War, Houston in his own handwriting wrote the order as follows: "FIVE BARRELS OF WHISKEY, FOUR OF MONONGAHELA, ONE OF CORN, ONE BARREL COGNAC BRANDY, ONE OF GIN, ONE OF RUM, ONE OF WINE."

"Nor shall one drop be sold at my establishment to either Indian or soldier. I have too much friendship for the Indian, and too much respect for myself to make a traffic of this baneful curse", and he made his word good.

Houston lived with Tahlahina, his wife, at Willson's Rock on the Cherokee side of the Arkansas River in a two-room log cabin, and kept a rude store in which he traded, went hunting and drank.

The devotion to his Indian wife was never disturbed by any of his debaucheries as far as can be learned; and when he went to Texas, he urged her to go with him. The modest creature knowing her limitations, would not leave her tribe. He went with her understanding that he would return, but as the separation from the Big Chief could not be reconciled, she died soon after his departure.

Our government's recognition of the honest soul of Tahlahina seems to warrant mention of her splendid character. Some 25 years later, when her neglected grave was discovered, the War Department had it removed to the National Cemetery at Fort Gibson, where you may read the following inscription:

"SACRED TO THE MEMORY OF TAHLAHINA, CHEROKEE WIFE
OF GENERAL SAM HOUSTON, LIBERATOR OF TEXAS.
DIED AT WILSON'S CREEK IN THE YEAR OF 1838
REMOVED TO FORT GIBSON MAY 30, 1905."

Houston's actions while drunk were almost indescribable. It is noted at one time the Indians debated whether or not to kill him, in order to save themselves. Instead they tied him until he became sober. For days after a drunk, he would lie in moody dreams; then would plunge into the forests after bears and buffalo. So fast and far did he travel that the most speedy warriors would beg to be taken back to camp. Such is the description of the dashing General of Tennessee Militia, her brilliant governor, the ballroom cavelier, the ideal of every woman who saw him, the beautffully dressed diplomat, the best loved man in the Capitol, Sam Houston with unkempt hair, a common drunk, a squaw man, a blanketed savage! But his Caesar spoke. Jackson was at the Whitehouse; Jackson who never forgot and never deserted his friend. His affectionate and sympathetic letter to Houston begging him to come to Washington ended in these words, "How unstable are human affairs".

Houston thanked his chief, but declined his help; and it was three years before he visited Jackson in Washington, dressed as an Indian Chief seeking executive aid in protecting his Indians against graft and fraud of government Indian agents. Naturally things began to happen.

Hon. William Stanberry, Ohio Congressman, from the floor of the house branded Houston as a man of broken fortune and blasted reputation; that he was in Washington attempting to obtain a contract to feed the Indians, and fixing fraudulent and grafting prices for them. He intimated further that the president and the Secretary of War were conniving in the fraud.

Stanberry did not know Houston's character nor his love for the president, or he might have saved himself the resultant humiliation. Houston might have overlooked the insult to himself, but the insult to Jackson--never.

Houston immediately challenged Stanberry, but the Congressman refused his challenge, armed himself with two pistols and a knife, and lay in wait for Houston on Pennsylvania Avenue.

Houston met Stanberry, and all but beat him to death with a hickory cane, which act resulted in Houston being tried on the floor of the House. The trial lasted one month and was the most specular event of Congress. James K. Polk and Francis Scott Key, author of the Star Spangled Banner defended Houston; but Houston's speech in his own behalf is not surpassed by any similar effort on the floor of the House. The trial ended with a mild reprimand, and Jackson wiped the $500.00 fine imposed by the civil court from the docket, leaving Houston a free man and looming a little larger than ever--an added prestige.

In 1840 just before Houston was to be elected to the presidency of the Republic of Texas for the second time, he made a long and tedious journey to the newly made state of Alabama and married on May 9th, Margaret Moffette Lea, daughter of Temple and Nancy Lea, born in Perry County, Alabama, April 9, 1819.

The Leas, of fine and gifted families of achievements, and Margaret the most beautiful belle of the county, made the match seem unfair to the bride; but true to all great lovers Margaret's own

statement that she loved the great Texan at first sight, though she knew he drank at times, settled the matter. She conceived the idea of marrying him and reforming him; and in this she succeeded.

The strong, lovable character of the bride wielded a strong influence, and Houston gave up drink, joined the church; she led him with the same love, tact, and sweetness with which the beloved Rachel led Jackson.

This gifted woman gave to Houston children who bore his name with distinction; and after her husband died in 1863, she related to Col.Sumpter Lea the confession of Houston--why he deserted the governorship and went into exile when his first wife Eliza Allen Houston left him. The confession is as follows:

"Eliza was a good and beautiful woman. I loved her devotedly. I thought she loved me, but from the first she was cold to me. I hoped to win her love. In April after our marriage in January, official business called me to Chickasaw Bluffs in connection with Indian matters there. I finished this business sooner than I expected and rode horseback home, anxious to be with my wife again. When I reached the town in a spirit of mischief, I thought I would slip up the back steps to our room and surprise her. It was a painful surprise to me, but I did not blame her then or now. In my absence and her loneliness she had on the table all her old love letters of a former lover. And there she sat reading them and weeping. I knew then she loved another. We had some hot words. She admitted she loved another, and that loving him, she could never love me. She left me to go to her father's, and in my grief and humiliation, I resigned my office and went to live with the Indians."

It was Jackson's devotion that sent Houston to Texas on an Indian mission. As he stated, he was staging a comeback of a man whose fate seemed strangely linked to his own; and this great comeback revealed, one might say, the love and devotion of one countryman to another. It was the uncanny sixth sense of Scotch wisdom which turned the desperate councils into victory; the outstanding courage and fearlessness of Sam Houston that inspired him to win Texas from Mexico, thereby adding to the Union our largest state. Not only Texas and the South cherish the memory of Sam Houston as the fighter, and the man of vision; but all of the country today can look back upon Houston, who, handicapped at times with the common weaknesses of human nature, rose above all obstacles and still added a rich page to the history of our country.

H. L. Hickman
Nov 22-1932.

Paper #20

21613

# ABOUT TECHNOCRACY

February 27, 1933.

J. E. Ewers.

# TECHNOCRACY

## Development of Status

Some of the most favorable critics of technocracy assure us that to understand the subject one should surely read Veblen's "Engineers and the Price System". But the fundamental conceptions and postulates of this work are developed in greater detail in Veblen's earlier writings. Two of these earlier works are of especial interest in this respect, namely; "The Theory of the Leisure Class", 1899 and "The Theory of Business Enterprise", 1904. In the former the divine right of the privilege classes is as completely demolished as democracy has demolished the divine right of kings.

Veblen finds in early societies two generic types; a "peaceable or ante-predatory variant, and the predatory variant." The latter gives rise to the higher privileged classes and the former, under the continued domination of the predatory type, we find in the present underprivileged class.

The peaceable "variant is taken to represent the ancestors of existing civilized man at the peaceable, savage phase of life which preceded the predatory culture, the regime of status, and the growth of pecuniary emulation."

In succeeding references, for brevity and to follow somewhat Veblen's phraseology, the term, "leisure class" will be used in place of "higher privileged class".

In early societies we find the leisure class represented by chiefs, warriors and medicine men. Note the non-materialistic set-up here, in that the affairs of everyday life are all in the keeping of the class held in low esteem. While the members of the leisure class see in themselves the chief ghosts in their animistic world.

## PRIVATE PROPERTY AND INTEREST

The conception of private property in early societies probably arose first as pertaining to the ownership of women, and the accouterments of the chase. This is mentioned cheifly to show the very humble basis for our conception of private property. There are those who believe that a very clear case can be made for the whole development of our broad conception of private property from this very humble beginning and as an evident corollary we have the development of the institution of interest.

An excellent short history of interest is found in an article by Andrew D. White some years ago in the Popular Science Monthly. This article was one of a series in which White was showing the conquests of science over many superstitions and conceptions handed down from the past.

I remember the thrill with which I followed his exposition of these conquests that made the great advances of the modern culture possible. In the article on interest, citations are made of many ancient authorities of note, who took a strong stand against usury, and showed how this stand was accepted and strongly defended by the staunch fathers of Christianity.

White made it clear that the term usury, in its original meaning, meant any price paid for the use of money, irrespective of the rate.

He shows conclusively, with abundant citation of authorities, that our present distinction between interest and usury developed as a means of compromise in the long waged battle over the question.

Some ingenious business diplomat showed to the satisfaction of those on his side of the controversy, that the interdictions of the church fathers against usury, really had reference to exorbitant rates of interest, and not a reasonable return.

But this compromise has not been accepted by many. Witness the many cases of

money loaned to relatives and sometimes to friends outside the family in which no interest is exacted, accompanied by a satisfactory feeling of justice on both sides.

Modern writers of some schools are still strong in their opposition to the principle of interest.

In viewing the tenacity with which this opposition has kept, at least a slender foothold, thru more than two thousand years, one wonders whether it is not the outcome of many severe Shylockian conflicts.

Recently in a small group I was trying to draw forth expressions showing the attitude toward technocracy. Very little interest was manifest. Attempting to remain non-committal myself I ventured the remark that the technocrats lay great stress upon the importance of interest. One of the men responded, "Well, I never did understand that interest business, anyway." Another, with an air of closing the subject before it was opened, said,"Oh-interest! That was an invention! and the man that invented it was sure going some". Now it would be hard to say more on the subject in a thousand words. You are undoubtedly aware that the institution of interest is one of the chief discards in the technocracy program.

## THE CAPTAINS OF INDUSTRY

With the industrial revolution came the development of the captain of industry culminating finally in our present captain of finance. It is interesting to contrast the high repute now accorded our captains of industry with the odium attached to industrial pursuits in earlier times. The change in attitude is explicable when it is seen that their great exploits motivated by an exalted spirit of sportsmanship should normally claim from us an admiration akin to that bestowed upon their forerunners, the heroes of the chase. This attitude, this mental set up, constitutes the element of most stubborn inertia to be overcome by the forces tending toward democratic relations in industry in the present time.

## ORGANIZATION OF INDUSTRY

In all economic theory it is customary to lay strong emphasis upon the very complex nature of our industrial system. In the report of the committee on "Recent Social Trends" this feature of our industrial order is strongly emphasized. Veblen traces the development of this complex organization so that he may use it as a basis for his definition of "business enterprise." The captains of industry and captains of finance, are recruited from that part of the ~~system~~ society which exhibits, in a large measure, the sportsmanship and predatory characteristics found in the higher leisure classes of earlier society. So soon as industrial units grew to the proportion at which severe competition arose between the units, the chief functions of the captains, in keeping with their sportsmanship and predatory instincts consisted in taking advantage of the crises that arose between the component units of industry. The captains found abundant opportunities for bargaining toward profit. These exigencies seemed in many cases to be propitious in the degree in which the general public suffered from the same. But since business for profit is such a fundamental principle in our economic theory, the taking advantage of these exigencies has come to be considered a very high exhibition of the business function. Now it will be seen that the oftener the component parts of industry clang, the oftener comes the opportunity for business gain in taking advantage of these misfits-lack of smooth functioning-in the industrial system. It will even be to the advantage of the captains of industry to so manouver their operations as to bring about difficulties in coordination, so that in the adjusting, they may have opportunity for business for profit--business as usual. It is from this manipulation by the captains of industry, that Veblen reaches a conception tersely expressed in the phrase, "Interference Control". This interference control must be understood in interpreting his use of the phrase, "Business as Usual" in many of his discussions.

## THE MACHINE PROCESS

The earlier stages of the industrial revolution saw a rapid growth in the use of machines and a rapidly developing technique in that use, which had a very large influence on the mental complexion of the users of the machines. While this is a very important psychological fact, the industrial side only can be noticed here. Developing within the scope of industry the technical methods, the regularity and precision of operation, reached finally to transportation and merchandising. To this whole complex is to be applied the term, "The Machine Process" The mental attitudes developed were becoming useful in management and finance. An outcome of the machine process of immediate importance here was its influence on the organization of industry in ever increasing magnitude of units. We thus got the combines and trusts of later development.

## DEBTS AND BANKERS

In the mid stages of the growth of great industries the capital for carrying on the business was of a magnitude which enabled it to be held by comparatively few well to do captains of industry. The development of a capital stock system offered an ever increasing demand for the amount of capital used in the business. If capitalization had remained at the point at which it represented the cost of the physical equipment the earning of a reasonable income would not have been so onerous upon the consumers. The enormous increase in efficiency of the mechanical processes over the manual resulted in large earning power of successful industries, and as a result capital stock arose to increasing heights. But the principle of "reasonable income," now demanded that the larger capitalization produce its percentage of dividend. Stock merchandising kept prices so nearly to the limit of dividend earning that practically the whole advantage of machine manufacturing was reaped by the owners of the machines, at the expense of the consumers. This was shown in the fact that, in many instances, products of the factory were held at prices at which they could be produced by hand labor if the labor was paid for at the minimum prices. You may buy at the lumber yard 1" x 10" x 12" board priced by board foot and with a hand rip saw turn it into

strips 1" x 2" x 12' priced in lineal feet and the difference in price will yield at least a minimum wage for the hand work.

Business enterprise--business for profit--would not prevent large accumulation of capital through consolidation and trusts. By this process capitalization became so great that it drifted into the control of great banking corporations. The exactions of the heads of these institutions upon the captains of industry becameso sharp, necessarily so, in order that they might safe-guard the funds of insurance companies, etc., that the bankers finally came to be the virtual controllers of industry. Now with this shrewd control of finance it became more imperative than ever that the capital stock, no matter how much diluted, should earn the expected dividends. In the effect upon the consumer there is very little difference as to whether his price absorbs interest on bonds or on stocks, to him he is paying interest on a debt. In other words, he is found in the position of debtor to the vast capitalization of the industrial machine that serves him. Adding to this item of a "fair rate of income" on capital the items of overhead on business enterprise and for high pressure salesmanship, we can then begin to get a picture of the staggering load the consumer is expected to carry.

The industrial set up in America has enabled industry to carry this huge debt which means in Veblen's language, supporting the kept classes while the rapidly developing industrial machine was working toward a saturated market. The creditors in the financial scheme basing their logic upon the success of the system while growing to the saturation point, have not been able to see the absurdity of its fulfilling their expectations of indefinite increase of their share in the future. Those who have an optimistic outlook for the present order, appeal to the prompt advancement of invention to furnish useful devices or luxuries which will produce an ever expanding market. There are only two difficulties in this view first, the "if" of the inventiveness and second, the question as to the holding out of the natural resources. To be sure, this presupposes the continuance of the policy of holding the laborer to a low wage while he is furnishing the man hours necessary

for producing an ever increasing mass of products, chiefly for the kept class, while his wages enables him to buy a very meager supply. No critical attitude is ~~taken~~ taken toward this outcome because it is the inevitable consequence of the property and interest conception. This ~~argument~~ treatment so far has not opened the question of technical unemployment which may leave large numbers of workers destitute of even the necessities of a livlihood. Granting this to be a debatable question, one may wonder if the laboring class may not find it irksome to persist in a position in which they are expected to function contentedly in a machine whose officiency, due to even the present technilogical officiency, gives a few such incomparable luxuries while they are held close to the bare necessities

When the orthodox economist speaks for a fairer distribution of goods, in the view of Veblen, this economist will feel that the workers are getting their full share when they are enjoying the wage that has been found by delicately balancing it, as an item of production cost, against its ability to make a slight expansion of the market. The fairest dividend rate is the highest one.

II

What has gone before is an attempt to set forth briefly Veblen's social philosophy and incidentally to show his usage of such terms as: --status, the leisure class, machine process, and business as usual.

In this earlier work he probably did not expect to gain the serious attention of the layman, but the great war seems to have aroused in him an earnest desire to reach a larger audience. There appears a deep solicitude for the under privileged classes. So we find his "Engineers and the Price System", 1919, couched in a language of vulgar simplicity and force. Since this work seems to have failed to produce any serious results in a time so vocal with high sounding phrases of democracy and equality, still less may be expected from it now, since we have recovered from that spasm of righteousness. Now after a few years of more or less tempestuous "normalcy" on the sea of rugged individualism we are tossing in uncomfortable proximity to the Charybdis of a normal depression.

#8

These latter experiences have been remarkably barren of any tendencies towards brotherly love and fair play. We find ourselves, instead , each nursing his individual grievance.

THE NATURE OF SABOTAGE

Indicative of the author's changed appeal is his discussion of the nature and use of 'Sabotage'. "'Sabotage' is a derivative of 'sabot,' which is French for a wooden shoe. It means going slow, with a dragging, clumsy movement, such as that manner of footgear may be expected to bring on. So it has come to describe any manoeuvre of slowing-down, inefficiency, bungling, obstruction. In American usage the word is very often taken to mean forcible obstruction, destructive tactics industrial frightfulness, incendiarism and high explosives, although that is plainly not its first meaning nor its common meaning. Nor is that its ordinary meaning as the word is used among those who have advocated a recourse to sabotage as a means of enforcing an argument about wages or the conditions of work."

"The sinister meaning which is often attached to the word in American usage, as denoting violence and disorder, appears to be due to the fact that the American usage has been shaped chiefly by persons and newspapers who have aimed to discredit the use of sabotage by organized workmen, and who have therefore laid stress on its less amiable manifestations. This is unfortunate. It lessens the usefulness of the word by making it a means of denunciation rather than of understanding."

"The word first came into use among the organized French workmen, the members of certain syndicats, to describe their tactics of passive resistance, and it has continued to be associated with the strategy of these French workmen, who are known as syndicalists."

"Such manoeuvres of restriction, delay, and hindrance have a large share in the ordinary conduct of business; but it is only lately that this ordinary line of business strategy has come to be recognized as being substantially of the same

nature as the ordinary tactics of the syndicalists. So that it has not been usual until the last few years to speak of manoeuvres of this kind as sabotage when they are employed by employers and their business concerns. But all this strategy of delay, restriction, hindrance, and defeat is manifestly of the same character, and should conveniently be called by the same name, whether it is carried on by business men or by workmen; so that it is no longer unusual now to find workmen speaking of "capitalistic sabotage" as freely as the employers and the newspapers speak of syndicalist sabotage. As the word is now used, and as it is properly used it describes a certain system of industrial strategy or management, whether it is employed by one or another. What it describes is a resort to peaceable or surreptitious restriction, delay, withdrawal, or obstruction."

Having shown the identity in principle of sabotage by business or by worker he proceeds to justify its use in business thus: "Without some salutary restraint in the way of sabotage on the productive use of the available industrial plant and workmen, it is altogether unlikely that prices could be maintained at a reasonably profitable figure for any appreciable time. A business like control of the rate and volume of output is indispensable for keeping up a profitable market, and a profitable market is the first and unremitting condition of prosperity in any community whose industry is owned and managed by business men. And the ways and means of this necessary control of the output of industry are always and necessarily something in the nature of sabotage--something in the way of retardation, restriction withdrawal, unemployment of plant and workmen--whereby production is kept short of productive capacity."

## THE INDUSTRIAL SYSTEM

Let us look at trite economic theory through Veblen's spectacles: "It has been usual, and indeed it still is not unusual, to speak of three coordinate 'factors of production': land, labor, and capital. The reason for this threefold scheme of factors in production is that there have been three recognized classes of income: rent, wages, and profits; and it has been assumed that whatever yields an

nature as the ordinary tactics of the syndicalists. So that it has not been usual until the last few years to speak of manoeuvres of this kind as sabotage when they are employed by employers and their business concerns. But all this strategy of delay, restriction, hindrance, and defeat is manifestly of the same character, and should conveniently be called by the same name, whether it is carried on by business men or by workmen; so that it is no longer unusual now to find workmen speaking of "capitalistic sabotage" as freely as the employers and the newspapers speak of syndicalist sabotage. As the word is now used, and as it is properly used it describes a certain system of industrial strategy or management, whether it is employed by one or another. What it describes is a resort to peaceable or surreptitious restriction, delay, withdrawal, or obstruction."

Having shown the identity in principle of sabotage by business or by worker he proceeds to justify its use in business thus: "Without some salutary restraint in the way of sabotage on the productive use of the available industrial plant and workmen, it is altogether unlikely that prices could be maintained at a reasonably profitable figure for any appreciable time. A business like control of the rate and volume of output is indispensable for keeping up a profitable market, and a profitable market is the first and unremitting condition of prosperity in any community whose industry is owned and managed by business men. And the ways and means of this necessary control of the output of industry are always and necessarily something in the nature of sabotage--something in the way of retardation, restriction withdrawal, unemployment of plant and workmen--whereby production is kept short of productive capacity?

## THE INDUSTRIAL SYSTEM

Let us look at trite economic theory through Veblen's spectacles: "It has been usual, and indeed it still is not unusual, to speak of three coordinate 'factors of production': land, labor, and capital. The reason for this threefold scheme of factors in production is that there have been three recognized classes of income: rent, wages, and profits; and it has been assumed that whatever yields an

income is a productive factor. This scheme has come down from the eighteenth century.

seen in the light of later events this threefold plan of coordinate factors in production is notable for what it omits. It assigns no productive effect to the industrial arts, for example, for the conclusive reason that the state of the industrial arts yield no stated or ratable income to any one class of persons; it affords no legal claim to a share in the community's yearly production of goods. The state of the industrial art is a joint stock of knowledge derived from past experience, and is held and passed on as an indivisible possession of the community at large."

"Another omission from the scheme of factors, as it was originally drawn, was the business man. But in the course of the nineteenth century the business man came more and more obtrusively to the front and came in for a more and more generous portion of the country's yearly income--which was taken to argue that he also contributed increasingly to the yearly production of goods and his wages of management are considered to measure his creative share in that."

"The efficient enlargement of industrial capacity has, of course, been due to a continued advance in technology, to a continued increase of the available natural resources, and to a continued increase of population. But the business community have also had a part in bringing all this to pass; they have always been in a position to hinder this growth, and it is only by their consent and advice that things have been enabled to go forward so far as they have gone."

Care is taken that the reader shall not miss his point by re-statements as seen in the ending of the next paragraph --"It is today quite an open question whether the business like management of the captains is not more occupied with checking industry than with increasing its productive activity".

It will be remembered that in his earlier work Veblen characterized the captains of industry as being unable to manage business for the common good, because of

their predatory nature. In the later work he follows this thought with a quotation from Jeremiah W. Jenks--"The leaders in business are men who have studied and thought all their lives. They have thus learned to decide big problems at once, basing their decisions upon their knowledge of fundamental principles". Then ~~his~~ Veblens viewpoint is driven home by his comments on the quotation.

"That is to say, the surveillance of this financial end of industrial business, and the control of the requisite running balance of sabotage, have been reduced to a routine governed by settled principles of procedure and administered by suitably trained experts in corporation finance. But under the limitations to which all human capacity is subject it follows, from this increasingly exacting discipline of business administration, that the business men are increasingly out of touch with that manner of thinking and those elements of knowledge that go to make up the logic and the relevant facts of the mechanical technology. Addiction to a strict and unremitting valuation of all things in terms of price and profit leaves them, by settled habit, unfit to appreciate those technological facts and values that can be formulated only in terms of tangible mechanical performance.

It is impossible, even with the fullness of quotations given, to show the force with which Veblen drives home his idea that the business man, from nature and training, is fitted only for "interference control". He approaches the thesis from many viewpoints until the ~~mass of evidence~~ argument is overwhelming.

"Finally with the enormous advance of the industrial arts, the services of the technological experts were of increasing importance. This growing function of the engineers was viewed with poorly concealed jealousy by the captains of "interference control". But when to this circumstance was added the necessity of appeal, for financial accomodation, to large banking interests the traditional captains of industry were finally reduced to the position of bureaucratic heads

of administration, taking orders from the captains of finance, the bankers. Trends in industry and finance brought closer relationship between the engineers and the banking interests for the "ordinary duties of these consulting engineers have been to advise the investment bankers as to the industrial and commercial soundness, past and prospective, of any enterprise that is to be underwritten. These duties have comprised a painstaking and impartial examination of the physical properties involved in any given case. On this ground working arrangements and mutual understanding presently arose between the consulting engineers and those banking houses that habitually were concerned in the underwriting of corporate enterprises."

Now while the work of these consulting engineers has been under the direction and for the benefit of the investment bankers, it should be noted that said work is but the functioning of the industrial arts joint stock, developed in and largely financed by society in general.

## Toward Technocracy

We can now see that having reached this view of our industrial set up, Veblen would see it as a moral duty for the engineers, in a crisis, to espouse the cause of the general weal as against the kept classes. He did not expect them to be won from their allegiance to the vested interests without a campaign of education. Nor would he expect, as pointed out later, that the older and conservative engineers could change their allegiance. The chief hope lay in the younger generation of technologists whose minds have not so thoroughly crystallized on the eternal justice and sufficiency of the predatory profit basis of industry.

In 1919 Veblen wrote, "These expert men, technologists, engineers make up the indispensible General Staff of the industrial system; and without their immediate and unremitting guidance and correction the industrial system will not work. To do their work as it should be done these men of the industrial general staff must have a free hand, unhampered by commercial considerations and reservations;--they neither need nor are they in any degree benefited by

any supervision or interference from the side of the owners. Yet the absentee owners, now represented, in effect, by the syndicated investment bankers, continue to control the industrial experts and limit their discretion, arbitrarily, for their own commercial gain, regardless of the needs of the community."

"Right lately these technologists have begun to become uneasily "class-conscious" and to reflect that they together constitute the indispensible General Staff of the industrial system. They are beginning to take stock of that all-pervading mismanagement of industry that is inseparable from its control for commercial ends. All of which brings home a realization of their own shame, and of damage to the common good. It is an open secret that with a reasonably free hand the production experts would today readily increase the ordinary output of industry by several fold,--variously estimated at some 300 per cent to 1200 per cent of the current output; and what stands in the way of increasing the ordinary output of goods and services is business as usual. So the engineers are beginning to draw together and ask themselves,"what about it?"

## III Veblen Sees His Duty

Not only did Veblen reach a strong conviction of the justice and necessity of a fundamental reorganization of our economic order but he had the courage of his convictions. He ~~fearfully~~ fearlessly threw his influence in the campaign of education which would lead toward that reorganization. But his deep insight into the stupendous inertia of the sociological structure, and habits of thought, determined in him a method and style far above that of the soap box agitator. The latter, through his shallow vaporings, wounds any proper sense of decency or temperance. Veblen's style is calculated to take you into close sympathetic partnership in a cool examination of the difficulties and "Danger of a Revolutionary Overturn", or"The Circumstances which make for a Change". Under the first heading , "On the Danger of a Revolutionary Overturn", the sympathetic co-worker sees the magnitude of the task, and the resourcefulness of the adversary, by viewing the war as a clash, between international vested interests;

in seeing how vested interests, having precipitated the war, found in it opportunity for business mismanagement and the resulting profiteering; and how in the post war unrest the same vested interests, although in "Red trepidation and nerve-shattering fear", carried on a high pressure propaganda to head off an imagined danger of an uprising of the underlying population. The sympathetic reader is made to feel a keen self-scorn that he is prevented, by the canon of decency and safe conservatism, from whole-hearted cooperation in the cause of the common man. Especially does this self-scorn and shame become poignant, when it is recognised that the guardians of privilege, underestimate the stability and inertia of the ingrained esteem and reverence held by the underlying population for the privileged classes, and are, therefore, filled with an unfounded fear of an uprising. But this state of mind in the vested interests has further implications, either they tacitly recognize the justice of the cause of the masses they fear, or they are so warped, by complacency in the justice of their own lordship, that the masses are thought of as undeserving harpies threatening their exalted and deserved privileges.

Veblen pursues his educational policy through the article, "What Makes for a Change", showing his grasp of the historic sense in not expecting the change very soon. But the way he handles this inevitable postponement, constitutes one of his strongest educational devices. After pointing to the high cost of salesmanship and the desirability of its abolition, the discussion ends: "Such a move is a moral impossibility, just yet." Again referring to the inertia of ideas. "This sentimental deference of the American people to the sagacity of its business men is massive, profound, and alert." Even the technicians are largely in the same frame of mind. "Absentee ownership is secure, just yet. In time with sufficient provocation, this popular state of mind may change, of course; but it is in any case a matter of an appreciable lapse of time".

No outline of Veblen's program will be offered, but a showing of his attitude on the most important point in it, may not be amiss: "In principle, all that is

necessarily involved, is a disallowance of absentee ownership; that is to say, the disestablishment of an institution which has, in the course of time and change, proved to be noxious to the common good. The rest will follow quite simply from the cancelment of this outworn and footless vested right."

This act of disallowance may be called subversive and revolutionary; but while there is no intention here to offer anything in the way of exculpation, it is necessary to an objective appraisal, of the contemplated move, to note that the effect of such disallowance would be subversive or revolutionary only in a figurative sense of the words. It would all of it neither subvert nor derange any substantial mechanical contrivance or relation, nor need it materially disturb the relations, either as workman or as consumer of goods and services, of any appreciable number of persons now engaged in productive industry. In fact, the disallowance will touch nothing more substantial than a legal make-believe."

But he closes with the assurance:"There is nothing in the situation that should reasonably flutter the sensibilities of the Guardians or of that massive body of well-to-do citizens who make up the rank and file of absentee owners, just yet."

Veblen's characterization of immediate post war conditions shows that we are not at all justified in entertaining the same fear from the present crisis as was then felt by the Guardians of the Vested Interests."The run of the facts has jostled them out of the ruts, and they have gone in for a headlong policy of clamor and repression, to cover and suppress matters of fact and to shut off discussion and deliberation. And all the while the Guardians are also feverishly at work on a mobilization of such forces as may hopefully be counted on to 'keep the situation in hand' in case the expected should happen. The one manifestly conclusive resolution to which the Guardians of the Vested Interests have come is that the underlying population is to be 'kept in hand' in the face of any contingency."

## The Repercussion ~~of Technocracy~~

The interests were quick to see the deep significance of the recent half baked pronouncements on Technocracy but the danger was soon allayed by a short vigorous campaign of ridicule and misrepresentation in the subsidized press, helped out by the honest efforts of those who earnestly believed it to be illogical and based on inaccurate and erroneous data. It may be that the judicious application of a little cold water stopped a disquieting ebullition in academic circles. It is interesting that shortly before the split in the Technocracy group at Columbia, Professor Rautenstrauch in Technocracy Review for February, ~~Rautenstrauch~~ could begin an article,"For what I am about to say, I am greatly indebted to my co-workers, Mr. Howard Scott, director of the energy survey of North America; to Mr. Frederick L. Ackerman, for interpreting statements, and to Mr. Bassett Jones for certain mathematical analysis of the data recorded to date. "

"I bring the message of Technocracy; a group of co-operating technologists, who under the leadership of Mr. Scott and in co-operation with the department of industrial engineering at Columbia University are making serious inquiry into the physical basis of our civilization and the relations of technological developments to social change."

The article continues with data and style identical or similar to those found in Scott's articles, "One of the matters about which the technologists make inquiry is trend of employment in the manufacturing industries under the price system of production. It will be observed that under the competitive pressure arising from the price system of production, the following general law obtains: The quantity time factor of investment to produce a unit of product tends toward a minimum." Note the interesting trilogy: Veblen, Scott, Rautenstrauch. In the light of the repudiation of Scott by Columbia soon after this was written it is remarkably suggestive of the possibilities of attitudinal acrobatics.

The light portending a new social order had begun to shine from Columbia University as early as the summer sessions of '32 as reported by students in attendance, and on Oct. 21st Thomas Alexander of Columbia in an address at Indianapolis, painted a glowing picture of comfort and leisure to be made possible by the increasing supply of the energy of production. He gave data on the energy consumption in the past, present and that possible in the near future, stating the data in available horse power per capita. Nothing was said as to how each person was to get his share, but it seemed to be assumed that he would get it. The October Association brought to us another prophet of a brighter future, in John D. Hicks of Wisconsin University. His topic was "American Frontiers Past and Present." He gave a scholarly account of the westward march of our early land and cultural frontier, followed by the phenomenal march of our industrial frontier. Our industrial conquest was shown to have overshadowed the spiritual and cultural development. But this was to be seen simply as an incidence of inscrutable and inevitable forces of change. Nothing was said that would offend a pronounced "rugged individualist". But a trend was noted that gives hope of an epoch of expansion of the frontier of spiritual, and cultural values. This seemed to be a reasonable hope from the logic of events. We were reminded that the land conquering frontier ended when we ran out of land, and we have just about reached the limit of industrial frontiering, so there is nothing left to do, but to become more human. I am well aware that

one may easily expose his lack of the historic sense, in showing impatience with slow historic change.

When the captains of industry have had their work a little more organized by the banking syndicate they will have more time to devote to the new pioneering. Just think what Henry Ford could do, if he would only let the bankers relieve him of some of his financial affairs. And Owen D. Young has already proved his abilities through his efforts in a broad field, including his aid to our present and incoming government administrations. Under our present system of values these captains of industry command a broader hearing than such earnest champions of justice as Cadman or Fosdick.

It is to be hoped that,if the Technocratic regime should come, there would be enough moral fiber in society to recognize the place of the cultural frontiersman and issue to him a fair share of the "energy scrip."

Some members of the committee on Social Trends would probably qualify for the research work in question. From the section on Economic Organization we have: "When the pace of the technological progress is rapid, the business enterprises which grasp the new opportunities for gain, bring to pass mass changes in economic conditions, and unwittingly produce a host of economic problems." Nearly the way Veblen would say it! Under another head: "At best the problem of technological unemployment promises to remain grave in the years to come. One hope for a solution is that inventions of new products will add to employment more rapidly than the invention of labor-saving machines and methods reduce it." The report continues with a recognition of the problem of an absorbing market especially as to the unliklihood of the worker receiving a wage that will enable him to aid materially in this absorption. In,quoting again: "What engineers regard as the slow pace of change in economic organization is due more to absence of unity in will and purpose than to lack of capacity to imagine and carry out alterations."

"In 1917 the country was nearly unanimous in putting victory in the war above

all other aims. No similar revolution could be effected in times of peace, unless a similar agreement in purpose, supplying an equally definite criterion of social values, could be attained. But is it beyond the range of men's capacity some day to take the enhancement of social welfare as seriously as our generation took the winning of a war?" They should have added,"But,not yet."

While the daily press has attacked Technocracy chiefly through ridicule the weekly liberals and a few of the monthlies have run serious articles both pro and con. A single citation of one of the latter must suffice. In January, "Living Age", Charles N. Edge, New York stock broker, economist and mathematician,shows that when men and machines come into serious competition man must be aided by a tax on the machine: e.g. "The disconnection of the telephone system, our most efficient machine, or even a tax of $1.00 a call, would probably eliminate all unemployment in the United States within thirty days. Are we willing to pay the price?" "A tax of 10 cents a K.W.H. or its equivalent, on every type of power would even compel the immigration of ten million laborers within twelve months. Are we willing to pay the price?" If this is the best the guardians of privilege can put up they are certainly up against it.

Industry now buys its machine power at one cent and less per K.W.H. and it would take a tax of about $1.30 per k.W.H. to protect labor at 10 cents per hour. Mr. Edge probably checked his figures before writing for March, "Technocracy Review". In an article"In Defense of the Price System" he says nothing about the general tax on mechanical energy and shows that the automobile has brought the crisis, tracing its effects all the way from the demoralization of the morals of youth to the destruction of one-half of the farmer's market, through the reduction of the animals on the farm. But here he frankly admits a difficulty: "The automobile is so strongly entrenched, and has become so highly desired, that it seems impossible, without civil war, to curb it sufficiently, to restore the balance between production and consumption of farm products". This must be

220
a dismal conclusion to one of the class who usually get what they go after, in the way of tariffs to protect pet industries.

We will close after a short citation from the article, "Men Machines and Money", by Frederick Soddy in March Technocratic Review. "We are agreed that the advances of technology have already rendered existing social institutions and economic systems both obsolete and dangerous, and that the physical needs of the world can be supplied in far greater abundance than at present with short- or working day and week. The assertion that this can only be achieved by abandoning the "price system" is also one of the main planks of the Douglas scheme here".

" I solemnly affirm that our monetary system has cast the British taxpayer an unjust burden. And this will go on until either the burden breaks democracy down or until people insist on knowing more about their money systems than those responsible think good for them. Speaking of the Technocrats I judge from their proposals to abandon the price system and to substitute energy certificates that the Technocrats have not quite got to the bottom of their own money system. Few are prepared to credit that it can be as funny as it really is."

If I understand what is meant by the price system, its teeth are found in the institution of interest. With interest used with the excellent technique of the syndicated banking interests, about to become world wide in their scope,-- with interest, handled with legally established technique on the turnover from highly mechanised industry, there follows the inevitable increase, in geometric ratio, of the burden of debt. From present financial ideals, the only limits to the working of this law are natural resources and markets. We are at the parting of the ways, which alternative will succeed? The kept classes growing in numbers and comforts limited only by the limitations of resources and markets and the working classes starving to the numbers needed; or shall there be a planned order that will allow all to live from the easily supplied abundance.

Paper #22

# THE TRAGEDY OF MARK TWAIN

by

J. Marshall Taxay

[illegible]te Literary Club

March 13, 1933

# THE TRAGEDY OF MARK TWAIN

By J. Marshall Taxay

As a social being Mark Twain was the darling of the gods, in whom he dis- ...lieved. His life was charmed. It was one of the minor compliments when he ... recurrently addressed as "the Messiah of a genuine gladness and joy to ... millions of three continents". All official Washington, from the Cabinet ..., laughed over his works and offered him the choice of a dozen public ...ices. The newspapers proposed that he ought to have the thanks of the na- ... and even suggested his name for the Presidency.

His opinion was asked on every subject ~~by everybody~~. His apartments ... court and traffic rules were modified to let him pass in the street. ... named "the belle of New York" and went about "like a debutante in her ... season".

As an individual, as a sensitive genius, in his inner life, Mark Twain ... the most tragic personality in the history of American letters. Man, to ... was the meanest of all animals and life a grievous mistake. His favorite ...ation of mankind was "the damned human race". He had a way of referring ... private ~~as~~ "god's most elegant invention", not only "damned" but ... "ugly".

His was a blistering contempt for "the Blessings-of-Civilization Trust" ... its wily wares "Glass Beads and Theology", "Maxim Guns and Hymn-Books" ... Rum and Torches of Progress and Enlightenment". His intimate friends ... to little notes saying, "I have been reading the morning paper. I ... every morning, well knowing that I shall find it the usual depravities ... nesses and hypocrisies and cruelties that make up civilization and c... to put in the rest of the day pleading for the damnation of the ...ace".

... to him was a "mere coffee mill" which is powerless to "supply the ... nor turn the crank". "It takes your enemy and your friend, working to ... to hurt you to the heart: the one to slander you, and the other to

. . . news to you. He refers repeatedly to the "plan" to annihilate the
. . . race by withdrawing the oxygen from the air for a period of two min-
. . "ity" he insists "is for the living, envy is for the dead". Concer-
. . . death of his daughter, he avers,"My life is a bitterness, but I
. . . t; for she has been enriched with the most precious of all gifts--
. . . that makes all other gifts mean and poor--death".
"You observe," he writesa friend,"that under a cheerful exterior I hav
. . irit that is angry with men and gives me freely its contempt". His
. . . e was a torment to him. He notes his "daily self-chidings" and in
. . . most ferocious of his humorous tales he is led to slay his won
. . . . In reading "Romola" the only thing that struck him forcibly was
. . . promise with his own conscience.
"Be weak, be water, be characterless, be cheaply persuadable" was the
. . . mand of Deity to the first human beinng on this planet, the only
. . Adam would never be able to disobey. His life was ~~a ceaseless move-~~
. . . , be spent by a consuming passion to write an autobiography which would
. . . ople's hair curl" and get "his heirs and assigns burnt alive" if t
. . to print it within a hundred years of his death. He was given an issue
. . . f on his seventieth birthday. It was "the serious statute of li
. . . --you have served your term, well or ill well, and you are quitt
. . .".
. What caused his bitterness? Basically his despair was the result of
. . . of his creativelife as an artist. It was an ordeal whole-
. . . ic he was himself almost wholly unaware, at whic. . . the most-
. . . morning of life.
This is witnessed by his sense of inadequacy. He was not without ne-
. . . randeur. How else explain his advertising for post-mort. mul-
. . . himself. His quest for corroboration is illustrated in the epi-
. . . Oxford degree. "Although I wouldn't cross the road again for
. . . of the ship that carries me, I am glad to do it for an Amer

THE

". He was delighted by the Oxford gown. "I would dress that way all
if I dared". He always timed his Sunday morning walks on Fifth Ave
about the hour when the churches were out. In his biography kings
and archduchesses play a large part. He is always then dropping
into his stories, his letters, his dinners with them, his calls
, and what magnificent funerals they have.

The sense of insufficiency rises occasionally from the subconscious.
Mine literature is wine, and mine is only water; but everybody
ter". He states his conviction that there are two kinds of litera-
that an author ought to designate his product: "This is written
d", or "This is written for the belly and the members". Of the
storian Mommsen he writes, "Can taken twice for Mommsen. He was
air, but on examination it was found the brains were different".
the riddle, "Why am I like the Pacific Ocean", answers it,
now. I was just askin for information".

He is proud of the structure of logic he had built upon the analy-
sis is a machine, "moved, directed, controlled by natural infle-
ibly". He states that "the rest of my life will be spent in put-
painting and puttying and caulking my priceless possession and in
other way when an inglorious argument or a contrary fact may pre-
vail his theory. "Man" he continues "prides himself; and over
".

Tale of the fox and the sour grapes explains his state of mind.
to those forlorn souls who comfort themselves, saying, that
not exist simply because they themselves have ceased it.

What were the factors that undade Mark Twain, the artist?
childhood home. Twain describes not only his indecent but a whole
American life, when recalling "those wretches of the children, sp-
the floor soaking corn-bread in some gravy left on the bottom of

...pan". An authority of the period asserts that in all his early days ... saw a woman who was not anemic and fretful, a man who was not mos... ...ian, a child who was not stunted from hard labor or undernourish-... "...ling, drinking and murder" we are advised, were common diver-... ... boy, Mark saw almost every week some Ruffian run amuck while on ... ...e ~~often~~ witnessed negroes struck down and killed, men shot and ~~k~~ ... the streets.

... born in a loveless household. The choice of his mother's heart ...sician of Lexington with whom she had quarreled. Her ...t enge- ... John Clemens was a matter of temper rather than affection. More ... years later, when her husband had long been dead, Twain's mother ... over eighty, took a railway journey to a distant city where ther... ...settlers' convention because, among the names of those who were ...ent, she had noticed the name of the lover of her youth.

...'s father was preoccupied with ...ecuniary matters which ... ...t any time with his children. Little ... ...ft ... life, "a ...ith a wayward produce of life". It is hinted ... ...

... ...s grandfather described ... as "high-strung and quarrelsome". Howells ... tells of meeting ... in the country where "... and just been ~~k~~ ... the success of a jumper in ...ngin, down a ...ditter; ... he ... ...s poor stricken thing, how it lay there, its ... ...t on the ... ...th ... ty as he might have given a wounded child". He was so de... ...termined that at twenty-three his hair turned ... in the ~~night~~. ... ...s brother's death. In the ... of family crisis, at four, when ... ...sters is dying; at twelve, after the ... ... of his father, he ... ...d sleep. Often the rest of the family cried in the night to find ... ...ld ... with his eyes sent "flashing with ... ... dark

THE

...s told that Aunt Polly of "Tom Sawyer" is a replica of Twain's ... Aunt Polly, of course, was the incarnation of all taboos. Jane Clemens ...ressed upon her Sam that woman is the inevitable seat of authority ... fount of wisdom. Mrs. Clemens was the essence of old-fashioned Calvinism ...ho perceived the scent of the devil in the smallest expression of ... impulse.

... mind was quicker than her heart. In action she is well termed "the ...e hairbrush". It is said that whenever she ...d to whip Samuel, ...r ed the ater. She defended even Satan, saying that nobody ever ...him.

...ir was in constant rebellion against ... mother understood. He hated school." ...ent with Tom and ... Huck. He was Huckleberry Finn ...ing off to "Jackson's Island" ...t the woods, "I hate them ...ner a rule. I don't ... know, I got to ... all Sunday". Retribution ... her punished him ...gh ... with him. He ... "to fear God and dread the Sunday School".

...etta took ...l on ... hand. The ... ...ctivities diverge ... ... Where still, individuality itself ... ...".

... Twain, of ... rebellic spirit ... buried ... At the ... of ... father, ... into ... "It's all right, Sammy, that's none to ..., but ... I want you to promise me".. "I will ... ...", he ..., "I'll make me go to school". His ... looks ... for a ..., thinking, "No, Sammy, you ... not go to school ... me. Only ... boy". He ... to be ...

...his father.

...ber the funeral, that night, his tendency toward sle... walking mani-
...self, His mother and sister saw the door open and a form in white
... A thought struck Mrs. Clemens, "Sam!", she cried. He answered, but he
... asleep and fell to the floor. He had risen and thrown a sheet
... in his dreams. He walked in his sleep several nights in a row
...t.

...Twain became, and his immediate evincing of ...mmendable traits
... personality. He was to go forth the good boy, to ... the last
... tradition of a family that had once been proud. He was to ... his mi-
... "the mirage of wealth" pursued by his father. To be true, it did not
... to quarrel recklessly with his creed the latter.
...uld be said that the little clergyman's ... first ...
... aside on the night of her death 'to ... the spirit of Tom
... to demand again the ... of his own soul, to ... the
... promise he had given. He could ... of the ... in the
... last presence, when he was ready to ... his "master",
... several nights and then the little boy slept ... soul, ...
... grown accustomed to the new and difficult role of being ...
...r.

... friends in later life Twain ... a tired ... He ...
... was ... not only to ..., and ..., but to ... that
... had ... thus shown a tendency toward ... of ...
... which characterizes his failure as an artist ... branch ... lo-
...ker.

...s was ... to easier in subsequent years for ... to ... the ...
... public ... it wants. The ... out to creative ..., was
... by the ... of his humor, itself a cloak to ... the
... direct and his subconscious, and often equally ... as ...

...is inner genius.

He would redeem his promise to his mother. He would become a subs- ...citizen; he would rise in the wrold; he would be a "success" in the ... understood by a world now dying and then in its full swing.

... Nevada and California he wrote what people liked, what editors ... Repeatedly he pledges himself to write what his inner self dic- ..., ...t delays to produce that for which a large market clamors. He cru... ..., in abject repentance, "I am demaning myself, I am allroing myself. ...ner buffoon. It's ghastly. I can't endure it any longer". But ...tless current of the age and his environment and his friends, brook ...rance.

"I must go on chasing phantoms until I marry, then I am done with ...tare wherewith to please the public. I shall write to please myself. ... so he married. Olivia Clemens was the daughter of a wealthy, cold ...dira. Her father, Jervis Langdon, was a leading citizen. His hou... ...xpenses were $40,000 a year. But he felt he could trust Mark ... his daughter in the style, as people used to say, in which she ...ed. Wasn't Mark already well launched on the road to fame? ... made over $300,000 on "The Innocents Abroad"? Was he not getting ...old for a single evning's lecture engagement? And was he not living ... debt?

Olivia was to continue the role of his mother in turning him into ...maker, a compromiser, a solid citizen, . He would continue ... to ... ...e did. His household expenses were often over $[illegible] a year. ... he was alone, in later life, it cost him over $50 a day to live.

Thus Mark Twain the poet, the sensitive artist was muzzled by ... man who merchandises literature, the clown, the idol of his co... ...s.

A ... whose innermost convictions are all in ... self, in

... r of his soul, habitually modified thoughts and tri...d phrases to ... nuoyance to some rich bigamte, some influential priest, some fool- ...luster. What a pity, the poor furstrated child destined to become ... creative personality, a swan born among geese who never learned ...n was and had to live the goose's life himself.

... writes in 1939 "For several years I have been intending to get wri... ...rint as soon as I could afford it. At last I can afford it, and ... the pot-boiler pen away. What I have been waiting ... a chance to ...ook without reserves--a book which should take account of no one's ..., and no one's prejudices, opinions, beliefs, hopes, illusions, and ... book which should say my say, right out of my heart, in the plain- ...e and without limitation of any sort, I judged that that would be ...mible luxury, heaven on earth."It is under way, now, and it is a ... intellectual drunk".

... book was "The Mysterious Stranger", the most ... bitter, sublimest, ... most despairing books produced in America.

... a cruel toll the genius whom he betrayed exacted from him in ... chilling, despondent view of life as an endless tragedy. What ... brutal pessimism but an attempt to justify himself in his own eyes ... failure to be true to his innermost personality.

"Sometimes my feelings are so hot that I have to take pen and put it ... to keep them from setting the place on fire." What intimate nothing- ... thought...Shapere could not create. He was a nothing, and could ... create". "Anybody that knows anything knows that there was not a ... that has ever lived that was worth living". "I hate man with ... all I live two more years I will put an end to it all. I will kill ... plan for exterminating humanity by withdrawing all the light ... earth for two minutes. What were all these attacks upon life but ... ations of the failure of the artist in himself?

THE

What is the defeat of Mark Twain at bottom if not the symbol of the life ina land where "by the Goodness of God, we have those three kindly precious things: freedom of conscience, freedom of speech, and place never to practice either" ?

350

Paper #23

# IN DEFENSE OF THE LAWYER

By,

LEWIS R. SUTIN

# IN DEFENSE OF THE LAWYER.

There must be some difficulty with the legal profession. The progressive decadence of the bar as a force in public affairs is becoming a popular theme amongst newspaper editors and magazine writers and many lawyers themselves. Otherwise, there would be no need for a defense. But like all professions, like all business, like all governments, the legal profession has its good as well as its evil side. Today, we speak of the medical profession in terms of quacks and quackeries. There is the goat gland expert and artist of Milford, Kansas as a conspicuous example. Of the ministry, we say,"Primma Donnas of the Pulpit", oftenm referred to as Jazz Evangelists and Modern Gomorrahs. Had not the depression been delayed several years, epithets would have been hurled at the professorial class whose institutions of education have already been villified by educators themselves. The mere mention of business calls up every unethical practice known to modern codes. We use the word government synonymous with politican and graft. So to call the lawyer an ambulance chaser, a shyster, or a crook is not to make of him an outstanding pawn on the chessboard of American life.

I should not be so foolish as to deny the evils now existing in the legal profession. The group known as "ambulance chasers" play a great part in disrupting the faith of the people in the law with its train of perjury, subornation, chicanery and fraud. The most degrading part of the picture is, that some of our supposedly most outstanding men and oftimes ex-judges participate in this lucrative field. The young lawyer just out of school, imbued with the ethics of his practice and with the dignity of his profession is disheartened. His road is an arduous one. He finds the personal injury field a veritable gold mine. If the occasion arises, being as humanas the average

242

public now asks of the young lawyer, not is he capable, but is he honest? On the other hand, many prominent members of the x bar, having been called in as associate counsel with the ambulance chaser, refuse to indict that class. As a result, they are permitted to flourish.

Then there are lawyers who are without the proper legal training--men never educated in the books, oftimes called "shysters". These we usually find around the jails ready to take the last dime from a x man brought in for drunkedness, vagrancy, or some other small offense. They counsel the unfortunates amongst us--the bootlegger, the prostitute, the vagrant, the petty thief. They are in the most part, sly and treacherous. They make promises which they know they cannot keep, but they always x get paid in advance.

There are lawyers who will sue for the purpose of making a fee whether or not it is for the best interests of their clients. There are some who can influence judges and statesmen and politicians for favors. There are some who are simply poor lawyers in that they lack the mental capacity x so necessary for so learned a profession.

Finally, there are the bar associations which are so ineffective. I here exlcude the American and State bar associations composed of the aristocracy of the profession, who strive year in and year out to preserve its dignity. My antagonism is directed against local organizations of which our own is a typical example. It meets onee a month. About ten or fifteen ...embers are present--the majority being the young men in the first or second years of their practice. The business transacted briefly, is an oratorical contest for high school students, the appointment of committees never called upon to report--the report of a deceased member and plans for a eulogy and attendance at his funeral. The deceased is usually a member who never attended

At such meetings a fine representation of the members are present. Of all the evils existing about them, the only one which they seem to find interest in, is the death of a member.

To be sure, the great inroads made by business in the law has created some of these evils. The unparalleled rise of title and trust companies and life insurance departments, the practice of retail merchants associations, the development of house agencies, collection agencies, abstract offices, have all tended to push the lawyer back into so limited a field that evil practices naturally broke out. The great rise of personal injury cases, due to the automobile, the great stimulation of divorce cases due to the disintegration of family life, the flood of petty cases flowing out of liquor laws innundating United States courts, have all done much to discredit the profession. But the important thing to note is that these are causes foreign to the inherent nature of the profession, causes to which the lawyer has been an innocent, but necessary party.

In the face of this tide of spreading adverse criticism, the lawyer will stand like rock. He will admit his errors, but he will say that they are a result of the frailties of human nature, the failure of our economic system, the asinine laws passed, the great social trends. But he will point out that in moments of American history when the crisis was one of a political and legal nature, he met the issue with an intelligence, remarkable in its liberality and foresight. "For example, at the close of the revolutionary war, it is probably that the lawyer was the most heartily disliked and thoroughly distrusted person in the new republic. The colonial settlers were a nation of debtors upon whom it was ~~thus~~ supposed that the lawyers preyed in their capacity as collectors. But notwithstanding this great unpopularity, the historic problems which first arose-----were creative political problems for the legally trained mind. The turn to the colonial law-

Madison as the early Supreme Court is bound up with John Marshall." In the structural development of the country after 1812, the names f Webster, Calhoun and Clay are intricately interwoven. No other eriod has demanded or developed more able, original or distinguished lawyers and thinkers.

Today, represents the climax of an age which has been surrendered to industrialists and financiers. In the great program of constructing America industrially, the lawyer has not been called into the first places of leadership. His work has been important, but not heralded to all parts of the country. Thru the supreme court, he has been able to weave a force sufficient to influence in part the trend of the times. In the mad rush for economic supremacy, when individual liberties are trampled upon, the upreme court has remained cool and dispassionate. Freedom of the ress is an inviolate gift. Yellow dog contracts are a menace to labor. Mob rule in our courts will not be toleruted. Every poor person is entitled to adequate representation.

For the last 10 or 12 years, an organization known as the American Law Institute composed of judges, lawyers and law professors, has been working on the Restatement of the common law. Several fields of thut law have been completed already. "Criminal Law Justice in this country is a national disgrace," said its director William Draper Lewis, "and its improvement depends upon the responsibility assumed by the lawyers". In its code, the institutd changed the common law theory that a prosecutor or judge could not comment on the silence of a suspected criminal for his failure to take the stand and testify. On the common law right of an officer to kill in effecting an arrest, the results were discouraging. The council favored curtailing this power, but after a spirited debate of the American Bar Association, the right given at common law was extended. Nevertheless, the work of this institutd, in restating and clarifying the law marks one of the most unigue

islatures and the public would educate themselves in the necessity of these laws, a great deal of the venom poured on the legal profession would soon disappear.

The work of the American Bar Association in the development of our legal history and in the preservation of the dignity of the law and lawyers, represents the essence of good in its field. Its preamble reads," Its object shall be to advance the science of jurisprudence, promote the administration of justice and uniformity of legislation and of judicial decision throughout the nation, uphold the honor of the profession of the law, and encourage cordial intercourse among the members of the American Bar." In the field of crime, every device known to the legal mind is brought to the fore to meet the problem--a federal criminologist with the department of justice to gather the most advanced thought -- medico-legal committees to determine the latest work of psychiatrists and doctors in the prevention of crime--committee on mercenary crime to cooperate with the American sociological Society, the American economic association, the social science research council in the study -- committee on prisons, and many ~~xxx~~ others which are factors instrumental in leading toward more sane criminal laws.

In the field of legal education and admission to the bar, it has been instrumental in bringing about closer contact between the law student and the members of the bar. It has urged stringent academic work, bar and examination rules. It is now forcing a course of legal ethics in the curricula of every recognized law school. One of the finest contributions to American public life, fostered by the American Bar, is the work of legal aid organizations which serve those people unable to pay for the services rendered. Said the Chairman of the Legal Aid Committee in his report, "During the past year, legal aid offices of this country have handled more than 200,000 cases. It is very important

denied his day in court or the equal protection of the laws." Only 69 legal aid societies in almost as many cities are now existant. Indiana is a conspicuous absentee.

"The most interesting new development in recent years is that of the "Legal Aid Clinic". It is believed that if law students engage in legal aid work in a legal aid office under the supervision of competent lawyers, they will learn more than in any other available way about the actual practice of the law, and it is hoped that such training may induce to the inculcation of high ethical standards." The most notable experiment is that of the University of California law school. After 2 years of regular school work, every law student in his third year works in rotation in the legal aid clinic. He interviews clients, he seeks to diagnose their legal problems and to give correct legal advice. If court proceedings are necessary, he drafts papers, prepares evidence, interviews witnesses and goes into court as a junior to a regularly admitted member of the bar. At each stage, his work is checked by the director of the clinic who is a member of the bar.

In every field of legal endeavor, patent law, public utility law, ~~xxfix~~ uniform laws, international law, Citizenship, commerce, jurisprudence and law reform, and many others too numerous to mention, the American bar association is straining every effort to build a strong legal structure. It helps to draft uniform laws and introduce them into legislatures for adoption. The influence it has exerted can be felt in the State of Indiana by reference to eleven uniform acts passed among which can be found such wholesome legislation as the Aeronautics Act, the Negotiable Instruments Act, the Sales Act, the Stock Transfer Act and the Motor Vehicle Act. When we realize that Indiana has taken advantage of less than 1/4 the best recognized law in America, we can readily assert that the defects in our legal system are not due to the failure of the lawyers but to the lack of interest of the leg-

other agencies in defense of the layer. Those I have mentioned are not carried on the front pages of our periodicals and newspapers. Their influence is of a hidden nature. So are the other agencies. In the law, as in other fields, the many suffer for the acts of the few. One corrupt judge, one experience with a dishonest lawyer, and an entire profession is damned. So it is with medicine. So it is with the ministry. The great injustice done these professions is that although the people were directly responsible for the social conditions under which these evils could flourish, and made possible certain unethical practices, they openly criticize those caught in the maelstrom. In some respects, the legal profession has simply kept in step with the march of time. In an age reeking with money, the lawyer has been no more reprehensible than any other class in his desire to cash in. In a country which demands personal conduct laws, the development of a shyster is no more objectionable than that of the individual 100% American who violates the law with ~~xxx~~ delight to test his influence with the city judge. The great corporation counsel who lobby, gain senatorial favors, win important cases, are simply part of a much more base and inhuman economic system. The first person to whom the American public runs when in difficulty is the lawyer, in hopes that he may be sufficiently clever and influential to succeed in the evasion of a just obligation. So in the last analysis, the furor leveled against the legal profession is unwarranted. It should directed against the 20th century--the change in civilization--an uncultured country. → (over)

Peter the great, on his tour of self-education thru out Europe, marked with astonishment upon his visit to England, the great number and influence of the English Bar. He said that in his whole empire, there were only two lawyers and on his return, he expected to execute both of them. The contrast between the progress and history of the Russian and the English peoples in the

765

:luence of the bar. All civilization is now involved in a rapid .r.cess of social transition, more profound and more portentious it may be, than the Renaissance, the Reform or the French and American revolutions. With the failure of Industrial leadership, the course of history is about to repeat itself and call to the front ranks of American progress, the practical, analytical foresight of the bar.

Paper #24

# MOTORING THROUGH EUROPE

John B. Wisely

Paper read before the Terre Haute Literary Club, April 3, 1933

When I was a boy in the country school, we used to discuss, in our debating club, the question, whether there is more pleasure in pursuit or possession. I think we never decided the question conclusively, but certainly there is great pleasure in planning a trip abroad. The frequent conferences with one's traveling companion, with steamship agents and the conductors of parties, the examination of many beautiful advertising folders and guide books, extolling the beauties and wonders of the trip, the constant reading of books of travel, telling about the advantages of the trip as a means of Education, and exciting one's curiosity about places and peoples to be seen, raise one's hopes high and the joy of anticipation is keen. This is especially true if one has never been across the great waters; so much so, that if one just planned a trip to Europe or to the Holy Land but never really went, it would be well worthwhile. And the most wonderful thing about it is that one can plan such a trip, no matter whether he is to be gone three weeks or three months, so that he will know in advance just where he will be every day and every night while he is gone. The schedule will be followed to the dot, without missing a train, a boat, or a connection, unless, perhaps, he is too slow in boarding a train, as some of our party were at Ostend, Belgium.

Also to one who has never been across, the ocean voyage, on one of the great liners, like the Montcalm or the Empress of Britain of the Canadian Pacific, is an adventure, a great delight if the weather be fine and the water peaceful, as it was on our trip over; a great experience, but not so pleasant, if Old Neptune is in a fury, as he was on our way back. One of those great ships, like the Empress of Britain, is a palace afloat. It does not mean much in giving one an idea of her size to say that she is 42,500 tons, gross register, 758 ft. long, and 97 ft. wide, but when one considers that she could not be set down in Wabash Avenue at all because she would not go in between the buildings, and that if she could be, she would extend more than two of our ordinary blocks in length, and that she is eight stories or decks high, one begins to realize something of her size. When one stands beside her she looms up before him like a skyscraper.

Inside she is a palace of comfort, convenience, and luxury too, with her beautiful wood work and decorations, furnishings, draperies, carpets, rugs, and pictures. She has baths, swimming pool, gymnasium, barber shop, stores, elevators, state rooms with beds, as well furnished as rooms in hotels, not just narrow berths. Her lounges, smoking rooms, bars, dining rooms, and broad decks are the last word in comfort, convenience, and elegance. Aboard one of these master ships, one will find all the comforts which he can enjoy in our best hotels.

Through the courtesy of our Travel Guild leader, who arranged it with the officers of the vessel, we were permitted to visit the culinary department, where all the food is prepared and the

provisions for the trip are stored. There are great ranges and ovens where food is cooked. They bake all their bread and pastries. Much of the work of the kitchen is done by machinery, machines for washing dishes, peeling and preparing vegetables and fruits, etc. One revolving machine with a large container, full of strong soap suds, shot, and discarded victrola needles, washes the silver, and the ship owns 500 pounds worth of it. There are great cold storage rooms full of all kinds of vegetables, meats, and perishables, and there are great bins of flour, sugar, etc. It would seem that they had enough provisions aboard to feed a city of good size for a week.

Another day we were dressed in coveralls and climbed down many iron ladders into the very bowels of the ship to see the machinery that carries the great vessel from Liverpool to Quebec in five days. The immense engines, with furnaces much like the great furnaces of an oil refinery plant, move like clock work, and are kept clean and shining. They burn oil, and they take aboard and store enough of it in the great tanks before they leave Canada to last them the round trip. There are all kinds of wonderful devices, which I did not fully understand, for measuring speed, temperature, depth of water, etc. This was the farthest under water that I have ever been. They told us when we were down there, that we were just 36 ft. below the kitchen, and that when the vessel was heavily loaded, one-third of it was under water.

When one becomes familiar with the proportions and weight of such a boat and then sees her tossed up and down, rolling from side to side like a drunken sailor, bobbing up and down like a cork on a turbulent pond, as we did on our voyage home, until

provisions for the trip are stored. There are great ranges and ovens where food is cooked. They bake all their bread and pastries. Much of the work of the kitchen is done by machinery, machines for washing dishes, pealing and preparing vegetables and fruits, etc. One revolving machine with a large container, full of strong soap suds, shot, and discarded victrola needles, washes the silver, and the ship owns 500 pounds worth of it. There are great cold storage rooms full of all kinds of vegetables, meats, and perishables, and there are great bins of flour, sugar, etc. It would seem that they had enough provisions aboard to feed a city of good size for a week.

Another day we were dressed in coveralls and climbed down many iron ladders into the very bowels of the ship to see the machinery that carries the great vessel from Liverpool to Quebec in five days. The immense engines, with furnaces much like the great furnaces of an oil refinery plant, move like clock work, and are kept clean and shining. They burn oil, and they take aboard and store enough of it in the great tanks before they leave London to last them the round trip. There are all kinds of wonderful devices, which I did not fully understand, for measuring speed, temperature, depth of water, etc. This was the farthest under water that I have ever been. They told us when we were down there, that we were just 36 ft. below the kitchen, and that when the vessel was heavily loaded, one-third of it was under water.

When one becomes familiar with the proportions and weight of such a boat and then sees her tossed up and down, rolling from side to side like a drunken sailor, bobbing up and down like a cork on a turbulent pond, as we did on our voyage home, until

everything that is loose on her has to be fastened down, the side-boards have to be put up on the tables to keep the dishes from sliding off, when he has that queer feeling while sitting at breakfast when he sees his ham and eggs or his cup of coffee go sliding off to the other side of the table, and he finds himself unable to walk without staggering and catching hold of railings and other comparatively stationary things, and that feeling of loneness and utter emptiness in the pit of his stomach comes over him, it is then, I say, that he realizes fully the mighty force of wind and wave, and how puny, weak, and insignificant are even the mightiest creations of man when compared with the works of God.

Embarkation is a scene of great activity and interest. For hours before the vessel sails, all is hustle and bustle. Trucks and taxis rush back and forth to the dock; great crowds of people swarm all over the place and on board the ship to say farewell and bon voyage to their friends who are embarking for foreign ports, and hundreds of onlookers watch the men loading the vessel and preparing for the trip. Great cranes hoist large boxes, trunks, even automobiles, high in the air, above the topmost deck of the ship, and let them down gently into the hold, where men store them away. When the time for sailing arrives, the gongs sound out and the stewards pace the decks, warning all who are not sailing to leave the vessel, the confusion and excitement are at highest pitch. The band is playing, people on the dock are shouting to friends on board, and hundreds of bolts of many-colored paper ribbon are thrown on the decks of the ship, where anyone who can

catches them. The people on the dock hold tight to the loose ends of these ribbons and soon the great vessel is tied to the dock by thousands of these fragile cables. As the great monster moves slowly away from the dock, the people aboard allow the ribbons to unroll slowly from the bolt. The idea is to see who can hold on longest to his friends. It is a pretty sight, but I suppose every embarkation is different from the others.

When we were well out from Montreal on the broad bosom of the St. Lawrence, I began to think that my knowledge of geography, gained when a boy in the country school, was a little one-sided. I had heard much about the Father of Waters and the great Orinoko and Amazon of South America, but I was surprised when I found out that it took us two full days of twenty-four hours each and then eight hours more to reach the Straits of Belle Isle and catch a glimpse of the Atlantic Ocean; and that then we were only four days on the Atlantic until we landed in Glasgow, Scotland; nor did I know, that in places, this great river widens out into a veritable lake or little ocean, so that our vessel was entirely out of sight of land.

Life on one of these great floating palaces is quite fascinating. The table is excellent and the service all that could be desired. These Canadian Pacific boats are all owned by Canadians, but they are all manned by English captains and crews because they are more polite. One has every convenience that he would have in a city or a first-class hotel, and some that he could not have, like salt-water baths. One lounges in his deck

chair and reads or chats with friends. He walks the decks for exercise, or engages in a game of cards, shuffleboard, quoits, etc., for amusement. He enjoys listening to an orchestra that plays no jazz, and he may dance to its music to his heart's content. Every day at eleven and four o'clock, he is served tea on deck, English style. At night, there are always concerts, picture shows, community sings, or some form of entertainment, and there are church services for both Catholics and Protestants on Sunday. At the close of all these entertainments and services, and at any other time on the slightest provocation or excuse, we sing "God Save the King," which I rather like.

Once off the boat on the little lighter, which looks like a midget as it bobs up and down beside the great Montcalm, one is soon at the docks and railway station of Greenock in the bonny land of Scotland. The four days on the ocean have been pleasant. No land in sight, beautiful blue water everywhere, stirred by the breeze into long rolling waves that reflect the sunlight. We had a good view of an immense iceberg as we came out into the ocean through the Straits of Belle Isle. In this region icebergs cause no little uneasiness to mariners and passengers in stormy or foggy weather, but we were favored with clear weather. Sometimes as one looks out over the vast expanse to the horizon, which comes down to meet the ocean on all sides, and of which I never tire, he will see a column of water, which locates the position of a whale, but none came near our vessel. This is all verypleasant. Nevertheless, when one goes on deck early in the morning of the seventh day, sees the green hills and fields of Ireland on his left, and the gray mountains of

Scotland looming up on his right, he experiences a new thrill. The ship is soon plowing her way up the Firth of Clyde with the beautiful hills and low mountains of Scotland, green to the top, on both sides. The landscape is dotted with neat little towns and farm houses, gleaming white in the sunlight, and numerous flocks of beautiful white sheep, feeding on the sides of the hills and in the valleys. Sheep everywhere in Scotland. I saw them many times afterwards, beautiful white, clean sheep, with kind, bare faces. I saw them on the hills and mountains, in the pastures, and I saw the shepherds and their dogs driving flocks of them along the highways. These shepherd dogs are of almost human intelligence. They round up the stragglers and keep the sheep in a bunch. When an automobile approaches, with bared fangs, snarls and growls, they crowd the sheep off to the side of the road until the machine passes. They seem to understand everything the shepherd says, and when crossroads are reached, they know whether the sheep are to go to the right, to the left, or straight ahead, and they are right there on the job to guide them. I shall never forget the beautiful sheep of Scotland, and I can understand now why my father always kept a small flock on his farm here in Indiana.

On our way from Greenock up to Glasgow, a distance of eighteen miles, we were introduced to the European railway, quite different from ours, and in many respects inferior in convenience and management. Their trains make just as good time, but they are not so heavy, and their roadbeds, perhaps due to the rugged nature of the country, for one is never out of sight of mountains in Europe, are

not so smooth and even. Their passenger cars in the United Kingdom are divided into comoartments, accommodating six to a dozen people, with doors opening from them right out upon the station platforms. There is no way of passing from one compartment to another. If one wishes to change from one to another, or to go to the dining car, he must wait until the train stops at a station, step out on the platform, and walk to the other compartment or diner.

Afterwards, on the continent, we struck a different arrangement of the compartments. The passenger cars have narrow aisles, extending the full length of the car, on one side only. One enters the car at the rear or front end, as in this country, and passes along until he comes to his compartment. The compartments all open out into this narrow aisle. One may pass along these aisles to his diner, or the full length of the train without going outside. This arrangement is much more convenient, but not so exclusive as the British.

There are racks for baggage over the seats in these compartments, and it is amazing to see how much of it and what big bags and even small trunks can be stored away in them, but one must attend to this himself or hire a porter to do it for him. No baggage is checked on these trains. If your trunk is too large or too heavy to go into your compartment, you must express it. Nor does one have any assistance in getting on or off these trains.. There are no porters or brakemen or conductors standing around to direct him or to boost him or his baggage up the steps. It is every fellow for himself. The cars are all marked, "Naples," "Rome," "Genoa," etc. One buys his ticket in the station; shows

it to the man at the gate; makes his way out to the train; boards it; and finds a seat in a compartment. If he is unfortunate enough to get on the wrong train or into the wrong car, it is just too bad. Nor are there any porters or brakemen or conductors to call the stations at which the train stops. One must know where he is going, how to get there, and when to get off. If one rides past his destination, he must just get off the train as soon as he discovers his mistake, buy a ticket, and take the next train back. All this for an American who speaks no language but his own is quite confusing and nerve-wrecking. As for ourselves, we really had no trouble at all for we were with a party, conducted by a courier or guide, who attended to all the business side of our trip for us. We could enjoy the discomfiture of otheres in whose predicament we should have been out for our guide.

The accommodations and service on dining cars are much inferior to ours. I have always enjoyed a meal on one of our diners. The view from the spacious windows, the clean linen, the serviceone receives are all that could be desired. I always spend much more time in a dining car than is necessary to eat my meal. It is a kind of ceremonial with me. On the continent, however, while their diners are arranged as ours are, one misses the large windows and the clean linen and the excellent service we have here. There is no leisure or ceremony there. The idea seems/ to be to rush people through the meal as quickly as possible and make room for others. There is no menu. One has no choice. He takes what the waiters serve him and all are served alike. The waiters are Italian or French men, though once in France, on the

way from Paris to Cherbourg, we were served by women. Waiters wear no uniforms; they are often sweaty and none too clean looking. They pass through the aisles with great platters of food and serve it direct to the passenger's plate. No food is put on the table and it is not served in courses. Those occupying the inside seats at the tables often hold up their plates so that the waiters can put the food on them as they pass rapidly down the aisle. There is no drink served with the meal. One can get coffee or wine if he pays extra for it, and he has to beg for water. There is no order or dignity about the service. All is confusion, noise, hustle, and bustle, a kind of short-order, slap-stick, McPeak style of service. Quality of food! Well, here as everywhere else on the continent, except perhaps in Germany, some of it is palatable, very good indeed, the fruits, grapes especially, and oranges, are always good, but there are many queer concoctions, not very palatable to one brought up on a Hoosier diet, at least. Here is a sample of one meal on a diner in Italy:

1. A large platter already on the table and on it a piece of musk mellon, potato salad, sliced tomatoes, pickled green beans, olives, bread and butter.

2. Then the waiter brought some kind of prepared cold meat, with a lot of gelatin-like stuff on it, which looked like rosin.

3. Then another waiter came along with a hot egg omelet.

4. Other waiters came along with roast beef, mashed potatoes, meat gravy, and peas.

5. Then for dessert we had grapes and pears.

But the railroad is not the only means of travel in Europe. One may go by motor; by dog-cart in Belgium or Holland, carts drawn sometimes by one dog, sometimes by two, accompanied by the music of their lusty barking; by ox-cart in Germany and Switzerland; or on bicycle anywhere. One is struck immediately in Europe with the small number of motor cars, compared with the number we have, and the almost universal use of the bicycle. We rode all day, one Sunday, from early in the morning until late in the afternoon, on our way from Glasgow, round the northern end of the famous lake, Loch Lomond, largest body of fresh water in the United Kingdom, twenty-five miles long and ten miles wide, beautiful, surrounded by beautiful hills and mountains up to 3000 ft. green to the top, dotted with flocks of beautiful white sheep and herds of fine cattle, summer playground of Britain, with its many camps, bathing beaches, and summer hotels, down to Edinburg. I was struck with the scarcity of cars in Glasgow, so I decided to count the cars I saw on this trip. I counted all the cars I saw that day, onthe road and parked in villages and towns, 249 in all. The average citizen does not own a car in Europe. Here workmen ride to the factory or mine in their own cars. There they walk, ride the trams or busses, or go on bicycles. Around every factory or mill in this country, we find great numbers of cars parked; there you will see about the same number of bicycles.

The common people, farmers, laborers, clerks, etc. live very simply over there. They do not have telephones, radios, nor do they use many labor-saving devices. We passed through

these countries when they were harvesting their grain and hay. I could count all mowing machines, reapers, and tractors that I saw on the fingers of my hands. One is surprised at the primitime methods employed in farm work especially. Grain is still cut with the old reaping hook or sickle, sometimes a crude form of cradle. Grass is cut with a scythe and raked up with a hand rake. Of course the farms are small. On the continent everywhere oxen are still used in all farm work. A team of horses is a rare sight, and I saw only three tractors on farms in the entire trip. In Germany and Switzerland, in lumbering in the Black Forest, etc., they work their milk cows, and in all these countries women work in the fields, even in the harvesting and hardest work. In one place in Switzerland, women were threshing out wheat with old-fashioned flails. They had a canvas spread down on the ground; the grain was put on it, and beaten with these flails.

In the city of Rome, Mussolini is making a grand boulevard from the beautiful War Memorial clear down to the Coliseum. He is tearing down buildings five and six stories high and in some places excavating to a depth of thrity feet. They are uncovering the remains of many old buildings, courts, forums, statuary, relics, and works of art, buried there for ages. An elephant's tusk was found in one place at a depth of seventy feet. All this work is done by hand, with pick and shovel, and the dirt and debris are all hauled away in two-wheeled carts drawn by a horse or a mule. I asked our special guide there in Rome if they ever used any machinery in work of that kind. He

replied that they did, and pointed over to some men who were using a little portable track with small cars on it that would hold about two wheel barrow loads of dirt, which they would fill and push along with their hands, just to move the dirt short distances.

But the bicycle is used universally in all these countries for business and for pleasure. There are wide spaced reserved in cities and especially at the beaches for the free parking of wheels. Often in Belgium and Holland, especially, there are special bicycle paths, paved, at the side of the highway. The young, the old, and children ride. Sometimes a man and his wife, and a baby or two all ride on one tandem. They do their marketing and their courting on wheels. It is a common sight to see a young couple, riding along together, holding hands, or with the girl's hand on the young man's shoulder and perhaps his hand on her shoulder. And the bicycle has the right of way in these countries, as does the pedestrian. When there is no special bicycle path, the bicyclist rides right along the right-hand side of the paved highway, and he looks neither to the right nor to the left. If a motorist ever strikes a bicycle, it is just too bad for the motorist. There are no questions asked as to who was at fault. The motorist is expected to look out for the bicyclist and the pedestrian. He must toot his horn at every turn and at every street crossing in cities. In a city like Brussels and Rome, where there are a great many motor cars, there is a constant toot, toot, tooting, day and night. Drivers seem to like to toot their horns and make as much noise as possible. I suppose one gets used to it in time, but it is hard

on the nerves of one unaccustomed to it, and if one's hotel happens to be on a busy corner, as is often the case, he frequently has a hard time getting to sleep.

We traveled by motor through Scotland, England, Belgium, Holland, Germany, and Switzerland. Then through Italy and France we traveled by rail. I much prefer the motor. We had a party of sixteen through Scotland and England. We used a large motor bus, much like these large busses that pass through Terre Haute. It had seats for twenty-six, so that we had plenty of room for ourselves and our baggage. We had a chauffeur whose only duty was to drive and care for the car. Then we had a courier or guide, a Mr. Fairchild, who was a graduate of Oxford, a very delightful young man, who knew all about the geography, history, literature, and traditions of the British Isles. It was his duty to attend to all the business side of our trip. He paid all hotel bills, admissions to museums, castles, cathedrals, etc. Each one of us had a hand bag, which we carried ourselves. We each had also a large bag or small trunk which we did not touch. The courier managed them. We would drive up in state to our hotel, where we were to spend the night, and all file into the office or lobby. There our rooms were assigned us, and in about fifteen minutes after we reached them, our heavy baggage would be brought up. We were not bothered with tips to porters, bell boys, or waiters, in fact, we were told not to give any. Our courier attended to all that. We were told when the party would leave in the morning and at what time to have our heavy baggage out in the hall just outside our doors. All we had to do was to be on time with our hand bags and board our bus. In addition

our courier answered all our questions, and lectured to us in the bus as he pointed out places and objects of interest as we drove along. About a half hour before we reached Edinburg, Chester, or Kenilworth Castle, he would tell us what we would see there and something of the history of the place and the traditions and stories associated with it.

We found the members of our party agreeable, and for the most part interesting traveling companions. It makes travel much more delightful to have pleasant company, and the people of such a group get very well acquainted in three weeks. Not the least pleasant part of it to Mr. Turman and me was that we happened to be the only teachers in the party. We traveled with people from as far east as New York, Long Island, New Jersey; asfar south as Nashville, Tennessee, New Orleans and Texas; as far west as Omaha, Nebraska; and as far north as Canada. We also had a very delightful and interesting little Chinese lady from Shanghai in our company. A very interesting Jewish gentleman from New York's East Side, whose name was Lewis Kasnover, but whom, by some queer freak of chance, we all called "Jimmy," was the life of the party, and with his wit, kept most of us in a good humor nearly all the time.

Travel by motor has many advantages over travel by rail. The roads through Europe are all well paved and the motor is much cleaner. One gets the air and the sunshine. It is much less tiresome with less wear and tear on the nerves. No rushing to catch trains, or transferring to busses or taxis, lugging baggage to and from hotels. One gets much closer to the people

and life of a country traveling by motor. He sees much more of the country, stops wherever he wishes, to gather some heather or get a cool drink of water from a spring or mountain stream. He drives through the more beautiful parts of cities instead of the slums and factory districts, and he gets into the quaint little towns and villages with their narrow streets and interesting old buildings, and strange people with their odd manners and customs. Our trip as far as Italy was in motor bus; then through Italy and France we traveled by rail; so we had an excellent opportunity to see the advantages and disadvantages of the two methods of travel. Of course one can cover much more ground by rail, but he misses much of the beautiful mountain scenery and sees only the large cities, where he stops. Traveling by rail, one would likely not see the interesting Scotch funerals, with the women riding in automobiles behind the hearse, and the men all in black, long-tailed coats, wearing derby hats, walking in groups on either side of it; or the odd Italian funeral with the hearse the only vehicle in the procession, the relatives and friends walking behind. The relatives hold to long, black cords, attached to the hearse, as if trying to hold their loved one back from the grave. One also gets a better view of farming operations, the canals and picturesque windmills of Holland, many interesting ruins, like Kenilworth Castle, and many historic spots, like Sir Walter Scott's old home, Abbotsford, in the country, Melrose Abbey, in the quaint old town of Melrose, with its narrow winding streets, and interesting little shops.

One is surprised to find no weeds in the fields and along

the roads of Europe. There is no wasteland, grown over with rank weeds. When the grain is cut from the ground, it does not grow up in ragweed, and there are no tall horse-weeds growing along the streams and railroads. The farms are small and closely cultivated, and wherever the ground is not cultivated, there is grass. I can assure you this is very gratifying to a hay fever victim, and I escaped without my annual attack.

One is struck too by the absence of flies. The houses and hotels are not screened. I did not see a screen door or window from the time I left Canada until my return. One sees a few flies now and then, but in their markets, their meats, cheese, vegetables are not protected from flies, and nearly all the hotels, especially in Italy, have open terraces, porches, verandas, many of them with gardens attached, where they serve all their meals when the weather permits. I cannot account for this for their sanitary regulations and restrictions seem to be no more stringent than ours. I asked a hotel manager in Sorento about the absence of weeds and flies in Europe, and he intimated, in a very polite way, that perhaps when we Americans are as old and as civilized as the peoples of Europe, we would not have weeds and flies.

However, they are not free from pests over there. Some travelers in Italy are driven to distraction with fleas, though strange to say, we were not bothered with them at all. I heard no member of our party complain of fleas. But I cannot say so much for mosquitoes. We had them in swarms at night, big ones, with mighty voices. They do not bother in the daytime, but they

make the night hideous. We struck them first in Venice. I knew we were in for it the moment I stepped into our room in the hotel. Each bed was covered with a canopy of mosquito bar, held aloft by a framework attached to the bed, and falling down to the floor on all sides. The room resembled a bridal chamber. It would seem to be good protection, but alas! there were nearly always some of the "pesky" things in under the mosquito bar. I suppose they would slip in when the beds were made. Under the circumstances, there was nothing to do but to get up, turn on the light, and murder every one of them. Even then there were usually some on the outside with such lusty voices that sleep was impossible for me, for I can't go to sleep if I can hear one singing, even though I know he can't get to me. Why they do not screen their homes and hotels against these pests is more than I can see. It is an example of the lack of initiative, enterprise, or business methods that one sees so frequently all over Europe. It seems odd to see a man going about the streets on foot, at dusk, with a light on the end of a long pole, in Brussels or even in parts of London. He is lighting the street gas lights. The streets are all lighted in these cities with electricity, but why they keep up these gas lights is more than I can see. Perhaps it is out of deference for an old custom.

Things are pretty well standardized on the continent too. One tires with the monotony of it. For example, one knows absolutely just what he is going to have for breakfast anywhere on the continent every morning: Hard round rolls, so hard that one cannot bite them, certainly not with store teeth. It requires

quite a bit of muscle, but the only way to eat them is to break them up into pieces small enough to get into the mouth, then butter them with what they call "sweet butter," that is, butter with no salt in it. In this way, with plenty of chewing and saliva one can manage to get them down, especially if he uses plenty of marmalade on them. Sometimes they furnish as many as three kinds of marmalade with these rolls. Then one has very poor coffee with plenty of hot milk, not cream, to disguise the flavor of the coffee. Sometimes with the coffee, rolls and butter, especially in Italy, one has an orange, a pear, or some grapes. I was glad to get back home with my store teeth in tact; but one member of our party was not so fortunate. He did not have store teeth, but a bridge. The first time he struck one of these continental breakfasts, he just smashed that bridge all to pieces. He went to a dentist who told him that it would take several days to repair the damage. The poor man did not want to stay behind and leave the party, so for the rest of the trip he had a hard time eating, and it was difficult to understand him when he tried to talk. When he opened his mouth, it resembled somewhat the mouth of the Simplon Tunnel.

Oh, of course, one can get bacon and eggs and other things for breakfast on the continent if he pays extra. Nearly everything desirable on the continent is extra. Now and then, one has a room with a bath, but for the most part a bath is extra. I remember what a commotion there was in our party as we were leaving our hotel in Brussels one morning. We were all ready but for some reason, we could not get started. Many were impatient

at the delay. At last it came out that some member of the party had had a bath that was not paid for. I do not know how the hotel management knew this. It was like the game of "button, button, who has the button?" only in this case it was "bath, bath, who had a bath?" When Jesus was in a crowd one time, you know, and the throng pressed upon him, he turned and asked who had touched him. His disciples were surprised and said, that the people had been pressing all about him and then he asked who had touched him. But he said that he felt that virtue had gone out of him. Then a sick woman confessed that she had touched the hem of his garment, hoping to be healed thereby. I suppose that the hotel felt that a bath had gone out of it, and finally some one confessed and paid for it and then we all went on our way rejoicing.

Another thing that is rather uniform in Europe is the bedding. Nearly everywhere one has immense pillows, always two of them. If one used both, he would be sitting up in bed all night, and for extra cover, one has a light feather bed or pad, very soft, and downy and warm. Our first stop in Germany was at Duesburg, in the Ruhr valley, held by the French so long after the World War, famous for its fertility, mineral wealth, and railroads, a region of mills, factories, and great industries, now all standing idle with smokeless chimnies. The great Krupp's works are at Duesburg, and although there were idle men everywhere, rather hopeless looking, there were no bread-lines. I don't know how they manage their charities in Europe, doles and pensions, for the most part, I suppose, but I did not see a bread-line or a commissary or anything like it in Europe. Well, at Duesburg

we staid in one of the finest hotels we were in on the trip, six stories high, with excellent table and service. We slept on feather beds and we had one of these light feather beds for extra cover. The hardware, locks on doors, plumbing, lighting fixtures, etc. in Europe are all exceedingly clumsy and heavy, too. The hot water is always on the right and the cold on the left. In this Hotel Duesburger Hof, and in many others where we stopped, the rooms all had double doors. One opens out into the hall, the other into the room. The elevators or lifts are, for the most part, only poor affairs, compared with ours. Many of them are automatic.

One is struck with the number of soldiers and policemen he sees in Europe, especially on the continent. There are not so many in Holland and Switzerland. I didn't see very many soldiers in Germany, but in Belgium, Italy, and France, soldiers everywhere, drilling, marching. In Belgium we saw them at their stations or barracks and on drill grounds and rifle ranges. In Italy there are four classes of soldiers: The Swiss Guards, that stand around St. Peters and the Vatican in Rome, very picturesque in their natty uniforms, with their long spears; the Imperial Guards, fine specimens of young manhood, with their rich uniforms and Napoleon hats with plumes. They guard the King's palace and public buildings; the ordinary policemen, with dark grey suits and soft felt hats of the same color, brims turned up behind and down in front. One sees these everywhere in Italy, at every little railroad station and village. They always go in pairs. These are divided into two classes, distinguished by a feather

worn in the hat. Those with feathers in their hats are the shock troops, or rapid movers. They move about from place to place. Those without feathers in their hats are more or less local or stationary.

There are airplanes, also, everywhere in these countries. Europeans travel by air much more than we do in this country. Then the army planes are in evidence everywhere, especially in Italy and France. One sees them in groups of nine to eighteen, maneuvering and drilling, flying in wedge formation, like a flock of wild geese, or two or four abreast, roaring through the sky. In Rome one hears the drone of the airplane nearly all the time when out in the open. Our guide wanted our party to fly from Naples to Rome. Of all the party, only one young lady accepted the invitation. So she and Mr. Grandidier, a Frenchman, went by plane, the rest of us by rail. The French guide had a camera, and he thought he would take some pictures from the air as they went along, but the Italians vetoed that. They would not even let him carry his camera. They took charge of it, sealed it, and returned it to him when they arrived in Rome.

Of course there are some surprises for an American on his first visit to Europe. It is surprising to learn how well one who speaks nothing but English can get along over there. In the hotels, stores and shops, at railway staions, in banks, express offices, etc., one can always find some one who speaks English. There are very few grade crossings over railroads, and wherever there is one, even out in the country, there are gates and some one there to work them. The traveler finds out too, that they take no chances. The gate-keeper knows the time of trains, and he closes the gates at train time. If the train should be a

little late, one just sits and waits until it comes. Once or twice we waited as much as fifteen minutes for a train to pass, and not infrequently five to eight minutes. Then there are no hitch-hikers over there. I did not see any pedestrian indicate in any way that he wanted to ride with a motorist.

If you use tobacco in any form, take a supply with you sufficient to last you until you get back home. In the first place, you will find no good smoking tobacco or cigars on the market; and in the second place, it will cost you at least four times as much as it does here. I have been told that the reason for this is, that in all those countries on the continent, the government has a monopoly of the tobacco business.

One of the greatest nuisances in Europe is the different money systems. One no sooner becomes familiar with the pound and the shilling in Scotland and England until he is confronted with the frank in Belgium, then the guilder in Holland, the mark in Germany, and the lira in Italy. Of course one wants to know about what he is paying for things in good, old United States money, and that keeps him in a brown study all the time, trying to figure out how many franks or marks or lira there are in a dollar. Besides this, he finds that the price of the dollar fluctuates from day to day, so that one has to keep an eye on the money market. If one has his Unites States money changed at the bank or the American express office into the coin of the kingdom when he arrives in Belgium, for example, he must be careful to get it changed back, if he has any left, and this is doubt-

ful, before he goes on into Holland, for Belgian money is not good in Holland, nor is the money of any country good in any other country. A good old U. S. dollar is good, however, in any country, and any shop or store anywhere is mighty glad to get it. Any merchant's eyes anywhere will sparkle when you show him a dollar, though he may not give you quite so much for it as you would get at the American express office. One must know what his dollar is worth and demand full price.

That is another disagreeable feature of life over there. Unless one wants to throw his money away, he must keep haggling or bargaining about everything he buys, for unless it is some staple article, the European will ask him three prices for it. In Italy a man on the street will ask you to buy a little book of twenty-five post cards, we'll say, and then the conversation will go on like this: "What is the price?" "Only six lira, dandy, fine, a peach." They pick up all our slang words. "Too much," you say in a very stern voice. "I give you two lira." Then he will have a kind of fit, and pretend, with many gesticulations, to be quite angry. You are obdurate, however, and walk away. He follows you in a conciliatory manner, jabbering, "Five lira! Five lira!" You pay no attention to him. But he keeps right at your heels. "Four lira! Four lira, senior." You finally stop suddenly and in a very impressive way say, "Now, see here, fellow, I don't want your pictures. Go away and let me alone," and you snap your fingers. You know he won't leave you and he doesn't. He follows right at your heels, and seemingly, in desperation, as if he were making a great sacrifice, says, "Three lira! Three lira, then,

senior!" You limber up then, smile, and give him the three lira. You part good friends, and you have bought your post cards at about what they are worth. It is the same thing almost everywhere, especially in Italy, France, and Belgium. You must have a definite understanding beforehand with porters, gondoliers, taxi drivers, etc., or you will pay dearly for your folly.

One is surprised to see how friendly the people are over there. I suppose a party, such as ours, in a great big bus, would naturally attract more attention and receive more consideration than a lone tourist. When we drove through a small town, the natives naturally were all out to look us over, and farmers and workmen, and women would stop work and wave from the fields as we drove along through the country. When we drove up to a hotel with a flourish, where we were to lunch or stay all night, we made quite a stir. Of course they had word in advance and were expecting us. The porters, bell boys, and servants would be all on their toes, the manager smiling and bowing a welcome. Oftentimes we found our flag flying from a staff in front of the hotel, or little flags at our places at the table for souveniers, or printed on the menu card. The orchestra would play our national air when we went to dinner, and we would all stand and applaud. When while we ate, they would play "Old Black Joe," "Kentucky Home," "Swanee River," and many of our other popular songs, which you'd think they didn't know, as well as many beautiful classic selections. There were often dancing and other forms of amusement at night, all for the benefit of the tourists. When one thinks, however, that much of their revenue comes from these same tourists, one does not wonder that the hotels cater to them. Everywhere

the hotel men were complaining of the hard times, no tourists. Travel, they said, was very light this last summer. One hotel man at Sorento told me times were hard, "But," he said, "wait until after your election. Then they come."

Of course there are some disappointments for one who has never been across before. We have our preconceived ideas and sometimes things do not measure up to what we expect to see. I had often heard of the beautiful women in France, especially in Paris. They are certainly not to be seen in the country nor in the villages, nor on the streets of Paris, nor in the large stores, nor at the concerts, nor in the theaters. Where they stay I do not know, but one can see more pretty girls in Terre Haute any day than I saw in France.

I had exaggerated notions, also, with regard to the Swiss mountaineers. I had expected to see them climbing all around over the Alps in their picturesque garb, with their long staffs, and mountain-climbing tackle. I expected to hear the music of their Alpine horns echoing and re-echoing among the mountains. And yodeling, I thought I should hear some fine yodeling. Well, perhaps we were there at the wrong time of year. It may be that in the spring or earlier in the summer one would see these mountain climbers and hear their wonderful yodeling, but as a matter of fact, I did not hear a single yodel in Switzerland.

Then of course, a trip to Italy would not be complete without a visit to Venice, the city built on the sea, with canals where other cities have streets. It is a wonderfully interesting place. One rides from the railway station to his hotel, not in a bus or

taxi, but in a gondola, and wherever he goes, he rides in a gondola or walks. But one finds, on close inspection, that the water in these canals is none too clean, as all the sewage of the city is discharged into it, and one often sees melon rinds and other kinds of garbage floating about. Of course gondolas call for gondoliers, and I had always pictured them as noble works of art, dressed in dark blue velvet trousers or knee breeches, with ample white shirts, sleeves rolled up, and open at the throat. The bright colored sashes around their waists always matched in color the feathers in their picturesque hats. They were always thrumming a guitar, or banjo, or mandolin as an accompaniment to the wonderful airs from Italian operas, which they sang in magnificent voice, a la Caruso. Well, now as a matter of fact, these gondoliers are dressed much like taxi-drivers or worse, and they are the greasiest kind of dagoes, who will cheat you out of your eye teeth if you do not watch them.

But the city of Venice is the cleanest place in the world, and when one thinks of St. Mark's, and the Square, the pigeons, the Doges Palace, the Campanile, the beautiful buildings, the bridges over the canals, the moonlight on the water, and the beautiful music he heard there, he forgets about the mosquitoes and other objectionable features of the place. It is, all in all, the most interesting city we saw.

I have chosen in this paper to give you my impressions of the trip, the countries, their people, their customs, and manners, rather than to try to discuss the beautiful works of art, the cathedrals, castles, problems of the depression, war, world peace, etc. Of course, one gets some impressions, in even a short trip

concerning all these things, but such impressions would not have much value. One can read in books about the great cathedrals, palaces, castles, and art galleries, and if I were to tell you that after seeing the three large rooms of Turner's pictures in the Tate Gallery in London, I was not much impressed by his art, and that I like the pictures of his pupil, Claude Lorain better, or that I think the recently unearthed statue of the Venus of Cyrene in the National Gallery in Rome is even more beautiful than the Venus de Milo in the Louvre you would in all probability, not agree with me. Or if I were to say that the most beautiful art I saw was not in the galleries at all, but in the cathedrals, like the "Light of the World" by Holman Hunt, in St. Paul's in London, or Michael Angelo's "David" in an old church in Florence, or De Vinci's "Last Supper" on the wall of an old church in Milan, it would likely not impress you because I am not a critic of art.

Nor would I have you get from the paper the impression that I am criticizing adversely what I saw over there. We have some things here that they do not have, but they have many, many things that we do not have, and some things that we can never have along the lines of art, historic buildings, and relics of the past ages. They are rich in these. What is of chief value to the world and to civilization I have not discussed in this paper or have merely mentioned.

They have learned to live over there. We may learn here sometime. We have not yet. They live within their means and enjoy life. They live economically, but not cheaply. There is a difference. They put first things first. They put the emphasis

in life where it should be. The average person over there does not have so many things as the average person here has. Workmen of all kinds, miners, carpenters, merchants, workers in factories, farmers, clerks, bookkeepers, stenographers, school teachers, etc. do not, as a rule, own automobiles. They do not have electrical devices and modern inventions and conveniences, like electric irons, washing machines, refrigerators, sewing machines, tractors, etc., but the poorest laborer over there has access to good schools and beautiful churches; to parks, and beaches, and beautiful mountains, streams, and waterfalls, and fountains, and lakes, and forests; the great outdoors, the open spaces of nature, the Black Forest of Germany, for example, and the Rhine. These are a part of the life of the common people.

In the towns and cities people live among beautiful things, beautiful buildings, shade trees, parks, plazas, squares, fountains, monuments, statues. They see the most wonderful art and hear the most beautiful music in the world. Italian boys and girls hum and whistle airs from the greatest operas on the street. I shall never forget the excellent bands we heard last summer in the parks of almost every city we visited, with crowds of people, not walking about jabbering and talking or shouting and laughing, as we see them in this country, at our band concerts, but sitting quietly, listening intently to the music. In Nice, France, I remember some young people, tourists I suspect, were just carrying on an ordinary conversation. They were not noisy. But the crowd around them soon voiced its disapproval, and the conversation ceased instantly. I remember also, with pleasure, the fine orchestras we heard in many of the hotels in which we stayed,

to say nothing about the boats, theaters, and other entertainments; and I do not remember hearing a single piece of jazz from the time we boarded the boat at Montreal until we landed in Quebec on our return. Naturally, I have a great many pleasant memories and impressions of my trip last summer, and one is that we could learn a great many things from our neighbors across the water.

4/17/33

Paper #25

# TRIAL BY JURY.

CHESTER KELLY.

The system of trial by a jury of twelve good men and true, which exists in this country, is antiquated, costly and inefficient, and should be superceded by a system more adapted to our complex civilization.

We can trace the developement of our jury system with the developement of the Anglo-Saxon race. The early Teutonic tribes consisted of comparatively small groups of primitive peoples with blood-kinship the principal bond of union. Their life was simple. They hunted and fought a great deal and cultivated the soil a little. There was very little bartering and each freeman, with his wife and family, was familiar with all of the activities necessary to his existence, the same as was his neighbor. For military purposes, a leader was necessary and he was chosen because of somewhat greater physical or mental superiority in the same qualifications that his fellows had. All freemen were equal in all questions involving a common purpose. And political, social and governmental questions were decided in meetings of the whole tribe. In these tribal meetings, laws or rules of conduct were passed, tribal policies were determined and disputes between individuals were tried. The English Parliament, the American House of Representatives and the general assemblies of the different states may be traced historically to these tribal councils. But our present purpose is to trace only the jury.

As the tribes grew in number and industries developed, it became a burden for the tribesmen to attend the tribal meetings, and eventually, comparatively few absented themselves from their work to pass upon the troubles of their neighbors. And the performance of jury service became a duty rather than a right.

It might be noted in passing that in the early days one could be both witness and judge, and that most often when a trial was ~~most~~ difficult to determine, our simple minded forefathers left the decision to God, and thus escaped embarrassment on their own parts, - that is, the guilt or innocence of the accused was determined by ordeal, which was a prescribed test, many forms of which were used, most often an ordeal of battle, but sometimes an ordeal by fire or water. These ordeals are interesting from a psycological point of view, but were not infallable in results.

As civilization grew among the Teutonic peoples, a system of government developed, known as the feudal system. This government was military in nature and the feudal lord or knight, in return for military protection, demanded unquestioned loyalty and obedience of his subjects,and he made himself the court and arbitrar of the disputes of his vassals and held power over the lives of his people; centralization of authority was necessary to military success.

You will note that we have a conflict between the loosely bound freedom of the early peoples and the centralized tyranny of the feudal government, and these inconsistant systems existed at the same time, the Feudal system gradually enveloping civilized Europe. The Angles, Saxons and Danes in England were more backward in their developement than were the French, the Normans and others who came into closer contact with the remnants of Roman culture, and until the time of William the Con-

queror, feudalism did not have much hold in England. Prior to that time they had their town and shire meetings and public trials, their primitive customs, and the wild freedom of individuals.

The Norman Conquerors would not recognize the validity of any of the Saxon laws and customs, nor even that the former owners of the land had any rights at all, and they began to develope a pure feutalistic tyranny. The Kings word was law to the Barons, and the Lords word was law to his vassals. In theory it was iron bound and the Feudal Lord claimed all authority in himself over his soldiers, servants and tenants; in practice the feudal lords and barons were rather unmanageable, and the Kings authority was often questioned, especially when he was wrong, which was nearly all of the time. John the First of England was the worst king of his line; he trampled the rights of his subjects and misgoverned them to such an extent that his barons and vassals arose and united against him and defeated him at battle at Runnymead. These barons were not seeking any protection for the down-trodden Saxon or serf, but for their own protection they forced John to sign a great charter or contract, called Magna Carta whereby all freemen were assured of certain rights, among which was the right of a fair trial, and that they might have a fair trial, the agreement provided that they should be tried only by a jury of their peers or equals, which was an idea borrowed from the Saxons. The peers of those barons were other barons and the common freeman did not get the benefit of a jury trial; the barons refused their vassals the right they had themselves claimed; and John, as soon as he got out of the hands of his

vassals, forgot all about his signed Magna Carta. But the seed had been planted for the creation of a system of trial that eventually gave to the common man the guarantee of a fair trial,- a trial by jury of his peers, twelve good men and true.- one of the best shields freedom has had.

As the jury system developed it took on certain characteristics that now identify it. One duty of the jury was to investigate crime and to determine guilt and in its developed state, one jury performed the duty of investigating, while another tried the crimes and incidentally in its later developement, the civil cases.

The jury which reported crime was made up of men from all sections of the shire or county or political unit; all sections had to be represented in order that all rumors of crime might be investigated. This made it a large body of men, and it was called the Large Jury or Grand Jury. The jury which tried causes of action became established as twelve "good men and true" and was called the Little Jury or the Petit Jury. The petit jury has always consisted of twelve men but the grand jury has ranged in number from six to twenty-three. In Indiana the grand jury has but six members.

In theory, the grand jury consists of twelve men who are the peers or equals of the litigants, or in criminal cases of the defendants. They are presumed to be equal in knowledge, social status and civil rights. They are presumed to be in sympathy with the litigants when they are right and without sympathy for them when wrong. Presumable they do unto others as they wish others to do unto them. How far they fail to meet

the presumption remains to be seen. But when civilization was less highly developed than now, when the great and powerful were disposed to trample upon the rights of the weak, trial by jury was an important institution for the preservation of liberty.

In Indiana a juror must be a citizen over twenty-one years of age, of the community or political unit where he serves, a freeholder for one year, or a householder for two years in the county where he serves. A negro may be a juror to try the issues between white men, and white men determine causes for colored people. Women are now competent jurors provided they have the other qualifications. A juror is inelegible who has defective sight or hearing, also if he is a witness in the case or was a juror in a former trial of the facts in issue, or if he has in any way acquired an impression which would require evidence to remove. He is chosen by lot by three jury commissioners of the county wherein he serves, One of whom is the clerk of the circuit court. At intervals the jury commissioners select from the list of tax payers a large number of names; these are written upon pieces of paper and placed in a box from which the names are drawn to fill the jury panel when needed. When the jury panel is full, the box and the names are put away until more jurors are needed.

It can be readily seen that the jury commissioners could pack the box with names of persons who would be likely to correspond in their views with the commissioners, however I do not think that this is ever done, any further than if the commissioners have friends who would like to serve as jurors, they

sometimes see that those names go into the box. Under the law a man cannot serve on more than one regular jury in any space of one year.

Each juror receives for his services $2.50 for each day of twenty-four hours or part thereof, and the employment is not continuous. The result of this is that no man who has regular employment wants to sit on a petit jury; it interferes with his usual occupation and causes him financial loss. We then have this condition,- the poorly paid workman and the unemployed are anxious to get on the jury, while the more intelligent and the more industrious are more than anxious to remain off the jury. In theory, a citizen should serve his community in jury service as a patriotic duty and take his financial loss like a soldier who fights for a pittance; in practice it is amusing to hear the excuses of prospective jurors and to hear them tell how necessary and valuable their services in their respective occupations are to the community where they live, and the impossibility of substituting the services of others for their own. As a rule farmers have a greater conception of their duty to the public in this service than the city man and our more level headed juries are quite often composed largely of farmers. And the bulk of litigation arises out of business transactions entirely foreign to life in the rural districts.

In what I say here I wish it understood that none of my remarks will hold true as to every jury, but I am attempting to show the tendency.

With a jury composed of farmers, with but a common school

education and coal miners and day laborers out of employment, how far in the course of a trial can they be made to see and understand the problems of a college professor, the science of a physician, or the mutual obligations of a banker and his clients. If any one in my audience had litigation in respect to his profession or occupation, would he consider such a jury composed of his peers? Can a juror who never had money or property of his own be the equal in financial knowledge of one who has accumulated and kept active the capital of his community. Among those of small capital there is quite often a feeling or prejudice that no man can accumulate money honestly; is such a man the peer of one who has honestly accumulated wealth? Is the man with no responsibilities the peer of him who has always accepted responsibility? Is the uneducated man the peer of the educated man? Can the uneducated, untrained citizen ever be the equal and peer of the educated and mentally trained litigant, and can those who are unsuccessful in employment and business be the peers of those who have succeeded far above their fellows?

I would call to your attention the Massie trial in Hawaii. Lieutenant Massie was an educated white officer of the United States Navy, with the white man's respect for women and with the code of honor of the American naval officer. He had slain a Phillipino who had confessed to a brutal assault upon the officer's wife. The jury was composed largely of Orientals whose education and traditions cause them to regard women as no more than animals and who had no understanding of the moral code

which dominated the white officer. Without discussing the guilt or innocence of the accused, would you say that the accused was tried by a jury of his peers? Incidentally the case showed the ability and resourcefulness of Clarence Darrow when he brought out as a defense, the white man's standard as compared to that of the yellow man. The case was lost by the decision of the jury but was won before the bar of public opinion in America and this last made the pardon necessary.

There is a tendency among juries to take from those who have, and give to those who have not. In this they do not follow the biblical quotation. I would not say that they are corrupt or have evil intentions. They are merely sympathetic with the unfortunate. They are presumed to decide without sympathy or prejudice and each one swears that he will give a true, unprejudiced verdict according to the evidence and the instructions of the court. But no man can realize or avoid his prejudices and few can overcome sympathy. And the uneducated and the untrained mind is more subject to prejudice and more moved by sympathy than is the educated mind.

The average juror is not trained in the study of character. He is not able to distinguish the witness who is telling the truth from the witness who is falsifying. The judges and the lawyers are a great deal better able to judge the weight of the witnesses testimony; but quite often they are unable to convey their ability to the jury. A man accustomed to business affairs is generally able to read character and discern truth from fiction, but such rarely stay on a jury.

The individual juror has the right and does draw on his

own experiences in life in deciding an issue before him. This often results in unjust verdicts. Every lawyer who has had trial experience could tell many interesting stories of verdicts resulting from unknown experiences of the juror. I ask your indulgence while I relate a couple of my own.

A citizen had accumulated considerable property, some of it consisting of farm land and some of corporate stocks. He lived on a farm. His wife was accustomed to farm management but had no knowledge or experience with other business. They had no children, but he had a nephew who was trained in finance and corporate organization. The wife's relatives were all farmers with little ability. He made a will, which the evidence showed was duly executed, by which he willed his wife all of the farm land and willed to the nephew the corporate property. He informed the nephew of the provisions of the will and asked, and received, the promise that the income from the corporate property should be applied to the widow's use. When this citizen died, his widow contested his will on the ground that it was improperly executed. If the will was broken, the widow would take all of the property under the law. The widow was a cripple and it so happened that one of the jurors, who was the foreman, had in his youth cared for a widowed, crippled mother. Through his influence in the jury room, the jury returned a verdict denying the will. The sympathy of the jury was with the crippled widow who had been deprived of her property by an unjust husband. As a matter of fact, the husband's action was wise and far seeing and was intended for the best interests of his wife. The matter was later adjusted, because the judge said he would set aside the verdict of the

jury for the reason that the undisputed evidence showed that the will was properly executed. But the case illustrates how sympathy and previous experience can bring about an unjust verdict; one may make an unjust will if he chooses and the same will be legal; but the jury in that case thought they knew more about the business of the testator than he did himself.

I represented a plaintiff who sued for the destruction of his automobile. The evidence showed that the plaintiff was at all times upon his own side of the road traveling at a moderate speed and that the defendant, traveling at a high speed, attempted to pass another car and in so doing went to his left hand side of the road and collided with plaintiff's car. I was surprised when the jury brought in a verdict for the defendant, and I made inquiries as to the reason. In proving that plaintiff was the owner of the car, I introduced the evidence of the automobile sales agent who sold the car and who testified that at the time of the accident, the plaintiff had bought and paid for his car with the exception of one payment, which had been paid after the accident and before the trial. In the jury room it was argued that all sales companies carry insurance on their cars until the same are fully paid for and that therefore the real party in interest was the insurance company, which, they argued, was trying to recover its loss. There was no evidence to that effect and the inference was untrue, but the plaintiff lost his case by reason of some previous experience of the jurors, which previous experience was unknown to the trial lawyers and had not even been considered.

When a case is called for trial, the first business is to

select the jury. Twelve men are placed in the jury box and are sworn to tell the truth respecting their qualifications to sit as jurors in the case to be tried. The plaintiff's attorney then examines them and there is little limitation as to the questions he may ask; ordinarily the attorneys try to find out something of the past life and experiences of each juror, his ideas and prejudices which may affect this decision. And such examination is generally only supplemental to investigation made before trial. If you are excused from jury service, it is not necessarily because of an answer to a propounded question; it may be on account of some idea of the litigant about which you know nothing. After the jury is examined the plaintiff's attorney exercises his challenges, and examines the substitutions; he then accepts the jury and the defendant's attorney examines and excuses and then accepts the jury. If any substitutions are made by the defendant's attorney, the plaintiff's attorney then examines them. When both sides have accepted the jury, it is then sworn to try the cause.

In a civil case each side has the right to strike off three jurors pre-emptorily,- that is, without giving any cause. In a criminal case each side may strike off six jurors pre-emptorily. When a juror is struck off, the court instructs the sheriff to fill the place with any citizen he may find and as there nearly always are some persons hanging around noping to pick up a juror's fee, he often fills the vacancy with one of them. Generally such pick-ups make poor jurors.

If some of the regular panel are substantial citizens, not easily moved by sympathy and if the plaintiff is relying upon sympathy to win the case, these better jurors will be struck off.

In damage cases generally, the plaintiff seeks to get as many jurors as possible who have been unfortunate in the accumulation of worldly goods. And if a jury finds out or believes that an insurance company is backing the defendant, the plaintiff is almost sure of getting the verdict.

When a jury is composed of men, a woman litigant generally receives the benefit of their sympathy. Women on a jury are not generally sympathetic with women litigants, unless other elements enter in, such as, that the woman is a widow or has the care of children.

One could recount at great length, his experiences with juries. It is enough to say that the trial lawyer must study the members of his jury and guess at their previous experiences and the things that will appeal to their prejudices and sympathy. I know of one lawyer who made the mistake of introducing some catholic nuns as rather immaterial witnesses before an anti-catholic jury; no religious question was involved. But that attorney would have been better off without those witnesses.

In Indiana practice the jury is the judge of the facts, but in civil cases they are bound to take the law as given them by the court. In criminal cases they are judges of both the facts and the law, even though they know nothing about either. As a matter of fact the average juror pays little attention to the instructions of the court. I have known of trials of civil cases in which the jury wilfully disregarded the instructions.

Trial by jury has been very useful and beneficial in its time. When the experiences of all of the people were practically the same, when the jury were actually the peers of the litigants

trial by jury was invaluable. And even now it would be difficult to say what system could be devised that would be better. But with the complex questions of our day, the specializing of knowledge and of occupations, it seems to me that trial by jury is growing obsolete. I would suggest that in its place we have a court composed of one judge, experienced and educated in the law, and two or more associate judges of general learning and comprehension. The associate judges, with experience, would overcome sympathy and would be more able to deduce the real facts from conflicting evidence. I realize that no perfect scheme could ever be devised; but if facts are to be decided, those who are more competent, should have the making of the decisions.

This suggestion is made with the knowledge that it is now unconstitutional. The Federal constitution provides that the right to trial by jury shall not be denied and all of the state constitutions provide that such right shall remain inviolate. However, it is a right that can be waived and often is waived in both civil cases and criminal cases. Quite often in civil cases, when both parties have confidence in the fairness and integrity of the trial judge, the issues and the law are determined by the court,- that is, the judge, without the intervention of the jury. To do this, both sides must waive the jury. In this county the trial courts have established a rule of court, that if either side demands a jury he must make the demand known to the judge at least two days before the trial date, otherwise the jury is regarded as waived. And sometimes in criminal cases, especially for the lesser crimes or misdemeanors, the jury is waived. If the defendant in a criminal case if really innocent, I would say that his cause is more likely to be more correctly decided by the

judge than by the jury. If he is guilty and expects to escape through a sympathetic defense, he should demand the jury.

And there is a class of civil cases wherein the parties are not entitled to a jury. These are called equity cases and include such actions as injunctions, specific performance receiverships, establishment of lost instruments, reformation of instruments, setting aside fraudulent instruments, divorces and other matters that were originally tried by the ecclesiastical courts, or by the King's Chancellor. They are sometimes called chancery cases and were originally tried by conscience and not by the strict law. In some states there is a court officer known as the Master in Chancery, whose duty is to hear evidence of the facts of the case and determine what the facts of the case are and report them to the judge or chancellor, who applies the law to the facts found. In Indiana the courts of law and of equity are united and we have no Masters of Chancery. But the judge may, if he so desires, impanel a jury to determine the facts; This is seldom done.

So while the right to trial by jury is constitutionally assured, we do have many cases which are tried without a jury. And I submit that the plan suggested to take the place of trial by jury is not new and that the enlargement of equity practice would be beneficial in our system of complex civilization. As long as human beings determine causes, there will be no perfect system devised, because it is the human failing to make mistakes; that is why erasers are manufactured. But the more intellegence we can bring into our trials, the more nearly correct will be the findings of the court.

BLANK PAGE

Moore 3/6
4/24/33
Paper #27.

# THE REASONS FOR AND THE NATURE OF THE SCHOOL HEALTH PROGRAM

## Part I

To mention the matter of Health is to strike a responsive chord in the thought of the average American because he knows that much of his success and happiness is clearly related to this end and yet when he is approached on the relation of the schools to Health he will probably observe in a more or less vague manner that he does believe that his boy or girl has had a subject, he believes, called Physiology and perhaps somewhere along the line a course in "Gym", or Physical Training or was it "basketball". He is expressing the opinion of many people based on what has been in years past the relation of the school to the student's health and is characterizing the school health program of perhaps a quarter of a century ago.

For the moment let us raise the question as to why we had until recently (speaking in general terms) a rather hesitant attitude of the school's taking a hold on this tremendous task. In the first place, we have for many years had rather closely drawn lines and ideas as to the relation of the school, or any other institution, for that matter, except the home to such intimate matters as health; secondly, the medical profession has discouraged in many communities the type of health program that educators considered desirable, that is, they have been unwilling to handle many of the problems that arose on the group scale that was of course necessary; further public sentiment in harmony with the point set out just hindered the program in many communities, this public sentiment reflecting itself in inadequate or reactionary legislation put legal handicaps on the progressive community difficult to overcome. A further and a most serious handicap has been the lack of harmony on the part of educators as to the

type of program that was desirable. This has been particularly true of the Physical Education phase of the health program. An additional cause for the backwardness has been the attitude of school administrators, many of whom were trained in the older philosophy of education, that didn't go so far beyond the three R type. Still another reason has been our limited concept of the nature of education--not until about fifteen years ago did we have anything like a harmonious definition that was generally accepted of the scope of the educational problem. This statement in the form of seven Cardinal Principles is education for (1) Health; (2) Command of the fundamental processes; (3) Worthy home membership; (4) Vocation; (5) Citizenship; (6) Worthy use of leisure; (7) Ethical character,--the number itself seems to have significance, the number seven holding a kind of charm. "Among nations of antiquity it was considered a sacred number. The literature of the Hebrews, Persians, Babylonians, Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, and many others abound with it. We still have it preserved in the seven-day week, the academic sabbatical leave, and in other similar ways. Hence it is not strange that fifteen years ago the Commission on the Reorganization of Secondary Education appointed by the N.E.A. should have formulated the outstanding objectives of education as the Seven Cardinal Principles.

In the intervening decade and a half these principles have commanded wide recognition and have entered prominently into the educational theory and practice of the American school. None can doubt that they have exerted a profound influence for good on the constantly changing program of public education. They have served as a supporting skeleton for educational curricula and as a focusing center for educational methods. Many modifications have been suggested from time to time, but, in the main, educational theorists seem to agree that they represent the essentially basic goals of education."[1]

So with this embracing definition of education and a rapidly changing attitude on the part of the community, the legislature, the medical profession a nd especially with greater agreement among educational administrators and leaders in the Health field we are rapidly (ow was perhaps until this field as all others felt the force of the depression) approaching the place where we might dignify the movement by calling it a program.

The commission that formulated the "Seven Cardinal Principles" defined the matter of Health in its relation to the school by saying that the school should "provide health instruction, inculcate health habits, organize an effective program of physical activities, regard health needs in planning work and play, and cooperate with home and community in safeguarding and promoting health interests."[2] This is a very inclusive statement and we will elaborate upon it a little later when we try to discuss the nature of the Health program.

Before we go into the matter of the program I cannot forbear calling attention to the attitude of some great leaders and educators toward Health in addition to its being set as one of the objectives of education. Some of these quotations will nullify what I have said about the recentness of the program but it will further bear out the fact that we have been backward in this field in times past. This is a selected list of great thinkers, and I will try to give the name of the author and the approximate date before each quotation.

Socrates (420 B.C.)

"Therefore as I said before, our children from their earliest years must take part in all the more lawful forms of play, for if they are not surrounded with such an atmosphere they can never grow up to be well conducted and virtuous citizens."

Aristophanes (400 B.C.)

"Then, fresh and blooming, you will spend your time in the gymnasium, and not go about the public square mouthing monstrous jokes like the young men of today .....but you will start a running match..... If you do things which I enjoin ..... you will always have a well developed chest, a clear complexion, broad shoulders, and a short tongue."

Plato (380 B.C.)

"Lack of activity destroys the good condition of every human being, while movement and methodical physical exercise save it and preserve it."

Aristotle (350 B.C.)

"Even for adults, play is a necessary aim in life, of which use should be made, especially during leisure time; for he who labors assiduously has need of recreation. A game is played in order that the participant may relax." (Politics, V,3, 1337 b.)

Cicero (70B.C.)

"Homines ad deos nulla re propius accedunt quam salutem hominibus dando. In nothing do men more nearly approach the gods than in giving health to men."

An Arab Proverb

"He who has health has hope; he who has hope has all."

Comenius (1650)

"Intellectual progress is conditioned at every step by bodily vigor. To attain the best results, physical exercises must accompany and condition mental training."

John Locke (1690)

"How necessary health is to our business and happiness, and how requisite

320

a strong constitution, able to endure hardship and fatigue, is, to one that will make any figure in the world; is too obvious to need any proof."

* * *

"A sound mind in a sound body is a short but full description of a happy state in this world; he that has these two has little more to wish for; and he that wants either of them, will be but little the better for anything else."

J. J. Rousseau (1750)

"If you would cultivate the intelligence of your pupil, cultivate the power that it is to govern. Give his body continual exercise; make him robust and sound in order to make him wise and reasonable; let him work and move about, and run, and shout, and be continually in motion; let him be a man in vigor and he will soon be such by force of reason."

Pestalozzi (1820)

"Gymnastics, well conducted, essentially contribute to render children not only cheerful and healthy, which, for moral education, are two all-important points, but also to promote among them a certain spirit of union, and a brotherly feeling, which are most gratifying to the observer. . . . . We have schools for spelling, for writing, for learning the catechism, but we have no schools for the education of human beings . . . . .

Friedrich Froebel (1830)

"Besides, man is to know not only his power but also the means for applying it; and this can be attained only by means of an all-sided, equal cultivation of the body and its parts as the medium and expression of mental culture."

Horace Mann (1845)

"Were a young man to write down a list of his duties, health would be among the first items in the catalog. This is no exaggeration of its value for health is indispensable to almost every form of human enjoyment."

* * *

"One of the most important items in a natidns wealth consists in the healthfulness and vigor enjoyed by its people."

Schopenhauer (1850)

"The greatest of follies is to sacrifice health for any other advantage."

Herbert Spencer (1860)

"Those who, in eagerness to cultivate their pupils' minds, are reckless of their bodies, do not remember that success in the world depends much more upon energy than upon information; and that a policy which in cramming with information undermines energy, is self-defeating .....

Perhaps nothing will so much hasten the time when body and mind will both be adequately cared for, as a diffusion of the belief that the preservation of health is a duty. Few seem conscious that there is such a thing as physical morality . . . . The fact is, that all breaches of the laws of health are physical sins. When this is generally seen, then, and perhaps not till then, will the physical training of the young receive all the attention it deserves."

Gladstone (1880)

"Time and money spent in training the body, yield a larger interest than any other investment."

G. Stanley Hall (1902)

"Soon after graduating from college . . . . . I went to Leipsig to work under the leading physiologist of Germany, full of the conviction that the study of the mind could best be approached through that of the body."

John Dewey (1915)

"The necessity of insuring the health of all young people as the foundation on which to build other qualities and abilities, and the hopelessness of trying to build where the body is weak, ill-nourished, or uncontrolled, is now so well recognized that it has become a commonplace, . . . .Health is as important from the social point of view as from the individual, so that attention to it is doubly necessary to a successful community."

Arnold Bennett (1920)

"It is better for a man to maintain himself in good health than to load himself with learning."

Ellwood P. Cubberley (1930)

"No marked economy in school work or increase in the efficiency of instruction is possible if we are to continue to work with poor tools or poor materials. A teacher lacking in health and physical vigor is not likely to prove high in teaching efficiency, and pupils who are suffering from ...lack of proper care are in no condition to take any large advantage of the instruction which is provided."

Frank Pierrepont Graves (1932)

"If a child is hampered by susceptibility to disease, physical

defects, or bad habits of living, he can never meet with much success in his intellectual work, and, if he could, his achievements would be of little value to him in life without physical vigor."

George D. Strayer (1932)

"Work done to secure better physical conditions, both in school and at home, is probably as significant for the morality of children as is any instruction that is given."

Boyd H. Bode (1932)

"The most important quality of education is flexibility. Flexibility is allied to play. Play is the essence of adaptability, and there is no prescribed pattern for it. Opportunities must be used as they come along."

Joy Elmer Morgan (1932)

"The time has come when recreation for all must become as universal as education for all .....This means an increased emphasis on physical education."

William F. Russell (1932)

"Education for leisure and the enrichment of adult life..... is a fundamental problem affecting the welfare of the state and its perpetuity."

Thomas H. Briggs (1933)

"The enlarged function of teaching health and citizenship and social living and means of happily and profitably using the increased and increasing leisure are essential and should be made known as such to every citizen in the community." [3]

Lest some of our practical friends assail these statements and some of my earlier points as being theoretical may I call attention to a few facts that show concretely the need for an adequate program of Health?

I do not want to burden you with figures but I do want to point out in a rather definite way facts that are startling if not actually appalling. At high school age health defects in pupils show some important facts - on an average:

80% have defects of teeth
15% have abnormal tonsils
10% have visual defects
10% are underweight
5% have postural defects
3% have defects of hearing
1% have heart disease
1% have active clinical tuberculosis

and what is the startling thing is that with the exception of tuberculosis these are on the increase. These figures do not take into account the large number suffering from colds, ailments of the digestive tract and others that every one knows are so common. If the child is father of the man we will likewise be interested in the adult group to see if this is only a temporary condition. The World War draft and the revealing figures that come from the very large number of medical examinations show that 25% of our young men between the ages of 21 and 31 were absolutely rejected for military service. In some states the number of defectives reached startling figures, as high as 70% in one case.

While on the face of this, it seems very discouraging, we can happily note that based on the judgments of those who are experts in the field that most of these conditions can be corrected providing that we start in time.

We have been somewhat misled in recent years by certain facts which

while more or less true, were misleading. One of these having to do with the lengthened life span shows that the average life span has been increased in a comparatively short time from about 40 to near the 60 year mark. This is true but this increase has come largely in the better control of certain diseases and a lowered infant mortality - this situation exists in the face of the fact that the death rate between the ages of 45 to 60 has actually been on the increase and certain diseases such as nervous, heart, kidney, liver and of the digestive tract are on an alarming increase.

If one wished to ignore the suffering resulting from this situation that we have set up and consider it purely from the dollars and cents side a great deal of argument might be advanced for an up to date Health Program. Nearly one-third of our children in our school are retarded, that is, their progress has not been normal through the grades and much reteaching has been necessary, since much of this is caused by ill health this means an increase of about that proportion in our school costs, as well as a tremendous bill for private and public medical service, in fact about 80% of our families spend about $60.00 a year for medical service, the remaining per cent spend much more according to reliable Life Insurance Company figures. Compare this with your tax burden!

So in these days of retrenchment in all lines and especially in the school program we need to be careful of our attitude toward the newer subjects of which Health is one. A quotation from Frank D. Slutz, a noted educator, suggests our problem. "I hear something these days about fads and frills. I hear a whisper in the world that the time has come to out out the fads and frills. I am for it, provided you get the right kind of fads and frills. But don't get the wrong ones.

When I was a lad on the farm, I was given a long-handled tool with a question mark on the end of it, and my job was to go through the raspberries and the blackberries and trim them for the next summer. What did I do? Did I cut the green shoots. Never. I cut out the dead shoots. Now is the time to put this question-mark tool in and do some cutting, but in Heaven's name, let's cut out some of the dead shoots, will you? Not some of the green shoots, not some of the things that have come in last, and are newest and freshest, but some of the things that are as dead as railroad passes for congressmen, and ought to go out."[4]

Part II

The school Health program is three-fold in its nature. Protection, Correction, and Prevention: Protection from the acute and chronic infectious diseases, from the evils of poorly constructed and poorly administered school buildings, and from the menace of the poorly trained teacher; Correction of the defects which have arisen because of poor surroundings in the school, home and the community, lack of information on the part of parents, teachers and of acute infections that have developped; Prevention in the nature of a marked improvement in habits of living, a vigorous up-building of physique, through proper physical activities, properly taught, through proper content and arrangement of the school program, through application of the preventitive medical discoveries and through the proper planning, construction, and sanitation of the school plant.

May I define rather definitely these three points by discussing briefly eight points calculated when carried through to obtain this

three-fold goal of Protection, Correction and Prevention.

The first requisite in any school health program is the training of the teachers. This of course, is axiomatic in any field but we have assumed that a teacher trained in Latin, Mathematics or other subjects or the elementary teacher trained in the methods of instruction in those grades naturally assumes the ability to teach Health - nothing could be farther from the truth and not until we have properly trained the classroom teacher, we have many well trained special teachers and supervisors and they are very necessary in an adequate program, will we be able to fully realize our aims in the field of health instruction.

If one examines the curriculum of the average teacher training institution the courses required will be found to be few in number and in many instances too general to fit the teacher for the particular task that she will face. So it is evident whenathe improvement which is evidently necessary should begin. May I again stress that the training of the elementary classroom teacher in school hygiene, hygiene teaching, physical education and in certain phases of health supervision is of paramount importance.

No less important than the matter of training of teachers is the matter of teacher health. One does not have to use his imagination to know about situations where from the standpoint of personal health they are entirely unfit to try to give to the youth instruction in the field that will be so closely allied to their happiness and success. Teacher health should be one of the major factors in the selection and retention of teachers; it is certainly no less important than degrees, licenses, and years of service. The school corporation assumes after the selection of a teacher certain responsibilities

bearing on teachers' health as teacher load, time for recreation, periodic health examinations, etc. We face a threat on teacher health during this depression when many otherwise well established practices are being neglected. Not alone is teacher health a responsibility of the school corporation, it is a personal responsibility with the teacher and the one[illegible] that neglectsthis responsibility [illegible] is not giving the full service that her contract demands.

Logically following the matter of health of teachers and training of teachers for this work is the matter of Health instruction. The content and teaching methods of health training and instruction have traveled a long way along the road toward functioning efficiently during the past decade. This new content and procedure replaces the subject so long in the school program called "Physiology". Physiology has been shown through the practical results obtained from its teaching to be a failure in attaining ends that are desireable. This failure was due largely to the following things:

(1) the content was not interesting to the average chil..;

(2) the methods of teaching, largely recitation, where a premium was placed on memory work, discouraged interest;

(3) many of the facts, so called, were demonstrably false;

(4) the subject matter taught was largely numerous facts about the body, as names of bones and muscles, instead of how to obtain a healthy body through right living.

The change in the name of the subject from "Physiology" to "health training and instruction" is suggestive of the change that is taking place in the content and teaching of the subject. One of the significant things is that the new title includes training as well as instruction suggesting practice in those things that make for good health.

The new idea is a HEALTH PROGRAM, not one relating to disease or medicine, but a positive type going ~~even further than~~ in the direction of prevention. To understand the place such a subject has in the educational program is to suggest that "true education is training for complete living". Since health is the most important resource of the nation, we put it first in our aims or principles of education that are commonly set out and define it as "that condition of the body and its organs necessary to the proper performance of their normal functions."

Health teaching in the modern school program is characterized by the following aims:

(1) to establish health habits and standards, emphasizing acts rather than knowledge;

(2) to instill a working knowledge of practical facts relating to cleanliness and sanitation, food, fresh air, exercise, rest, sleep, and the causes of preventable diseases and the means of checking them;

(3) to build ideals regarding health, beauty, and service for self, school, and community that will result in better living;

(4) to develop the individual's sense of his personal responsibility, not only for his own health, but for that of the community in which he resides, and to set for the community standards of health.

To realize these aims a broad program in which the children, parents, teachers and community are interested is necessary. It means that all must lend a hand to build into the child the habits, ideals, knowledge and attitudes that will cause him to fully realize the physical vigor so necessary to his happiness.

Many approaches are possible but probably the easiest one is through the child's interest in himself. This is especially true at the outset when the child is largely an individualist. With this beginning one can proceed to the matter of group and community interest. Many modern

aids are possible and the forward-looking teacher will utilize such services as are made possible by great industries, service clubs, orangizations for the purpose of encouraging good health and many others.

Enterprising teachers will want to take full advantage of the possibilities of correlation of health instruction and training with the other school subjects. Such indirect suggestions that come from vocational and other classes bring home to the pupil the necessity for and value of good health.

As important as the actual health instruction or the training or health of teachers is the mental hygiene of the situation in which children are taught. Mental hygiene has been given some rather highbrow interpretations but after all, so far as its use in reference to the schoolroom is concerned, means setting up such controlled situations that disagreements, the unhappiness and the resentment against obvious and conspicuous discipline are avoided. It means giving the child full opportunity and the help necessary to develop individuality and overcome limitations. It demands a calm ~~and~~ or orderly atmosphere where a reasonable and intelligently constructive attitude is taken with the children. It further demands that emotional control be developed, confidence encouraged, conceit discouraged and that fright be eliminated from their thinking. It further demands the ability on the part of the teacher and pupils to face a problem and work through its solution with rugged intellectual honesty.

Two matters that contribute much to the actual health program of the school and ones that are administrative in nature are the hygienic arrangement of the school program and the sanitation of the school plant. Entirely too little attention is usually given to the arrangement

of the child's program. The number of hours in school, attention to the matter of rest and lunch periods, the arrangement of subjects, for example, the grouping of academic and non-academic subjects, the recognition of the fact that there are certain "lag" periods in the day are items that deserve major consideration on the part of the careful teacher and administrator. The sanitation of the school plant is of course, an obvious matter when one is talking in terms of hygiene. The proper lighting, heating, ventilation, seating, drinking, toilet and other hygienic facilities are directly related to the child's health and no matter how well the child may be taught hygiene, if the situation in which he is taught not hygienic much of the effort will be lost. Today, when we are thinking tax dollars in all too many instances without proper regard for the child, we are especially threatening the health of children which is certainly shortsighted if not actually a criminal attitude.

One of the most important phases of the whole health program is that of health service or supervision. By this I refer to the service rendered by school doctors and nurses in relation to the Health and Medical examinations and the follow upx of these examinations. ~~Thexx~~ ~~xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx~~

Health and medical examinations should be the basis for the major portion of the health program in the entire school. This is especially true in relation to the physical education program, in fact to proceed here without adequate physical examinations is not a good practice. The health supervision service that provides an immunization or vaccination program for such diseases as typhoid, scarlet fever, diphtheria and samllpox and checks for positive or negative reaction in the case of tuberculosis and diphtheria is rendering a service to the community not measured in money value.

The program that involves the conservation of eyesight, hearing and the correction of dental defects is one that is so forwardlooking in its nature that communities will profit many times over the original cost and the preservation of the health and happiness will be untold.

The final point in this series of eight that I started to set put to describe in this Protection; Correction; and Prevention program is the Physical Education program which while being more or less of a program in itself has as its major consideration the development of robust health.

Let us begin by saying that the rapidly changing civilisation through which we are ~~conchantly~~ passing demands a constantly changing curriculum. One of the efforts to meet this change has been the introduction of Physical Ed. in our schools in order to meet the threat of physical illiteracy because we are robbed, under our present civilization, of big muscle activity, outdoor living and a balanced ration between work, rest and play. So we have at last placed the education of the physical along side of the education of the mental, realizing that to separate them is a disastrous procedure but at the same time realizing that the education of the physical is a definite sector of education with definite relationship to the mental. This is supported by studies by Cozens and others who have concluded that "With boys and girls of elementary school age, three points seem fairly well established:

1. The better developed a boy and girl is for his or her age, the more able he or she is in school.

2. The general level of physical ability of children who rate high on intelligence is distinctly superior to that of children who rate low in intelligence.

3. There seems to be a direct relationship between ability in physical

tests and promotion or scholastic results."

Further, it has been shown that college girls of this generation are by actual measure, an inch or more taller than were the college girls of a generation ago. Why is this and how did it happen? The answer is undoubtedly partially due to the forms of recreation, athletics, games, etc. in which they participate.

So with this relationship established it is not difficult to see that the Physical Education program is no longer the "Physical Culture" type that it was some years ago but that it is a program of activity that would embrace: activities,of daily life; games; athletics and sports; dramatic expression-dancing; festivals; pageants; dramatics; social service and provocational activities; self-testing activities; individual corrective exercises; recreational activities for adults.

Along with this program of activity should go a series of physical examinations that will constantly guide in the types of such activity best suited to the child. In fact it will be discovered that there are a few who do not need the activity but who should be assigned definite rest periods in the place of activity. This is being done in some of our progressive schools.

That such a program is timely is borne out by the quotation from Mr. Morgan, Editor of the Journal of the National Education Association who writes that, "To my mind a more generous and far reaching program of physical education, both for persons in school and for adults, is one of the major needs of America. Undoubtedly much of our crime and of the morbidity, which is much more widespread than crime, are the results of a low level of physical vitality and well being. Ill health and physical weakness are at the roots of emotional instability and vicious tendencies." Any number of the quotations by prominent people already given show the same attitude.

This view is being accepted by educators in our progressive schools and promises a program to offset the threat of physical illiteracy.

Physical Education is constantly acquiring a broader connotation and a correspondingly greater significance since it has come to be regarded as a method of education rather than a program designed for physical development alone. Health is only one of the major objectives of t his sector of education and the s ocial qualities of courage, initiative, honesty, cooperation and self-confidence are equally important.

In summary may I say that I have tried to summarize for you some of the outstanding reasons for having a Health program in the schools. I have defined the adequate program as one dealing with Protection, Correction, and Prevention and have described these three terms in the eight points that I have discussed at some little length in the latter part of this paper.

Wade
5/1/33
Paper #28

# SOME OBSERVATIONS CONCERNING FEDERAL LAWS RELATING TO VETERANS OF WARS OF THE UNITED STATES.

During the first session of the 72nd Congress the Honorables Frank T. Hines, J. O'C. Roberts, and Henry W. Longfellow by Congress were authorized to edit and publish an annotated compilation of the "Federal Laws Relating to Veterans of the Wars of the United States." This was done, and in August, 1932 copies were distributed to the various veteran organizations and made available for purchase by anyone interested. This volume contains more than 2000 large pages.

On March 20, 1933 the 73rd Congress passed what is known as Public No. 2, 73rd Congress, "An Act to Maintain the Credit of the United States Government", which has but twenty sections, contains only five small pages, and repeals all other laws relating to veterans of Wars of the United States.

The United States has been the most liberal country known to history with its veterans of all wars, a thing of which every American may be proud to boast. And, its soldiers are the best that ever faced a foe.

In 1914, without notice, Europe was thrown into a war, destined to involve most of the civilized world, now known as the World War. At the beginning, the United States was not involved in this war, but our government saw fit to inaugurate a system of insurance protection, at that time designed to protect the American merchant ships from the

disastrous ravages of war, wherein our government undertook to insure vessels against losses in shipping American goods to the armies of the warring nations in Europe. This insurance at first covered only mercantile losses, but was soon extended to cover the lives of the seamen on these mercantile ships. The law authorizing this is known as the War Risk Insurance Act of 1914, marks the beginning of a new policy of government insurance, the first known to history, but, from this beginning, has developed one of the large departments of our government.

On the 6th day of April, 1917 the United States entered this war and immediately thereafter provided for the induction of the largest American army, for war in Europe, that had ever been called to arms in this country. At that time our government was insuring only against mercantile losses and the death of the American seamen engaged in shipping goods from the United States to the warring nations. It was not a very far step to extend that insurance to the American soldier, and, on the 6th day of October, 1917, the War Risk Insurance Act of 1914 was amended, extending life insurance protection to "every commissioned officer and enlisted man and every member of the army nurse corps and of the naval nurse corps when employed in active service under the War Department or Navy Department, in any multiple of $500.00 up to $10,000.00." This was the first instant known in history of a country protecting its soldiers by life insurance during a war.

In addition to this insurance protection, the law ~~xxxxxxxxxxx~~ provides ~~xxxxxxxxxxx~~ for a disability compensation to be paid to all soldiers, sailors and nurses who were disabled in the service, and, in the event of death brought about by such service, to the dependents of all of these soldiers, sailors, and nurses. It was further provided that soldiers could make an allottment to any dependents left at home and provision was made whereby the government added to such an allottment, enabling our soldiers to provide for their dependents during their military service.

The insurance phase of this law provides that an application had to be made for the insurance and arrangement could be made for a deduction from the soldiers' pay for the premiums. However, at the time this amendment was enacted there were several million men and women in the service eligible to such insurance, and realizing the utter impossibility of this vast army all immediately applying for this insurance, and, further realizing that every day was bringing death and total, permanent disability to many, which would not be protected until application was made, Congress added a provision to the law known as Automatic Insurance, which provided that all who desired the protection of this insurance must make application therefor within 120 days from the date the law became effective or the date of his induction, whichever was the later date, but, providing further that all who became totally and permanently disabled before the expiration of the 120 days would be presumed to have applied for his insurance protection, would

be automatically protected to the amount of $25.00 per month for total and permanent disability during his lifetime and, in case of death, to his dependents, for a period of 240 months. This time was later extended to include March 15, 1918, making every soldier, sailor or nurse actively employed in the United States military service, protected to that extent up until March 15, 1918. All who applied for the insurance could secure protection up to the amount of $10,000.00, provided he was in the military service and arranged for the payment of premiums. And this was the provisions of the law known as the War Risk Insurance Act, when the Armistice was signed, November 11, 1918.

Later, in the early part of 1919, about the time the army was being returned home and discharged, Congress amended the War Risk Insurance Act by providing for a cash bonus of $60.00 to be paid to every soldier, sailor, or nurse who had served in the United States Army during the World War. In 1924 this phase of the law was further extended, providing for the allowance to every soldier, sailor, or nurse an additional bonus allowance of $1.00 per day for service in the United States and $1.25 per day for overseas service, deducting the $60.00 cash bonus which had been paid, and, to this the government added an equal amount, with which fund it bought a twenty-year endowment insurance policy for the individual soldier, sailor, or nurse, payable in twenty years. This is what is known as the soldiers bonus and over which there has been so much agitation. After this law had been in effect for a period of approximately five years the United States Congress made a provision, whereby the insured could borrow 1/4 of the face value of this bonus endowment

policy and five years later that amount was extended to 50 percent. There was proper provision made, whereby the soldier, sailor, or nurse who had died before the enactment of this law or before making application for the bonus endowment policy, the amount of the credit of $1.00 per day for domestic service and $1.25 per day for foreign service would be paid to certain dependents of such soldier, sailor, or nurse.

At the beginning, the insurance beneficiary was limited to the insured, his spouse, child, mother or father, but later the permitted beneficiaries were extended to include any person who had an insurable interest in the insured, in all insurance contracts, excepting only the Automatic Insurance, which remained payable ~~only~~ to the insured, his spouse, child, mother or father, only.

A provision was made in this law for a Veterans Bureau, later called Veterans Administration, consisting of a Director General and sufficient assistants scattered over the United States, who are authorized to administer the various laws in behalf of the veterans of all wars of the United States.

The insurance contract issued to the insured by the United States government is perhaps the most liberal contract ever issued to an insured, and, among other things, provides for the payment of $5.75 per $1000.00 of insurance per month to an insured who is totally and permanently disabled, so long as he remains totally and permanently disabled, and, in case of his death, to his beneficiary for a period not to exceed 240 months. The Veterans'

Administration immediately adopted rules and regulations controlling the administration of this law, by which it was determined that any insured who is so disabled that he is unable to continuously follow a substantially gainful occupation is totally disabled and when such disability is founded upon conditions which render it reasonably certain to continue throughout the remainder of his life, he is permanently disabled.

After the close of the war, this law was further amended, providing for Vocational Training for all soldiers, sailors, and nurses disabled during the World War. By this provision a disabled beneficiary could make application for, and after medical examination, if training was deemed feasible, was entitled to take Vocational Training at the government's expense in some suitable vocation, in an effort to rehabilitate him and enable him to resume his place in the affairs of life. This was highly successful and many a disabled veteran received his education and rehabilitation in this manner, taking medical, legal or other suitable training.

It is reported that the first suit brought on the War Risk Insurance contract was filed and prosecuted by the plaintiff himself, a student, who had just graduated from his vocational training course in a law school. This suit was carried to the United States Supreme Court and the disabled veteran collected his insurance, notwithstanding, he was a lawyer, proficient, and able to successfully prosecute his claim through to the United States Supreme Court. Since that time there has developed a distinctive special practice,

hereby many suits have been brought against the United States nd millions of dollars have been awarded to the insured and their beneficiaries under these War Risk Insurance contracts.

On July 3, 1930 this law was further amended, extending isability allowance, or pension, to all other disabled veterans f the World War. By this amendment every veteran who was disabled fter his discharge to the extent of 25% was entitled to disability llowance pension, at the rate of $12.00 per month and up to $40.00 for total disability.

At this time the bringing of suits on the contract of War Risk Insurance was limited to six years from the date the cause of ction accrued or one year from the date of the approval of the act, whichever was the latter date, thus enabling a suit to be filed pon the insurance certificate of any disabled or deceased veteran p until the 3rd day of July, 1931. There was a further restriction pon the bringing of a suit, preventing the filing of the suit ntil the Administrator of Veterans Affairs had rejected or refused to pay the insurance. This created a complication, because a large number of decisions had not been rendered by the Director General on the 3rd day of July, 1931, and to avoid these veterans being rbitrarily deprived of their rights, a provision was made, suspending the limitation while the Veterans' Administration was determining whether or not it would pay the insurance without suit. By this exception a veteran had as many days in which to file his suit, fter he received a final rejection, as he had before the 3rd day of July, 1931, when he first filed his claim for his insurance.

On May 24, 1928, over the veto of the President, Congress passed a law known as the Disabled Emergency Officer's Retirement Act, which provides that any emergency officer who served in the World War, who could prove as much as 30% service connected disability is entitled to officer's retirement pay of 3/4 of the amount of his army pay, and, under this law, in January, 1932, 6935 officers were receiving this officer's retirement pay at an average of $140.00 per month. These officers consist of doctors, dentists, lawyers, and others who were emergency officers during the World War and by January, 1932 the annual payment of this officers' retirement pay amounted to $10,650,800, many of whom, in addition to this, were on the government pay roll at salaries as high as $9000.00 per annum. In some instances the officers' retirement pay and the salary paid for government positions held by the same disabled officer amounted to $15,000.00 annually.

As stated at the beginning, the United States has been most liberal with its veterans of all wars and this can be said more especially of the veterans of the World War. The War Risk Insurance Act and the World War Veterans' Act, as amended, constitute the most liberal and far-reaching legislation in behalf of war veterans ever enacted, by any country, at any time. This law being so liberal and so extensive there naturally arose in its administration many abuses, and a sentiment grew up among the people that our government has been too liberal and that the veterans have been demanding and receiving more than to which they are entitled. It would be impossible to enumerate all or any great number of these abuses, and, no doubt, every individual who has come in contact

-ith the law or with its administration has observed some such abuses that should be corrected.

One of the most conspicuous of these, perhaps is to be found among the officers, as was disclosed by Congressman Blanton of Texas in the House of Representatives on April 8, 1932, wherein it was shown that one, William Wolff Smith, whose word, at that time, as chief counsel for the Veterans' Bureau, was the last, in determining whether or not the War Risk Insurance should be paid to the disabled veteran without suit, had suffered his disability before his entry into the military service, as a swivel-chair officer 13 days before the signing of the Armistice, who, up to that date had never won an important law suit, yet, whose disability was so serious and services so valuable, that he had drawn $5843.75, had been awarded, back disability emergency officers' retirement pay/ $187.50 per month for the remainder of his life, and, in addition thereto, was drawing from our government an annual salary of $9000.00. Such a disabled and valuable servant must have a private secretary or an attendant, and the record discloses that in 1923 he selected a young lady from among the government employees at an annual salary of $1400.00. Her added duties, of course, entitled her to more pay and this is what the record shows: On May 1, 1924, her salary was raised to $1860.00; on July 1, 1924, her salary was raised to $2100.00; on October 12, 1925, her salary was raised to $2400.00; on October 31, 1925,her salary was raised to $2500.00; on February 12, 1926, her salary was raised to $2600.00; on June 29, 1926,her salary

...s raised to $3000.00; on September 7, 1927, her salary was ...ised to $3100.00; on December 27, 1927, her salary was raised to $3800.00; on June 30, 1928, her salary was raised to $4000.00: ...n July 12, 1928, her salary was raised to $4600.00; and on ...ecember 28, 1929 her salary was raised to $4800.00. Thus, we ...ind this Chief Counsel for the Veterans' Administration, a ...ivel-chair, office soldier for thirteen days, before the Armistice, ...aving received $5843.75 back officers' retirement pay, $187.50 ...er month for the remainder of his life, and $9000.00 per year ...alary, with a private secretary at a salary of $400.00 per month. ...his one officer of 13 days' service before the Armistice, who ...uffered all his disability before the war, was feeding from the ...ublic treasury at the rate of over $16,000.00 per year for himself ...nd his stenographer.

In the summer of 1932, under pressure of the depression, there ...as created among the veterans a demand for the payment of the bonus endowment insurance policy at once, and a systematic campaign ...as made to force Congress to pass such a law, culminating in a climax of a bonus army marching to Washington, the disastrous outcome of which is all too fresh in the minds of everyone. This ...nd the flagrant abuses in connection with the officers retirement pay, exposed by Congressman Blanton, fostered the famous "Act to Maintain the Credit of the United States Government" passed, and approved by the President on March 20, 1933, wherein it is estimated more than $500,000,000 annually will be saved by reducing the compensation of our disabled veterans who were privates, and,

so far, no one has indicated why the officers should not have shared in this saving.

This ~~xxxxxxxx~~ law known as "An Act to Maintain the Credit of the United States Government" is the most drastic piece of veteran legislation ever enacted by a United States Congress. It consists of but twenty short sections and covers less than five small pages of printing. It repeals all previous laws relating to veterans of any war, but exempts therefrom the officers drawing emergency officers retirement pay, who are not in the employ of the United States government, specifically providing that they shall continue to draw their officers retirement pay without reduction throughout the remainder of their lives. It delegates to the President authority to distinguish and determine war time and peace time service, the right of pension, if any, to disabled private soldiers, and the conditions and requirements for its payment, all to be determined "as he shall deem equitable and just". It also delegates ~~xxxxxxx~~ to him the authority to determine the validity of the contract of War Risk Insurance, prohibiting an appeal to any judicial tribunal within the United States on any question of law or fact, from a decision of the officers to whom he may delegate such authority and power.

In compliance with the authority granted by this law, the President, ~~xxxx~~ has promulgated by executive order, rules and regulations, setting forth who and under what conditions disabled private veterans, or their dependents, may receive a pension, reducing the present payment of every veteran who was a private, 10%, specifically exempting the retired veteran officers from

any reduction from their present pay, excepting a few who are now in the employ of the United States, and forbidding the payment or consideration for payment of any yearly renewable term insurance contract upon which an award of payment has not been made or a suit filed thereon, notwithstanding, some veterans are thereby arbitrarily deprived of the insurance protection they bought and paid for under a contract, without due process of law.

It has been estimated this will save our government approximately $500,000,000 per annum, which, by coincidence, is about the estimated amount to be expended in reforesting our country.

In 1917 the American dough boy responded to the call ofhis country and "Saved the World for Democracy". Why not now make him plant it to trees, so if there is another World War, we will have material to build ships to transport him to the scene of battle? How can he win a war without equipment?

Frank C. Wade

May 1, 1933.

Complete Minutes
Van Cleave

Oct. 3, 1932. Page #29.

The first regular meeting of the Terre Haute Literary Club for the year 1932-33 was held in the Residence Hall of the State Teachers College. The members and their friends partook of a delicious banquet.

The meeting was called to order by the president, Mr. J. L. Lord who gave something of his aspirations for the success of the club during the coming year. Dr Weideman was called upon to tell of the program arranged by the program committee.

The secretary was instructed to communicate with Mr N. E. Moore and to notify him that his proposition was acceptable. Motion was made and supported that high school seniors be invited according to a by-law of the club.

W. H. Vancleave, Secy.

The paper & the evening was read, or rather, presented by the president, Mr J. L. Lord.

There being no further business the ~~meeting~~ chief was adjorned to meet in the Chamber of Commerce Bldg. Mon nee. Oct 10, th at 7 30.

Members present.

Mitchell, Wisely, Canine, Acker, Stant, Lickman, Wickman, Lord, Mackall, Forsythe, Weng, Vaneleave, Zimmerman, and Ewen

N. R. Vaneleave, Sec

Oct. 10. 1932

The Terre Haute Literary Club met in regular session at 7 30 with the president J. L. Lord presiding. The paper of the evening was read by Dr B. F. Malan on Politics in the Machine Age. Dr Wiedeman and Mr Levin lead in the discussion of the paper.

members present:- Alber, Brengle, Ewers, Forsythe, Halberstadt, Hickman, Levin, Lord, Malan, Stantz, Vancleave, wade, wiedeman, Wisely and Zimmerman

J. L. Lord. Pres.

N. R. Vancleave Sect.

N. R. Vancleave, Sec

Oct. 17, 1932

The T. N. Literary Club met in regular session at 7:30 in the Chamber of Commerce Bldg. meeting was called to order by the President, J. L. Lord.

All Bills were presented for programs and for announcements as follows: Literary Co. $11.75 for printing and J. R. Woodburn $10.50 for announcement postcards. The bills on motion allowed, and the Secretary instructed to pay the same.

The subject of the evening was by the Sec'y. M. R. VanCleave on Taxation. Discussion led by Prof. Wisely and members present, Sutton, Wisely, VanCleave, Kimelich, Weideman, Lord, Emmons, Hickman, Jayne, Forsythe, Brown and VanCleave. Visitors present 6.

Receipts the evening $5.00

J. L. Lord Pres.

M. R. VanCleave Sec.

Oct. 24, 1932.

The I. N. Literary club was called to order by the President J. L. Lord. meeting The minutes of the previous meeting were read and approved. A motion was made, supported and duly passed that the president take steps to have a reporter present from one of the local newspapers and that in the absence of such a reporter, a committee consisting of the president secretary, and mr Sutton serve on the publicity committee and that, as such, they shall present a summary of the paper read to the local newspaper at the close of each meeting.

The paper of the evening was read by Charles Zimmerman on Problems of the American city. Dr Mitchell led in the discussion of the paper.

members present, Sutton, Mitchell, Mackall, Forsythe, Stanly, Wallenstedt, Canine, Tapay, Wong, Nickman, Wiedeman Emens, Allen, Lord, Zimmerman & Van Cleave Visitors present. 6

J. L. Lord. Pres.
M. R. Van Cleave, Sec't.

Nov. 7, 1932

Meeting were called to order by the President, J. L. Lond. minutes 3 previous meeting were read and approved.

motion was made, supported and passed that Prof. E. W Kemp be placed on the roll as an Honorary member of the organizatin. The secretary was instructed to notify Prof Kemp who is at this time somewhere in Kansas.

The paper of the evening was read by mr A. R. Mankle on Jimmy Bonner and the Wolf. Dr Lickman lead the discussion The following members were present Wiedeman, Forsythe, Stantz, Wisely, Lickman, Mankle, Hallenstadt, Blumley Emens, Canine, Himelick + Van Cleave Visitors 3.

J. L. Lond, Pres.
N. R. VanCleave. Sec't

Oct. 31, 1932.

The J.N. Literary Club was called to order by the President J. L. Lord at 7 30 minutes 3 previous meeting were read and approved.

Professor J. H. Weng was elected to serve on the Foundation Fund committee for a period of three years, Oct. 1932 to Oct. 1935. The other members of the committee are Dr F. E. Wiedeman and Prof. J. B. Wisely, respectively.

Professor Wisely explained briefly the nature and purpose of the Foundation Fund. stating that at the present time the fund amounts to approx $1600

The paper of the evening was read by Prof J. F. Mackell on Emmanuel Kant. The leaders of the discussion were Sutin and VanCleave.

members present were Lord, Wisely, Weng, Sutin, Nickerson, Forsythe, Wiedeman VanCleave & Mitchell

J. L. Lord. Pres.
N. R. VanCleave. Sec't.

November 14, 1943

Meeting was called to order by the president, J. L. Lord. The paper of the evening was read by Pro. E. N. Canine on a man of Paste. The leaders of the discussion were Halberstadt and Wade. Members present were Wisely Sutin, Himelick, Weideman, Forsythe, Wade, Hickman, Halberstadt Wade, Brangle, Allen, Emery, Ford and VanCleave, Visitors 4.

J. L. Lord Pres
M. R. VanCleave, Sec

Nov. 21, 1932.

meeting was called to order by the President J. L. Lord. minutes of the previous meeting were read & approved. The paper of the evening was read by R. W. Himelick on a new Philosophy needed. J. L. Lord led the discussion. members present were Sutin, Himelick, Lord, Wisely, Emery, Acker, Allen, Hickman, Wang, Brengle, Canine, Forsythe and VanCleave. Visitors 6.

J. L. Lord. Pres
N. R. VanCleave. Sec't

Dec. 5, 1932.

Meeting called to order by Pres. J. L. Lord. minutes of previous meeting read & approved. The paper of the evening was read by Dr. F. E. Wiedeman on the Relation of the Hormone to man. The leaders of the discussion were Dr Brengle and mr C. Y. Kelly. 14 Visitors were present. members in attendance were: Brengle, Halberstadt, Hickman, Wade, Acker, Kelly, Lord, Wisely, Mitchell, Allen, Emery, Forsythe, Markle & VanCleave.

J. L. Lord, Pres.
N. R. VanCleave, Sec't.

Nov. 28, 1932

Meeting was called to order by Pres. J. L. Lord. Minutes of Nov. 21st were read and approved. The paper of the week evening was read by Guy Stantz on Training Citizens. The discussion was led by Forsythe and carried members present:- Sutin, Carnine, Wisely, Weng, Wiedeman, Stantz, Mitchell, Halberstadt, Sutin, Forsythe, Hickman, Jafay, Stantz, Archer, Allen, Lord & VanCleave, Visitor G. L. Lord, Pres.

M. R. VanCleave.

December 12, 1932

meeting was called to order by the President J. L. Lord. minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. The paper of the evening was read by L. C. Wallenstadt on Vigo County's Vanished Race. The following members were present: Markle, Emery, Hickman, Wiedeman, Lord, Sutin, Wade, Wisely and Van Cleave, Wallenstadt.

J. L. Lord. Pres.
M. R. VanCleave Sec.

December 14, 1932

The meeting was called to order by the president, minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. The name of W. E. Durnead which had been submitted for membership was voted upon. The ballot revealing no dissenting vote he was declared elected to membership, his name placed upon the roll and the secretary was instructed to notify him of his election. The paper of the evening was read by Dr D. N. Forsyth on The conservation of Hearing. The members present were ackers, Forsyth, Ewers, Allen, Wiedeman, Stanley, Lord, Kelly and VanCleave

D. L. Lord Pres.

M. R. VanCleave, Sec.

Jan. 2, 1933.

The meeting was called to order by the Vice Pres. Chester Kelly. The minutes of the previous meeting were read and abbroved. The secretary was directed to notify Mr Ernest L. Welborne that his name was dropped from the mailing list and from the roll of membership by mistake and that the D. N. Literary will welcome his regular attendance at all of its meetings.

The paper of the evening was prepared by Pres. L. N. Kines and read by Dr malan on William Gilmore Simms.

The members present were:- Wisely, Ewing, malan, Kelly, allen mactaell, Dickman, Ewers, Forsyth Brengle & Vancleave.

J. L. Lord. Pres.
N. R. Vancleave, Sec.

Jan. 9, 1933.

Meeting was called to order by President. minutes of previous meeting was read and approved. The secretary was instructed to inform Prof Kemp of Wichita, Kansas of his election to Kansas membership. The paper of the evening was read by Dr O. T. Allen on The New Skepticism. members present. Allen, Archer, Brengle, Canine, Forsyth, Hickman, Himelick, Halberstadt, Lord, Mackell, Markle, VanCleave & Weideman, Wade, Ewers

J. L. Lord, Pres.
M. R. VanCleave, Sec't.

Jan. 16, 1933.

Meeting was called to order by President, minutes of previous meeting were read and approved the paper of the evening was read by Professor J.E. Brengle on the In Defense of Am. Democracy. Members present were Allen, Acker, Brengle Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Lord, Mitchell, Mitchell, Stautz, Sutin, Taylor, VanCleave, wade, Weng, Widdy, Weidenman

J. L. Lord. Pres.

N. R. VanCleave, Sec't

Jan. 23, 1923

Meeting was called to order by President L. J. Lord. The paper of the evening was read by Prof. R. A. Acker on The Psychology of Advertising. The leaders of the discussion were Rabbi Tafay and Mr Stantz. Eighteen visiting members were present. Members in attendance were as follows:-

Acker, Allen, Brengle, Emens, Hickman, Forsythe, Kelly, Mackell, Mitchell, Cameneel, Sutton, Tafay, VanCleave, Wade, Watkins, Weng and Wisely.

J. L. Lord, Pres.
M. P. VanCleave, Sec't.

Jan. 30, 1933.

meeting was called to order by the President. minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. The paper of the evening was read by Professor F. H. Wang on "Rome - Stratified History" J. L. Lord lead the discussion. members present were:- Allen, Acker, Brangle, Cannie, Emery, Forsythe, Hickman, Lord Kelly, Mitchell, Ownbey, Sutton, Talley VanCleave, Wade, Wang.

H. R. VanCleave, Sec't.
J. L. Lord, Pres.

Feb. 6, 1933

Meeting were called to order by the president, the paper of the evening was read by Dr. H. S. Hickman on the Greatest comeback in History. Prof. J. B. Wisely led the discussion. Members present were Wade, Lord, Ewen, Forsythe, Kelly, Halberstadt, Cannine, Kelly, Hickman, and Wisely.

As the one who was scheduled to read Feb. 13 th was not ready no meeting was held on that date

J. L. Lord. Pres.

Feb. 20, 1933. N. R. VanCleave. Sec

Meeting was called to order by Pres minutes of two ~~meetings~~ weeks preceding were read and approved. The paper of the evening was read by Prof. Waldo Mitchell on Lobbying & Legislation. The leaders of the discussion were J. F. Mackell and F. C. Wade. Members present were Lord. Hickman, Ewen, Mitchell Sutin, Brangle, Wisely, Cannine. Wade, Foley, Halberstadt, Wiedeman, Forsythe. VanCleave, Cunneen and Kelly. 26 Visitors were in attendance.

N. R. VanCleave. Sec

February 27, 1933

meeting was opened at 7:30 with the minutes read & approved.
president, J. L. Lord presiding. The paper
of the evening was read by J. E. Evans
on Technocracy. The leader of the dis-
cussion was Lewis Sutin. Time of
reading the paper was fifty min-
utes. The following members were
present:- Lord, Fair, Kelly, Evans, Acker,
Wisely, Brengle, Markle, Sutin, Wade,
Forsythe, Hickman, Ammerman, Weng,
Wiedeman and VanCleave. Ten
visitors were in attendance

J. L. Lord, Pres
M. R. VanCleave, Sec't. pro tem.

March 6, 1933

meeting was called to order by the president, J.L. Lord. minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. The paper of the evening was presented by Theadore Grob on The clash of Values. Members present were Lord, Wisely, Emmenecker, Brengle, Acker, Forsythe, Wiedeman, Powers & VanCleave. + Grob.

J.L. Lord, Pres.
M.R. VanCleave, Sec't.

march 13, 1933.

meeting was called to order by Prof. Wisely in the absence of the president J.L. Lord. minutes of the previous meeting were read and approved. The name of D.L. Harmon was proposed for membership in the Club. The paper of the evening was read by Rabbi Isaay on The Tragedy of Mark Twain. members present were Wisely, Isaay, Forsyth, Nickman, Sutin, Halberstadt, VanCleave, Welborn, Markie, Wiedeman, Emery, Brengle, Achen and

J.L. Lord. Pres.
M.R. VanCleave. Sec't.

March 20, 32

Meeting was called to order at
the regular time by the president
J. L. Lord. minutes of the previous
meeting were read and approved
The ballot was spread and
D. L. Hannon was unanimously
elected to membership in the
club. The secretary was asked
to notify him of this election
The receipts of the evening was
$8.00 (eight dollars) which made
a total of $54.16 in the checking
account of the club at the T. N. Bank
Bank, $88.09 in the mechanics
Building and Loan and $155.[illegible]
in the Central Building & Loan Co.
Mr Wisely was asked to see if
The Central Building & Loan would
permit the withdrawal of interest
to pay the speaker at the [illegible] meeting
The paper of the evening was
read by Lewis Sutin and Dr Lester
of the Lawyer members present were
Sutin, Lord, Emens, Hickman, Fair, Mead
Tafay, Wisely, Stantz, Weng, Kelly, Forsyth
Wiedeman & VanCleave.

April 3. 1933.

meeting were called to order by the president J. L. Lord. Action was taken authorizing the president to engage a speaker for the May meeting. The paper of the evening was read by Prof. F. B. Wisely on "Motoring Through Europe. The following members were present. Wisely, Wing, Forsyth, Canine, Brengle, Malan, Achey, Jayne, Halberstadt, Emery, Emanuel, Allen, Stantz, Fair, Kelly & Lauckaus. Twenty six visitors were present.

J. L. Lord. Pres.
M. R. Van Cleave, Sec't.

April 10, 1933.

meeting was called to order by president. The president was authorized to take full charge of preparations and publicity for the May dinner meeting. The paper of the evening was read by Chester Kelly on Trial by Jury members present were Lord, Kelly, Wisely, Emmert, Forsythe, Wiedeman, Hallenstadt, Allen, Emens, Markle, Zimmerman,

J. L. Lord, Pres.

M. P. VanClave, Sec

April 17, 1933.

meeting was called to order by Pres. J. L. Lord. minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. The paper of the evening was read by mr W. W. Lewis on The Fundamental Difficulty Behind our present Economic Situation members present were Lewis Lord. Wing. Wiedeman, Dickman, Wisely, Tebby, Acker, Zimmerman, Quencek, Markle, Taylor, Forsyth, and VanClave.

J. L. Lord. Pres

M. W. VanClave. Sect.

April 24, 1933

Meeting was called to order by the president. ~~xxxxxxx~~ minutes of the previous meeting were read and approved. The following members of the club were apponited by the president as a nominating committee. Wisely, Brengle and Forsythe. Our new member Mr Harman was introduced. ~~to-be~~ The paper of the evening was read by H.E. Moore on The Reasons for and the nature of the School Health Program. Members present were Nickman, Zimmerman, Wiedeman, Forsythe, Lord, VanCleave, Moore, Markle, Acker, Brengle, Cannine, Hallenstadt, Mitchell, Stantz and Fair.

J. L. Lord. Pres

M. R. VanCleave, Sec't.

May 1st, 1933.

meeting was called to order by the president. minutes of previous meeting were read and approved. arrangements were completed for the annual dinner meeting which is to be held at the First Baptist church on the evening of may 8th. The speaker was announced as Judge millington of cadillac, Mich the president announced that, following the dinner which would be in the basement of the church, the speaker would address the members and their guests in the auditorium & ~~that~~ the meeting would be open to the public. Current bills were presented and ordered paid. The secretary was instructed to present a check for $15.00 to the chamber of commerce for the use of the hall by the club.

The nominating committee consisting of mr Wisely, Brengle and Forsyth reported as follows. For president, chester Kelly. for vice

president, N. R. VanCleave, for Sect & Treas. Wm E. Zimmerman and for Historical Sect. A. R. Markle, the report of the nominating committee was accepted and the nominees were elected by acclamation.

Following a financial report by the Sect-Treas. the paper of the evening was read by J. C. Wade on Some Observations concerning Federal Laws Relating to Veterans' of Wars of the U. S. The following members were present:- Lord, Wade, Zimmerman, VanCleave, Wisely, Forsyth, Nicholson, Ammerman, Ammerman, Sutin, Brengle, Markel, Archer, Taxay, Markel & Harmon.

J. L. Lord, Pres.
N. R. VanCleave, Sect.

# Treasurers Report. May 8, 1933.

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Recd from former treas | | $59.46 |
| Recd dues from members | | 34.00 |
| | Total | 93.46 |

Disbursements

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Vigueaney co-programs | $11.75 | |
| T. R. Woodburn – cards | 10.55 | |
| Speaker (added to interest) | 12.05 | |
| Expenses sect | 4.65 | |
| Chamber of Commerce | 15.00 | |
| Expenses church + dinner | 7.55 | |
| Service charge at bank | 1.56 | |
| Total | $63.11 | 63.11 |
| Balance in treasury | | 30.35 |

Foundation Fund.

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Central Building + Loan | | $1518.91 |
| Interest | | 37.95 |
| Mechanics Building + Loan | | 86.37 |
| Interest | | 1.72 |
| Total | | $1644.95 |
| Int. withdrawn to buy speaker | | 37.95 |
| Balance | | $1607.00 |

N. R. VanCleave, Treas.

# TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

# VOL 13

# 1933 — 34

# TERRE HAUTE

# LITERARY CLUB

# PAPERS

VOLUME XIII

1933- -1934

# Index- -1933-34- -Volume XIII.


Acher,R.A.- -Some Psychological,Sociological,and Economic Aspects of the N.R.A. Program - - - - - - - - -Paper # 5 - - pp. 52-57
Allen,O.T.- -Money and Inflation - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 17 - - pp. 24-25
Canine,E.N.- -With Scott in the Borders- - - - - - - - - - - - - " 16 - - pp. 212-234
Conservation and Replacement of Wild Life,The- -D.H.Forsyth- - " 11
Cosmic Rays- -J.F.Mackell- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 28
Cowbird: a Parasite,The- -H.E.Elder- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 26
Dinosaurs,Hunting- -Guy Stantz - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 25
Education in Indiana, Financing Public- -H.E.Moore - - - - - - - " 24
Elder,H.E.- -The Cowbird:A Parasite- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 26 - - pp. 356-367
Evidence,Rules of and Why- -C.Y.Kelly- - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 1
Footprints of Men- -J.B.Wisely - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 2
Forsyth,D.H.- -The Conservation and Replacement of Wild Life - " 11 - - pp. 135-145
Harmon,D.L.- -1895 in Science- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 14 - - pp. 161-170
Hickman,H.S.- -Should Our Girls be Educated for a Home or a Job " 13 - - pp. 149-160
Hines,L.N.- -The Life and Works of Sydney Lanier - - - - - - - - " 3 - - pp. 41-54
Interesting Stories of 1000 Years Ago- -F.H.Weng - - - - - - - - " 15
Investment,What Type for the American Citizen in 1933- -C.T.Malen 7
Jimmie Bonner and the Law- -A.R.Markle - - - - - - - - - - - - -" 22
Kelly,C.Y.- -Rules of Evidence and Why - - - - - - - - - - - - -" 1 - - pp. 3 - 2 -
Lanier,The Life and Works of Sydnet- -L.N.Hines- - - - - - - - - " 3
Life and Works of Sydney Lanier,The- -L.N.Hines- - - - - - - - -" 3
Linnaeus- -W.E.Ouweneel- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 4
Lord,J.L.- -The Mormons in Illinois- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 20 - - pp. 274-[illegible]
Mackell,J.F.- -Cosmic Rays - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 28 - - pp. 361-377
Malan,C.T.- -What Type Investment for the American Citizen in 1933 7. - - pp. 53-[illegible]
Markle,A.R.- -Jimmie Bonner and the Law- - - - - - - - - - - - - " 22 - - pp. 305-318
Money and Inflation- -O.T.Allen- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 17
Moore,H.E.- -Financing Public Education in Indiana - - - - - - - " 24
Mormons,in Illinois,The- -J.L.Lord - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 20
N.R.A. Program,Some Psychological, Sociological, and Economic Aspects of- -R.A.Acher- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 5
Other Half,The- -L.R.Sutin - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 23
Ouweneel,W.E.- -Linnaeus- -- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 4 - - pp. 57-61
Pasteur,Louis- -F.E.Wiedeman - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 10
Rose From Our Own Garden,The- -N.R.Van Cleave- - - - - - - - - - " 9
Rules of Evidence and Why- -C.Y.Kelly- - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 1
Scarlet Sugar- -J.M.Taxay- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 18
Science,1895 in- -D.L.Harmon - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 14
Scott in the Borders,With- -E.N.Canine - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 16
Should Our Girls be Educated for a Home or a Job- -H.S.Hickman " 13
Stantz,Guy- -Hunting Dinosaurs - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 25 - - pp. 343-355
Sutin,Lewis R- -The Other Half - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 23 - - pp. 320-329
Taxay,J.M.- -Scarlet Sugar - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 18 - - pp. 258-[illegible]
Van Cleave,N.R.- -The Rose From Our Own Garden;Chauncey Rose - " 9 - - pp. 106-114
Weng,F.H.- -Interesting Stories of One Thousand Years Ago - - - " 15 - - pp. 192-[illegible]
Wiedeman,F.E.- -Louis Pasteur- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 10 - - pp. 124-134
Wisely,J.B.- -Footprints of Men- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 2 - - pp. 24-[illegible]
Woman,The Married in Industry- -Chas.Zimmerman - - - - - - - - - " 19
Zimmerman,Chas.- -The Married Woman in Industry- - - - - - - - - " 19 - - pp. 266-[illegible]


Dates, evidently, have been omitted.

10/2/33

Paper #1

```
xxxxxxx    xx    xx    xx        xxxxxxx    xxxxxxx
xx   xx    xx    xx    xx        xx         xx
xxxxxxx    xx    xx    xx        xxxxx      xxxxxxx
xx xx      xx    xx    xx        xx               xx
xx  xx     xxxxxxx   xxxxxxxx   xxxxxxx    xxxxxxx
```

```
          xxxxxxx    xxxxxxx
          xx   xx    xx
          xx   xx    xxxxx
          xx   xx    xx
          xxxxxxx    xx
```

```
xxxxxxxx  xx      xx   xxxxxx   xxxxx    xxxxxx   xx   xx   xxxxxx   xxxxxxx
xx          x     x     xx     xx  xx    xx       xxx  xx   xx   x   xx
xxxxx         x   x      xx     xx   xx   xxxx     xx x xx   xx       xxxxx
xx              x x      xx     xx  xx    xx       xx  xxx   xx   x   xx
xxxxxxx           x      xxxxxx  xxxxx    xxxxxx   xx   xx   xxxxxx   xxxxxxx
```

```
          x        xx    xx    xxxxx
         x x       xxx   xx    xx  xx
        x   x      xx xx xx    xx   xx
       xxxxxxx     xx   xxx    xx   xx
      xx     xx    xx    xx    xxxxx
```

```
xx       x       xx   xx    xx   xx   xx
 x      x x       x   xx    xx     x  x
  x    x   x    x       xxxxxxx      xx
   x x       x x        xx    xx     xx
    x         x         xx    xx     xx
```

by Chester Kelly.

## RULES OF EVIDENCE AND WHY

A witness is called into court and is required to make oath that he will tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth regarding the issues in the case before the court. As he generally knows nothing about the issues in the case being tried and has little conception of the meaning of the phrase, the last part of his obligation is lost to him, and he is impressed with the idea that he must tell all of the truth that he knows. As questions are asked him, he tries to give elaborate answers and is immediately met with objections which are sustained by the court, and he soon conceives that the court is preventing him from telling the whole truth and is suppressing his evidence. This gives rise to a common belief that rules of evidence are used to hinder rather than expedite the litigation.

The attorneys representing litigants are presumed to know the issues involved in any particular case, and it is their duty to ask questions of witnesses which elicit the facts in issue. It sometimes happens that an attorney, either through ignorance of the propriety of his questions, or from a wilful purpose to give the jury the impression that he is not permitted to prove his facts, asks questions of the witness which are improper and to which objections are sustained. This again sometimes impresses the unthinking witness with the idea that the purpose of the trial is to suppress facts.

The ultimate test of admissability of evidence is its materiality to the issues,--that is, to prove or disprove any of the facts alleged and set out or denied in the pleadings filed in the case. Some evidence which might be material is excluded under certain circumstances, by rule of law, but in such instances it is the actual materiality which is the reason for the exception. For instance, if the witness has read a certain written contract and knows,--or thinks he knows--the contents of that written instrument, and it is shown that such written contract is available to bring into court, the witness will not be permitted to tell what he remembers of its contents because the written contract itself is the best evidence of its contents. The human mind at its best is far from perfect, and no witness can remember accurately all of the contents of a written instrument from reading it or even attempting to memorize it. The instrument itself shows what was written; hence the faulty memory of the witness is immaterial as compared with the writing itself. However, if the written instrument is lost or is otherwise unavailable, the memory of the witness becomes material evidence of its contents. Or in the event that the pleadings assert that the written instrument has been altered or changed, the evidence of the witness as to the original contents is material to the issues.

The determination of the materiality of a fact offered in evidence is a matter of reasoning and judgment. Some facts are clearly irrelevant to the fact to be determined, some are

clearly material to the issues, and many may be on the borderline. It is the duty of the one offering a fact in evidence to show that it is material. To illustrate, let us suppose that John Doe is charged with highway robbery of Richard Roe by the use of a revolver. It would clearly be material to show that when John Doe was arrested soon after the crime was committed, he had on his person a firearm similar to the one used in the robbery. It would be immaterial that he kept a shotgun in his home. It would be immaterial that he had purchased a revolver sometime previous; but if the proof went further and showed that he had kept such revolver in a certain place, and at the time the robbery was committed, the revolver was missing from its customary place, such facts might be material to the issue. There is no precise test to determine whether any given fact is material in any given case; the question must be determined in each case according to the teaching of reason and judicial experience. The pleadings must first be considered in determining whether evidence is relevant, and the relation, if any, of the fact offered to the fact alleged in the pleading. Of course reasonable inferences may be drawn from facts proven to determine the truth of the fact alleged.

In objecting to a question propounded or an answer given, the objector must state his reason for the objection. Sometimes the reason is so patent that the reason is not assigned. Often the reason for the objection is stated as that the fact sought is incompetent, irrelevant, and immaterial. It is clear in such case that the only reason assigned is the immateriality of the fact sought, for incompetency is the result, not the

reason, and relevancy and materiality are synonymous. This merely illustrates the tendency of lawyers to use a superfluity of language.

Since materiality or the relevance of the fact sought to be proved to the issue of the case is the general test of competency, it follows that all other rules of evidence are largely rules of exclusion. These rules are the results of the experience of past generations of the improbability of the inferences to be drawn from the facts offered. Let me interpolate here that the body of the law is in two divisions--statutory law which is the rules and regulations of conduct enacted by the state and national legislatures, and the common law, which is the result of precedent, the experience of past generations as to the best rules and regulations of human social conduct, going back, as Blackstone said, "to the time when the memory of man runneth not to the contrary." Rules of evidence are largely rules of common law--rules of precedent which have been found in the past to aid in dispensing justice to litigants.

It must be clear that in a discussion such as this, all of the rules of evidence and all rules of exception can not be taken up. In fact lawyers and jurists with life-time experience are not always sure of the application in given instances of the rules and the exceptions of the rules. But the general rules and the most common exceptions will give an idea of the system used in determining facts in litigation.

The burden of proving any fact alleged is upon the person alleging such fact in his pleadings. A litigant when he goes into court alleges an infringement of his legal rights. As the law presumes every person to be obedient to the laws of the land, the person alleging disobedience must prove facts to show such infringement; before he may get redress, he must show that he has been injured. In the course of the trial, the burden of proof sometimes changes from one party to the other--that is, the party having proved his allegation, his opponent who has alleged an excuse, must prove the facts constituting the excuse. The reason for this rule is clear; if mere allegation constituted proof, litigation would be constant. Mankind has not arrived at the degree of honesty which would make every assertion a fact.

There are certain presumptions in the law arising from proven facts--that is, certain facts having been proved, the law presumes certain inferences therefrom to be conclusive. Some of those presumptions are of common law and some are statutory. A fact shown to have existed is presumed to continue until the contrary is shown, as for instance, corporate existence, sanity or insanity, reputation as to character, or veracity. One's occupation is presumed to continue; the continuance of the marriage relation is presumed to continue until the contrary is shown. The identity of a name is an inference of the identity of the person. A person is presumed to avoid death or injury. A letter mailed and addressed with postage prepaid is presumed to have been delivered. Corporate acts and proceedings are presumed to be regular. A woman is pre-

sumed capable of bearing children, and a man is presumed capable of procreation. Possession of property is presumed to be in the owner of the legal title, and the title is presumed to be the one in possession. Judicial proceedings are presumed to have been regular. These are presumptions arising from precedent--from past experience. The Volstead Act gave examples of statutory presumptions; a person found in possession of alcoholic beverage was presumed to have it for sale or transportation.

The general rule is that all evidence must be given under oath or affirmation. Experience teaches us that human beings are influenced by fear. There is a general belief that if a man calls upon Diety to ratify the truth of his assertion, he will be punished for falsehood; the religious instinct is strong and the great majority of humans will speak truly under oath when they would not hesitate to lie in ordinary conversation. However there are some who do not fear punishment after death, but do fear punishment before death. Therefore the law makes the commission of perjury a crime, and the fear of imprisonment deters these from bearing false witness against their neighbors. Unfortunately there are some who fear neither the present nor the future, and rely upon their own shrewdness to deceive the court and jury; and for the purpose of detecting falsehood and to explain evidence already given, the law gives to the litigant against whom the evidence is introduced, the right to cross-examine the witness upon any evidence given by him in chief--that is, upon his original testimony. Therefore ordinarily evidence though sworn to, is not received unless the opposing party has, or had had, the right and opportunity to

cross-examine the witness. As a general rule the affidavit is not received in evidence; but in equity practice, when speedy action is required, the court will make orders upon a showing made by affidavit even though there has been no opportunity for cross examination; but in such instances any wrong done may be righted upon a subsequent trial wherein the right of cross examination is exercised.

As a corrolary to the rule that all evidence must be given under oath, we have the rule that hear-say evidence is inadmissible. This means that the witness can not give the statement he heard another say as proof of the facts of such statement. But if the issue is upon the saying of the words imputed to the one saying them, evidence of what he said is clearly material and therefore admissible. For instance, if A said within the hearing of B that C was a thief, and C sues A for slander, B's evidence of what he heard A say would be admitted because that is the issue to be proven. But if D undertook to testify that he heard B say that A used the language attributed to him, such testimony would not be admitted because there would be only B's unsworn statement of the fact in issue without any opportunity to cross examine B as to the exact words used and the circumstances under which they were uttered, and B's opportunity to clearly hear and understand their meaning.

There are several exceptions to the rule against the admission in evidence of hear-say statements. A statement against the interest of the declarant, which is in issue in the case,

is material and admissible. Such statement sought to be introduced is ordinarily made by one of the litigants and is called an admission against interest; there are two reasons why the proof of such admissions are material. Human experience teaches us that a man will not ordinarily make a statement against his own interest unless the same is true. And a statement against interest made when the influence of litigation is not present has a probative value not present in a statement made when the litigant is seeking advantage in trial. And when a statement is made and acted upon by the other party, right and justice sometimes demand that he be estopped from asserting otherwise. Related to admission against interest are written statements made in the regular course of business; such statements may sometimes be proven when death has made it impossible for their maker to testify. So also declarations as to pedegree may be admitted, the facts being within the knowledge of the one making the declaration, and other proof not being available.

Hear-say statements that are a part of the res gestae are admissible when material. The term res gestae has an indefinite meaning. It has been designated as the collection of primary facts constituting the necessary and immediate field of a judicial inquiry. It has also been defined as those circumstances which are the automatic and undesigned incidents of a particular litigated act and which are admissible in evidence when illustrative of such act; also it is said that res gestae is the events speaking for themselves though the instructive words and acts of the participants, not the words and acts of

the participants when narrating the events. It is the facts constituting the turning point of the matter in issue. For instance, if there is an automobile accident upon the highway, all facts immediately preceding and immediately following the collision constitute the res gestae; at such time the parties, victims, and observers are not thinking of law suits, or damages, but their thoughts and observations--their ~~deliberations~~ declarations — --are upon the incidents immediately before them. The statements made are not founded upon any advantage to be gained but reflect the truth. Let us take the illustration a little further and suppose that a lady is riding in a car driven by her husband, and immediately following the accident she says to her husband, "I told you that if you kept going at 60 you would get into trouble." Such statement made before time for reflection would be a part of the res gestae and would be admissible in evidence of the speed of the car in which she was riding, if such speed were in issue in the suit resulting from the collision.

Another exception to the hear-say rule is dying declarations. If a person is in immediate contact with death and knows that death will soon overtake him, and with such knowledge makes a statement relative to the issues subsequently on trial, the evidence of the statement so made is admissible. The reason is that death being at hand there is no selfish motive for making a false statement--no advantage to be gained by misrepresentation, and there is a further reason--if the declarant has a religious instinct, he will not wish to meet his God with

a lie upon his lips. Of course the absence of the witness occasioned by his death, in many instances removes the only direct evidence upon the issue. Dying declarations are most frequently used in murder cases wherin the victim after injury and before death relates the history of the affray in which he met his injury.

Another apparent exception to the hear-say rule is the rule that reputation of a litigant or witness may be shown; but this is really not an exception. The reputation of a man is what people say of him. It is sometimes material to show that a witness or litigant is reputed to have characteristics which may or may not have probative value. If a witness has been upon the stand and given evidence against a party which evidence has not been shaken, such party has the right to show that the reputation of such witness for truth and veracity is bad; this is called impeaching the witness. It does not eliminate the testimony of the witness, but it throws a shadow upon his credibility. It does not prove or attempt to prove that the witness is swearing falsely, but lets the court and jury know in what repute the witness is held by those who know him. In introducing evidence to impeach a witness there are certain questions to be asked and none other. The impeaching witness is asked, "Are you acquainted with the general reputation of John Doe for truth and veracity in the neighborhood in which he lives?" If the witness answers,"No," there are no further questions to be asked; if he answers "Yes," the nest question is, "Is it good or bad?" After he has answered he may be asked on cross—

examination as to whom he has heard say anything about the witness impeached. It is common knowledge that if one has a good character, the fact is seldom if ever mentioned; he is presumed to have good character if his character is never discussed. On the other hand bad character is subject of frequent comment. But the real character of the witness is not in issue. When material, the following characteristics may be proved by reputation--honesty, industry, integrity, kindness, morality, peace and quietude, sobriety, use of profanity, abiding the law, or paying debts, or the lack of any such characteristics. The proof of reputation has little value to prove the facts in issue, but is generally used to off-set damage done by other evidence.

The testimony of the witness in any case is theoretically confined to facts that he has seen or experienced through one or more of the human senses. The province of the witness is to relate the facts bearing upon or related to the issues involved in the trial. It is the province of the court or jury trying the case to draw the proper conclusions from the facts proven. According to the opinion of the judge or jury each point in issue is decided. For this reason we have the general rule that the opinion of the witness is not competent to be admitted in evidence. The opinion of the witness may be founded upon a better understanding of the facts, and he may be mentally capable of a much better conclusion than the members of the jury; but the witness is not the one who is trying the case, and the law does not permit him to usurp the functions of the

jury. His opinion might be warped by prejudice, or based upon facts known only to him and upon which there has been no opportunity for cross examination. And the opinion might be very defective. At any rate the law provides for the selection of those who are to be the judge or the jury, and if any mistake in opinion is made, it is the mistake of him or them into whose hands the law has given the decision. In fact one who knows any of the facts in issue is not a competent juror because his mind is not free from prejudice aroused from the facts he knows. The jury should get all of the facts pertaining to the issues known by all of the witnesses, and from such assembly of all of the facts in evidence form their conclusions. The experience of the English race has proved that the opinion of an unprejudiced jury is more likely to be correct than is the opinion of the witness who generally has only part of the facts before him.

Like most other rules of evidence, the rule that the opinion of the witness is incompetent as evidence is emphasized by its several exceptions. In fact most witnesses are unable to separate the facts they have observed from their conclusions based upon those facts; and generally the reasonable inferences and conclusions of the witness from the facts observed by him, are not objected to and are admitted. In truth almost any fact we speak of is a conclusion formed from observation. We say that the floor is level--we mean that from our observation of it, we conclude or believe that it is level. And so in ruling upon objections to opinion evidence, the judge must be guided by common sense. As long as the opinion or conclusion does

not fasten itself upon the issues of the case, it should ordinarily be admitted if the fact itself is material. But it is improper for a witness to state his understanding or conception of the meaning of the facts testified or referred to. It is very common for a witness to want to testify as to what he understood from words used or written; this of course is improper as his understanding is only his conclusion from his observation of the facts; the jury might draw a different conclusion. The witness will say that he can not remember the exact words used, when the language is in issue. If the lawyer examining the witness wants the conclusion of the witness in evidence, he will ask him to state the substance of the words spoken or written. In stating the substance of a conversation, the witness is really giving his opinion of the words used, but he is stating them in the form of facts and not in the form of opinion. Perhaps the reasoning here is too finely drawn, and the difference is only in the form of the question used, but it illustrates the difference between opinion evidence and proper evidentiary conclusions.

The most common exception to the opinion evidence rule is known as expert testimony. One who has exceptional training, skill, or education in any particular line may give an opinion upon facts stated in such line. The reason is that the special knowledge renders his opinion or conclusion material to the issues in trial. But the expert is not permitted to give his opinion upon any facts known to him in the case; his opinion is admissible only in answer to a hypothetical question. First

the witness must qualify as an expert--that is, he must show his education and experience in the subject matter in which he is to give an opinion. Then certain assumed facts are stated to him which are similar to the facts alread introduced or which are promised to be introduced, and he is asked to give his conclusion from the assumed facts. The jury may believe that the facts assumed have not been proven and they are not bound to accept the conclusion or opinion of the expert in any event; but if the hypothetical question embraces the facts proven in the case, a jury or judge is inclined to give weight to the opinion of one having greater knowledge of the subject matter than themselves. An expert witness may testify as to material facts known to him just as any other witness, but his opinion expressed must not be upon the facts testified to by him, or by any other, but must be upon the facts assumed in the hypothetical question and none other. Whether a witness has qualified as an expert is determined by the discretion of the court--that is, by the trial judge.

Opinion may also be expressed as to the mental condition of a person at some past period. This exception to the general rule is most often invoked upon the contest of a will of a decedent, and the opinion of the decedent's mental capacity or incapacity by those who have had the opportunity to and did observe the decedent is accepted as material to the issue of soundness of mind. The reason is that the decedent himself can not be brought before the jury, and that mental condition is a quality that can not be described or proven as a fact.

Before the witness can express an opinion, he must relate to the jury his opportunities to observe and his actual observations of the decedent--his actions, his language, his appearance; in fact in this line of evidence the law gives the witness unlimited latitude to state any observation he has ever made of the decedent, and based upon the observations as related to the jury and none other, he may state his opinion of decedent's mental condition at the time in issue or any time previous thereto. Prior sanity or insanity is admitted in evidence on the presumption that a man's mental condition remains the same as proven until the contrary is proven. The manner of presenting the opinion to the jury is formal; the opinion must be brought out be questions that are in substance the same in every instance. After the observations have been detailed, the witness is asked if from the observations detailed to the jury he has formed an opinion as to the soundness or unsoundness of mind of the decedent at the time in issue or at the time the observations were made. If his answer is "no", he can not testify further, for he has no opinion to express. If his answer is "yes," he is asked, "Basing your opinion upon your observations of the decedent and the facts as you have detailed them to the jury, you may state whether the decedent was of sound or unsound mind." The cross-examination may be as broad as the examination in chief and may be hypothetical in character to elicit what characteristics brought about the opinion expressed.

Opinion may also be given upon estimates where competency and opportunity to make the estimate are shown, and where such

estimates constitute the best evidence available upon the issue. Estimates of course fall short of exact proof and should be taken only for their value as shown by the skill and training for accuracy of estimate on the part of the witness. Estimates are in the nature of expert opinions, but they are based upon facts known to the witness and not necessarily related to the jury. Thus a witness may estimate the age of another, may estimate direction or distance, number, quality, speed, tempera-- ture, time, and duration of time and under some circumstances value. Weight may be estimated. Estimates of intoxication and degree of intoxication are admissible when material. One who has seen another write and is familiar with the writing may express an opinion as to the genuineness of the purported writing of such other.

The introduction of opinion evidence is largely at the discretion of the trial judge, and he should be governed by the materiality of the evidence offered, its comparative value with other evidence that might be offered and the degree to which it might tend to usurp the judgment of the jury in arriving at a conclusion of the issues.

Another rule of evidence is that evidence of the words or acts of others with whom the litigant is in no way connected and for whose words or acts he is in no way legally responsible, can not be admitted against such litigant. The reason for such a rule is obvious; without such rule, others could manufacture evidence to suit their pleasure; their words and acts would not be under oath nor subject to cross-examination. The litigant,

not being connected or associated with the words or acts, is not to be estopped by them.

It is a general rule that the law will not consider evidence of a former act or habit upon the issue of a similar act. While it is true that there is a tendency for the same set of conditions to arouse the same reaction in a man, the tendency is a weak one, and centuries of experience have shown that with a human being the same reaction is not always reached. As the issue is upon the act in question, evidence of a former similar act is too remote and therefore immaterial. Under some condition. a former act might have some probative value, and the trial judge in his discretion may admit the evidence. For instance, if A had at one time lifted a 500 pound weight and later an issue is made of his lifting such a weight, evidence of the prior act would be admissible to prove A's ability to perform such act.

Physical objects may be introduced in evidence when material to the issues and properly identified by oral evidence; the court or the jury have the right to inspect the physical object. The reason is that the object imprints itself upon the minds of the jurors better than a mere description of the object could do. The observations of the jurors are more material to the issues than the observations of others. However there is danger connected with inspection, and permission for the jury to see the object lies with the court. Of course it would be improper for a juror to hear any comment upon the physical object except from the witness stand. It is customary in murder trials for the prosecutor to introduce the instrument of death or any other

gruesome articles closely or remotely connected with the homicide. I surmise that these objects are often introduced more to prejudice the jury than to give it any real insight of the conditions in issue. It is often of real value to the jurors to see the place of occurence of the facts in issue. If the juror has well in mind the physical map or plat, he can more readily reconstruct the occurence to fit the scene. But permitting the jury to visit the scene is within the discretion of the court, and permission is not given unless the evidence shows its advisability. Consequently such inspection is generally postponed until the other evidence is concluded, and does not have the effect it otherwise might have. The chief difficulty in introducing physical objects or physical locations in evidence is that generally it is impracticable either to carry the jury to the object or the object to the jury. Modern invention has lessened the necessity of actual contact between the physical objects and the jury; photographs or models may be given to the jury after they have been shown to correctly represent the physical facts at the time alleged in the pleading. With photographs care should be exercised in their admission because by tricks of photography things may be made to appear different than they are; for instance, distances shown in photographs are deceptive. I recall an accident wherein a train traveling more than 60 miles an hour came around a bend a quarter of a mile away from a crossing and ran into a team and wagon crossing the tracks. The railroad company had taken a photograph from such a position that the bend appeared to be

nearly a mile distant from the crossing. Yet less than fifteen seconds elapsed between the time the train could have been seen and the impact--a very short time within which to get out of danger a team attached to a heavy wagon.

The most common example of exhibiting the physical evidence to the court or jury is in the admission of documentary or written evidence. Documents are of small bulk, easy to transport and permanent in substance, and their materiality as proof of their contents is so great that all other evidence is excluded when the document itself is available, as indicated before; oral evidence of the contents of a written instrument is inadmissible when the instrument itself is within the jurisdiction of the court, because the instrument itself is the best possible proof of its provisions. When the issues of the trial are upon the terms of the written instrument, such instrument is generally in the possession of one or both of the litigants. It is a permanent record of its own expression. It states the ultimate fact to be proven; it is conclusive unless the instrument itself is attacked in the issues, in which case any evidence material to show that the instrument has been altered or was never executed, is admissible. Also oral evidence may be introduced to explain or construe the written instrument when its provisions are ambiguous or uncertain; in such case the facts necessary to understanding the terms of the instrument become material to the formation of the conclusion by the jurors. There are several kinds of documentary evidence, with different rules for admission.

Public Records are admitted in evidence upon proof that they are public records kept in compliance with law; no evidence of the truth of their contents is necessary; they are entitled to a great degree of confidence because they are made under sanction of oath of office or official duty, and moreover their contents are of a public nature upon which it would be difficult to get personal evidence. Judicial records are admitted in evidence upon certification of the clerk without oath or opportunity for cross-examination. If the record has been changed without authority the only remedy of the partyinjured thereby is by a direct suit to correct the record. Generally with public records all that is necessary for their admission in evidence is proof of their authenticity. And as public records can not be carried from place to place, without danger of being destroyed or lost, certified or authenticated copies may be introduced as original evidence.

Private documents are admitted in evidence when the subject matter expressed by them is material to the issues in the case. Such private documents must be proven or identified by oral evidence before they can be admitted. Books of account kept in the ordinary course of business may be introduced in evidence for or against a party charged by them. Before they are admitted, however, proof must show that they are books regularly kept in the course of business and that they reflect authentically and correctly the business of the person or institution for whom they are kept and contain the original entries. This rule of evidence is one of necessity. In a business concern having a

large volume of business, it would be impossible for the owner to remember all or even a relatively small portion of the business transactions that take place or the prices charged for the commodities sold. It is customary for such business houses to keep a true record of their transactions. Experience has taught that unless such books are accurately kept, conflicts with customers and loss of business will result. Of course there may be errors in the books, but the law recognizes that the records are probably much more correct than the memory would be; and when kept by a corporation doing business through the agency of a great number of clerks, it would be impossible to rely upon human memory. Therefore a record correctly kept in the regular and ordinary course of business is the most material evidence--the evidence that has the most probative value. The entries in the books should be proved by the one making the entries when he is available.

Memoranda or other writings may be used by a witness to refreshen his recollection and in such case it is not proper to introduce the writing in evidence. A person may temporarily forget a given transaction or transactions, but when the matter is called to his attention, he may remember it clearly. The theory which gives the witness permission to refer to writings in his possession is that such writing will recall to his mind the details of the things about which he is testifying. However he should testify from his memory and not from the writing. Undoubtedly this permission to refreshen the recollection from memoranda is sometimes abused, and evidence is given about which

there is no remembrance except as written down for the witness. The only remedy for the party against whom such evidence is given is to cross-examine, testing the witness's memory and to try to ascertain when, by whom, and under what circumstances the writing or memorandum was made.

Maps, sketches, and diagrams are admissible in connection with oral evidence that they accurately represent the objects testified about. The witness gives oral evidence of description, distances, direction, etc., refreshing his recollection from his map or diagram is necessary, and then the map or diagram is given to the jury as an aid to understanding the oral testimony given.

Other writings are admitted in evidence under certain conditions because of lack of other evidence. For instance, ancient documents are admissible when all of the original parties are dead, and family history may be shown by the family Bible. The presumption is that such ancient documents are true and were made before the issues of the trial arose.

The rule of evidence commonly known as the "Best Evidence Rule" is that the highest degree of proof of which the case from its nature is susceptible, must, if accessible, be produced--that no evidence shall be received which presupposes that the party who offers it can obtain better evidence. If the best evidence can not be produced, the next best evidence should be admitted. The rule does not apply to oral evidence so as to exclude otherwise competent testimony on the ground that other witnesses could give more conclusive evidence. But where written evidence of a fact exists, the writing itself

constitutes the best evidence of the fact, and oral evidence will not be received if the writing is available. But if the writing has been lost or is in the possession of others who will not produce it, oral testimony becomes the best available evidence; where living witnesses are available, unsworn ancient documents will not be received.

Writings that are primary evidence are instruments that the law requires to be in writing, contracts which the parties themselves have put in writing, and all other writings the existence of which is undisputed and which are material to the issues. Bonds, assignments, letters, telegrams, wills, notices, books of account, bills of lading, and receipts are the best evidence of their contents. Court records are the best evidence of the court proceedings. Corporate records are the best evidence of their contents, and oral evidence is not admissible if such records are available. Where a writing is executed in duplicate, each copy is a primary instrument. A copy is secondary evidence and can not be admitted without explaining the absence of an original. Where the original writing is in existence, it must be shown that reasonable efforts have been made to obtain it before secondary evidence of its contents will be received.

Another rule of evidence is that the record of any judicial proceeding or the grant of property, contract or undertaking that has been reduced to writing, can not be contradicted, altered, enlarged, or varied by oral or other extrinsic evidence. The reason for the rule is that written evidence is much more

certain and accurate than that which rests on memory only, and it would be unsafe to admit the weaker evidence to vary the stronger and to show that the parties intended a different meaning than that expressed by them. A written instrument would be of little value if it could be superceded by oral testimony; and the temptation to commit perjury would be great. Neither can the legal effect of the written instrument be contradicted or explained by extrinsic evidence. This rule does not apply to receipts unless the receipts are in reality contracts. But where the writings are ambiguous, oral evidence may be received to explain the ambiguity; and consideration expressed in an instrument is in the nature of a receipt, and such consideration may be denied or explained. In a direct action to reform the written instrument on the ground of fraud in procuring the instrument or mutual mistake of the parties thereto, oral evidence is admissible to show the fraud or mistake; the fact that there was no delivery of the instrument or that the instrument was not executed may be proved under proper pleading.

One of the most important rules of evidence is that the party against whom evidence is given has the right to question the witness and have answers upon any matter about which the witness has testified on direct examination. The right of such cross-examination, as suggested before, is generally a prerequisite to the admission of direct evidence, and without it much evidence would not only be valueless, but would be misleading. The purpose of cross-examination is to exemplify, enlarge, or explain the matters brought out on direct examination, to

test the memory of the witness upon the facts about which he testifies, to find what opportunities he had for observation or perception, and to test his truthfulness and especially the truthfulness of the direct evidence, and to show bias, prejudice, or the incompetency of the witness.

One conducting the cross-examination has the right to enter fully into any matter upon which evidence has been given on direct examination. Even if the question asked on direct examination was improper, the witness may be cross-examined upon the subject matter brought out by the question. Lawyers use a figure of speech to the effect that if one attorney opens the gate, the other may go through. One who introduces immaterial evidence can not object if his opponent uses the same evidence. On direct examination it is improper for a witness to testify to the same fact more than once; repetition wastes the time of the court and may give undue weight to certain portions of evidence repeated. And so in cross-examination while it is admissible to approach the same subject from different angles, it is not proper to ask a question that has already been asked and answered in cross-examination. The common impression among laymen is that the purpose of cross-examination is to confuse the witness and to get him to give conflicting evidence; such is not the case. And the witness who adheres strictly to the truth and does not exaggerate, will not become confused. Some witnesses however conceive that their testimony, instead of being an impartial statement of

facts, should show to the advantage of the party calling them, and consequently make extravagant statements that will not stand under cross-examination. Proper cross examination is an art in itself, and many barristers never learn its true purpose. As a general rule, the cross-examiner should have in mind the evidence he expects to bring out on cross-examination; if he is satisfied that the witness is telling the truth, it is best for the cross-examiner to ask no questions if that truth hurts his client's cause, as the answer will only emphasize the testimony already given. It is nearly always unwise to go into what is professionally termed "a fishing expedition,"--that is, asking questions the answers of which are unknown to the questioner, in the hopes that some answer may throw light favorable to the cross-examiner. But if the cross-examiner is satisfied that the witness is giving false or exaggerated evidence, the cross-examination can not be too extensive; for somewhere the witness will make a statement inconsistent with his false or exaggerated statement. All facts are in harmony with truth; some facts must be out of harmony with falsehood.

When a witness is called to the witness stand, he is first examined by the party calling him, and this evidence is called the direct examination or the examination in chief. He is then questioned by the advesary of the party calling him, and this evidence is called cross-examination. Then the party calling him may question, but only to enlarge or explain new evidence beought out on cross-examination; such evidence is called the re-direct examination. Then the opponent may

again examine, but only on new material brought out on re-direct examination, and such evidence is called re-cross-examination. It is against the policy of the law to permit repetition. But either side may with the discretionary permission of the court ask an omitted question--that is, a material question that has been forgotten or overlooked. This is not a matter of right, for questions should be asked in their proper order. But I have never known a court to refuse permission to ask an omitted question that was material to the issues.

Rules of evidence are the result of the experiences of the past as to producing the most material and the most available evidence to prove the issues in trial. It is common sense reduced to a system from the accumulated knowledge of the present and past generations. It is the best system known or devised to ascertain the truth of matters of controversy.

10/9/33
Paper #2,

Footprints of Men

John B. Wisely

The greatest pleasure that comes to the traveler when he is rambling about the old coutries of Europe is in seeing things and places about which he has always heard and read but hardly ever expected to see. It seems too good to be true and one has almost to pinch himself now and then to realize that he is wide awake and not merely dreaming. The London Tower, with the crown jewels; Westminster Abbey, with its Poets' Corner; Saint Paul's or Saint Peter's Cathedarl, so magnificent, with their wonderful art; the city of Brussels, where there was a sound of revelry by night, according to Byron; Holland, with its many canals and quaint old windmills: the city of Amsterdam, with its musical chimes; the Jungfrau, in her beautiful robes of spotless white; the River Rhine, with its castles and its Lorelei; the Black Forest with its beautiful panoramic views; the city of Venice, built on the sea, with canals for streets, its Saint Mark's Square, its Palace of the Doges, with its Bridge of Sighs, over which so many passed never to return; Florence, center of culture and art, with its Ponte Vecchio, where, in fiction, many foul murders were committed; Naples, with her Vesuvius, her ruins of Pompeii and Herculaneum, her beautiful Capri, and the musical voices of her children at play; Rome, the Imperial City, with her Mussolini; Paris, with its Louvre, its Arc De Triomphe, its beautiful gardens and boulevards! What rich memories they awaken! How real our Knowledge of these things becomes to us when we actually see them!

In the study of literature in our schools, a haze of unreality enshrouds places and events; and even authors of modern poetry, novel, and drama. Browning, Tennyson, and Wordsworth seem more unreal and farther away; and when we come to Shakespeare, Milton, Chaucer, and Dante, we are almost in the realm of myth. But when one visits the places where these authors worked, when he sees the houses in which they lived, when he sees their tombs and monuments, when he visits the places where the events about which they wrote transpired, the mists clear away considerably, and their works are endowed with a new vitality.

This sense of reality comes to one in Scotland, with regard to Scott and his novels, when he visits the Palace of the Holy Rood in Edinburg, the scene of one of his most interesting novels; or again at Kennelworth Castle, where the tourist has pointed out to him the hawthorn tree mentioned in one of his stories; and most of all, when he visits Abbotsford, the country home of Sir Walter, still occupied by some of his distant relatives, where he did most of his writing. Judging by the number of reminders of this great story teller, especially the number of his statues, found in parks and other public places in Scotland, one might conclude that he must be the best beloved Scotch author.

However, one sees many statues of Robert Burns too. He gets a glimpse of Sweet Afton, beside which Mary was buried, as he stands on the bonny, bonny banks of Loch Lomond, surrounded by the hills and braes, covered with heather, dear to the heart of Burns. At Windermere in England, one sees the Dove Cottage,

Wordsworth's home, and on the banks of the lake nearby, he may imagine he can locate the place where the daffodils, which he loved, grew in such profusion. Samuel Johnson and David Garrick were born near the ruins of Kennelworth Castle. In the Castle of Chillon, at Montreux, Switzerland, there is an iron ring fastened in one of the stone pillars of the prison, to which prisoners were chained in the olden days. Here Byron endured voluntary imprisonment for a season in order to obtain the atmosphere for his "Prisoner of Chillon." One reads the poem with new interest after being in the prison and seeing the iron ring to which he was chained. Byron seems to have been an enthusiast on prisons, for he also crossed the Bridge of Sighs, and allowed himself to be shut up for a while in the prison there for the sake of the experience. Byron, Browning, and Ruskin all lived in Venice for some time, and the houses where they made their homes while there are all pointed out to the visitor. One thinks of Ruskin's "Stones of Venice." He also lived in Florence for a time. In the old church of Santa Rosa in Florence, Michael Angelo is buried, and the memorial on this tomb is said to have inspired Ruskin's "Mornings in Florence." When one sees the house in Florence, still occupied, in which Dante lived, and the church nearby which he built, he has more human interest in the "Divine Comedy."

Of all the English writers, however, the traveler in Venice is reminded most frequently of Shakespeare. In Venice he stands upon the old Rialto and is reminded of the "Merchant of Venice." He sees Shylock and Antonio, with their friends,

driving their sharp bargains. As he travels from Venice to Rome, he passes through Padua, and he remembers that fair Portia, the learned judge in the trial of Shylock, came from that same town. He also passes through Verona and recalls that this city was the scene of the tragic love of Romeo and Juliet, and he sees several houses there where the balcony scene might have been enacted. We know that Shakespeare himself was acting plays in Drury Lane Theater, in London, toward the close of the sixteenth century, for he was an actor as well as a dramatist; and when one is seated in that same old theater in 1933, to see the "Cavalcade" enacted on the stage by an excellent company of English artists, we can imagine what a thrill he gets out of it.

The mecca of all lovers of Shakespeare, in England, however, as every one knows, is the Shakespeare country; and it has been said, that if a person settled down at Stratford-on-Avon for three months, he would see every tourist that visits England during that time. It is a beautiful, sleepy, old town, surrounded by broad meadows, with the River Avon, not a large stream, flowing right through it; and one should have almost a week to see all the interesting places and things to be seen there. As one passes along Henley Street and High Street, the oldest section of the town, he sees many of the quaint houses, with the timbered fronts of Shakespeare's time, probably all built in the sixteenth century or earlier. The Town Hall on Sheep Street, erected in 1333 and restored in 1733, contains many fine portraits of great men, writers, actors, artists, and among them, an excellent portrait of

Shakespeare, seated in his study, painted by Benjamin Wilson in 1739.

The Holy Trinity Church, in its picturesque position on the banks of the Avon, in the midst of tall elm trees, with its tall spires, is not only beautiful, but it is a landmark. No matter from what quarter you approach Stratford, it stands out predominantly. It is beautiful inside, too, with much fine art, both paintings and sculpture, and beautiful windows. Here are the tombs of Shakespeare and his family. Engraved on a small brass plate, set in the stone over Anne's tomb, is the inscription: "Here lieth interred the body of Anne, wife of William Shakespeare, who departed this life the 6th day of August, 1623, being of the age of 67 years," only it is in the old English spelling, as is also the following inscription on the slab over the poet's grave:

"Good friend for Jesus' sake forbear
To dig the dust enclosed here:
Blest be the man that spares these stones,
An cursed be he who moves my bones."

It was said that Shakespeare was afraid that his body would sometime be moved to Westminster or some public place. He wished to be let alone. So he wrote this inscription for his own tomb. This story, however, is, in all probability, fiction.

There are many other interesting places and things to see in Stratford but I have time to mention only three more. The newest thing there is the Shakespeare Memorial Theater.

It was built with money contributed by all nations, to take the place of the old theater, which was destroyed by fire in 1938. On this account, it is called also the "Temple of Concord between Nations." The architect was a woman, Elizabeth Scott, chosen in a contest among British, Canadian, and American architects. The corner stone was laid in 1929 and the theater was completed and first used in 1932. One is not impressed with the building on first sight. In the first place, one naturally expects to see stone or marble in such a building; but it, like the Palace of Peace at the Hague, is made of a light red or pink brick. The building looks somewhat bleak and heavy, but it is said that it was designed by Miss Scott for mass effects.

Whatever disappointment the visitor may feel with the building, however, is overcome by its beautiful site on the banks of the Avon and its beautiful surroundings. The terraces along the river front are an attractive feature, and the roads and approaches are very artistic, while the outside landscape, with many box-trees, and other shrubs and flowers, gives a beautiful setting. Inside, too, it is all that could be desired, not large, seating only 1,000, but with every seat commanding an uninterrupted view of the stage. This stage is immense and it has every device known to the modern theater. The lighting is unique, the acoustic properties perfect, and no expense has been spared on the furnishings and decorations.

The center of interest in Stratford, however, is the old home or birthplace of Shakespeare, which reminds one very

uch in character of Mount Vernon in this country, although the two differ much in appearance. The house, a two-story structure, is a fine specimen of sixteenth century domestic architecture, which preserves the timbered front of Shakespeare's time, and stands on Henley Street. One part of it, called the "Eastern House," is now used as a museum. It contains exhibits bearing on the life of the poet, and the history of Stratford, the poet's times, and plays. None of the original Shakespeare furniture has been preserved but there is an old school desk, badly carved and marked up, which he was supposed to have used in the Grammar School. There are many old documents, deeds, letters, some signed by the poet, and a copy of his will.

The "Inner Room" contains many old relics of the past, a horn, table-trencher, swords, maces, etc., dating back to the fifteenth century, as well as a collection of manuscripts, some of them by the poet and some by other authors.

On the walls of the "Upper Room" there are many portraits, some of Shakespeare, many of his fellow dramatists and actors, and other celebrities. In this room, just to the left of the fire-place, is the old school desk, called "Shakespeare's Desk." In a long glass case, there are some fine copies of the poet's plays. His poems and sixteen of his plays were printed during his lifetime and bound single in paper covers. They sold for a penny each.

The "Hall" or family sitting room has a large open fire-place, with the original Wilcote stone floor, broken in

.y places. It contains an old Jacobean dresser and a
.ndfather clock but Shakespeare never saw them. From this
.om a door leads into the kitchen, which is a few inches higher.
It also has a fireplace, with a mantel, which consists of a
.lid beam of oak, and underneath it is a cellar nine by ten
.eet, which is said to be just as it was when the Shakespeare
. ily used it. An oak staircase of about ten steps leads
: to the "Birthroom." It was the best bedroom in the house
.lthough there are two others off the kitchen. Structually,
it is said to be just as it was when Shakespeare was born there.
It has the same board floor, walls, and ceiling, and like
.l other walls in the building, its walls are covered with
.ttless names of visitors. On the window panes are the
.mstures of Sir Walter Scott, Thomas Carlyle, and John
.:le, and on one of the walls this couplet:

"In this poor room his spirit first drew breath,
Who guards our English tongue from fear of death."

Evidently, Europeans do not object to scribbling on
.. walls of their public buildings. The walls and ceilin
.ed-Ox Tavern in Heidelburg are covered with the names of
.bs. Names of Americans are found in both places.
. irouse, built in modern times, leads from the back room
. into the garden at the rear of the house, and the visitor
.s the birthplace by this exit. In the center of the garden,
.e old fourteenth century Praying Cross, and the garden
.id to be planted to every tree, shrub, and flower, mentioned
.e poet anywhere in his works.

9.

A pleasant walk of about a mile across the fields will [illegible] one to the little town of Shottery, where Anne Hathaway [illegible]ved, and where Shakespeare is supposed to have spent much [illegible]e in courting her. Here in a rustic garden stands Anne's [illegible]ottage, a picturesque half-timbered building with a thatched [illegible]of. It is said to be an excellent example of a farm house [illegible] the Elizabethan period, for when it was built, there was [illegible] town there. Inside one finds many interesting old things: [illegible]ther's shovel for taking the loaves of bread out of the [illegible]e., a brass warming pan with fumigating holes, leather [illegible]ttles, the old wooden "thumb" latch, all in the kitchen. In [illegible]e hall or living room, there is a large fireplace, and just [illegible] the side of it, in a cozy corner, is the Courting Settle [illegible] wooden bench, with a high back, just large enough for two. [illegible]re Anne and Will are supposed to have spent many long winter [illegible]dings during their courting days. The fireplace is backed [illegible] bricks in herring-bone pattern. This room contains a [illegible]e Elizabethan table and a dresser on which are pewter [illegible]s, a trencher, rushlight, and tinder box.

Upstairs are the bedrooms, one small, with a plain wooden [illegible], with a rush mattress and linsey-woolsey hangings. [illegible]s Anne's room. In the garden, the old-time flowers, [illegible] she loved, are still growing; and the well, immortalized [illegible]liver Wendell Holmes, is near the steps which lead into [illegible]ouse. Stratford-on-Avon is a good place to rest and [illegible], and to let one's imagination run riot.

In wandering around these old countries of Europe, one ..on finds himself in very interesting, little, out-of-the- .. places, rich in historic interest, not much discussed .. the guide books.

Just west of Naples, there is a small lake called Avernus. I.. is surrounded by low, rugged, barren mountains, and there .. a small, rocky island on the south side of it, connected .. the mainland by a bridge. On this island is now located ..ditentary. The lake is really just an arm or bay of the .. of Naples, and the water, bluest of the blue, is said to ..ery deep.

The lake, the island, and the little valley to the north .. full of mythology and history. It is said that in 1538, ..ense hill rose up in this lake in twenty-four hours. The ..d is supposed to be the top of it. There is an extinct ..ano on the side of the hills or mountains to the north, and .. its old crater are still boiling pots of mud and cracks which steam issues.

In this little valley was the arena of the Romans, where .. held their games and outdoor sports and contests. It ..ere that Aeneas came to consult the Sibyl. It was in this ..e valley that the plot to assassinate Caesar was hatched ..sius, Brutus, and their conspirators, which was .. was executed in Rome.

The Roman fleet was here in this little lake at the time ..e great eruption of Vesuvius, in A. D. 79, when the cities ..peii and Herculaneum were destroyed. The elder Pliny

in command of the fleet at that time. He set out to the
istance of the Pompeiians, but the waters of the bay were
m h from the convulsions of the earth that he could not
, and he was asphyxiated by the gasses from the volcano.
interestin account of this great eruption may be found in
letters of Pliny the younger, who was a nephew of Pliny
elder. Pliny the younger was an eye-witness of this great
dy. He and his mother were here at Lake Avernus and he
s in his letters how they escaped.
ny times in these European cities, one feels as if he
standing on sacred ground.

Paper #3,

# THE LIFE AND WORKS OF SIDNEY LANIER

(Paper written for the Terre Haute Literary Club and read on October 16, 1933)

Read by L. C. T. Nolan

L. N. HINES

# The Life and Works of Sidney Lanier

Sidney Lanier, one of the brightest stars of Southern literary galaxy, was born in Macon, Georgia, on February 3, 1842. He died September 7, 1881, on a hillside in North Carolina where he had gone to find relief from Tuberculosis.

Lanier was one of the ~~early~~ bright spirits of the South. He was of English descent and was a descendant of Thomas Lanier who had come from England and had settled in Virginia. As a boy in Georgia, Lanier developed a passion for music which was to pervade his spirit throughout life. At fourteen he entered Oglethorpe College at Midway, Georgia, and was graduated in 1860 at the age of eighteen. The breaking out of the Civil War meant the end of Sidney's education and in 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate Army and was in the first Georgia organization that went to Virginia. As a Confederate private, he was in the battles of Seven Pines, Drewry's Bluff and the seven days fighting about Richmond which ended with the battle of Malvern Hill. Throughout the war he was a private along with his brother from whom he would not be separated. Both brothers were offered advancements but they would not accept any of them because it might mean separation. Both young men were later transferred to the signal service and were later put in charge of ships which were to run the blockade. In this service, Sidney was captured and spent sometime in prison. But he was finally turned loose and walked overland to his family in Georgia. He was devoted to the Confederate service and the Southern cause, but he grew to hate war which hatred is revealed in some of his writings.

An investigation of the literary history of the South since the Civil War will reveal much of interest.

Noted southern authors:

Madison Cawein

Mrs. Burton Harrison

Irwin Russell

Joel Chandler Harris

Maurice Thompson

George W. Kadel

Charles E. Craddock

James Lane Allen

Thomas Nelson Page

Richard Malcolm Johnston

Grace King

Margaret J. Preston

Samuel Bernard Peck

Sidney Lanier

These names you will note are all claimed by the South. Maurice Thompson lived many years of his life at Crawfordsville, Indiana, but Thompson was a Confederate soldier and consequently belongs to the South, no matter where his years were spent.

This list of authors and others we might name, produced many fine spirits. Not one of them was a finer spirit than Sidney Lanier. At one time, it was said of him "For his is an embodied ideal sent into the world to rebuke its commonplace aims, and to leaven its dull brute mass." The spirit of the man began to show in boyhood. Early he began to feel that he had been given unusual talent and he felt it was his duty to make the most of his abilities. He was early inspired to work at music and he became a musician of the highest order. We have evidence of the fact that he gave his attention to these things. We have in a college note-book in pencil this paragraph by the young boy who was a graduate of college and was soon to go to war: "The point

which I wish to settle is merely, by what method shall I ascertain what I am fit for, as preliminary to ascertaining God's will with reference to me; or what my inclinations are, as preliminary to ascertaining what my capacities are, that is, what I am fit for. I am more than all perplexed by this fact, that the prime inclination, that is, natural bent (which I have checked, though) of my nature is to music; and for that I have th greatest talent indeed, not boasting, for God gave it me, I have an extraordinary musical talent, and feel it within me plainly that I could rise as high as any composer. But I cannot bring myself to believe that I was intended for a musician, because it seems so small a business in comparison with other things which, it seems to me, I might do. Question here, What is the province of music in the economy of the world?" His music took the trend of playing on the flute and to the end of his life, he thrilled his friends and hearers with the beauty of his execution. Even as a prisoner in a Federal Prison, he delighted all hearers with the flute which he carried with him concealed in the sleeve of his coat. Through the years of the war and immediately thereafter, he began to write mostly in poetry.

He was married in September, 1867, to Miss Mary Day of Macon, and in the next January suffered his first illness of the lungs and became very low in health. He fought this ~~victim~~ disease, tuberculosis, through the years but finally gave up and died. At one time he moved to San Antonio, Texas, with the idea of finding a permanent home there for his family but the climate did not prove helpful and he returned to Macon in 1873. From Texas, he wrote to his wife as follows: "Were it not for some circumstances which make such a proposition seem absurd in the highest degree, I would think that I am shortly to die, and that my spirit hath been singing its swan-song before dissolution. All day my

soul hath been cutting swiftly into the great space of the subtle, unspeakable deep, driven by wind after wind of heavenly melody. The very inner spirit and essence of all wind-songs, bird-songs, passion-songs, folk-songs, country-songs, sex-songs, soul-songs, and body-songs hath blown upon me in quick gusts like the breath of passion, and sailed me into a sea of vast dreams, whereof each wave is at once a vision and a melody." He was fully determined to give himself to music and literature so long as he could keep death at bay. He returned northward and made his home in Baltimore, in December, 1873, and he began then the sad and brave struggle for health, a story as sad as the history of genius records. A body that was wasting away with tuberculosis was forced to its uttermost struggle to provide for his family and do the work he had set out to do. His father wanted him to return to Macon and settle down and practice law with him but Sidney had an answer for the father when he wrote him on November 29, 1873: "I have given your last letter the fullest and most careful consideration. After doing so I feel sure that Macon is not the place for me. If you could taste the delicious crystalline air, and the champagne breeze that I've just been rushing about in, I am equally sure that in point of climate you would agree with me that my chance for life is ten times as great here as in Macon. Then, as to business, why should I, nay, how <u>can</u> I, settle myself down to be a third-rate struggling lawyer for the balance of my little life, as long as there is a certainty almost absolute that I can do some other things so much better? Several persons, from whose judgment in such matters there can be no appeal, have told me, for instance, that I am the greatest flute-player in the world; and several others, of equally authoritative judgment, have given me an almost equal encouragement to work with my pen. (Of course I protest against the necessity which makes me write such things about myself. I only do so because I so

appreciate the love and tenderness which prompt you to desire me with you that I will make the fullest explanation possible of my course, out of reciporcal honor and respect for the motives which lead you to think differently from me.) My dear father, think how, for twenty years, through poverty, through pain, through weariness, through sickness, through the uncongenial atmosphere of a farcical college and of a bare army and then of an exacting business life, through all the discouragement of being wholly unacquainted with literary people and literary ways -- I say, think how, in spite of all these depressing circumstances, and of a thousand more which I could enumerate, these two figures of music and of poetry have steadily have kept in my heart so that I could not banish them. Does it not seem to you as to me, that I begin to have the right to enroll myself among the devotees of these two sublime arts, after having followed them so long and so humbly, and through so much bitterness?"

His father and brother helped him in his struggle and he lived longer than he would have otherwise would if the care of his father, brother and wife had not been constantly with him. All he asked of life was enough food and to be able to care for those he loved. He could have easily done this, if he had been well. As it was, it was a desperate fight. His courage never failed. His struggle went on to the end.

Throughout all his hard times, he maintained the highest ideals in regard to his literary work. One critic says of him that he would write only in obedience to his own sense of art, and he did not fit his wares to those who buy verse. His name then was an unknown name. In this period of uncertainty he wrote as follows to his wife: "I will make to thee a little confession of faith, telling thee, my dearer self, in words, what I do not say to my not-so-dear-self except in more modest feeling.

"No, then, that disappointments were inevitable, and will still come until I have fought the battle which every great artist has had to fight since time began. This--dimly felt while I was doubtful of my own vocation and powers--is clear as the sun to me now that I know, through the fiercest tests of life, that I am in soul, and shall be in life and utterance, a great poet.

"The philosophy of my disappointments is that there is so much cleverness standing betwixt me and the public . . . Richard Wagner is sixty years and over, and one-half of the most cultivated artists of the most cultivated art-land, quoad music, still think him an absurdity. He says to Shumann in one of his letters: 'The publishers will not listen to me for a moment'; and dost thou remember Shubert, and Richter, and John Keats, and a sweet host more?

"Now this is writeen because I sit here in my room daily, and picture thee picturing me worn, and troubled, or disheartened; and because I do not wish thee to think up any groundless sorrow in thy soul. Of course I have my keen sorrows, momentarily more keen than I would like any one to know; but I thank God that in a knowledge of Him and of myself which cometh to me daily in fresh revelations, I have a steadfast firmanent of blue, in which all clouds soon dissolve. I have wanted to say this several times of late, but it is not easy to bring one's self to talk so of one's self, even to one's dearer self.

"Have then . . . no fears no anxieties in my behalf; look up on all my disappointments as mere witnesses that art has no ending so unrelenting as cleverness, and has rough weather that seasons timber. It is of little consequence whether I fail; the I in the matter is a small business: 'Que mon nom soit fletri, que la France soit libre!' quoth Danton; which is to say, interpreted by my environment: Let my name perish--the poetry is good poetry and the music is good music, and beauty dieth not, and the heart that needs it will find it."

He clung to his ideals to the end. You will find no cheap poetry in Lanier's writings. There was no period of giving up or weariness. Along in this period Sidney Lanier wrote some of his finest poems. "A Song of the Future" is one. "The Revenge of Hamish", the "The Song of the Chattahoochee", "A Song of Love" are others. "The Marshes of Glynn" was an ambitious poem which he intended to follow with a series of "Hymns of the Marshes" which he had to leave incomplete.

He returned to ~~Fort Worth~~ Baltimore where he lectured on English literature. His strength was almost gone but the second winter, he proceeded with his lectures when he was too weak to write them with his own hand and dictated them to his wife. By going to the lecture hall in a closed carriage and sitting while he talked, he was able to get through most of them. In the following December, 1880, when he was too feeble to feed himself with a temperature of 104 degress, he wrote his last and greatest poem, "Sun Rise". It seems that he was filled with a fear that he would die before he could get this poem recorded. He went to a tent in the hills near Asheville, North Carolina, and formed an early moutain home where the tragedy ended. The great struggle for life in order to get work done was over. A wonderful spirit had gone out and no one can read Sidney Lanier's life without gaining a new spirit. What he left behind was written with his life-blood. He lived in a world of ideal serenity.

He had Milton's love for music. The man, Asger Hamerik, was his director in the Peabody Symphony Orchestra of Baltimore for six years. He wrote of him as follows: "To him as a child in his cradle Music was given: the heavenly gift to feel and to express himself in tones. His human nature was like an enchanted instrument, a magic flute, or the lyre of Apollo, needing but a breath or a touch to send its beauty out into the world. It was indeed irresistible that

he should turn with those poetical feelings which transcend language to the penetrating gentleness of the flute, or the infinite passion of the violin; for there was an agreement, a spiritual correspondence between his nature and theirs, so that they mutually absorbed and expressed each other. In his hands the flute no longer remained a mere material instrument, but was transformed into a voice that set heavenly harmonies into vibration. Its tones developed colors, warmth, and a low sweetness of unspeakable poetry; they were not only true and pure, but poetic, allegoric as it were, suggestive of the depths and heights of being and of the delights which the earthly ear never hears and the earthly eye never sees. No doubt his firm faith in these lofty idealities gave him the power to present them to our imaginations, and thus by the aid of the higher language of Music to inspire others with that sense of beauty in which he constantly dwelt.

to continue the quotation

"His conception of music was not reached by an analytic study of note by note, but was intuitive and spontaneous; like a woman's reason: he felt it so, because he felt it so, and his delicate perception required no more logical form of reasoning.

"His playing appealed alike to the musically learned and to the unlearned--for he would magnetize the listener: but the artist felt in his performance the superiority of the momentary living inspiration to all the rules and shifts of mere technical scholarship. His art was not only the art of art, but an art above art.

"I will never forget the impression he made on me when he played the flute-concerto of Emil Hartmann at a Peabody symphony concert, in 1878: his tall, handsome, manly presence, his flute breathing noble sorrows, noble joys, the orchestra softly responding. The audience was spellbound. Such distinction, such refinement! He stood, the master, the genius."

Mr. Lanier's published works are the following:

Tiger Lilies: A novel.

Florida: Its Scenery, Climate and History.

Poems.

The Boy's Froissart.

The Science of English Verse.

The Boy's King Arthur.

The Boy's Mabinogion.

The Boy's Percy.

The English Novel and the Principles of its Development.

Poems of Sidney Lanier: Edited by his wife.

# THE DYING WORDS OF STONEWALL JACKSON

"Order A. P. Hill to prepare for battle."
"Tell Major Hawks to advance the Commissary train."
"Let us cross the river and rest in the shade."

The stars of Night contain the glittering Day
And rain his glory down with sweeter grace
Upon the dark World's grand, enchanted face--
All loth to turn away.

An so the Day, about to yield his breath,
Utters the stars unto the listening Night,
To stand for burning fare-thee-wells of light.
Said on the verge of death.

O hero-life that lit us like the sun!
O hero-words that glittered like the stars
And stook and shone above the bloomy wars
When the hero-life was done!

The phantoms of a battle came to dwell
I' the fitful vision of his dying eyes--
Yet even in battle-dreams, he sends supplies
To those he loved so well.

His army stands in battle-line arrayed:
His couriers fly: all's done: now God decide!
--And not till then saw he the Other Side
Or would accept the shade.

Thou Land whose sun is gone, thy stars remain!
Still shine the words that miniature his deeds.
O thrice-beloved, where'er thy great heart bleeds,
Solace hast thou for pain!

Georgia, September, 1865.

51

## TO ——

The Day was dying; his breath
Wavered away in a hectic gleam;
And I said, if Life's a dream, and Death
And Love and all are dreams - I'll dream.

A mist came over the bay
Like as a dream would over an eye.
The mist was white and the dream was grey
And both contained a human cry,

The burthen whereof was "Love,"
And it filled both mist and dream with pain,
And the hills below and the skies above
Were touched and uttered it back again.

The mist broke: down the rift
A kind ray shot from a holy star.
Then my dream did waver and break and lift--
Through it, O Love, shone thy face, afar.

So Boyhood sets: comes Youth,
A painful night of mists and dreams;
That brookds till Love's exquisite truth,
The star of a morn-clear manhood, beams.

Boygin's Bluff, Virginia, 1863.

## SOULS AND RAIN-DROPS

Light rain-drops fall and wrinkle the sea,
Then vanish, and die utterly.
One would not know that rain-drops fell
If the round sea-wrinkles did not tell.

So souls come down and wrinkle life
And vanish in the flesh-sea strife.
One might not know that souls had place
Were't not for the wrinkles in life's face.

## EVENING SONG

Look off, dear Love, across the sallow sands,
And mark yon meeting of the sun and sea,
How long they kiss in sight of all the lands.
Ah! longer, longer, we.

Now in the sea's red vintage melts the sun,
As Egypt's pearl dissolved in rosy wine,
And Cleopatra night drinks all. 'Tis done,
Love, lay thine hand in mine.

Come forth, sweet stars, and comfort heaven's heart;
Glimmer, ye waves, round else unlighted sands.
O night! divorce our sun and sky apart
Never our lips, our hands.

1876.

# A BALLAD OF TREES AND THE MASTER

Into the woods my Master went,
Clean forspent, forspent.
Into the woods my Master came,
Forspent with love and shame.
But the olives they were not blind to Him,
The little gray leaves were kind to Him:
The thorn-tree had a mind to Him
When into the woods He came.

Out of the woods my Master went,
And he was well content.
Out of the woods my Master came,
Content with death and shame.
When Death and Shame would woo Him last,
From under the trees they drew Him last:
'Twas on a tree they slew Him - last
When out of the woods He came.

Baltimore, November, 1880.

BLANK PAGE

Paper #4

# LINNAEUS

TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

OCTOBER 23, 1933

W. E. OURELL

# LINNAEUS

To the average man the name of Linnaeus must convey a vague impression. His Latin name may place him in any of the many centuries during which the Latin language was the prvailing one in politics and science. Becuase his works are studied only by advanced students of natural science, he suffers,with many great men of pre-modern days, the fate of being consinged to the limbo of common knowdedge.

The name, Linnaeus, is useless when one tries to determine the nationality of the man or the time he lived. When one stops to comsider that Copernicus was a Pole, Erasmus a Hollander, and Confuciusa Chinaman, it is not hard to believe that Linnaeus was a Swede. He was born in southern Sweden in 1707 and died there in 1778. He is best known as a botanist but was above that a student of all forms of natural science and contributed in a large maasure to zoology and geology as well as to botany. As a scientist he ranks with the highest and was the greatest in zoology and botany that the world had seen at his time. He has one distinction that cannot be accorded to any other scientist in the same degree. His work, as we shall see later, is a monument which is seen by every student of zoology and botany soon after he begins to study either of these sceinces. The student does not have to read biographies or histories to know what Linnaeus contributed.

Before we begin with the life of Linnaeus, itis interesting to go to the generation which preceded him. Linnaeus father was christened Nils Ingemarsson. According to peasant traditions, Linnaeus' name would have been Karl Nilsson. Linnaeus' father,

however, had two uncles each of whom acted as his foster-father. These uncles had been born Karl and Sven Svenson. Bothe had risen from peasant stock to the aristocracy of learning. In accordance with theri achievements and the tradition of the time they were entitled to drop their peasant family name of Svenson and assume either a Greek or Latin one. A large linden tree grew near their home and they decided to take as their new family name the Greek equivalent of "the linden-tree man" which is Tiliander. When Linnaeus' father acquired the right to do the same thing, he dropped his peasnat name, Ingemarsson, and assumed the Latin equivalent of Tiliander whixh is Linnaeus. Thus the great Linnaeus who was to become famous in natural science, and especially in botany, had a botanicla name prepared for him by his father.

Sven Tiliander was a minister and undoubtedly had much influence in causing Linnaeus' father to enter the ministry. Bothe men were also ardent horticulturists. Linnaeus' mother had been preceeded by five generations of ministers. It is not surprising then that the misistry was chosen for Linnaeus while he was still a boy. At the age of seven he studiend under a tudor. Linnaeus repsorts that second only to his tutoring came the ddcuation his father gave him in the family garden and orchard. At ten he was sent to a primary school and at seventeen to a theological preparp atory school/ A year here convinced his instructors that he was not suited forthe ministry and they recommended to his father that he be apprenticed in one of the handcrafts. However, during his year at the theological school he had made a reputation in physicx,

mathematics and botany. His scientific work had interested a D . Rothman who assured Linnaeus' fatherthat Linnaeus could distinguish himself in natural science. He offered to take Linnaeus into his home and teach him physiology. Two yeats were spent under the instruction of this doctor.

At the age of twenty Linnaeus was admitted to the University of Lund.upon the reputation he had made in science at the theological seminary. A former tutor of his, Dr. Stobeus, who was then a physician at Lund providied him w th board and lodging. After a year at Lund. Dr. Rothman induced Linnaeus' family to send him to Upsala so that Linnaeus might enter the greatest of Swedish universities. During his years at Upsala Linnaeus laid the foundation for his great work and, before we proceed farther with his life, let us oabserve the status of botany at the time he became acquainted with it.

The sceince of botany could hardly be distinguished as such in 1728. when Linnaeus arrived at Upsala. Botany texts were not like the texts we know today. They were merely catalogs in which plants were classified according to their medicinal or economic uses. Botany was really the hand-maiden of medicine. Living with doctors as Linnaeus had from his 17th to 23rd years, provided an ideal environment for an aspiring botanist.

The foundations of botany had been inpreparation for several centuries before. Its development sofar consisted solely in systems of classification. Nothing was known about plant anatomey, physiology,embryology, or fertilization. The crude state of botany may be imagined by recalling that Leuwenhoek, who lived at the time of Linnaeus, blasted the theory of spontaneous generation. The compound microscope was not yet in general use.

One of the earliest attempts to classify plants was made by Caesalpinus, an Italian physician, in 1583. He classified 1520 plants in 15 classes on the principle that the fruit and seed of plants constitute the best key to their natural relationships. His students during the next century or two enlarged his system and extended it to include the flowers.

Following Caesalpinus comes John Ray who lived in England during the 17th century. He is best known for his attempt to systematize the literature of natural science and to "purge it of the fables and monstrosities with which it was filled". He succeeded in discoverying several natural groupings ofplants and introduded some nomenclature which is in current use. He was the true precursor of Linneaus.

The ideas of Caesalpinus, somewhat modified, reached thier climax 13 years before the birth of Linneaus. Tournefort, a Frenchman, disregarded Caesalpinus' ideas which centered on the fruit and built a system of plant classification based only on the corolla. Tournefort regarded the stamens and pistils of the flower as insignificant and confessed his ignorance of their real funstion. He even mistook stamens and leaves in some cases for the corolla. The flower and the coralla were indentical to him.

When Linneaus was seventeen, Sebastian Vaillant succede Tournefort at the botanical gardens at Paris. In an inaugural address Vaillant attempted to upset the system of Tournefort. He stated that the stamens and pistils of the folower were the important structur es in determining plant relarionships and that the colo la was entirely unimportant. The idea is really close to that of Caesalpinus who studied the fruit and the see rather than the organs waich produced them. Five years later Vaillant died with the world still worshipping Tournefort and resenting the impudence of Vaillant.

During his school days Linneaus had had access to the best botanical books of his time. They were written in Latin and consisted of lists of plants, with descriptions, arranged alphabetically or according to theri uses. Dr. Rothman, as a progressive doctor, had a copy of Tournefort's system. Dr. Rothman emphasized that the study of botany was useless unless Linneaus would appreciate the inter-relations between plants as indicated by their flowers.

At the University of Lund Dr. Stobeus, who was housing Linneaus, had a large medical and botanical library. Linneaus was at first unable to gain access to it. He finally succeded by offering and assistant of Dr. Stobeus' a course in physics on the condition that the assistant smuggle botanical books out of the library during the night so that Linneaus might study them and return the books before daylight. Eventually the deception was discovered but resulted in Linneaus being given the key to the library.

Soon after arriving at Upsala, his shoes worn thru and clothes badly worn, he met a Dr. Celsius to who had been given the task of writing a book on the plants of the Bible. Dr. Celsius felt that he needed Linneaus and took him into his house.

During this period, at the age of 22, Linnaeus became acquanited with the work of Vaillant which emphasized the study of the stamens and pistils as guides to the natural relationships of plants. Linnaeus determined at once to devise a new system of classification based upon Vaillant's idea. The result was a simple, though not natural, system which consisted of 24 classes. Class one consisted of plants having floweres with one stamen, class two of plants having flowers with two stamens. If a flower had one stamen and three pistils, the plant belonged to class one, odder three. No other system

62

had ever been so popular. But the most important result of the system was the knowledge which Linnaeus gained in examining thses obscure organs. Because he was so observant he could not pass up the study of fertilization. He made numerous experiments and perhaps for the first time in history demonstrated the function and mechanism ofnfertilization. His observations wereonly those that could be made with the naked eye or a low power microscope. He knew nothing of the development of the embryo.

Thru the influence of Dr. Celsius Linnaeus was permitted to take an examination which permitted him to give public lectures in the botanical gardens at Upsala. These lecturesseem to have been a source of income and his success aroused the jealousy of a Dr. Rosen who then helad the chair in botany. Dr. Rosen secured the enactment of a rule prohibiting students from giving public lectures and Linnaeus lost his sole source of income.

When deprived of his income Linnaeus was taken into the home of Dr. Rudbeck, the leading Swedish botanist of the time. There he became inspired by Dr. Rudbeck's accounts of his explorations into Lapland. As a result at the age of 25. under the auspices of the Academy of Science at Upsala, Linnaeus made a six-months trip thru Lapland. He covered about 2500 miles mostly on foot. The report of the trip entitled "Flora Lappohica" is said to be one of the most insturctiove reports of a scientific trip ever made.

When the governor of Dalecarlia, a province of Sweden, read Linnaeus' Flora Lapponica, he induced Linnaeus to make a similar survey of his province. While on this trip Linnaeus met a Dr. Browallius who urged him to obtain a doctor's degree at some foreign university. Following his advice, Linnaeus sailed for Germany and the Netherlandx early in 1735 at the age of 28. By June of that year he had obtained his doctor's degree at Hardewyk, Holland.

Before leaving Sweden, Linnaeus had provided himself with a rich father-in-law who supplied him with some of the money needed for his continental trip.on the condition that Linnaeus return and practice medicine as soon as he had received his doctorate. But uppermost in his mind was botany not medicine. No one in Sweden would publish his manuscripts and he was not well enough known in Germany and Holland to make publishing any easier there. The probelm was for Linnaeus to get a reputation. At that time Leyden was second only to Paris for botanicl gardens and celebrities. A generation before it had led the world. When Linnaeus was there the botanical world was presided over by Dr. Herman Boerhaave. He had retired from a professorship three years earlier. He was the most famous physician in Euraope and the authority upon systematic botany. Linnaeus had no difficulty in making friends with the younger botanists but had extreme difficulty with Dr. Boerhaave who had made Peter the Great wait two hours. One of Linnaeus' friends, Gronovius, was so impressed with a manuscript .innaeus had brought from Sweden that he offered to publish it. It was his Systemae Naturae. It represented Linnaeus first attempt to classify the living world and was based on the idea that all forms of life could be arranged in a single line according to the degree of development. Itmwas published in outline form in a fourteen page pamphlet ans instantly won the apporval of the Dutch botanists. Linnaeus then thought of sending Boerhaave a copy. Soon after he receive a letter naming the day and the hour at which he was to be received. The interview extended to Boerhaave's garden where Linnaeus astonished Boerhaave not only with his fundamental knowledge but also his ability to rmember details. Linnaeus fame was now established. He was the only man in the world who knew anything about the structure of stamens of pistils. He seemed a marvel to the elderly systematists ~~&&~~ because of the

readiness with which he could solve their problems. In one of the botanical gardens of Holland he was shown the flowers and fruit of the cinnamon tree andasked what its relatives were. At the time the fruit was not known and the flowers were insignificant. Linnaeus soaked one of the dried flowers. inspected it and announced it was a near relative of the sweet-bay which is found in southern Europe.

He was now just thrity years old. During his stay in Holland he had published five great books which created the independent science of botany and started botany on the road which it has followed since. The books which he published in Holland, taken as a group, constitute a mile stone in the history of naturl science. They provided the world with the best system of plant classification it had yet seen. The system was not natural, although it accidentally contained some of the natural groupings, but it was simple and above all made the students of botany closer students of plants. The books mark the sharpest dilineation between the old and the new science, if an old science could be said to have existed.

After three years of travel in Germany, Holland, and England, he returned home. At Upsala he was known only as the student who had left several years before. There was still the jealousy of Dr. Rosen, His books were not providing any income and he had to resort to the practice of medicine. He returned to Sweden at the time the reaction to his ideas was developing and it arose with such force that many of his friends thought his reputation as a botanist was annihilated. He admitted that he almost believed it himself. Since his medical practice was beginning to be the more lucrative of the two professions, he resolved to abandon botany and follow medicine. His practice prospered until the queen herself was one of his patients. Through court influence he was appointed Physician to the Admiralty. After the death of the

professor who held the chari of medicine at Upsala, Linnaeus 9
was appointed to that office. That of botany was still held by his old antagonist, Dr. Rosen. The two became reconciled and exchanged professorships. Linnaeus, still only 34, was again a botanist.

Linnaeus spent the remainder of his life in Sweden. He devoted it to travels thru his country, revising and extending the scope of his earlier writings and serving as professor of botany at the University of Upsala. He wrote several books describing his travels about Sweden. They are filled with minute observations of all kinds of things. The thoroughness of his observation is indecated by his instructions to his tudents. He said:"After (the travelling naturalist) has commenced his journey, and has become transplanted, so to speak, into a new world, he should consider it his duty of observe everything , not carelessly or at random but so that nothing will escape his keen vision or alert attention. In describing objects he must endeavor to depict nature so faithfully that he who reads the description must needs believe he is beholding the very things himself"

His Systema Naturae was revised eleven times during his life-time. In 1751 he made the only contribution of his which has remained unchanged to this day. That was his method for describing species. Before that time names had been very unsystematic. Although names were in Latin, there were as many names for each plant or animal as there are common names for plants and animals today. The term species had been defined in the previous century by John Ray.Linnaeus in his Philosophis Botanica had grouped plants into genera dn genera into orders for the first time in history. Linnaeus' plan of nomemclature was to give each plant and animal a binomial/Latin name. The first word inthe binomial name was the name of the genus and the second of the species. Biologists have a practice of adding to the Latin name of a phant or animal, in parenthesis, the name of the person who first used that name. To this day

Linnaeus' name appears after more names of plants and animals than that of any other man. The system was extended to animals in the 10th edition of Systema Naturae which was published later. Because, by observing the name of a plant or animal, we can determine who gave it its name, we can obtain a vefy good idea of the extent to ~~whixh~~ Linnaeus studied the flora and fauna of the various parts of the world. Although he never came nearer to America than the Bristish Isles, he gave/the present Latin names to 37% of the birds found in New York State, 29% of the birds found in Minnesota, 45% of the trees found in Michigan, and in Indiana 30% of the trees and shrubs. These large percentages are due, very likely, both to the fact that some of the species are found in both the old and new worlds and also ~~&&&~~ to the fact that many of the names were given because of single specimens which were sent to Linnaeus.

Linnaeus must have been an ideal professor. He first of all was a man of unquestioned rank in his profession. He was gifted with the ability to transmit knowledge b written and spoken word. He was sumphathetic and above all inspiring. He drew men to Upsala from all partsof the world and the students which he sent literally to all parts of the world would make subjects for a book or two of scientific achievement. ~~&&&&&&~~

Linnaeus' contributions to zoology, although not as ~~&&&&&&&~~ extensive as those in botany, are fully as important. His system of binomial nomemclature applies equally/to both sciences. His Systema Naturae marked as great a step in zoological classification as in botanical. His pupils were as famous in zoology as in botany. Linnaeus shows some ~~&&&~~ evidence of developing theories of evolution in his discussion of the significance of varieties within species.

Linnaeus realized that his systems of classifications were not natural, and often made reference to the need of striving for a natural system. He was not to live to see such but within 50 years his system

was supplanted by the first real natural system. Linnaeus' method of binomial nomenclature && continued through all systems of &&&&&&&&&& in classification. There seems to be a humorous reference to the insufficiency of his artificial system in a note in his Flora Lapponica. The note reads as follows: "Close to the side of thr road hing the lower jaw of a horse, having six fore teeth, much worn and blunted, two canine teeth, and, at a distance from the laater, twelve grinders, six on each side. If I knew how many teeth and of what peculiar form, as well as how many udders and where situated, each animal has, I should be able to contrive a most natural, methodical arrangement of quadrepeds".

Geologists consider Linnaeus one of the founders of the geological sciences. His reports on his travels are filled almost as much with geological observations as they are with botanical and zoological observations. Men were well agreed in Linnaeus' time that fossils were remainders or traces of plants and animals that had existed in an earlier time. A common view was that they pepresented organisms that had perished in the deluge. Linnaeus did not hold this view. He believed that the deluge had occured long before the continents had reached the sizes they had at his time. If one assumes that he had an approximate comprehension of Biblical time, he must feel that Linnaeus had a grossly inadequate conception of geological time. Because he had such a poor realization of the age of fossils, he assumed at first that they represented organisms still living. Gradually he seems to have become convinced that they were extinct.

Linnaeus took special pains to collect geoligical data of economic importance. He pointed out the importance of marl beds in the improvement of landand it was a hundred years before the idea was extensively used.

He noted that certain strata in the mountains, although discon-

~~tinous then, must have been continous~~

tinous then, must have been continous at one time. He suggested that perhaps the strata were the same all around the world.

The followeing note of Linnaeus is &interesting because, in the light of present day knowledge, it portrays an amusing transmutation of elements and metamorphosis of mineral matter:"We know that the sand of the sea becomes sandstone; the compounds of the sediment of the sea, clay; the clay becomes lime; the lime, chloride of lime; the chloride of lime, chalk;the chalk, silex;or flint. We see the spar, quartz, and rock flint, together with the mica, are formed where the rocks have craked and join them together". He had no conception of the igneous origin of stone.

He observed much evidence of the rising of the land in Sweden and && concluded that all of the continents were rising and had always been rising above the ocean. In 1743 he said in a lecture: "From all this I believe I may safely &&& draw the conclusion that the portion of the land above the surface of the sea is yearly increasing; on the other hand that it was formerly much smaller; that in the beginning it was merely a tiny island, upon whichmas though in concentrated form,&&& was to be found everything that the all-bountiful creator had destined to be of use to mankind." As evidence of the rise of the &&& land level, Linnaeus mentions such things as the presence of sea-shells in strata above the sea-level, shore-lines of prehistoric lakes high in the mountains( although he did &not interpret them correctly) and gravel deposits above the shore line.

In 1761 Linnaeus was granted a patent of nobility and his name was changed to Carl von Linne. He prospered financia ly and acquired t estates. On one of these he contructed a stone museum to house his collections in a fire-proof building. At sixty his memory began to fail and, afterseveral attacks of apoplexy, he died in 1778.

Linnaeus had a passion for classifying and defining, but that would have gained him little, were it not for an extremely inquisitive mind. Hisstyle was terse and business-like, even to the degree which evokes the criticism of the grammarian,. He developed the art of describing flowers with words by establinshing definitions fot parts of the plant. He holds a commanding place in the history of natural science for three reasons: first, he took the natural ciences out of the hands of the men who did little but classify and argue and established them as independent and vigorous sciences whose object was to study anatomy and physiology; second, he prepared the information& and methods upon which his successor s constructed natural systems of classification; third, he inspired his students with an enthusiasm which has not been equaled by many men of science.

Acher 7
10/30/33
Paper #5

SOME PSYCHOLOGICAL, SOCIOLOGICAL,
and
ECONOMIC ASPECTS of the N.R.A. PROGRAM

The N.R.A. Program for the rehabilitation of industry and the restoration of prosperity is by all odds the most revolutionary and far-reaching endeavor of the national government which this country ever witnessed in its entire history. Never before have the 123 million people of this country been made so conscious of the national government at Washington as now; certainly not in times of peace. The whole scheme and procedure is so gigantic and overwhelming to the imagination that one wonders that the national administration had the nerve to initiate it and attempt to carry it out.

Why was this nation-wide revolutionary program inaugurated? What life habits of the leaders of industry will have to be changed? What inertia, stand pat-ism, smug complacency will have to be altered if it is to work even partially? What active opposition will have to be overcome, what social and economic theories will have to be scrapped, what political philosophies and theories of government must be modified to square with the practice of this program? And finally, what are the prospects of its success? These are some of the

questions which must arise in the minds of thoughtful persons, and these are some of the questions which this paper will struggle with. The writer wishes it distinctly understood that no final answer is to be attempted. That would assume the role of a prophet which no sane person would lay claim to in these perplexing days.

It is obvious at the outset that this whole program of the New Deal of which the N.R.A. is only one part involves a theory of the relation of government to society which is in direct and violent opposition to the theory of rugged individualism which has been the foundation stone of many eminent men in the recent past, the foundation upon which they erected the whole philosophy of the structure of government. When President Franklin Delano Roosevelt spoke about the "forgotten man" in his last presidential campaign, he was challenged to explain his plan and objective in dealing with this forgotten man according to the New Deal. He was rather vague and indefinite in his elucidation of what he had up his sleeve, although it is now well known that he had clearly in mind just what he intended to do. One cannot but wonder what would have happened if he had placed all his cards on the table early in the campaign. It was undoubtedly wise campaign strategy to withhold so bold a program until he had charge of the case and could make a first hand examination of the patient and fit the prescription to the diagnosis.

The daring program of the N.R.A. is all the more amazing when we consider that the traditions and practice of our en - tire business structure rested upon the theory and principle that the one and only motive that actuated or could actuate business enterprises was dividends, profits, money. This at once produced a deadly conflict between profits and human welfare of the employees of industry. One of the interesting chapters in human history is the struggle between the captains of industry and the laborers in his charge. Even in times of slavery there was more consideration given to the slave and his welfare than the so-called free laborer receives from his employer. Was not the slave himself worth money? Whatever tended to lower his usefulness was measured in terms of dollars and cents. It paid, therefore, to give at least some consideration to his physical welfare. Not so with the free laborer. Efficient labor is all that the employer seeks and is interested in. When this is not forthcoming interest in the laborer ceases. Interest in the laborer beyond this point would interfere with profits. I need not review at length the ghastly and devastating results which frequently, in fact, generally, followed in the wake of this practice. One illustration will suffice. In the West Virginia coal fields the non-union miners were paid as low as fifteen cents per hour for their labor, were compelled to live in the company's houses, which were often not much better than dog kennels, and were paid in the company's scrip , which could be used only

in the company's stores. It does not take much imagination to complete the picture of squalor and destitution which resulted from this state of affairs. In lesser degree this picture might be applied to most great industries except where labor through organized endeavor succeeded in wresting from capital better terms for the laborer. As a consequence of this rugged individualism running rampant generation after generation, the capital of the country centered into ever fewer and fewer hands until at the present time practically 90% of the wealth of the country is either directly owned or at least controlled by less than one per cent of our people. In fact, it has been held by well informed students of our economic condition that 25 or 30 families of our country virtually dominate, control, and direct our entire business structure. With profits as the only motive and objective of business enterprise and the capital of the country in the hands of a small group of our people it does not take very great or profound cerebration to see the ultimate consequences of such a system. The longer the hours of labor and the harder the laborer is driven, the greater the profits. Thus it was not unusual to compel laborers to work 12 and 15 hours daily without additional pay for overtime and then throw them upon the human scrap heap when they reached middle life or failed to survive the terrific pressure before that time because their continued employment meant reduced profits. It was not necessary to go outside of our fair city to find cases of this kind before the

N.R.A. came into effect.

It was and is also in the very nature of things as they were carried on in the business world that every device and invention should be used to dispense with the human element and use machinery to do the work. It is a notorious fact that cannot be gainsaid that thousands of workers have been replaced by machines and labor saving devices, thus depriving the worker and his family of the wherewithal to live. This, of course, means more profits. The machine never tires, it can work 24 hours per day and does not complain, and usually has a long life with few ailments to interfere with its output. The replacement of the laborer by machines not only throws thousands of laborers out of employment, but greatly increases the finished product. Statisticians and economists tell us that out of every hundred of our population today over 40 years of age, 36 will have died, one is very wealthy, 4 are well to do, 5 are dependent upon day to day earning for their livelihood, and 54 are dependent.

Now to have these thousands of capitalists and employers to reverse themselves suddenly and almost over night, to become conscious of the human needs in their industry, to lead them to pay a minimum living wage, to shorten the hours of labor, and finally to dig into their profits to do this is almost more than human nature is capable of undergoing. It would almost take something like religious conversion to bring this

about whole heartedly, and I have not observed any change of heart in these rugged individualists, - very rugged in some cases, such as the Insulls, Capones, the Mitchels, the Melons, and that whole galaxy of oil magnates typified by the St. Clairs, Dohenys, and similar patriotic citizens. To revolutionize the social attitude of these rugged individualists who practiced in a somewhat refined way the old law of the jungle is, to say the least, a Herculean task.

Now what are the chances of the success of this social, economic, industrial, and I was about to add Christian enterprise embodied by the N.R.A.?

I think the first and foremost factor that is working tremendously in favor of the N.R.A. program is fear of revolution. It is slowly dawning upon some of these rugged individualists that their own security is not sure if this dog eat dog program is followed much longer. While our government has been committed to the Hamiltonian principle that property rights come before human welfare, there is some evidence that we as a people are beginning to realize that the perpetutity of democracy is more likely to be guaranteed if human welfare by placed first. The depression has brought forcibly to the minds of all how perilously near the great mass of the people of our country were living on the border of want. A few weeks or months of unemployment brought them to want and charity. A country overflowing with food of all kinds on the one hand and millions going

hungry on the other does not augur well for the perpetuity of a democracy. I think the lesson of what has happened and is happening in Europe has not been entirely without its influence in this country. Mussolini in Italy, Sovietism in Russia, and now Hitlerism in Germany is slowly soaking in and the suggestion of a dictatorship is even heard in this country. I have no doubt that these experiments in Europe have made a profound impression on some of the rugged individualists in this country and have led them to give whole hearted support to the program of the N.R.A. They are beginning to realize that democracy is not a self perpetuating institution and that a hungry people will not always submit meekly to a bread line when others are living in opulence and splendor in their midst. It is too bad that so many of our so called leading business men are still totally blind to this possibility. However, many thoughtful people even of the capitalistic class are beginning to realize that democracy is at stake and that unless some such program as the N.R.A. succeeds democracy is doomed.

It is also obvious so that he who runs may read that with the introduction of labor saving machinery industry and business can never again absorb all the laborers of this country unless the hours of labor per day and week are greatly shortened. There are 123 millions of us, and we must eat and have a place to sleep. Certainly it is better to have people work for their board and keep than to feed them thr-ugh charity. In answer to

the complaint that the employer cannot afford to shorten the hours and increase the pay, the reply is that the business that cannot afford to take care of the human element involved in the business has no right to exist. The business must bear the load of the human element involved and it can do this by increasing the price level of the commodity manufactured or sold. This will involve the standard prices and the exclusion of cut throat competition. Each type of business must have its code and follow it. Profits are to be permitted but not exhorbitant profits. This means planned business, regulated business, controlled business. It does not do away with initiative and with ability to express itself. It means playing the game according to the rules of the game. It is a curious fact that many business men are glad to cooperate with the N.R.A. program when once they understand the full implications of the program and see that they are still entitled to a reasonable profit. They know what their competitors are allowed to do and know where they are in relation to their own business. They realize that it will contribute much to their own peace of mind so far as their business is concerned.

A third factor that is contributing to the success of the N.R.A. program is the fact that producers are realizing that consumers cannot consume unless they have the wherewithal to buy to consume. One of the stupidities of the capitalist of the past has been that he has constantly short changed his employees,

...re also his consumers, and yet expected the consumer to ...sume more and ever more of the products of his industry. In ... land the business man is willin ly taxed to pay the dole be... it puts money in circulation and keeps his business going. ...n America we have yet to learn this lesson. For unless the con... has money to buy there an be no business. It is certainly ...etter business to pay the consumer wages for services rendered ...n to pay him a dole. Some of the large business concerns are ...coming so conscious of this that they are refusing to purchase ...ducts from those firms who are not strictly complying with ... provisions of the N.R.A. codes.

Probably the greatest factor in insuring the success of the ... program is the consumer himself, especially the employee ...mer. But to be effective the employees must be organized. ...thout organization they can do nothing. With organization ... hold the whip hand. Already all too many employees whose ...loyer displays the eagle have felt the sting of the employer ... they reported his violation of the N.R.A. code. However, ... employees are organized dismissal would not be readily ... The provision of the N.R.A. code that employees have the ...t to cooperative bargaining is, of course, the key stone to ... whole structure of the N. R. A. program. It is the one ... pill that the employer will have to swallow, and it is ... the surest guarantee that the N. R. A. program will work. ...ployees are the only people who can really tell whether ... code is complied with in any industry, and they are also

...mes most directly concerned in its strict observance. There ...every reason to believe that labor will be reasonable if the ...loyer manifests the same spirit. It is simply a question of ...ain, to work together for the good of each other.

The N.R.A. program cannot be fully understood and its pros... for success evaluated without some reference to its his...ical background. In a sense it might be considered the fruit... of the whole progressive movement as sponsored by Bryan as ...back as 1896 and later by La Follette, Theodore Roosevelt, ...oodrow Wilson. The movement was submerged by the World War ...lay dormant until the depression overtook us. Bryan's cross ...old speech in which he declared that labor should not be ...rified upon a cross of gold seems strangely up to date and is considered as prophetic of what we are now attempting to put ...to practice. Theodore Roosevelt's emphasis on the Square Deal ...has singularly appropriate in its application to the present ...tuation and dovetails well with Franklin Delano Roosevelt's ...al in behalf of the forgotten man. This entire progressive ...ent had had much influence in preparing the public mind for ...N. R. A. program in which the forgotten man is being remem...ed.

However, the national administration well knew that it would ...e an enormous amount of propaganda and publicity to align ...le numbering 123 millions, scattered over thousands of miles ...territory, and involving all classes of people, all occupations, ...itical affiliations, religious creeds, and party prejudices.

. that the N.R.A. program would have some chance of success.
. astute and masterful manner in which this was undertaken re-
veals how thoroughly the leaders understood how to mold public
. inion, and create a mass psychology favorable to the new deal.
. course the country was ready and anxious for some definite
. am and leadership that would lead us out of the slough of
. ondency. It is inconceivable that such a program could
. ve had a ghost of a chance of success in normal times.

In the first place it was launched on the high level of
. riotism as a way out of our difficulty. Emphasis was placed
. n the need of united action of all classes if success was to
. chieved. To oppose it is made to appear unpatriotic. The
. ort of the papers of the country was enlisted and given
. amazing unanimity. The blue eagle as the symbol of whole-
. rted cooperation was a marvelously effective invention. It
. a most effective way of separating the sheep from the goats.
. body can see who is cooperating and who is unpatriotic.
. motto, "Trade with those who display the blue eagle," is
. st effective way to strike terror into the hearts of those
. do not cooperate. Of course, the leaders of this movement
. . so naive as to believe that all who displayed the eagle
. le live up to the spirit and letter of the N.R.A. program.
. mpliance boards were set up in all communities where com-
. nts could be made by employees whose employers were viola-
. . the code set up for that business while displaying the
. . . It is to be hoped that these compliance boards will

81

make some permanent record of the complaints and hearings which they deal with. For it is at these compliance board hearings that the slacker, the chiseler, the side stepper, the slippery, eel-like, selfish, business hog is revealed. It has sometimes been said that the N.R.A. program cannot be effective because the law providing for this program has no teeth in it. Well, it has plenty of teeth, and they are sharp, but the national administration is wisely showing patience so that every chance is being given business and industry to fall in line voluntarily. Voluntary cooperation is highly desirable for the success of recovery. It is really surprising that voluntary cooperation has been so freely extended to this movement. One of the most promising features of the N.R.A. program is the wholehearted support given to it by the National Chamber of Commerce. The compliance boards are mainly under its direction. This national organization has never been accused of going progressive or of advocating the application of principles of Christianity to business, and since such a conservative and powerful organization is backing the N.R.A. program, it augurs well for its partial success at least.

One of the problematic features in considering the probable success or failure of the N.R.A. program is the influence of the church. This national recovery movement certainly has much in it that should appeal to those people who still believe in the support the church. If man is his brother's keeper, if getting to heaven depends upon guaranteeing food and drink to

...reas... of these our brethren, then the persons who profess ...istianity should back the N.R.A. program wholeheartedly. If ... ...re a Christian nation as we profess to be, then there should ... ...a overwhelming sentiment in favor of this movement at least ... the 60% of the people of this country who profess to be ...llowers of the founder of the brotherhood of man.

As a school man I cannot refrain from checking up on our ...tional program to see how far we have been successful in de-...loping the group spirit, social consciousness, the tendency to ...operate, for these human tendencies are essential to the suc-... of the recovery movement. I fear very much that the com-...tive idea is still all too dominant in our whole school pro-... from the kindergarten to the college and university. If ...ols and education are the hope of our country and if the ...rit of rugged individualism is to be replaced by the spirit ...operation and social consciousness, if democracy is to pre-..., then I fear the school will have to modify its program to ... the needs of democracy. The success of the N.R.A. movement ...really dependent to a large extent upon how well the schools ... country have done their work. Are we as a people still to be a beacon light to the world, demonstrating to the ... that democracy is able to work out its own salvation, or ... fail in this God-given task and turn our fair country ... to a Mussolini, a Lenin, or a Hitler?

53

malan
11/13/33
Paper #7.

WHAT TYPE INVESTMENT FOR THE AMERICAN CITIZEN IN 1933?

In à recent issue of Forbes Magazine there appeared this statement from the pen of Horace Greeley: "Fame is a vapor, popularity an accident, riches take wings. Only one thing endures and that is character."

Riches make themselves wings, then fly away as an eagle toward heaven. Ten years ago the following statement was written in bold black type on the front windows of every bank in Terre Haute, namely, "Character is the basis of credit."

During prosperous years, we forget the wise counsel of the ages. When depression overtakes us we make many good resolutions, but when temporary prosperity returns we do about as we did before. We seem to be creatures of the hour, all of which tends to emphasize the fact that fortune is really fickle, because mankind does much fickle thinking in the field of finance.

In these days of economic stress and distress when many people are either bankrupt or on the verge of bankruptcy, the question arises as to what shall be done with their bankrupt investment.

Having very little to my credit in the intricate field of investments, I am presuming this evening to answer the

question, 'What shall the American citizen of small savings invest in, in our present economic stress. Since the stock market crash in 1929, many have been "in the red". Decreased earnings, cuts in salaries, and shrinkage in values have made us short of extra cash. This condition has relieved many of the worry of asking how and where to invest our money.

However, we all continue to experience dreams and fancied satisfaction in believing that somehow on some near future date our Argosy will come sailing in, laden with riches that will enable us to move over into the pleasant pathway of ownership and investment. If our ship ever does come in, the riches it brings will depend upon how wisely we have saved and invested our surplus earnings.

The question, then, is how shall we invest? We are told the only safe rule is: "Before you invest--investigate".

The real purpose of an investment should be, <u>first</u>, to place our money somewhere, so that it will earn a reasonably good interest return. The masses make their investments not on the basis of safety but on the basis that the investment yields a big income or dividend. (Comment. Listen to salesman conversation.) If the investment promises ten to fifteen per cent on the investment the masses become nervous less something prevent them from getting in on the glittering opportunity.

The investor seldom gives a thought to the safety of his capital or the integrity or character of the men who intend to play with his savings. Something for nothing is a perpetual lure but nothing for something is usually the result. The average person does not realize that any man who can invest capital safely, year after year, and produce a net profit of 6% annually could command a salary of several millions annually. (Comment) None of the great life insurance companies earn that much and they are recognized as the most successful investors. Most men will tell you that one cannot get rich on 6 percent, but on the other hand one cannot go broke on 2 percent, while the millions go bankrupt trying to make 6 percent or more. The senior J. P. Morgan once said that a financier was a man who could invest a sum of money outside of his own business for 20 years and show a net profit of 2 percent. Contrary to popular opinion, very few do that well. In fact such men are rare; (banks, etc. Comment) Second, that it will be safe and convertible into cash when cash is really needed. It is not necessary that all one's estate be convertible into cash at any time but a reasonable portion should be. Third, that it will form a sound portion of one's estate. The best test of one's ability to handle finance is usually revealed at

death. Only 16 percent of the people who reach the age of 65 are financially independent and only one out of every thirty of these people retain their independence until the end. Among adults who die only 1.5 percent leave estates of $25,000 or more; another indication that the great majority of individuals are not blessed with an over abundance of investment talent. The investment business has been more or less of a racket. The investment of money is a very simple matter; getting it back without a loss is not so simple.

There are two kinds of property, namely, real estate and personal. There are two kinds of personal property, tangible and intangible. Our investments, then, are limited to these three fields.

Lawrence Chamberlain, an authority on investments, says that there are ten attributes of a good investment. They are:

1. Safety of principal.
2. Stability of income.
3. Fair income return.
4. Convertibility into cash.
5. Value for quick borrowing.
6. Limited problem of taxation.
7. Exemption from personal care.
8. Acceptable denominations.
9. Acceptable duration.
10. Possibility of appreciation.

Real estate offers the first six forms of investment to which reference has been made. Farm land was considered the soundest of all investments of the past. Land was, and perhaps it still is, the basis of all values. The Roger W. Babson organization puts it thus: "Real estate should not be overlooked in any full investment program." It happens that right now, one who can afford to purchase real estate is able to do so at very reasonable prices, because many bought real estate when values were inflated. They bought land when they could make only a small payment of half or less and mortgaged the amount. They had invested to secure the amount they had not paid. Good land has commanded a loan value during these periods of depression of from $40 to $75 an acre and commands that loan value today. Insurance companies are glad to make that type of loan today as they have been in the years of depression. They are not willing to loan $5 or $10 per acre on land that is worth only $15 per acre. (Comment)

Life Insurance Companies have not abandoned the farm-investment field. There is no investment known to men that are absolutely free from risk. United States Government Bonds are the nearest approach to a riskless investment, and yet some of our own government issues fell 18 percent in price during 1931. True this figure was not normal, and bonds came back. Is not the same true of the price of land?

Of course land must be valued on the basis of what it will earn rather than upon some intangible measuring stick of a real estate agent seeking to make a sale. Investment in land has the handicap of taxation and need of personal care. Another phase of investment in real estate is found in the depositor who buys shares in building and loan associations. Many people have misunderstood the workings of this type of association and have expected to be able to get their money any time just like money deposited in a bank. (Comment) These associations offer reasonable safety of principal and a stable income, possibility of borrowing and exemption from personal care. It has the handicap of taxation.

During the depression their interest rates have been reduced and in many instances, withdrawals have been restricted and even prohibited. In cases where banks have closed, building and loan associations have found themselves embarassed.

A third type of real estate investment is found in that type where the lendor takes a mortgage on real estate. Mortgages of various description form a satisfactory investment channel for financial institutions, but they do not seem so satisfactory for individuals. A single mortgage does not offer sufficient investment spread. Moreover, it cost from three to four percent on the investment if one has to foreclose the mortgage.

7.

A great number of American citizens who formerly invested in the foregoing type of security have turned to stock investment in recent years. Stocks furnish the investor his greatest thrill. Stocks are a gamble. Stocks are bought primarily because of their possibility of appreciation in value. The investor in stocks usually looks forward, more feverishly, to a jump upward in prices than he does to the rate or regularity of his investment.

One Wall Street operator who admitted that he had made and lost many millions during his thirty years in the stock market, said in a recent issue of a pupular weekly publication: "The net product of my study and experience is a conviction that I know but little more than I did at the beginning. And most of the little is negative, not positive." The reason for this should be obvious. No matter what statisticians may tell you, stock market speculation is not an exact science. In it, given causes can not ever be counted upon to produce given results in a given time, if at all. So there is very little to be learned about it except what not to do."

Babson's organization heretofore referred to said in the last week of February, 1933: "Our position is that the stock market now offers speculative opportunities such as come only once or so in a generation." I do not pretent to know whether stocks, at today's prices are really cheap. Nor do I claim to know that stocks are really safe. I am certain, however, that

stock investors should be very careful to select only stocks of companies which are a dominate factor in their industries, and the industry should be in the business of supplying the necessities of life.

Character of management must surely come in for consideration. Good management may succeed in a fairly poor business, while poor management can ruin the best business.

When one looks at the advertisements along this line of investment, one is stupified and amazed. The Indianapolis Star would lead you to think that right now, July, 1933, stocks in Brewing Companies are the proper thing to buy. The financial section of The New York Times gives one the same impression. Investors are advised to buy stocks in companies making bottles, bottle caps and barrels.

An interesting local advertisement was the story of the Studebaker Company receivorship, which means heavy loss to stock holders. An item recited that the Studebaker corporation had notified the New York Stock Exchange of its proposed increase in authorized common stock from $2,500,000 shares to $3,125,000 shares. The same paper contained a financial advertisement offering advice free concerning "the fifteen outstanding stocks to buy now", while another public service solicited inquiries regarding "five stocks likely to benefit most by the current strength in commodities" "Investographeo," another service, maintains that "there is a guide to value these days", and urges bankers, brokers, butchers, investors, traders and operators to look into the unique security analysis method.

Humen nature being what it is, anxious to get something for nothing, swindlers in get-rick-quick concerns have ever found willing victims. Styles in methods of swindling have changed about as often as styles in women's dresses. The tangled mystery of the Swedish Match King Stock Corporation, the collapsing of the Insull securities, the startling revelation of Morgan and Mitchell have revealed three of the newest wrinkles in stock swindles.

"Security speculator's services know useful economic purpose" says a writer in Collier's for March 18. And he adds: "I do not oppose stock exchange, but I do favor the dismantling of all stock speculation ~~of all stock speculation~~ machinery short selling, leading in margin and other devices that go with them."

The president of the United States indicated in his Inaugural Address that a new deal is dawning in the issuing and marketing of stocks. He spoke thus: "Our common difficulties effect only material things. Our distress comes, primarily, because the rulers of the exchange of mankind's pools have failed through their own incompetence. They are now stripped of the lure of profit by which to induce our people to follow their false leadership. The whithered leaves of industrial enterprise lie on every side. There must be a strict supervision of all investments; there must be an end to speculation with other people's money."

A second type of desirable investment is found in bonds. Stocks and bonds have appreciation; bonds are purchased for income. Stocks are only evidence of part ownership in a business that may or may not succeed, while bonds are really mortgages against the property owned by the business. True excessive appraisals of true public value may render a bond practically worthless just as over-capitalization and pyramiding of stock issues may destroy stock values. However, there are bond values that are always safe.

I asked the president of one of the largest banks in Indiana what class of bonds were the best to buy. "Government bonds", he promptly replied, "if you want absolute security. If our government isn't safe, nothing is safe." The banker intimated that he would hesitate to recommend other bonds to his friends, and from my knowledge of his dealings with clients, he has consistently urged that method. He said he prefered state, county, or municipal bonds to public utility or industrial. Not only are bonds more secure, but they are more liquidating than stocks. The banker warned against various equipment bonds, investment trusts and mortgage certificates, unless the investor carefully investigated before he invested. I talked with two other bank presidents whose banks have always been and are in cool repute, and they have the save viewpoint. The three bankers saw no reason why the average American investor should turn to securities issued by foreign government for investment purposes.

"What else is absolutely safe?" I asked the three bankers. "Life Insurance," two replied, while the other said his next investment would be tucked safely away in an annuity. All of them said: "Lay off of stocks."

This brings me to my <u>third</u> and last type of investment, namely, Life Insurance. Last December, Bruce Barton wrote: "In a period when almost everything else one owns has tumbled, it is <u>great</u> to know that Life Insurance is <u>one</u> investment that's just as good as it promised to be." Then he added: "The average man's only hope of independence is through systematic investment as represented by his payments on Life Insurance premiums."

The institution of Life Insurance has survived previous panics, the World War, the San Francisco earthquake, and the influenza epidemic. It is safely weathering the depression of 1930, 1931, 1932, and 1933. True it is that after the banking holiday was proclaimed by the new president, insurance commissioners of New York declared a temporary moratorium on policy loans and cash withdrawals. This act was taken only after the government had suspended the sale of liberty bonds and it had become impossible to transfer cash to policy holders through regular banking channels. There is no suspension of bond loans for making premium payments or in emergency cases where real and immediate need for cash is provided. Had the people been given the opportunity of withdrawing every dollar which the cash surrender value of their bond policies called

for, we would only have increased the tendency toward hoarding and additional distress and depression.

One illustration will serve my purpose. The father of a son told me in June, 1932 that he had $80,000 of Life Insurance with a cash surrender value of $12,000. He said he was going to apply for all of it right away so he would be sure to have plenty of cash in his lock box if things got worse. He incidently suggested that his insurance was his only investment that he could get any cash not withstanding the fact that this asset is worth $200000.

I am not selling insurance, nor is anyone paying me to talk insurance. However, the foregoing conditions obtaining in the field of all other investments, here are some of the things Life Insurance has been doing during our recent years of depression.

"Total payments to policy-holders and their beneficiaries have exceeded Six Billion Dollars. Of this sum, over Two Billion Dollars have been distributed in policy loans and another Billion Dollars as cash surrender values paid. In addition, policy-holders have received more than Five Hundred Million Dollars in dividends and other payments and more than Two Hundred Millions in dividends and other payments and more than Two Hundred Millions in matured endowments. During the same period, Death Claims and other payments to beneficiaries have added Two Billions more.

"Premium payments to Life Insurance Companies in these three years have exceeded Seven and One-half Billion Dollars. Income

received from their investments brought in Two Billion, Two Hundred Millions, making total income reach the astounding sum of Nine Billion, Eight Hundred Million Dollars.

"Total income exceeded the amount actually needed to meet the demands of policy-holders and beneficiaries by more than Three Billion, Six Hundred Millions. In the case of every large company, as well as that of practically every one of the smaller companies, current income was sufficient to meet all demands without borrowing money or selling securities at a sacrifice.

"This record, extending over three years of depression, stands as a magnificent testimonial to the institution of Life Insurance. Thus, the scope of Insurance investment portfolios and the scientific principles upon which the Insurance structure has been builded have given policy-holders a well nigh perfect degree of protection.

"Here is an interesting side light to the situation: Insurance officials say that a substantial percentage of policy loans and cash withdrawals has gone to pay off bank loans. One Life Insurance President told me, a year ago, that fully one-half of his policy loan applications came in on bank stationery.

"Can Life Insurance stand the pace? Here's the answer: In the last three years, with financial suffering everywhere, the assets of Life Insurance Companies, instead of growing smaller, actually increased from Sixteen Billion to Nineteen Billion Dollars. This is an increase of One Billion Dollars, during each of the three depression years. The record sounds as though it were the product of a miracle.

"Furthermore, during 1932, when the general index of business fell to nearly 50 percent below the 1929 peak, the American public bought and paid for an additional $14,700,000,-000 of Life Insurance, upon which the premiums were almost $500,000,000. This sum, pledged as an additional yearly deposit, gives evidence that the institution will continue to grow and serve. Altogether there's $103,700,000,000 of Life Insurance outstanding.

"I offer three answers to the question you ask: 'How Can Life Insurance proceed upon such stable basis when all other financial institutions suffer?'

"First, the contingency of Death and disability against which Life Insurance operates is absolutely ascertainable in advance;

"Second, premium Income continues unchanged during a depression;

"Third, investment income continues practically unchanged during a depression.

"Well, what are some specific advantages that Life Insurance offers an individual investor?

"Life Insurance is cash money, guaranteed for future delivery. It is a guaranteed investment on the installment plan. Different from other installment investments, however, death cancels future installments and completes the investment.

"Your Life Insurance policy contains two complementary features. One is pure protection and the other safe investment. The one is a yearly decreasing Insurance account and the other a gradually increasing Investment account. The Insurance account creates your

17

estate immediately and then completes it for your folks if you die. The Investment account completes the estate for your own enjoyment, later on in life, if you live. Live or die, you win!

"From the view-point of Mr. Chamberlain's ten investment attributes, Life Insrance stands as the premier investment.

"Its safety of principal seems unquestioned. The interest earned and compounded on the investment portion of the premium, each year, is reasonably high. After the first two or three years, the investment can be converted into cash upon demand. For quick borrowing, no other investment is more easily available as collateral. Unlike most loans, re-payment can not be demanded at the lender's discretion. An Insurance investment presents no taxation problems. It is entirely exempt from personal attention. It frees the investor from all hazards of individual selection and managerial care. Insurance can be purchased in acceptable denominations and for acceptable durations. An Insurance investment also offers large possibility of appreciation, which always works favorably for the investor and his family. The Life Insurance policy always sets forth definitely just what the Insrance investment is worth in any contingency, at any time. Quotations on the market pages of newspapers do not have to be consulted to ascertain what it is worth from day to day."

One question remains to be answered. How safe is Life Insurance?

In 1857, paper inflation was estimated at two thousand million dollars. Eighteen banks in New York City failed in one day, including the oldest and strongest bank in the city. Mobs carrying banners marked "Bread or Death" paraded the streets of the larger cities; threats were made to plunder the banks and the Sub-Treasury, and federal troops were called out to protect them. On November 6, a mob of five thousand hungry men attacked the New York City Hall. Interest rates rose as high as 100 per cent. Banks and individuals hoarded money until it was almost an unknown quantity. Securites were unsaleable and the market became a "mob of white-faced men who fought grimly against failure, knowing all the while that it was inevitable." Bumper crops in Europe destroyed the foregin market for wheat. "Wide-spread business failures brought about terrible and frightful business stagnation."

In 1873, the New York Stock Exchange closed for a week. Seventy-two railway corporations were in default. Over $218,000,000 of railroad bonds were overdue. Rioting was serious in the financial districts of all great cities. In one day 18 stock exchange firms failed and the president of the United States came on from Washington to New York to see what could be done. "Masses of laborers were out of employment--there was no relief in sight--the European

countries were suffering and we could expect no help from them--the days were dreary and there was no ray of light--failures were the rule and some predicted universal bankruptcy." "There were no quoted rates for money for it could not be had at any price." There were no bidders on the Stock Exchange and the market disappeared in the midst of a panic which paralyzed everyone." Banks universally suspended payments for 40 days. Cotton crop could not be moved to market because of absence of cash. In one week, 5,000 commercial failures were reported. One-fifth of the railroad investment was sold under foreclosure. Paper circulation increased $750,000,000, and gold reserved shrank to the dangerously low margin of 13.09. Business firms failed daily. Thirty-one of the life insurance companies in business today survived this terrible year--meeting every obligation--a tribute to the plan upon which the everlasting companies are built.

In 1893, in one month's time, 407 public and private banks failed. Scorching winds reduced the corn crop of Iowa, Kansas and Nebraska from 584,000,000 bushels to 137,000,000 bushels. One hundred sixty-nine railroads were unable to meet mortgage interest. Interest rose to 360 per cent. The government was within a few days of bankruptcy and suspension of gold payments was anticipated. "Men lived like flies under the strain of these terrible times and suddenly grew old,

haggard and thin." "Government bonds were at so low a point that it was profitable for the banks to issue certificates against them." A letter to Henry Adams said, "Return immediately. Boston is bankdrup and you are a beggar." There was a widespread distrust of currency and everyone who could get his hands upon a dollar immediately hid it away.

In 1907, bids of 100 per cent for call money brought no response. Improvised currencies came into use. Certificates made out by corporations were circulated as money. "Poverty faced the nation--we had been overspending, overconsuming, destroying more wealth than was produced." Harriman, pacing the floor, declared "The greatest stock bargains in the world and nobody with a dollar to buy them." Western governors appointed "holidays" to protect state banks. Securities amounting to $1,300,000,000 were dumped into the market at buyer's prices. "The outlook was ominous; our liquid capital was absorbed by the tremendous financial operations, promotions and consolidations of the past year." A premium of 5 per cent was paid for cash. The business stagnation was world-wide, and money was dearer all over the world than it had been in the lifetimes of most living men. Real estate values fell rapidly and rents were reduced an average of 50 per cent. Yet not a single life insurance company found it necessary to disturb its regular business of paying cash when and as cash was due--$445,069,100 being paid--every dollar of every obligation.

In 1931, the story of what happened in 1931 is too well known to call for repetition. Everyone knows how sorely tried business has been, how great have been the demands for cash, how widespread and severe the suffering has been. Everyone knows to what extent the orderly processes of conducting business have broken down. But without a moment's hesitation, the companies have been meeting every obligation of every contract--paying in cash every dollar due every policyholder and every beneficiary--a staggering total in 1931 of $2,600,000,000.

## Why Has Life Insurance Been Able to Live Through 19 Major Depressions? Because of These 10 Great Principles

1. The Principle of Preferred Liens
2. The Principle of Amortization.
3. The Principle of Diversification
4. The Principle of Expert Management
5. The Principle of Forced Income
6. The Principle of Government Control
7. The Principle of the Reserve
8. The Principle of Traditional Safety
9. The Principle of Holding Investments Until Maturity
10. The Principle of Wide Safety Margins

"Life insurance is as safe as any financial institution can be."--Calvin Coolidge

Only 3% of our national income is spent for life insurance, but life insurance provides 87% of the assets of deceased persons. Dwell on that while. The other 97% of our national income produces only 13% of estate assets which indicates that folks cannot build a solid foundation on a mess of mush. They cannot invest hard dollars in soft securities and expect to reap a golden harves of liquid income for the old age prior or for the family after death. If 98% of our people invested all of their surplus earnings through the great life insurance companies they would have more money for emergencies, more for old age, more at death. One man when approached regarding an investment annuity, said: "When I had the dollars I had no sense. Now I have the sense but no dollars." He was once worth a million but today, like thousands of others, he has more liabilities than assets.

Riches certainly do make themselves wings and they do fly away as an eagle toward heaven.

One type of insurance investment I want to speak of briefly is the annuity. Annuity incomes cannot be outlived. They continue regularly as long as an investor in an annuity lives. If he feels he may not live long enough to receive in income all that he paid the company, then he may purchase the Refund Annuity. This guarantees an income for life, as well as, to guarantee that if the investor does not live to receive all his money back, the income will be continued to a designated person until the total of all income payments equals the purchase price of the annuity. Annuities range

from 7½% annual income beginning at the age fifty to nearly 10% at age sixty and about 11% when the annuity begins at age sixty-five. The same sceintific principles that underlie the Life Insurance structure are employed in retirement incomes or annuities. Small wonder it is that men and women who own annuities live longer according to statistics. All they need to do is to live, and receive their checks from the insurance companies, brought to their doors regularly every month by the postman.

The annuity idea was familiar to the Romans. The earliest known tables dealing with the expectancy of life were annuity tables. For generations in European countries both governments and private corporations have sold annuities to secure safe and fixed incomes for the life of a large number of annuitants. The main features of an annuity is security, permancy of income, ease in collecting the income, one may purchase an annuity without medical examination. What is true of insurance is true of invesments in government bonds. The investment in real estate does not yield a monthly return, but allows a fair return of interest when purchased on the basis of commodity values. The three types of investment give security the most valuable thing in all investments. The three types of securities give peace of mind when the income-earning days are over and financial independence becomes a priceless possession. It gives to the

scholar the opportunity for reading and research. (Dr.Woodburn) It gives to the business man satisfaction. It gives to all types an opportunity to do some of the things which they have always longed to do. It gives to the home and to the parents the satisfaction of gratifying an ambition which all parents have, namely, of contributing something in a material way to those who are to follow after them. All men cherish the hope that their investments will bring in the income needed in their declining years. When there is silver in their hair, they need gold in their purse. Their investments may not yield as large returns as they would like, but one thing certain that in times of stress and distress as well as in times of prosperity their Argosy will come in and the treasure ship will be laden with fruit because they will have considered safety as the paramount problem in making their investments.

Paper #9.

# THE ROSE FROM OUR OWN GARDEN----CHAUNCEY ROSE.

Read before the Terre Haute Literary Club,

November 27,1933 by

Nelson R.VanCleave.

THE ROSE FROM OUR OWN GARDEN.

A rose has been defined as the masterpiece of nature.No flower can match its fragrance ,nor excel its wondrous beauty;yet its life is of short duration.It buds,blossoms,blooms and fades away,leaving only the memory of its beauty,its fragrance and its usefulness."Thus wastes man.Today he puts forth the tender leaves of hope;tomorrow blossoms,and bears his blushing honors thick upon him;the next day comes a frost which nips the shoot;and when he thinks his greatness still aspiring,he falls,like autumn leaves,to enrich our mother earth".

The rose of my discussion,this evening,does not belong to the specie,Rosaceae,but to the human race.This Rose was once one of Terre Haute's leading citizens and is one of our own great benefactors.I refer to Chauncey Rose.

While my title seems appropriate in a figurative way,it is also appropriate in a literal way.This community nurtured the man about whom I wish to write.The opportunities which he found here, made it possible for him to give back to the community the wealth which he accumulated.And when we consider what Chauncey Rose did for Terre Haute,some might ask the question,"What did Terre Haute do for Chauncey Rose"? Does not a rose give more in beauty and fragrance than it takes from the soil? Has not Chauncey Rose directed into channels of usefulness all which came into his possession? His influence will be felt through the ages as the young people,having availed themselves of the advantages which he made possible for them, shall grow into citizens of prominence and influence.His influence

107

is felt even now in Terre Haute and will continue so long as the institutions he established shall endure.

The character of Chauncey Rose lends itself well to biography. Some one has said that the life of the average citizen of America does not lend itself to biography on account of its likeness to that of every other citizen.It is only the lives which are different which make interesting reading.A recent speaker said that a good subject for a biography must have a distinct personality,aspirations and dynamic tension.My subject had all of these.He had a distinct personality and a faculty for doing things in his own way.He had aspirations and ideals,not only for his own generation but for all the generations of the future.This is shown by his liberal contributions for the training of the citizens of tomorrow.His dynamic tension is evidenced by all his activities.He was ever keenly alert to the changing conditions about him and always ready to direct his efforts,whole heartedly, in accordance with the policy he favored.

Mr Rose was born in Weathersfield Meadows,Conn.,on December 4,1794. and died August 13,1877.His grandfather,John Rose,emigrated from the Highlands of Scotland early in the eighteenth century.Mary Warner,his mother,was the daughter of John Warner of Weathersfield. His mother died at the age of seventy two,in 1832 and his father lived to the age of eighty and died in 1838.Of such sturdy stock was the subject of this paper born, and bred.

The education of Chauncey Rose consisted of a brief attendance of the common schools of his district.It was rudimentary but

it was thorough.Beyond this,he was self-taught in the practical school of experience.He inherited good health and was endowed with energy, courage ,a strong intellect and abundant common sense.His firmness of will did no discredit to his Scotch ancestry and his unflinching integrity in purpose and act were marks of his Puritan nature.To this combination of traits ,was added the habit of self-reliance,bred in him by his father,This is the essential quality of all strong characters and in Mr Rose,it was conspicuous;~~and~~ although denied, those larger opportunities for education,for which he yearned,and ~~from~~ by which he might have been richly benefitted,he did not repine.Just such men as he,~~was~~ cast in the same sturdy mold,were needed in the ranks of the industrial army marching westward.Broad and deep foundations were required to secure social,business,industrial and educational systems that would endure.

His business activities here in the Wabash valley in that early day,brought him into daily contact with men engaged in various industries,and doing their work under adverse circumstances.They were all pupils together in the hard school of experience,where the tuition fees are proverbially high.His activities were manifold,such as would naturally engage the attention of an aggressive,enterprising,master-ful man.What his hands found to do ,he did with a will.He worked with his helpers,but he was constantly confronted by the fact that technical training was sorely lacking and sadly needed by the workers of that day.

Chauncey Rose was one of eight children;six brothers and one sis ter.Parental care was necessarily diffused,and the children of the family grew up with greater self reliance and clearer ideas of the duties of mutual helpfulnessthan would have (otherwise) been the case. To the development of these characteristics and all the sturdier qualities of mind,time and place both contributed.A national government was being formed.Domestic problems pressed for solution.A continent whose resources were,for the most part unknown,united courageous souls to it's conquest.His six brothers and his sister all died before Chauncey and were all childless:so,when he died at the age of eighty three,also childless,he was the last of his race.

In 1817,Mr Rose,at the age of twenty three,came west seeking a location,first going to Mt Sterling,Kentucky,where some friends resided.The conditions under which he chose Vigo County for his residence, as told in his own words,are given in Beckwith's History of Vigo and Parke Counties as follows:-"In the fall of 1817,I traversed the states of Indiana,Illinois,Missouri,Kentucky,Tennessee and Alabama looking for a location at which to reside and engage in business.I spent several days at Terre Haute,which had been laid out the previous year.The following winter,I spent in Kentucky.Favorably impressed with the location and the people in and about Terre Haute,I returned and became a resident in April,1818.There were but two cabins in Terre Haute,and the nearest boarding house was at Fort Harrison,where I boarded at a house kept by Mrs Stewart.There were no direct roads.The trip to it was made by way of Louisville,Baltimore and Philadelphia.It was the scene of great rejoicing when the first steamboat landed at Terre

110

Haute,in 1822.In 1819 I moved to Parke County and engaged in the business of milling.I sawed and furnished the lumber for the court house erected in the public square;and I returned to Terre Haute in 1825."

While making Fort Harrison his headquarters,he rode across the prairie many times to the cabin of Mr Abram Markles,where he talked of land and land sales;especially of a large tract lying due east of the new village of Terre Haute,of his grist mill at Roseville,of the removal of the postoffice from the Fort to the village,of the closing of the Fort and of the new arrivals at the village;a village made possible by the fort but which,in turn,made the existence of the fort unnecessary.

As grist mills were badly needed,he built one on Raccoon Creek in Parke County,a place which became known as Roseville.Here he spent five years engaged in milling and in trade.These were years of hard and untiring labor,chopping timber and driving oxen.He frequently worked in the mill dam in water waist deep for hours at a time.

In 1825 he returned to Terre Haute with a capital of two thousand dollars to engage in trade.His profits were judiciously invested in land which he worked according to the most approved methods until, acre by acre,it gradually passed ,with the increasing population from farm land to city lots.In these ways and other ways,open only those who improve the opportunities of a new country,he amassed a fortune.

Chauncey Rose was foremost in securing railroad transportation for the new state.He bore the principal labor of building the Terre Haute and Indianapolis Railroad;his courage and resolution secured the construction of the road by individual subscriptions,largely secured

111

f om his friends by personal efforts.His acrupulous supervision of the road and its construction made it one of the best and safest in the state.He contributed largely to the railroads from Evansville to Terre Haute and from Crawfordsville to Danville,Illinois.

His financial successes were great,but so was his industry.His industry and integrity would have gained him a fortune,but these were guided by an intelligence,by an understanding of the future that led to the most fortunate investments.A distinguished mark of this man's character was his public spirit and liberality;he always responded to every worthy application.Among the more worthy of his good deeds was an act of justice to the memory of his brother,John.He found that,for many reasons,the will of his brother,if executed under the laws of the state of New York would not accomplish the clearly defined intentions of his brother.The will made bequests of more than a million dollars,and Mr Rose became satisfied that only a small part of the bequests would reach the objects for which they were intended.He succeeded,after nearly six years of vexatious litigation,in setting the will aside,He thus became heir to an estate of one million six hundred thousand dollars.Mr Rose,however,required no deliberation to decide that justice to the memory of his brother and his own character required that the money should be disposed of to execute the objects the will provided for as far as possible.He dispensed more than one million five hundred thousand dollars in New York for more than eighty charitable objects,ranging in amounts from one thousand dollars to two hundred and twenty thousand dollars.

Mr Rose was never indifferent to the influence of religious institutions upon a growing community.He contributed liberally toward the expenses of nearly every church edifice in Terre Haute.He was a regular attendant at church till within a few years of his death.His filial regard for his mother influenced him in action on such matters.It is said that her opposition to his going west was softened by his promise to pay her an annual visit.This promise could not be fulfilled until the end of the fifth year,but his annual visit,often performed on horseback was rarely omitted again during the good lady's life. At her death,he gave the old homestead to the town of Weathersfield with a sum of money to improve it.He added two thousand dollars for the town library and twelve thousand dollars to endow an academy.

He knew how to watch the dimes and save them as well as give them away. He wanted every man to pay his debts scrupulously. He believed in simple living, and after he began to contemplate the Rose Orphan's Home he would often advise members of his household to refrain from some expenditure, saying that it would be taking food from some poor orphan's mouth. He kept a purse for private charity and this becoming known caused him much annoyance. He was not afraid of work and it is said that he was often seen at the corner by the Terre Haute House, then his hotel, with a hoe in his hands scraping the mud from the crossings.

He built this hotel in 1840.It was a fine hotel but unprofitable. In 1841 it was closed to remain so for eight years.The carpets were rolled up and packed in iron-bound boxes,and the linen and plate stored in the rooms.It was finally opened by Mr Buntin and began a remarkable history as a hostelry where many famous men were entertained.

The best people in town boarded there. J.Richard Best,an English gentleman ,who was a guest there in June,1851 wrote of this hotel as follows:-
" At one o'clock the gong sounded and we all went to dinner.The dining room was of handsome dimensions.The tables were laid out with great neatness and propriety,and from fifty to one hundred guests were seated at them.Mr Buntin,our fat landlord,dressed in the height of fashion,and with carving knife and fork in hand,politely guided us to our places and then took his own stand at the side table which groaned under the profusion of well cooked joints.We had a sitting room to ourselves which looked upon a space of ground as yet unbuilt on,between the inn and the city of Terre Haute and which,therefore,was an open grassy commons.Five dollars a week was charged each grown person for board, lodging and attendance.From the hotel to the town was a very disagreeable,hot walk in the sun for it was not bordered with trees."

The fine body of land,three hundred twenty acres in extent,west of seventh street,bought by Chauncey Rose in 1837 from Frederick Rapp, who had secured it in 1829 by foreclosure of mortgages given by Abraham Markle,was the largest piece of real estate in one block ever held by a citizen of Terre Haute and its possession by Rose is so intimately connected with the symmetrical development of the city and of its railroad interests that it seems appropriate to tell the details of its acquisition by Mr Rose.We are led to do this because there has been a feeling,more or less vague on the part of many,that Mr Rose had imposed on the Markle estate in gaining possession of it.The history of the deal and the records do not support this,and,in fact,Mr Rose's purchase

was legitimate beyond reproach. The land was lost to the Parkle heirs through the misfortunes and early death of Abraham Parkle and if it had not been purchased by Chauncey Rose, it would have been parcelled out and sold to others by Frederick Rapp, who held a clear and indisputable title to it.

The land of which we speak is the three hundred and twenty acres which is bounded by a line running from the First Methodist church at Poplar Street, north on Seventh Street to Locust, thence east to Thirteenth Street, south to St Patrick's church at Thirteenth and Poplar and west on Poplar to Seventh Street. On April 22, 1821 Abraham Parklegave to Frederick Rapp a mortgage on this land to secure payment of two notes for six thousand dollars. Parkle died in 1826 and Rapp filed a bill against the widow and seven named heirs demanding a decree for foreclosure of the mortgage. In accordance with this demand, Curtis Gilbert was appointed commissioner to take charge of the sale. The land was "exposed to sale at public auction" at the court house, and Frederick Rapp, being the successful bidder, was given a deed for the property. The deed was recorded and Rapp took posession without objection from any of those concerned in the transaction. Chauncey Rose bought the land from Frederick Rapp.

As the years passed, his wealth increased to such an extent that it became a grave question with him how to dispose of it. He is said to have remarked to a friend, "Other people have trouble to make money, but my trouble is how to dispose of it." In this difficult task, his good sense and foresight did not fail him. First of all he chose wise counselors, among these, by way of eminence should be mentioned Colonel W.K. Edwards, a man with whom he could advise, and whose advice he could accept. In many of Mr. Rose's original papers the hand and brain of Mr Edwards are visible. Colonel Edwards was probably the only man who could have given a correct list of Mr. Rose's private benefactions. We only know in

115

general that he gave a half million here and a half million there.

Few men have left as many evidences of a humane and philanthropic spirit or have bestowed their charities so wisely.There is no evidence of selfishness in any of them.By the gift of ninety thousand dollars to the Ladies Aid Society of Terre Haute he has enabled it to become a noble and magnificent charity.His donations to Providence Hospital,now Saint Anne's Orphanage were upon a most liberal scale.By a graceful act of the Ladies Aid Society in January 1892,the name was changed to the Rose Ladies Aid Society.His noble gift to Wabash College,Crawfordsville, Indiana,amounted to some eighty thousand dollars.This was,doubtless,prompted by his sister,Mrs Israel Williams,who,with her husband resided in Terre Haute for a number of years,both of whom were deeply interested in this young college.In Charleston,South Carolina,he made large donations to several worthy objects of public charity.The medical dispensary where the poor are provided without money is a work of Christian benevolence;and added to these is the Rose Orphans Home with an endowment sufficient to insure its permanency,which is of itself enough to confer immortal honor upon his memory.

It is known possibly to only a comparative few,that Chauncey Rose seriously contemplated founding and endowing a college for young ladies in Terre Haute.He gave the matter much thought as to its internal workings also as to the plans and specifications of the buildings.He went so far as to make ample provisions for the same in his will ,but afterward he changed his mind,as every thinking man has a right to do,and in stead,substituted for it the Rose Polytechnic Institute,a school of technology for young men.The great success of this institution argues that he made no mistake in changing his purpose,and yet there is a linger ing thought as to what might have been had a College for young ladies been planted on the Fort Harrison Prairie in the town of Terre Haute.

116

in its inception, even though the Polytechnic had a rival, it has none now as it stands in the fore front with the leading technical schools of the country and upholds the idea that Terre Haute is, and of right ought to be, an educational center.

He took deep interest in the cause of education, generally. But that kind of education most suitable for young men of genius, talents and enterprise, and which should fit them for the highest spheres of practical life, was, with him a favorite topic of conversation. His idea was that a system should be provided by which the industrial sciences might be blended with the branches of knowledge usually taught in the schools, so that the pupils should not only become scholars in the ordinary sense, but should be enabled to follow the various mechanical and industrial pursuits with intelligence and skill. He desired to build up a class of educated and scientific mechanics, so that, in the pursuit of their various vocations, they should be able to give full scope to their inventive and constructive talents. In furtherance of his general purpose, he gave from time to time, not only contributions to Wabash College, but he also furnished the means of adding essentially to the library of the State Normal School and paid the expenses of a large number of young ladies while fitting themselves at that school to become teachers.

Finally, his leading and long-cherished thought with reference to education culminated in gifts and bequests for the establishment of the Polytechnic School. In the steps that Mr. Rose took to carry out his plan, he displayed all his best traits. Naturally distrustful of his own knowledge of schools, h e went to see some of the most noted institutions

117

that gave any knowledge in such matters. The timely and judicious suggestions of his friends, especially Josephus Collett, Barnabas C. Hobbs and Charles Peddle had decided influence with Mr Rose in his final decision to establish such a school. Thus was brought into being The Rose Polytechnic Institute.

The total of his gifts to the school, prior to his death, reached the sum of $345,614.61 and embraced the following items:-

| | |
|---|---|
| Value of ten acres of land | $20,000 |
| First gift of securities | 100,000 |
| Second gift of securities | 86,000 |
| Money paid by him | 31,255.66 |
| Third gift of securities | 100.000 |
| Paid for heating plant | 8,150 |
| Paid for grading and graveling | 208.95 |

By his will, a specific legacy of $107,794.33 was bequeathed to the institution, and after the payment of certain bequests, another fund was to be provided which would bring the total aggregate of his donations to the school considerably more than $500.000.

This investment was made in the youth of our land, and since its inauguration hundreds of young men have gone with diplomas from Rose to do useful work in forty states of the United States and ~~into~~ eleven foreign countries. The cornerstone of this valuable institution was laid September 11, 1875. The first name given the Institution was The Terre Haute School of Industrial Science but it was later changed to The Rose Polytechnic Institute.

His will was pretentious with bequests benefitting different charitable enterprises and orphan asylums and for the relief of poor, disabled and the needy. Eighty six separate and distinct items provide

118

for the distribution of his wealth. Interspersed with many smaller donations of five, two and three thousand dollar bequests are many larger amounts of fifty thousand, forty thousand, seventy two thousand, several of thirty thousand and one and one of two hundred twenty thousand dollars. In his giving, and he gave all that he had, he thought not of himself but of others.

Thus lived and died a great man. Pages might be given to a discussion of the details of his various philanthropic enterprises, but the purpose of this paper is to call attention to the man and his work. Terre Haute should value highly the memory of this man and shoud never forget what he did here. And as the years bring forgetfullness and changes, the name of Chauncey Rose should ever glow in the green fields of memory.

Paper #10

LOUIS PASTEUR

by

DR. FRANK E. WIEDEMANN

before

THE TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

DECEMBER 4, 1933.

# LOUIS PASTEUR.

Back in 1700 the forbears of Louis Pasteur were Serfs; that is to say,people legally incapable of disposing of their goods or their persons. They were part of the possession of a nobleman.

Claude Etienne Pasteur,the great grandfather of Louis,was granted his freedom in 1763 by "special grace" drawn up in the presence of the Royal notary. The deed stipulated that Claude Etienne and his unborn posterity should henceforth be enfranchised from the stain of mortmain.

In the parish register,at Lenniz,Paris,it is recorded that Claude was a labourer and knew something about milling. The ruins of the mill in which he worked still exists. Not far distant is the little cemetery,in the corner of which is a tombstone over shadowed with old beech and lime trees. On the stone one may read," Here lie,each by the side of the others." This is the epithet of the great grandfather and mother of Louis Pasteur.

After Claude Pasteur received his freedom at the age of thirty, he marries and enjoyed the proverbial fairy tale "lived happily ever after."

To this couple ten children were born. The third child was named Jean Henri Pasteur through whom this genealogy continues; he was a tanner but was not successful. He married young in life and died at the age of twenty-seven,leaving one little son,Jean Joseph Pasteur born 1791. This child was to be the father of Louis Pasteur. He was adopted by a wood merchant who carefully brought him up but could not give him much learning. In those days it was considered sufficient education to be able to read just a little. The boy had

121

to earn a living so he worked at the tanner's trade,the same as his father before him.

At the age of twenty he entered Peninsular War and was honored while in the third Regiment. This was during the days of Napoleon. Pasteur loved Napoleon as a demi-god. He loved him because of his visions. And after the Emperor was exiled, Joseph Pasteur returned to his tannery and made the acquaintance of a neighboring family of gardeners. Here he met the charming, beautiful young girl,Jeanne Etiennette Roqui. Every morning at early dawn Jeanne Etiennette could be seen working among the flowers. She was active and full of imagination and enthusiasm. Joseph was reserved,almost secretive with a slow and an analytical mind. They were almost the antithesis of each other which only strenghthened their mutual affection.

They were charmed with each other,they loved like the proverbial "Roqui" and were married.

The young couple settled down in Dole where Joseph established a Tannery. Four years later,Dec.27,1822,in a small room in their humble house,Louis Pasteur was born.

Later Joseph was called away from Dole by family interest and came to live at Marnoz. The house in which he lived although many times altered,still bears the name,"Maison Pasteur."

Here Louis Pasteur's earliest recollections dates. Louis'boyhood days were happy,not because of ease and luxury,but because his home life was simple and natural. His parents were mutually attracted to each other,and then their children were the offshoot of such union. Louis was not considered an exceptionally brilliant child,although he was studious and persevering. He was self-sacrificing and always ready to aid others.

His father although not an educated man,was nevertheless an

122

an original thinker and all through the life of Louis, can be seen the hereditary traits of his father.

Louis' life was permeated with filial piety and brotherly solicitudes. He loved books which added to the flow of these generous emotions. Differing in this, from many science students who are indifferent to literature; just as some literature students are indifferent to science. Pasteur kept for literature a place apart. He looked upon it as a guide to general ideas and broadmindedness.

The letters of his father, Joseph, to him, are full of admonition and solicitation. For example, Louis wrote in response to an expression of his parents' provincial uneasiness as to the temptations of the Latin Quarter," When one wishes to keep straight, one can do so, in this place as well as in any other; it is those who have no strength of will that succumb."

Another letter, Dec. 1843 to his son has a strong current of psycological diplomacy. His father imagined Louis was applying himself too closely to his books and studies; he therefore wrote" Tell your friend, Chappuis that I have bottled sour wine of 1834 vintage to drink the health of the Ecole Normale during the next holidays. There is, he says, more wit in those few litres of wine then in all the books on philosophy in the world. Would you tell him that we shall drink the first bottle with him. Remain two good friends till we meet."

Although his early life there flowed this feeling of courtship between him and his father. The mother, too, was strongly attracted to her son; she was burdened, however, with all the cares of the humble household, but her thoughts were ever with her son who was now working hard for his degree at the Ecole Normale. The biographies of most grdat men are dominated with this filial love, is so ~~different~~ that

123

in the life of Louis Pasteur.

Louis, soon assumed the name of "laboratory pillar" among his fellow students, and was frequently referred to as rather slow in his classes. He, however, was not daunted but applied himself more studiously.

His first triumph in chemistry was the making of a small fluid of phosphorous which he extracted from bones treated with sulphuric acid. This was his first scientific joy. In order to portray Pasteur's order of mind and how he prevented himself being led into error, surprise or hasty conclusion he would invarihly say," That is possible but we must look more deeply into the subject."

When Dumas found that Chlorine possesses the singular power of seizing upon the hydrogen in certain substances, and taking its place atom by atom; Pasteur made a simple and vivid comparison of chemical bodies to that of molecular edifices, in which one element could be replaced by another without disturbing the structure of the edifice; as if one were to replace, one by one, every stone of a monument by a new stone.

Shortly after, the famous chemist, Laurent, asked Pasteur to assist him in some of his experiments. This, Pasteur gladly accepted and later wrote in his thesis on Chemistry how much he had been enlightened by the kindly advise of a man so distinguished both by his talent and by his character.

Pasteur chose men of worth for his friends but his father and mother always came first. His first two essays were dedicated to them which were written when he was twenty-five. His father wrote,"We can not judge your essays but our satisfaction is no less great."

Pasteur's motto "Onward" not so much for the satisfaction

of a diploma but more from an unsatiable thirst for knowledge. He longed to go to Germany for study but his finance prevented him from doing so. But while in Paris he shut himself up in a laboratory and wrote," I am exceedingly happy." I soon shall publish a paper on 'Crystal Lography." His father replyed,"We received your letter yesterday; you have long,indeed ever,been all satisfaction to me."

You are right to make your goal; it was only out of excessive affection that I have often written in another sehse: You know so many noble youths have sacrificed their health to the love of science.

To further accentuate the Confucian idea of paternal love;Louis sent a little New Year present to his family. Immediately the father wrote," The present you sent just arrived. For my part I should prefer a thousand times that this money should still be in your purse and thence to a good restaurant,spend in some good meals that you might have enjoyed with your friends." At the end of the letter his dear Mother added in an almost inlegible script," My darling boy,I wish you a happy new year. Take great care of your health. What ever happens to you,do not grieve; nothing in life is more then a chimera. Farewell my son." She soon after died,which was a sad blow to Pasteur as his intellectual life was suspended. For weeks he was unable to throw off hos sorrow and grief. About this time Pasteur's researches attracted much attention; especially the work he did on tartrates and crystals.

When Biot checked up on Pasteur's observations and finding them correct,he took Pasteur's arm and affectionately said," My dear boy,I have loved Science so much during my life,thatthis touches my very heart." From that day Pasteur and Biot became great friends,

125

he had entered the threshold of distinguishment. Pasteur had the faculty of choosing interesting and worth while friends and he numbered among his acquaintances as the foremost chemist of his day. With all his associates he never forgot his reverence to his father and always kept his father informed as to his progress.

In 1854 Pasteur was made Professor and Dean of the Faculté des Sciences of Lille. He soon enlarged the usefulness of this Faculté, by inspiring the student body. In one of his maiden addresses he said," Where will you find a young man whose curiosity and interest will not immediately be awakened when with that potato he may produce sugar,with that sugar,alcohol,with that alcohol,aether and vinegar? Where is he that will not be happy to tell his family in the evening that he has just been working out an electric telegraph? and,gentlemen be convinced of this,such studies are seldom if ever forgotten. It is somewhat he continues,as if geography were to be taught by travelling; such geography is remembered because one has seen the places. In the same way your sons will not forget what the air we breathe, contains, when they have analyzed it,when in their hands and under their eyes the admirable properties of the elements have been resolved."

He admonished students not to be content alone with practice, but to exercise the faculty of investigation-as he says," Without theory,practice is but routine born of habit." Theory alone can bring forth and develop the spirit of invention.

Pasteur was a real man of science; he disdained the opinion of narrow minds who saw nothing in science but that which had immediate application. In that respect he reflected the opinion of Franklin,who on one occasion replyed to a group of curious by-standers asking the use of a scientific discovery- Franklin answered,

126

"What is the use of a new born child?"

Pasteur on a similiar occasion replyed: In a new born child there exists genius latent, which talents distinguish him from the herd. In your baby boys there are magistrates, scientists, heroes, who may cover themselves with glory. This may be latent, but if cultivated great possibilities are in store. Pasteur then unfolded the scientific theory of heridity that then was being fermented.

Pasteur's nature did not understand envy, jealousy of others or ill will to his co-workers; his failures stimulated him to greater efforts. He, however, had a sensitive nature which was portrayed after reading a paper before the Academy. Several of the Professors failed to comment on its contents. Pasteur spoke to his friend, Biot, concerning the slight. Biot answered by saying," He had learned when a colleague reads a paper and no one speaks to him about it afterwards, it is because it has been well thought of."

In 1860 the Academy conferred on Pasteur the Prize of Experimental Physiology, Claude Bernard recalled how much Pasteur's experiments in Alcoholic fermentatives, lactic fermentatives, the fermentation of tartaric acid had been appreciated by the Academy.

About this time Pasteur began his work on spontaneous generation. Prior to this period, Aristotle, Lacretius, Virgil, Ovid, Pliny, Philosphers, Naturalists, etc. all believed in spontaneous generation. Even as late as the sixteenth century, Van Helmont gave a recipe to create mice: Yield By putting some dirty linen in a receptacle, together with a few grains of wheat or a little piece of cheese, mice would soon emerge.

Later, still, Buonanni, and Italian, announced a more fantastic fact. Certain timber wood, he said, after rotting in the sea produced worms, which engendered butterflies, and these butterflies became

birds. Absurd as these assertions are,we must not be too severe in our criticisms as I well remember not long ago,some simple soul asserted that if a hair from a horse tail was left sufficiently long in a barrel of rain water a snake would emerge.

It was Lou an Italian physician,however,that spontaneous generation received its deabh knell when Redi proved that worms found in rotten meat did not appear spontaneously,when he placed a piece of gauze over the meat. Flies attracted by the odor,deposited their eggs on the gauze; from these eggs worms were hatched.

Later,and Italian medical man,whose name,I do not recall,observed that the grub in fruit is also hatched from an egg deposited by an insect. So the theory of spontaneous generation had almost vanguished when the invention of the microscope at the end of the seventeenth century again renewed its complexities. The microscope revealed a new world." Whence came those thousands of creatures only distinquishable on the slide of the microscope,those infinitely small things which appear in rain water as in any infusion of organic matter when exposed to the air. How could they be explained other then through spontaneous generation,those bodies capable of producing 1,000,000 descendents in less then forty-eight hours?"

About the middle of the eighteenth century the problem was again baffled without scientific grounds. It was then,1769,that Voltaire played his part in holding Needham up to ridicule. In his Philosophic Dictionary after the word "God" Voltaire said," It is very strange that men should deny a creator abd yet attribute to themselves the power of creating eels."

Needham endeavored to meet this religious argument by stating that the hypothesis of spontaneous generation was in perfect accordance with religious beliefs.

In 1858 Pasteur set to work to prove by experimentation, the pro and con of spontaneous generation. He first began by the microscopic study of atmosphere and air. It occurred to him to draw a current of air through a tube containing a little plug of cotton wool. In this way, solid corpuscles contained in the air were deposited on the cotton filter. Pasteur assured himself that amongst various detritus, dust, presented spores and germs. There are, therefore with air some organized corpuscles. After one year's study, Pasteur reached this conclusion: Gases, fluids, electricity, magnetism, organic things known, or things occult, that there is nothing in the air that is conditional to life, except the germs that it carries. Pasteur proved that the higher the altitude, the fewer the germs; and that cities were more laden with bacteria then the country.

When Pasteur was presented to Napoleon, he assured the Emperor that all his ambition was to arrive at the knowledge of the causes of putrid and contagious diseases.

Shortly after, Pasteur was invited to give a talk before a group consisting of celebrities and the "Tout Paris". Before this fashionable audience, he proceeded to lay bare his conclusions on Spontaneous Generation. In fact he said:

"Great problems are now being handled, keeping every thinking man in suspense; the unity or multipicity of human races; the creation of man 1,000 centuries ago, the fixity of species, or the slow and progessive transformation of one species into another; the eternity of matter; the idea of a God unnecessary. Such are some of the questions that humanity discusses nowadays."

" He had now, he continued, entered upon a subject accessible to experimentation, and which he had made the object of the strictest and most conscientious studies. Can matter organize itself? Can

living beings come into the world without having been preceeded by beings similiar to them? After showing that the doctrine of spontaneous generation had gradually lost ground,he explainedd how the invention of the microscope had caused it to re-appear at the end of the seventeenth century,in the face of those beings,so numerous,so varied,so strange in their shapes,the origin of which was connected with the presence of all dead vegetable and animal matter in a state of disorganization." He went on to say how Pouchet had taken up this study,and to point out the errors that this new partisan of an old doctrine had committed,errors difficult to recognize at first. With perfect clearness and simplicity,Pasteur explained how the dusts which are suspended in air contain germs of inferior organized beings and how a liquid,preserved,by certain precautions,from the contact of these germs can be kept indefinitely,giving his audience a glimpse of his laboratory methods.

"Here,"he said," is an infusion of organic matter,as limpid as distilled water,and extremely alterable. It has been prepared to-day. To-morrow it will contain animalculae,little infusories,or flakes of mouldiness.

" And,therefore,gentlemen,I could point to that liquid and say to you,I have taken my drop of water from the immensity of creation,and I taken it full of the elements appropriated to the development of inferior beings. And I wait,I watch,I question it,begging it to recommence for me the beautiful spectacle of the first creation. But it is dumb;dumb since these experiments were begun several years ago; it is dumb because I have kept it from the only thing man cannot produce, from the germs which float in the air,from Life;for Life is a germ and a germ is life. Never will the doctrine of spontaneous generation

/30

recover from the mortal blow of this simple experiment."

In 1849 France was invaded with a disease disastrous to the silk worm. All France was alarmed over the epidemic. Pasteur was the man of the hour. Just then,however,he was interrupted in the midst of his experiments by the death of his beloved father. His sadness was the more injurious because of its simplicity. After a few days mourning he again assumed his studies to again be met by a deeper grief in the death of his little daughter,Camille. Taking the tiny coffin to Arbois for burial,he again went back to work.

Pasteur seemed to understand the clear distinction between the scientist on the one hand and the man of sentiment on the other; each absolutely independent of each other. Very similiar to Claud Bernard who did not allow himself to be probed by irrelevant question on religion. Bernard would reply", When I am in my laboratory,I shut the door on materialism and spiritualism; I observe facts alone." Pasteur's deep grief stimulated him to greater application and his experiment observation on the silk worm diseases lead him to submit the following comment-" That the silk worm disease was due to disease of the chrysalis at the time of maturity and on the eve of the function of reproduction. The microscope could detect its presence with certainity, even when the worm and seed seem healthy. Thus Pasteur scored another victory.

October 19,1868 at the age of forty-six,Pasteur after reading a letter by Salimberri relative to the silk worm disease,was stricken with a cerebral hemorrhage. The attending physcian ordered sixteen leeches behind the ear; blood flowed freely. Pasteur made a slow recovery. The unusual thing was his clear mind through out the malady.

Then it was France and Germany had their war in which Bismarck and Napaleon III played such an important part.

This fact suspended scientific efforts although Pasteur wished to be of some use to his country he was declined ~~to~~ honor. In one of his note books is found this sentence-" I do not know what destinies Fate has in store for us." But I do feel most deeply that if I had to choose between the present situation of France and that of Prussia, I should decide for the former. Better far,our suffering,our perils, our sacrifices than the cruel and inflexible ambition of our foe. During this period all scientific work was suspended.

It was due to Pasteur that many lives were saved in the battle field. His germ theory aroused thinking surgeons to unlimited possibilities.

To Lister,a celebrated English Surgeon,is due the honor of using the theory in practice. He attempted the destruction of germs floating in the air by means of a vaporizer filled with carbolic acid solution. Sponges,drainage tubes,instruments used were subjected to minute precautions; in other words Lister was the father of antiseptics.

Pasteur's search for his son on the battle fields of France reads like fiction.

Pasteur was strong on freeing the Academy from government, politics and red tape; he deployed the slipping of scientific France. In a letter, he referred to Germany as multiplying her universities, establishing between the most salutary emulation,bestowing honour and consideration on the masters and dostors,creating vast laboratories,amply supplied with the most perfect instruments.

Pasteur's life henceforth consisted chiefly of writings of a personal or scientific nature; he still retained,however,the hopes

of making French beer capable of completing with German beer. He had shown that chance had no share in fermentations; he had destroyed the theory of Spontaneous Generation. The difficulties yet to be solved was the question of pure yeast; and why some beer is thick, acid, sour, slimy or putrid. He never was quite able to make the same quality of beer as was made in Germany. After every trial he would end with his philosophical remark, "Let us work."

Pasteur's germ theory did much in placing Surgery where it is today; making possible surgical operations, that prior to his research, were fatal. Leading medical men of his day endorsed his conclusions. Alphonse Guêrin, Roux, Lister and others put into practice his suggestions and this was recent as 1873.- As an example of the prevailing mortality of that day, in Paris, on the Avenue de Mendon, was an isolated house used for the exclusive purpose of surgery for women. In 1863 ten women entered this house: the neighboring inhabitants watched those ten patients entering the house, and a short time afterwards their ten coffins being taken away.

Lister, perhaps, did more to immortalize the work of Pasteur then any Surgeons of his day; using the teachings in a most practible way. Between 1868 and 1870 Lister reported that out of forty amputations, thirty-four survived; a remarkable record for those days. Lister, perhaps more than any one man popularized Pasteur. Tyndall wrote to Pasteur "For the first time in history of Science we have the right to cherish the same and certain hope that, as regards to epidemic diseases, medicine will soon be delivered from quackery and placed on a real scientific basis.

Nothing shows more the unbiased, prejudiced mind of Pasteur than his letter to Dr.Bastian, his persitant opponent on spontaneous generation.

Pasteur wrote, "Do you know why I desire so much to fight and conquer you? It is because you are one of the principle adepts of a medical doctrine which I believe to be fatal to progress in the art of healing-The doctrine of the spontaneity of all diseases."

Although Pasteur was not a well man, he defended his cause with marked shrewdness. He became interested in hospital prophylaxis and applied his theories to many diseases, especially puerperal or child-bed fever.

It is almost beyond comprehension that so short a time as forty-five years ago Doctors would leave the post mortem rooms and without cleansing, would attend a case of obstetrics. This, Pasteur resented; he made enemies among those who were more desirous of distinction than of the progress of Science. Pasteur conceived the idea that all diseases where due to microbic causes. A doctrine not far wrong even today.

It is interesting to note how Pasteur and Darwin independent of each other, arrived at the same conclusion in regard to earth worm.

Perhaps one of Pasteur's greatest thrills was his success among sheep having splecnic fever; he converted many skeptical veterinary surgeons to his viewpoint.

Pasteur's last outstanding contributions to humanity was his work in hydrophobia; it was he who discovered that the seat of the rabic virus was not only in the saliva of the mad dog but also to an equal degree is found in the brain.

Pasteur lived to see many of his deductive experiments accepted

by the scientific world. His scientific mind never warped his sentimental nature and he saw in the posterity the immortality of life. Pasteur like Confucius did not dread death as he believed a just life on earht need have no fear of the unknown.

On Sept.28,1895 surrounded by his family he peacefully passed away- one hand rested in that of Mme.Pasteur,the other held a crucifix.

12/11/33 135

Paper #11

THE CONSERVATION AND REPLACEMENT OF WILD LIFE.

(By Dorothy Smyth)

The term "Wild life " has now an accepted meaning, embracing fishes, birds, mammals, and related associations of fields, forests, and waters.

It will be impossible to discuss this subject without taking into consideration some of the broader phases of conservation such as reforestration, stream polution, drainage, flood controll, soil erosion,etc.

When our fore-fathers relieved the American Indian of the guardianship of America, they found a land so rich in natural wealth that it was beyond comparison. They found forests and broad grassey plains by the millions of acres, teaming with wild life; hundreds of miles of prairie lands, pasturing buffalo, elk, and antelope; clear sparkling streams full of fish; the sky full of migratory fowl and song birds.

Just as a thoughtless youth squanders his inheritance, so our early settlers thought these huge resources of timber, pure water, and wild life would last forever. They gave little thought for tomorrow.

As a nation we are but a big over-grown infant. In 150 years our population has increased 40 or 50 times. In that brief period we have, in a way, squandered 75 or 80 percent of our forest and wild life rescources. We are now consuming trees four times as fast as we are growing them. It has been said that the well being of a nation is almost in direct ratio to its policy in the matter of its natural forest wealth.

Not that it is a crime to cut down trees and put them to good use, but the evil lies in not replacing them, or providing for continuous production of forests.

When forests are severely cut over, cleared out entirely, or burned over, there is not sufficient vegetation to absorb the rainfall and great floods follow. The surface is eroded; the rich top soil washed away and the land is impoverished. The nation suffers a double economic loss.

When the Indian wished a drink, he could stoop beside a stream and drink freely without fear of sickness. Our early settlers enjoyed the blessing of a never failing supply of pure water in every lake and stream. Today our supply of pure water has been largely destroyed because we have followed the lines of least resistance and dumped our sewage and wastes from city and industry into our waters. As a result the fish and their spawn have been killed by poisons and oil, or the fish have been driven away or rendered tasteless and inedible. Our bathing beaches have been cluttered up with filth and rendered dangerous to health. These same wastes could not only be rendered harmless but could be changed into fertilizer and other products useful to mankind. Our practice of waste disposal not only robs us of unexcelled playground facilities, but is always a potential and in many cases an actual menace to public health.

Our wildlife is suffering the same fate as our woods and waters. Species which were plentiful a few years ago have practically disappeared and others are rapidly facing extinction. There is a unity of opinion on this subject. The alarm of the conservationist, sportsman, fisherman, recreationist and hunter has never been greater than at the present time.

Happily for America, but contributing materially to this disappearance of wildlife, we find that the instinct or call for

hunting and fishing has not decteased but is constantly increasing. It is an hereditary instinct transmitted from our pioneer ancestors.

Aside from the serious economic loss that this policy of destruction carries with it, is the loss of recreational facilities. Nature has a magical quieting and healing effect upon the body, soul, and mind and especially of the shut-in, over worked, or worried city dweller. When the doctor has exhausted all other means at hand, what does he do? Advises the patient to leave the city with its nerve-racking noise and confusion, with it's card games and movies, and get back to nature at least as much as possible, back to the woods and streams. Out-door recreation and camping have every where increased as the result of the introduction of the motor vechicle, providing opportunities for wholesome recreation for millions of our citizens heretofore denied these blessings.

Then there is also a great moral and spiritual uplift in this communion with nature unequaled perhaps by any other force or influence in the world. The growing city boy seems to have always been a big problem. Show me a city boy, who has been taught an appreciation of nature from early childhood; who has been taught, preferably by his father, good sportsmanship; taught the proper-technique of angling, and shooting, and game hunting, and camping, and I'll show you a boy who seldom if ever gets into trouble. He has little time or inclination to loaf or play in the back alley with the common, cheap gang. His recreation is usually planned in advance and his associates carefully selected.

This question of playgrounds and recreation is rapidly becoming a vital one. One man in controll of one machine can now produce more goods in a given time than a whole battilion of workers did by hand labor. As a result of our mechanical devices we can produce our necessary requirements with far less physical and mental effort than formerly, with the natural result that we have more time to devote to amusement and recreation than did our forefathers. How much better for us if a part of this leisure can be spent in clean, wholesome, natural surroundings. Reports all agree that out door recteation is rapidly and continuously increasing. It is conservatively estimated that there was a 400 percent increase during the last decade in the number of people who enjoy the pastimes of hunting and fishing. A southern Newspaper Publishing Association determined that in 14 southern states there were 4,430,000 people interested, in fishing and hunting news as compared with 4,916,00 interested in base ball, foot ball golf and tennis, all combined.

The Bureaus of Fisheries and the Biological Survey determined that 8,500,000 people in the United States bought fishing and hunting license in 1929. Add tbithis figure 4,500,000 hunters and fishermen who are exempt for one reason or another, and you have conservatively 13,000,000 who actually fished or hunted in that year.

The wildlife problem of America certainly has its economic value. We have a national resource answerable in many respect to the ordinary rules of investment. Disregarding for the time the vital but incalculable benefits to health and character of wholesome amusement and recreation to Americans, let us consider the cash values and great financial importance of the investment under consideration.

#5

The census figures show that the value of sporting firearms sold to the public in 1929 was nearly $22,000,000; the value of ammunition was nearly $44,000,000; and the estimated value of fishing tackle was $25,000,000. It has been estimated that sportsmen for 1929 spent on an average of about $50.00 each for fireams, ammunition, fishing tackle, boats, tents, camping equipment and other accessories ar a total of $650,000,000. This does not include cost of transportation and wear and tear on automobiles, going to and from fishing and hunting grounds which would no doubt bring the total up to three-quarters of a billion dollars.

These estimates concern only those interested in pursuit of wildlife for food or sport. By far the greater proportion of Americans who annually go afield to enjoy our wildlife resources and the associations of out-of-doors, do not either shoot game or catch fish for sport, but all of them are, nevertheless, interested in wildlife. Their numbers are annually increasing. One authority determined that State Park areas throughout the country were visited in 1930 by 45 million people seeking out-door recreation in forest, field and stream. Additional millions go afield during the year, but do not go to established parks and, therefore, are not registered and can not be accurately computed. It is impossible to estimate even approximately the tremendous sums spent by this vast group of recreationists who are attracted by wild creatures and their environment, but when figures are compiled they will dwarf into insignificance any so far presented in connection with the activities of fishermen and hunters.

In some large areas with certain natural resources, sportsmen are especially invited and catered to, until "wildlife" has becmme

their greatest financial asset. I have read that Wisconsin received a greater income from tourists last year than from agriculture. The same is perhaps true of Minnesota.

It is estimated that the Federal Government has in national parks about $55,000,000; in fish hatcheries $3,500,000; in game sanctuaries about $3,000,000. The states own appoximately forty-four and a half million acres of various types of land and water which have been set aside for game sanctuaries or reserves. It is belived that these reservations are worth $300,000,000. Add to these public investments the value of privately owned sanctuaries and shooting grounds, and you have a grand total of at least a billion dollars.

In the direct production of food and clothing items consumed or used by Americans, estimates of the Biological Survey; credit the country's wildlife with supplying meat and fur each year to the value of $150,000,000. The extent of protection by insect-destroying birds to foods and other farm crops is estimated by the Department of Agriculture to be annually $350,000,000.

It is surprising to know that fish as a national food ranks third among meats, with a value of $116,000,000 to the fisherman. This does not include the so-called game fishes. The value of various by-products from fish is perhaps $25,000,000 additional.

Permit the devastation of wildlife-- the fishes, the song birds, the game birds, the insect destroying birds, the mammals, and related associations of field, forest and water, and you take the heart out of the fisherman, the hunter, and the recreationist.

For fear that some might think that almost the last animal has been destroyed, I wish to quote some figures from the National Waltonian for October 1933.

#7

"Recent reports of the annual game census indicate that big game is more than holding its own in the National Forests. Game animals on the National Forests are estimated to have increased forty percent since 1926. The census gives a total of 1,163,142 big game animals on 148 National Forests."

"Grizzly bears, including the Alaska brown bear, show an increase over last year's census. Excluding Alaska, however, the grizzlies have dwindled from 747 to 664, and extinction of the species is threatened in several states."

Black and brown bears have increased to an estimated number of 52,331. Elk are gaining ground in western forests but only about sixty remain in the East. The number of moose is estimated at 7,854. Nearly half of the 21,736 mountain goats range in Alaska. Mountain sheep number about 12,500."

"Forage conditions and more intensive hunting are believed to have temporarily halted the increase in deer. California National Forests support the largest number of deer--278,660 head. New Mexico's deer population is over 100,000; Oregon and Arizona Forests have over 80,000 each. The Lake States Forests now have 23,595 deer, and in the eastern and southern states there are some 30,000 head."

Large scale public hunting grounds exist only in the National Forests and 75% of the western big game range is included in these areas.

To give a better idea of the distribution of big game, I quote from the August 1933 Waltonian. "California has sixty-five acres for big game animal as a state average, while that of the entire Pacific coast is eighty-three acres per animal. Pennsylvania and the Lake states have sixty-nine and seventy acres per animal respectively. While the central and southern states

have nine hundred and fifty-eight and two hundred and forty-four acres per animal respectively, indicating the need of attention to the game resources."

A Pennsylvania farmer about three years ago told me that he hoped their state would ease up a little on the restrictions for deer shooting, because deer had become so plentiful that they were rather a nuisance to farmers and gardners in his neighborhood. Deer are good feeders and not at all particular what they eat. A tame deer up in Wisconsin walked into our fishing lodge one morning and in the few seconds, before it could be pushed out of the door, devoured a basked of grapes, two bars of soap and two packages of scrap tobacco. (The only quadriped that I know of that will eat the nasty stuff). The kill in Pennsylvania has been limited to bucks only.

According to a Senatorial committee appointed in 1929 to investigate our wild life resources and make recommendations to the next Senate, the principal influences which have been effectiv in reducing and destroying our wild life are: drainage, deforestration, fire, disease, water pollution, increasing numbers of hunters and fishermen equipped with means for rapid cheap transportation, and finally, the extended occupation of land by agriculture and industry.

This committee found that the total annual subscription in cash by Federal and State governments specifically to administer this resource, to insure its maintainance and secure a continuation of profits probably does not exceed $12,000,000. The value of the annual dividend to Americans, considering only the tangible assets, is many times this amount. Your committee, therefore, is compelled to report that it belives the primary cause for the gradual and serious decrease in our wildlife to be due to the

failure of Federal and State legislative bodies to be guided by the ordinary rules of sound practice which requires that the sums used for research, protection, administration, development and upkeep, must be in due proportion to the income derived from its resources."

"The enterprise of wild life conservation and increase, viewed solely as a business matter, has been greviously underfinanced and small recognition has been had of its value in dollars to the people of our Commonwealths."

There has been a feeling that the costs should be borne by hunters and fishermen. This in an injustice because, as we have seen, there are so many more angles to the wildlife values. In the last few years, with the depression and the cry for decreased taxes, there has been an unfair tendency by the state legislatures to divert funds derived from fishing and hunting licenses to other and unrelated departments.

The larger part of a successful conservation program belongs to the states, but without acti ve participation and leadership of the Federal Government, the work will fail. All are agreed that there should be a definite workable program.

Federal activity is confined exclusively, first, to its jurisdiction over the game and fish in its national parks and reservations; secondly, to its authority and direction over migratory birds; and third, to its jurisdiction over navigable waters, in the matter of fishes, limited even in this field by the shore line rights of the states. While this is apparently a a limited field , yet it broadens out considerably and becomes a vital and necessary element and assisting force in State endeavors.

#10.

Federal forestslands make up approximately 153,000,000 acres pr 25percent of the total forested area.In the West they total 67% of the forest land and in general include the largest and most consolidated area susceptible to wildlife management. All these areas except the Public Domain lands, are already under management for one purpose or another.

The United States Forest Service has controll of over 140,000,000 acres and is responsible for land management involving wildlife problems. Jurisdiction, however,over the wildlife is with the states. Plans must be adjusted to meet requirements of State Game Departments and State Legislation.

To develope the wildlife resources on all federally owned land in its proper relation to other resources and use values, would add materially to the public benefits, social as well as economic.

The major percentage of wildlife finds in the forests three essentials: food, breading grounds, andprotection from enemies and the elements.

While mixed growth and marginal areas are the most valuable forest type for wildlife, the vast range of environment in forests is suitable for a great variety of animal life. Many game species find both food and shelter in forests as also do valuable game birds.

On the Narional Forests, due to better land management, ~~and~~ the game supply has been well maintained or increased. With few exceptions elsewhere game has and is decreasing on the forested areas of the country.

One of the chief functions of the National Government in this program is researuh, demonstration and education. With reference

to animals and birds,this has been provided for in the Biologi-cal Survey which is carrying on general research in the inter-relationships of wildlife species of many kinds with each other and with forests. It is their business to pass this information along to the public and to the state departments and to demonstrate wildlife management as a phase of multiple-use, forest land manage-ment, and especially with respect to game birds and animals; pro-per stocking of forest areas with game;removal of the surplus of either sex under proper procedure; the futnishing of suitable food and cover requirements; the regulation of protection from natural enemies and other injurious factors; and other measures that may be necessary to the welfare of wildlife in a proper coordination with other products,uses, and services of forest lands.

This service should contemplate the removal of the crop of game and fur-bearers in accordance with the principle of sustain-ed yeild, which involves continuous production for human benefit, and yeilds the greatest economic and social return. Such manageme ment requires cropping under plans providing for perpetuation and development of the breeding stock.

The National Government carries on its research, demonstra-tion and education concerning fish, through the Bureau of Fisher-ies. The same principles which apply to game animals apply to fish.

About 17,500,000 acres of forest land ~~is~~ are owned by state, county, and municipality. This is small in proportion to the total forest area but very important to wildlife. Many of them are used especially for wildlife purposes. They are particularly important in the east where much forest land is privately owned. The trend is towards an increase of public lands. This is largely

because land owners are unable to ray the taxes and the land reverts back to public ownership. Much cheap land is being bought and especially in Pennsylvania for recreational purposes. This state is rapidly becoming a sportsman's paradice.

Most important of all privately owned lands are the woodlots which harbor the game species and furnish the shooting to the great majority of hunters. If some cooperative plan could be worked out between the farmer and the hunter, it would be to their mutual advantage. It would surely increase the game crop.

Some agricultural groups are now interesting themselves in conservation. In a recent address by Mr. Charles Brand he said, "At this time, I can only say that we need to adopt a definate policy as to the use of land. We should admit that we have too much land under cultivation for our present needs and should do something about it. We should begin to make plans for transferring large areas several-hundred million acres of marginal farm land- to reforestration, park, and recreation projects. We should correct the long taught fallacy that all land should be utilized for growing crops, for grazing, or for growing timber. Our new policy should protect our land resources, in so far as it is practicable, in order that they may be available for future generations".

Wildlife belongs to the state and is under the controll of state legislatures. They determine the bag limit, the open season, the methods of taking, and all other details of management and control. The laws of the various states are by no means uniform. All sportsmen are agreed that migratory fowl, game birds, and game fish, should not be offered for sale. As long as there is a price on the heads of any of these, they are in danger of extinction.

#13.

Last year there were twenty-one states which permitted the sale of black bass.-America's premier game fish-described by Dr.James Henshall as "Inch for inch and pound for pound the gamest that swims". The blank bass is a smart fish, He can out smart the angler, his natural enemies, high water and low water, but he can not beat a 50 yard gill net or a haul seine. Think of how many times ten or twenty cents a pound the angler would gladly pay to catch mister bass on the end of a line.

One of the most alarming situations confronting the hunter at present is the scarcity of migratory fowl in certain parts of our country. This has been brought about largely by the lack of nesting,feeding,and resting places, caused bu extensive drainage projects. Much of the land drained has proved wonthless for farming, but because of the cost of drainage, it is impractical, to again flood the land with water. The only practical solution apparent at present is a series of refuges broadly distributed. Since the government can not afford them at present, the sportsmen are urgining that they be permitted to finance the projects by placing a one dollar stamp on the hunting lisence of every man who wishes to shoot migratory birds.

Education is a most potent factor in conservation. The public should be brought to a realization of its wildlife values. Poor sportsmanship is frequently due to lack of a real appreciation of these values. Forty years ago Cruft commons in the south central part of our city with hundreds of fine trees, was swarming the summer days throught with boys armed with sling shots seeking to try their skill on any song bird which they could spy. But now,thanks to the teaching of the common schools, you could not find one boy in five hundred who would harm any kind of a

bird unless it would be a "spatsy". Bird houses and bird baths are now plentiful and the antics of the birds at bath afford a lot of amusment for children.

Protective measures must have the support of the public to be effective/ A few game wardens can not effectively protect the whole out-of-doors.

America is ours only in trust and we should pass it along to posterity as good if not better than we found it.

1/8/34 149

HSH Paper #13

SHOULD OUR GIRLS BE EDUCATED FOR A HOME OR A JOB?

It has been my good fortune to be associated with you gentlemen in this men's literary club for some time, and I find myself in a class of no uncommon virtues or habits, just men among men. A man may be a lion in his profession, a lamb in society, yet a moral pervert at heart. With a race like ours, really a conglomeration of races so crossed in the breed of the fighter with the too-proud-flight, the practical thinker with the inventor, the highly figured with the home-maker, the radical with the conservative -- but this blending of traits tends to make a most lovable type of human being, a being built for endurance, progress, ingenuity, loyalty and success.

In obedience to my nature and to candid thoughts in my saner hours, I dare to stress the enduring animal nature that so closely parallels the same nature in man -- that of the opposite sex.

Man has been taught throughout the ages that woman is and has been the source of all that is pure, and all that inspires the heroic spirit of man. Anthony gave up a world for the love of a woman; Jaboc bartered his freedom for his beloved Rachael.

No great aspirations or desires entertained by man have long existed which are not directly related to the mother of his children, and the man who is not thus inspired is not worthy of his sires.

Presuming the above is true and that mother is the responsible factor of the enlightened age, is it not well that mother's education should reach farther than a mere business education in some spinster college?

Quoting from Frederick Osborn, Trustee of the American Museum of natural history, that New England home of the classic tradition, loses to the west, and Dixie with her numerous negroes and her millions of unschooled highlanders, the State of Washington stands first, California second, and Massachusetts third, is a distinct blow to the great college of Harvard. The Pacific coast get fourth place with Oregon, while Maine with the by-word of down east stands twenty-fifth, while the great state of New York with all the money-changers stands thirteenth in intelligence, and our own beloved state of Indiana, Hoosier in name and in spirit spells it with -- .25. The tests show that the higher the intelligence the smaller the families. It also shows that the tests are measures of sophistication rather than of inborn intellectual capacity.

The above report is self-explanatory inasmuch as it fully demonstrates that more attention has been given to the breeding of swine than the breeding of human beings.

In this comparison from the ridiculous to the sublime I refer you to the long snooted hog of primitive days, commonly called "Razor Back Hog", which was used for meat. The bristles from his back were used to supply the business end of the shoemaker's waxend. But the shoemaker is gone. Science has found that twice the amount of flesh can be furnished with the same amount of feeding by crossing the breed with an improved and more practical animal with more meat and fewer bristles. And so has gone the recrossing of the hog until the Razor Back is forgotten.

If the muse of history could awaken and see the gladiators made into money-changers, the political weaklings flirting with education, the advancement science has made on the hog and the pauperizing of the child, the question would likely be,"Why did you awake me?"

Only one of the old countries paid any attention to producing any semblance to a diplomat, and no attention was given to the education of mothers. Some fifty years ago Germany built up the most powerful fighting machine the world has ever known. This was the pride of that nation, to fight, to kill, destroy, captivate, to take from the weak something that did not belong to them. France, the home of the money-changers, from the time of the Rothchilds, the feminine style racket, ignorance among the peasants, was the rule, the right to live upon the poor prevailed. England was the only country that hinted on the subject of promoting a race to rule their country, and they should have credit for their efforts.

America has raised the hog, made automobiles, and promoted an educational system, led, owned, and ruled by politics until it is little more than a racket. Teachers with experience and credentials from a number of universities are compelled to take to common labor while the racketeering politican holds superintendancies of schools and draws the major salaries without the cintillo of a credential other than he or she is a member of the racket. And the educator sits silently by and says nothing for fear of his job.

I hear someone say, How about Lincoln, a diplomat without an education? There was Houston, a statesman with unequaled ability, and one can numberate many others in the primitive days that were uneducated and yet were substantial leaders. I submit with all the praise and compliments that any one can utter to my ancestors, but may I answer this by saying they lived in the "Razor Back" days. The bristles were in demand then, they were equal and perhaps advanced in their time, but what could these diplomats of yesterday do for us now? And could the educated man or woman then compare or cope with the advanced problems of today any more than the Razor Back hog would compare with the present porker?

If a change was to be made in the women colleges, who is to make them? Is it plausable that the present heads who happen to be old maids qualified to revise the marriage curriculum when she herself has neither chick, nor child, love nor passion? An attractive design of the choice of business or marriage should be constantly before the student in the women's college. A choice of a career is due the girl student as well as the male student.

The improvement of looks and grace of the student as well as the mind is an indispensible requisite for marriage, and until such facts are recognized in our women's colleges, the chances of the young girl being trapped into a sterile life will continue to increase.

Some kind of training for marriage is not only necessary to the happiness of the opposite sex but to the existence of the nation. We are sorely in need of diplomats ably educated to govern and lead the destiny of our country lest we be cheated by foreign diplomacy, and to get this race of religious, social and diplomatic leaders, educated minds of mothers and fathers must bring forth the students to be trained in the places selected for them.

The thought that a girl's honor is more safe in a woman's school is only proof of the lack of faith in your own honor. The old proverb, "Absence Makes the Heart Grow Fonder", was never more marked than in these cases.

Quoting from Dr. William Mayo just returning from Europe, we read: "The children should be more experienced in worldly affairs. The old secretive method is false and harmful and the new generation can teach the old generation. American colleges have twice the number of students that Great Britain has". Great Britain has approximately fifty thousand students while America has approximately a million students, -- but are we any more learned?

Yet I will not be surprised that my listeners deem this subject too delicate for my untrained pen, or that my nature and experience should be more gifted with knowledge of the subject, or that the subject has a tendency toward that of a lunatic fringe. While I may feel my inferiority complex in discussing this subject, I assure you of my sincerity by my many inferences of personal experiences.

I feel that my ground is well taken when I make the assertion that more attention has been given to the breeding of swine than the breeding of human beings, as to the improvement of the stock. So little has been done for the human being in comparison to that of the swine that there is little or no comparison; all is in favor of the swine.

Time has but little effect on the savage habits of the human race, as we still cling to the witchcraft belief that the survivor of the fittest is the high notch of civilization; the strong devour the weak; the rich live on the poor; the political bosses get the plums and the poor get the shovel; the religious aristocrat looks upon the ragged urchin entering the polished pew with horror.

When a girl goes to a woman's college she is not asked if she wants an education for a job or a home, but is put to thinking and studying on a course that terminates in what is expected of a spinster factory.

Our colleges today do not prepare girl students for life, but insist on an acute mentality and the goal is the art of thinking in some particular channel. The present day college is not absorbed in the problem of directing education toward the cultivation of a richer emotional life in the student.

The happiness of the nation, together with the Biblical teachings for the replenishing of the earth, is not a new subject but its discussion seems justifiable.

since education is the only road to replenishing the earth with human beings able to cope with the advanced stride of diplomacy, it would seem correct to start in our colleges to prepare the girl student for a definite hold on life rather than a job, as the intellectual disorder at the present is far more serious than our economic disorder.

The education acquired in our colleges is nothing short of a tragedy when all girls are educated for a job. The modern college is a factory for spinsters, as the anti-marriage nature of the educational process through which they pass deprives them to an extent of the opportunity to marry.

Our woman colleges and the training they offer contribute to the small number of college girl graduates ever marrying. The statistics show that a greater number of non-graduates or graduates from co-educational colleges are in excess of those of the graduates of woman's colleges.

From 1927 and five years following Bryn Maw reports 41% married,

Vasser for the same length of time 47% married,

Smith for the same length of time 46% married.

When taking the women as a whole in the nation at the age of 54, the percentage is 85.

It may be said in safety that because your mind is dressed up is no reason that your senses are not nude.

The strongest part of an educational program in the woman's college should be beauty, not only with the students but the teachers should teach from that base, so to speak. The writer is aware that many of our educated women are unattractive, and this can be directly laid to the door of their education, and this is what I mean by a dressed up mind with nude senses.

The inference of beauty does not necessarily mean a beautiful face with large blue or brown eyes and golden hair, but beauty taught that even the most homely can improve not only in dress but in culture, grace, personality, feminine patience and manners.

Again I hear myself challenged as to love. I stand corrected if anyone can convince me there is any other love than your own blood. Even the animal of the lowest type recognizes this. Why shouldn't man? The cat will move the kittens when in danger with her own physical strength until exhausted, but few nurses have ever been trained even to care for any human being as does the cat for her kittens.

In marriage there is the contract, duty, respect, affection, union, but mother's live is never equaled. No one else says to you, go where you will, do what you may, but come back to me. No one's son looks so well in your eyes as your son or daughter, if you are honest with yourself.

In these lines I may be accused of breaking all known laws of social ethics, but if we are to be led to believe that production is guided by the demand, then in this case the production should be an attractive inducement in beauty as well as brains.

Before the war a trip to Europe 3000 miles away was a luxury indeed, and only the rich could indulge. Then came the peak of prosperity and our marriageable girls were disappointed if mother and dad did not send them to Europe for their summer vacation to try to pick out a NO COUNT for a future husband, while at the same time they bade farewell to the shores of America, to blood that stands for America's principles that gave them birth. And why?

Let us ask the question, why do our rich girls rush to some foreign country and buy a husband, and even deny their birth and religion to pacify their mate's wishes? Only the rich can do this, and only the rich can send their girls to a GIRL'S COLLEGE. It is evident that these girls have not had the chance of a choice of the American blood, for if they had, it is evident that American blood would have prevailed, but some unknown influence has kept the segregation of sex in mind.

In what we might call the Dark Ages woman played her part, and that part was to produce a human being able to lead. To illustrate that men and women must be born and trained to lead, I ask your indulgence to refer to Abraham, as he seems the most outstanding character in biblical history, and as he was the spiritual thinker of not only the Jews but Christians also.

While I refer to the Dark Ages in the above, yet this period was not so dar as a remarkable material civilization in Egypt, Palestine, and Bablyon. As one of the pyramids had been built, the use of material, such as weights and measures and some textile fabrics, were known.

there were cities and fortresses, cornfields and vineyards, weapons of war, commerce and art, but with all this there had been a steady spiritual decline of religion, showing conclusively that men left alone with whatever truth they have received from their ancestors will deteriorate without other influences, such as the opposite sex born and educated with these leaders. One can only expect regrets.

Happiness, if I were to try to define it, is the greatest in those lives are devoted to the welfare and happiness of others. Personally, the greatest pleasures I receive is in the happiness I give to others, either family or friend.

I do not believe there is happiness in death. The poet has said that the man who dies on a bag of gold is no more happy than the man who dies on a pile of cobblestones. Quoting from Mathew 10:34, "He that findeth his Life shall lose it, and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it" -- inferring there may be happiness after death, but there is no mention of a happy death.

There is some assurance of the happiness of honest work. Some of our ancestors have assured the living of their faith and that they were happy of their work, but it closely reverts to the things done for the happiness of others.

The woman who objects to being a mother often places in the mind of the weakling husband the easy acceptable excuse that his income cannot afford a family, and that her services as a source of financial income is vitally necessary for their so-called standing in what they term society, is a betrayer of her sex.

The child for whom the universe was made is now a burden in a world of weakling males in this present advanced super-hetrodined feminine age when three rooms and a kitchenette is a symbol of the new pilot that waxes warm the animal passion of the once male fist that is now the keeper of the dog.

There seems to be no harmonious odor or relationship between a sweaty shirt and the delicate flavor of today's fairy female. There is no place in the childless home for any feature that tends to a shadow of a sacrifice on the part of the occupants. There is often only a selfish atmosphere, and idleness is always the father of crime.

The intelligence of the child is gauged by the A.B.C. blocks painted in bright coloers. The grown-up's intelligence is tested by the jig-saw puzzle, the particular breed of lap dog. The old saying is the grown-ups are only enlarged children at best.

The female dollar juggler, rich today and poor tomorrow, is no doubt the product of the haywired, hard-headed business man of yesterday. May I say here that the majority of the present business men are armed with only a gambler's faith in the kindness of chance. When money was plentiful and any kind of merchandise and the least of courtesy went, the growing up children were taught that each individual was to stand the highest in society, that give the least to humanity with the idea that money puts blue blood in your veins and culture in your breeding.

A casual glance is all that is necessary to comprehend when the dictorial powers is placed in unsafe hands that the prognosis will be hopeless. In the present age I compare man's place in life to the guiding spirit at a church wedding. The beautiful bride moves with the slow strain of the wedding march down the aisle, on the male arm that bids her well to meet at the altar the man of her choice, which is the afterthought of the audience. The bride is now, if never again, the feminine beauty of her race, the mate of man, complimented by her relatives and envied by her friends, as she is the rose of her own rosebud.

Written by.
K. L. Hoisington.

161

1/22/34

Paper # 14

1895 in Science.

Just as one might choose Bunker Hill as the date of the actual separation from the old world by the American colonies; or as the assassination of a minor noble on Serbian soil was the event which precipitated the World War; so also does the year 1895 mark a turning point, a transition of thought, a change of philosophy, a new attitude of approach in the fields of Science. To grasp fully the significance of this statement one must needs step back a few centuries and retrace the progress of scientific history. The rise and fall of various philosophies is quite evident throughout the sequence of past events in Science just as truly as in the political, social, military, religious, or any other set of traditions. But occasionally there appears in the permanent tracings of human progress a period, event, or individual so outstanding as to attract the attention of even the casual observer. And that the year 1895 marks such a revolutionary point I shall attempt to prove. The references to history are necessarily inter-related because such was the actual development, and hence many repetitions are inevitable in the following remarks.

The history of Science can be divided into five periods roughly as follows: the great philosophical period of the Grecian era; many centuries of little material progress during which the accepted theories of the Greeks were taught and pondered; the early modern period when theories were put to experimental test for the sake of pure science; the nineteenth century when the idea of applied science or engineering gained an undue ascendency over the pure scientific idea of experimental research; and the ultra-modern era which burst forth in

1895 and which is characterized by a spirit of modesty, of doubt, of a feeling of intellectual limitation which in turn gives rise to a freshness, an active curiosity, a childish excitement as a new problem is attacked. The sum total of these characteristics has advanced the world so rapidly that poor man, though breaking his neck in a headlong race to keep up, deplores the fact that he cannot enjoy all the pleasures afforded by Science in his short life span. At the same time he raves and rails at the same scientific advancements as the ogre that has taken away all his old time pleasures and contented, easy-going existence.

In the field of Physics, what were some of the old time theories prevalent during the Greacian period? Mechanics presented the problems of inertia, motion, falling bodies, light and sight, color, and terrestrial magnetism. Some explanations gleaned from written records of this period are absurd in the light of later determinations but, on the other hand, many of these abstract thinkers brought forth theories that live today among our accepted laws of nature. The idea that the process of seeing was by the reaching out from the eye with little feelers,or antennae as it were, because the sense of touch was such a process wherein the hands reached out and felt the object, seems absurd now, as does the other two-way theory wherein particles from the object were supposed to travel ~~from~~ to the eye simultaneously with the flow from the eye of a stream of different particles. Yet it is in this very same field of light that we have today two major theories and a multitude of compromises. Our study of light since the days of Galileo and the birth of experimental science has brought forth many theories as tantalizing as those developed in the unrestrained imaginings of the ancient metaphysicists and philosophers. On the other hand, Archimeded Principle of buoyancy, that a body is held up

when immersed in a fluid, by a measurable force, is accepted today in its entirety as is also the principle of the lever. And the ancient sayings about atomicity though based upon a false method of reasoning are in exact agreement as far as they go with our present theory of matter. The alchemist's dream of the production of gold is being realized today on a laboratory scale but not as he dreamed it. Earth, air, fire, and water were the first elements named and postulated as the constituents of the universe. To this list others were added from time to time and eventually a Table of Elements was brought forth which served as a good memory aid for the workers in the field of chemistry. Aristotle collected, analyzed, and recorded, for the guidance, both fortunate and unfortunate, of posterity most of the known matter in all fields of human achievement up to his time. This set of writings then became the backbone of all teaching for centuries and little new material was added during that time in science except perhaps in light. Then when Galileo contradicted Aristotle and proved that bodies fall at the same rate regardless of their size by dropping objects from the leaning tower of Pisa, we see the beginning of modern experimental science. Those questions which could be tested experimentally were soon answered by finding a theory to fit observed facts. Thus up until the end of the eighteenth century we see the reconstruction of the foundations of science upon the basis of a few accepted and experimentally proved and easily repeated laws. This exactness of results led naturally to an egotistical self sufficient attitude on the part of the scientists. The cart got ahead of the horse as it were, and by the end of the nineteenth century the idea was prevalent that since man could set up an experiment and prophesy exactly how it was going to behave, apparently man was making the experiment eventuate as expected. Because man could state with certainty that

in a given case the application of heat would result in a rise of temperature, evidently the temperature rose because the man willed it. In other words it was but a short step to the mechanistic determinism which held sway for about a hundred years. Machinery was developed to a degree marvelous to behold. And by 1880 the spirit prevalent among scientists was that all had been discovered, all laws had been proved, and that future scientists would be born to the unfortunate task of monotonously measuring the next decimal place with no new worlds to conquer. The anasthetizing effect of this attitude of complacency would be difficult to imagine had there been time for the machinery of progress to get into the rut. But the self-satisfaction was short lived. The discovery of Photoelectricity in 1887 rather stirred the scientific mentality in an attempt to arrange a mechanistic explanation that would fit in with the laws that were known to be irrevocable. Discharges of electricity through gases was a very pretty and perfectly understood phenomenanthat occupied the lecturers in science. The laws of Dalton, Avagadro, Charles, Boyle, etc.,predetermined beyond all shadow of a doubt all processes in chemistry. Then something began to happen. Roentgen, a lecturer in Physics, was having trouble with his pet hobby, amateur photography. And when in 1895 he saw on a developed plate the outline of an object he had never photographed, scientific complacency was a thing of the past. Those who had been sure that they knew it all were the first to state that they knew apparently nothing with certainty concerning nature and nature's laws. Within a year Becquerel found that certain ores gave off mysterious penetrating , forms of radiant energy. In 1897 J. J. Thompson discovered the electron and by the time Planck came forth with his quantum theory in 1900 the whole scientific world was in an uproar. It was learned early that Roentgen rays or X-Rays are generated any time fast moving electrons impinge upon any substance. The quality

of these radiations seemed to bear some relation to the position of the element comprising the target in the periodic table. New explanations of old phenomena were developed as rapidly as was the discovery of entirely new results. The wave theory of light of Huyghens which had almost entirely replaced the corpuscular thatry of Newton was ably expanded by Lau, the Braggs, and others to include the phenomenon of Roentgen Rays. This in turn brought out more vividly Photo-electricity further research on which yielded data that could not be explained by the wave theory. This led to the postulation by Planck of the Quantum Theory which is that radiant energy travels in streams of small discrete bundles called Quanta. And we have again thrown into bold releif the conflicting theories of radiation which had been so satisfactorily disposed of before 1895/

Let us consider the field of Chemistry. Oxidation, fire, burning, the consumption by flame, has been a topic of interest since man first inhabited the earth. And rightly so when one considers the marvelous transformations that take place before his eyes due to this phenomenon. Light is given out and hence the astronomical observations of all ages seem to involve fire. But more particularly the creation of ash and smoke with the destruction of the familiar form of the object burned brought out many conjectures. The natural trend of theory was toward a scheme of atomicity. This means that the natural sequence of thought would lead the thinker to the idea that the original body must have been a more or less complicated aggregation of smaller somethings. The first attempt that we have in recorded history, to tabulate these somethings was the ancient Greek idea that all matter was composed of one or more of the four elements; earth, air, fire, and water, mentioned before. For centuries this list persisted until in comparatively recent times it was increased

by the discovery of Oxygen and a few other definite constituents and it became necessary for Prout to make a table of all the elements then known to science. This early tabulation was used merely as a convenient accessory by workers in the field of chemistry and its real value was not fully appreciated. Then about a hundred years ago Mendelejeff remade the table adding the new elements but more importantly, designing a format that would show by column and line the relative activity, weight, valence, and other properties of these elements. No law was attempted to explain the regularities of the table because the exceptions were too important and undeniable to permit the postulation of a law. As the nineteenth century wore on the desire of scientists to prove that all the known atoms were but multiples of Hydrogen led Stas and others to very laboriously and meticulously determine the atomic weight of Chlorine. By atomic weight is meant the definite combining weight with which chlorine enters into chemical combinations based upon oxygen as 16 or hydrogen as one. The conclusion was discouraging because chlorine persisted in showing a weight of 39.55. The effect of this proof was to set up many altercations as to the cause of the failure of the element to behave according to law and show an atomic weight which was an exact number of times that of hydrogen. The spirit of the scientific mind was again evident in placing the mind of the scientist ahead of nature as the ruling factor.

Incomparison with this general method of approach let us consider the attitude that has led to our present ideas of atomic weights. After 1895 the chemists approached all problems with the feeling that anything might happen as a result of a given method of investigation and that if a desired result was not attained it was due to the fact that the desire was not in keeping with the fundamental laws of nature rather than that the object of the research was obstinate

in not following the law set up in advance by the questioner. The results of this new method of approach are so many in number and so far reaching in application that transition must be accepted with gratitude. Today when a Bohr sets up a model of the atom he presents it and the rest of the scientific world accepts it merely as a working h theory to be used for the good it can give and discarded or amended when the results of research, humbly attempted and conscientiously pursued, show that the model is no longer tenable.

In electricity we can trace a similar long, slow, but worthy progress with a marked change in recent times. The hampering influence was always the attempt to make experiment agree with theory and law.... This is the natural consequence of a scientific method that pictured man as the controlling cause of it all rather that as a mere observer. The magnetic effect of a current flowing along or through a conductor was harnessed in the electric dynamo and this instrument in turn was so well developed and applied to pleasure and industry during the nineteenth century that all thoughts of electricity itself were relegated to the background as unnecessary or assumed to be known. Application went on however until the point was reached where electrical engineering needed a further knowledge, or rather an initial knowledge, of electricity, its cause, nature, and possibilities. Incidentally it was while the physicists were working along this line that they became interested in discharges through gases, which by their spectacular nature were studied with fervor by Roentgen and his contemporaries. As light is the medium of observation here as elsewhere again the theories of that phenomenon come into the problem. If light travels as a stream of particles as Newton stated then all objects in the path of a stream of light should cast sharp shadows. Many of the observed phenomena of light could indeed be explained according to this theory. But how

about a well known observation that anyone has made or can make? A candle in a room can be seen through the window by looking in a direct line from the darkened outside. But if one looks toward the window at such an angle that the candle can not be seen directly the outline of the window will be seen as though it were the source of light coming to the observer. This is entirely in agreement with the principle propounded by Huyghens, that light is a wave phenomenon wherein some medium is set into vibration by a disturber and as these waves so produced travel away from the source, any wave front or locus of points in the same phase of vibration can be considered as a new set of sources and the subsequent progress of the phenomenon can be referred to that wave front as the point of origin. Now in this discharge of electricity through gases the accepted wave disturbance, emitted light, is evidently caused by a stream of finite physical particles in motion. This stream of particles in turn can generate Roentgen Rays when striking a target and these X-Rays are as stated before a type of wave motion similar to light. Rather disturbing to any nineteenth century fixity of ideas, to say the least. But electrically these experiments did show the nature of electricity. That which gives rise to magnetic effect is a stream of moving electrons, or negative electrical units.

Then the electrical nature of matter was the next natural step. The Bohr atom, a model named after one man but equally as much the work of many of his contemporaries, gives a picture that is electrical in nature. The atom of Hydrogen is supposed to be made up of a small, heavy, positively charged neucleus holding electrostatically a larger, much lighter, negative electron at a definite distance, this electron occupying either a definite position in space or revolving around the neucleus in an ever changing orbit with a constant radius.

The atoms then in Mendelejeff's Table with their ascending values of atomic weight, are merely more an ~~more~~ less complex combinations of these two units the positive proton and the negative electron. The outside grouping of electrons determines the chemical behavior. The number of protons in the neucleus gives the atomic weight. And radioactivity is explained by assuming that an extremely large atom became uncontrollable and collapsed to a simpler configuration. The entire plan reduces our theory of atomicity to even a simpler group than the four elements of the Greeks, for we now have but two, the proton and the electron. Then the unit multiple idea of atomic sequence ought to hold and it was through the direct but tedious experimentation of Aston and Harkins that this was proved ~~this~~ by finding the existence of isotopes. Isotopes or elements with exactly the same chemical properties but differing in the construction of their neuclei, do have atomic weights that are expressible in whole numbers and hence might be multiples of hydrogen. But then hydrogen shows upon most careful determination an atomic weight not exactly unity. However the scientist in keeping with his modern spirit accepts this variation of hydrogen and proceeds to interrogate it for reasons. And in the last year it has been found by similar methods that hydrogen has isotopes and after all maybe the unit idea will win out. If it doesn't we shall not attempt to force it though as might have been done previous to 1895. Today instead of two or three facts that were shown by the ordinal position of the elements on Mendeljeff's table there are some sixty different characteristics of each element easily expressible by putting the element into its proper periodic station.

We might go on through other fields of science with similar portrayals of the marked changed attitude evident about 1895. I shall action briefly however only one more point of note. It was in the

...r 1895 that Wallace c. Sabine at Harvard made the first practical ...terminations in the field of architectural acoustics. And if ...re is one thing that has marked this comparatively new science it ...s the open mindedness with which research has been carried out. ...re are none of the old inhibitions inherited from the previous eras ...r the simple reason that the science was not developed during that time.

Science then has left ~~xxxxxx~~ in the memories of its childhood ...e effort to adhere to laws of natural phenomena postulated upon the ...gument that they ought to be so. It has passed through the growing ...ains of materialism when it was forced to follow certain axioms because they must be so. It has emerged now into that age when discretion and an humble desire for truth advises the adoption of only those precepts for which free, open-minded investigation has produced the proofs. When a question arises today we ask nature for the answer and abide by the ~~xxxxxx~~ reply received. This is not as easy as it sounds but anything less is not only useless but dangerous. We have among our real scientists in all fields a happy combination of theory and experiment. And this spirit which I think permeates the social as well as the physical sciences, has given to the twentieth century a mode of approach to a problem, to life's problems if you will, which is certain to produce wholesome results. Though far from perfect the "ultra-modern" attitude will I think prove a great improvement over puritanical, intolerant, egotistical approach of the past. And since ...e mind of man needs definite fixed points of contact, an anchor as it were ~~xxxix~~ to serve while casting about in the mental calm or storm, I ...ave chosen the year 1895 as symbolic of the change over to this new ...rn. Certainly with the discovery of X-Rays in 1895 the scientific ...ind experienced a definite change and might that change not have affected ...dern life in general?.

Daniel L. Harmon

1/29/34
Paper #15

# Interesting Stories of a Thousand Years Ago

by F.H. Weng

I sometimes teach a course in Medieval Latin, and I thought this club might be interested in having me translate from the text-book I use, Beeson-" A Primer of Medieval Latin ", some of the more striking stories and historical selections. These will give us glimpses into the thinking of the Middle Ages. People then were still quite naive. Science as we know it today had not yet been born. The lawsof nature were still in the realm of mystery. So astrology flourished, but astronomy was still a closed book. Philosophy was more concerned about the question of how many angels could stand on a pin-point than about principles of conduct that might improve the status of their social living. Education was at a low ebb. The feudal system being in vogue, there were lords and vassals but no middle class of citizens. The little learning there was, was kept alive in some of the monasteries.

The people were credulous,ready to believe anything anybody told them. So history became interwoven with legend. This was especially true in the case of Alexander the Great and his teacher Aristotle and in later times of Charlemagne. Alexander's dramatic expedition into India and the marvels of that strange land appealed to the imagination of the medieval world, and so we find an Alexander Romance which was familiar to people in every part of western Europe. A part of this Romance is a letter which Alexander is supposed to have written to his teacher Aristotle from India. I shall translate a part of it that you may see how simple and naive is the thought of the writer and how reverential toward

wealth and display of riches:

" In the month of May after we conquered Darius, the Persian king, near the river Granicus, we subjugated all of his land and placed noble and honored men in command of the provinces. We ourselves were enriched with great wealth. And that this fact may always be remembered, it seems proper that I write to you about the huge size of the enemy's army, in which there were besides the infrantry, 14,500 chariots-- all equipped with scythes, 400 elephants-- all with towers on their backs in which armed men stood and fought. We also seized the king's city and his royal palace, in which were 400 golden columns with golden capitals, and the walls of this palace were covered with gold foil which was as thick as a man's thumb. There also hung suspended between columns of gold golden vines with golden leaves and with clusters of crystal which had fiery gems and emeralds scattered among them. The individual rooms were adorned with pearls and carbuncles. They had doors of white ivory and paneled ceilings of ebony, a black wood found in India and Africa. In front of the palace there were golden statues and golden trees on which were perched birds of various colors which had gilded talons and beaks and from their ears (sic) hung pearls--in some instances large single pearls, in other cases clusters of small pearls."

This description of the Persian king's palace reminds one of the new Jerusalem as described in Revelations with its streets of gold,etc.. A resplendent and gorgeous ideal, but scarcely a place in which we would care to live on bright sunshiny days throughout all eternity. But gold and precious stones and pearls

appeal to the poor who can't have them, and so we can imagine with what eagerness the destitute populace of the Middle Ages read of the fabulous wealth that Alexander found in the East.

The letter goes on to tell how Alexander pressed on through unknown parts of India and how he found there " trees with leaves like wool which people of that locality gather and make into clothing for themselves." Evidently cotton was not very well known by the writer or he would not have referred to it as growing on trees. As the army advanced farther inland, the soldiers suffered terribly from thirst. This gives the writer another chance to enumerate the beasts in Alexander's army at the time. He quotes him as saying: " I had with me 1000 elephants, which carried the gold,.and 400 scythed chariots each drawn by four horses, and 1200 other chariots drawn by two horses each. Many of these elephants and horses had golden bits. " ( page 32 )

Soon Alexander comes to a large river where he has an unusual experience, which I'll let him tell in his own words: " Then I ordered two hundred of my Macedonian soldiers to swim across this river with light arms. They were already one fourth of the way over, when suddenly a strange sight alarmed us. We saw hippopatamuses larger than elephants come up out of the deep. There before our very eyes we saw these hippopotamuses devour those Macedonians whom I had sent to swim across the river. In anger therefore, I ordered one hundred of the guides who were leading us through these places to be thrown into the river. Then the hippopotamuses came forth like ants and devoured all of them. So for fear we might have to fight with these hippopotamuses

at night, I ordered our camp to be moved. "

Another letter from the Alexander Romance describes two remarkable inventions. This letter was found in Constantinople in 944 by Leo, the arch-priest of Naples. It was said to have been written originally in Greek in about the third century and it reads as follows:

" From there we came to the Red Sea. There was a very high mountain there. We ascended this and it was as if we were in heaven. With my friends I planned a clever device by which I might ascend to the sky to see if this were heaven. I prepared a contrivance in which I could sit and then I caught two griffins and tied them with chains. Then I tied poles on their backs and on the ends of these poles I put some food for the animals. In their attempt to get this they began to ascend heavenwards. There the divine presence overshadowing them, trust them back to the earth. We landed on a plain a ten days' journey from my army, but I was uninjured in my iron grating. I had ascended to such a height that the earth looked like a field beneath me while the sea looked like a dragon encircling this. After much difficulty I was reunited with my soldiers, who greeted me with praises.

" Now the desire came upon me to explore the depths of the sea. I called in astrologers and mathematicians, and I directed them to construct for me a vessel in which I would be able to descend to the bottom of the sea and study the remarkable animals that live there. They said that this could not be done unless we constructed a glass jar and bound this with chains and had very strong soldiers to manipulate it. I immediately ordered the con-

trivance to be made,and so I reached the bottom of the sea. There I saw fish of various shapes and colors. I also saw other beasts resembling those on land--four-footed animals walking on the bottom of the sea. They would come up close to me and then flee. I saw there also other wonderful things which I can not relate. Farewell, beloved mother. " ( pages 34-35 )

We see in these letters the childish simplicity of the Medieval mind. Were they read as fact or fiction? I don't know, but I am inclined to think that they were generally believed to recount facts. Different versions of the Alexander Romance are found in thirty languages, Beeson says, so they must have been quite popular.

We find that fables were often used in the Middle Ages, but the moral derived from them was generally quite different from what it had been with the Greeks and Romans, among whom the fables arose. They were generally used in sermons by the priests and so were given a religious bent. As these morals throw considerable light on the religious beliefs of the times when the devil was a reality, I shall translate some of them.

The Tortoise and the Eagle. A tortoise which dived in low, wet places asked an eagle to carry it high up into the air, because it wanted to see the mountains and the hills and the groves. The eagle consented and carried the tortoise high up into the air and said to him: "Now you see things which you have never seen before." The tortoise answered: " Indeed I do, but I should prefer to be in my hole." So the eagle let him fall, and he was crushed to pieces.

176

Mystical Interpretation. Thus it sometimes happens that someone living in a humble house desires to ascend on high on the wings of the wind and to fly. He asks the eagle; that is, the devil that he take him up in some way or the other. He undertakes the job and grants those things by which the poor man may ascend, and so through simony he ascends to high standing. It is thus that the devil carries him up. But when he reflects upon his position, he realizes that it is dangerous and he would prefer to be back in his humble home rather than to be on this dangerous eminence. But the devil hurls him into sudden death, into the pit of Hell where he is entirely crushed. Hence the proverb:

" When a stupid man climbs on dangerous wings,
He falls from his ladder into dreadful things. " (page 42)

They must have had shyster lawyers even in the Middle Ages as the following fable shows:

Reynard the Fox and the Cat. A fox, whose name was Reynard, met Joberto, the cat, and Reynard asked her: " Tell me, how many tricks do you know? " The cat replied that she knew only one. " And what is that? "asked the fox.

" When dogs chase me, I climb up a tree and so escape them." She then asked the fox,"How many tricks do you know?"

" I know eighteen and have a sackfull besides. Come with me and I'll show you some of my tricks. When you learn these, you will never need to fear the dogs. "

As they were walking along together, behold some hunters with a pack of hounds came up behind them.

The cat said,"I hear dogs,and I'm afraid."

" Don't be afraid,"answered the fox.

As the hounds approached nearer, the cat said,"I'm not going to follow you any farther; I'm going to use my trick." And so she

escaped by climbing a tree. But the hounds closed in on the fox and finally captured him. The cat, sitting on a high limb, from where she could see everything that was going on, shouted to the fox:"Reynard, open your bag, for now is the time when you need it. Evidently, all your tricks are of ~~knew~~ no use to you now."

Mystical Interpretation. By the cat, we are to understand the simple folk who know only one trick, namely to invoke God in prayer and to climb the tree of the cross of Christ in faith, and thus they are freed from the dogs; that is, the enemies of the human race. By Reynard,however, are designated the fraudulent lawyers and attorneys who know eighteen tricks and have a sack full besides. Finally, the hunters come out of Hell, and with their hounds they pursue them and tear them to pieces. Then the just man may say to them:"Open your sack,etc." ( pages 43-44 )

The Antelope. There is a certain animal called the antelope. This likes to play in the bramble bushes with its horns, but after its horns get caught in the bushes so that it cannot pull them out, it then begins to utter a cry. Hearing this, the hunters come and kill it.

Mystical Interpretation. So it generally happens that the people who play with, and take delight in the affairs of this world are so ensnared by them that they cannot pull themselves out,and so they are captured and killed by the hunters; that is, by the devils.

The next fable teaches a good moral, but I am not sure that biologists of today would admit the facts stated about the animal. It's the fable of the panther.

178

The panther is an animal which emits a certain sweet odor so that fierce animals,such as the lion, the wolf, and the leopard, wishing to injure it, become gentle and do not molest it when they smell its sweet odor.

Mystical Interpretation. So there are certain people so kind in word and deed that even their enemies, hearing their gentle words, become well disposed toward them, put aside their anger and hatred, and even love them. Therefore,,Solomon says in his proverbs: " A soft answer turneth away wrath;but greyious words stir up anger. " And again:" A pleasant word is above the best gift."

Some of you may not know why Jesus ever came down from Heaven and took on the flesh and blood of man. The following fable explains it in the Medieval way.

The Water-serpent. There is a certain animal, called the waterserpent, whose nature it is to wallow in the mud so that it may slide over the ground more easily. When it finds a crocodile asleep, it sleeps into its mouth, and so entering its stomach, it bites its heart and the crocodile dies.

Mystical Interpretation. The water-serpent signifies the Son of God who took on the mud of our flesh in order that he might glide more easily into the mouth of the devil and biting so entering his stomach and biting his heart, He kills him.

The fable ends here, but evidently the devil must have come to life again, because he plays a very prominent part in the religious literature of the Middle Ages, which comprises by far the greater part of their writings.

The panther is an animal which emits a certain sweet odor so that fierce animals,such as the lion, the wolf, and the leopard, wishing to injure it, become gentle and do not molest it when they smell its sweet odor.

Mystical Interpretation. So there are certain people so kind in word and deed that even their enemies, hearing their gentle words, become well disposed toward them, put aside their anger and hatred, and even love them. Therefore,,Solomon says in his proverbs: " A soft answer turneth away wrath;but greyious words stir up anger. " And again:" A pleasant word is above the best gift."

Some of you may not know why Jesus ever came down from Heaven and took on the flesh and blood of man. The following fable explains it in the Medieval way.

The Water-serpent. There is a certain animal, called the waterserpent, whose nature it is to wallow in the mud so that it may slide over the ground more easily. When it finds a crocodile asleep, it sleeps into its mouth, and so entering its stomach, it bites its heart and the crocodile dies.

Mystical Interpretation. The water-serpent signifies the Son of God who took on the mud of our flesh in order that he might glide more easily into the mouth of the devil and ~~biting~~ so entering his stomach and biting his heart, He kills him.

The fable ends here, but evidently the devil must have come to life again, because he plays a very prominent part in the religious literature of the Middle Ages, which comprises by far the greater part of their writings.

Several of the stories which were appended to sermons deal with the foibles of women, especially their quarrelsomeness. One tells how the devil in human guise hired himself out to a certain rich man, whom he served so faithfully that the latter presented him with great wealth and the hand of his daughter. But she quarreled with her husband day and night and gave him no rest, so at the end of the first year he went to his father-in-law and told him he wanted to return to his native country.

" And where is your native country?asked the father.
" I'
" I'll tell you the truth;" replied the young husband, " my native country is Hell, where I never suffered so much annoyance as I have this past year with my quarrelsome wife. I prefer to be in Hell rather than to live with her any longer! " And with these words, he vanished from their eyes.
( page 53 )

Here is another story in similar vein, although it is introduced by a statement that leads one to believe that the story will criticize the men: " Behold how few men cling to their wives in fidelity and love, as was ordained by our Lord Jesus Christ who is blessed for ever and ever. Amen.

" Now I wish to add something about the wickedness of the daughters of Eve,which I heard concerning a young man who asked his father to give him two wives. When the youth persisted in his request, his father gave him one, promising that he would give him another at the close of the year. But the one made her young husband so downcast by the end of the year that

he could not stand it any longer and preferred to die rather than to live thus any longer. When the father asked his son at the end of the year if he now wanted a second wife, he replied: " If one has afflicted me nigh unto death, how could I endure two? " Now it happened in that city that a cruel robber was captured who had robbed and killed several prominent men. When the citizens stood around the judges'bench, and the judge asked them to suggest a plan whereby this robber might be punished most severely, one said, " Let him be tied to horses pulling in the opposite direction and so be torn limb from limb"; another said, " Let him be burned with fire"; and still others advised that he be skinned alive.But when the judge asked the young man who had the wicked wife, he replied: " Give him my wife; I can't imagine how you could torture him more.#

But not all the preachers' stories were like these. Some were quite edifying. Many were given an allegorical meaning, as for example,the story of the three caskets. A certain princess was betrothed to the Emperor's son, but one day the Emperor called the girl to his palace and said to her; "Beloved daughter, blessings upon you now and forevermore. But I must tell you that before you can marry my son you must pass a certain test. " He then had three caskets brought in. The first was made of pure gold and precious stones,and it contained this inscription: " Whoever opens me will find in me whatever he deserves. " The second casket was made of pure silver, all studded with gems and precious stones. It contained this inscription: " Whoever chooses me will

II.

find in me what nature has given." The third casket was made of lead and contained this inscription: " I chhose rather to be and to rest here than to remain among the treasures of a king." In this casket there were three precious rings.

Then the Emperor said to the girl: "Most beloved, here are three caskets; choose whichever you wish, and if you choose well, you shall obtain my son in wedlock." She then examined the threecaskets carefully and said in hereheart: "May God, who sees all things, grant me favor in choosing that for which I have striven so earnestly." She touched the first casket and read its inscription. "The outside of the casket is precious," she thought,"but I do not Know what lies within; therefore I will not choose it." Then she read the second and said, "Nature has never granted that the daughter of my father should be entitled to be united with the son of the Emperor." When she had read the third inscription, she said: "It is better for me to rest with the son of a king than amid the treasures of my father." And with a loud voice she exclaimed: "I choose the third casket!" When the Emperor heard this,he said: "Good maiden, you have chosen wisely. In that casket there are three precious rings--one for me,one for my son, and the third for you as an emblem of your betrothal." Imediately, he ordered the wedding ceremony to be performed and handed over his son to her and so they lived in peace the rest of their lives.

Moral Interpretation. By the first casket we are to understand the powerful and rich people, who have this inscription: " Whoever chooses me will find in me what he deserves."i.e., when

182

my soul is separated from my body, God will find in me nothing except the sins which I have committed. Woe to him who chooses this. By the second casket, we are to understand the worldly wise people whose eloquence shines like silver, but within they are filled with dirt. Nature always seeks that which is harmful to the soul, and people with these tendencies are never married to Christ. By the third casket, the good Christians are designated, who are lead, because they do not care for anything that is worldly. In them, there are three rings;viz., faith,hope, and charity. He who chooses them may have the Son of God rather than to remain among the treasures of the world.

Mr. Mullins, who used to be a membervof our the faculty,and who is now in the State Department of Education, tells a mule story that some of you have heard and which always makes a great hit. We find the prototype of this story in one of the oldest books of the Middle Ages. I shall translate the entire story.

Concerning the Slave Maimund. A certain youth asked an old man, "What shall I do when I am invited to dinner? Shall I eat a little or a greatdeal?" To which the old man replied,"A great deal,since if he who invites you is your friend,he will be pleased; but if he is your enemy, he will be grieved." Hearing this, the youth laughed, and when the old man asked him why he was laughing, he said, "I am reminded of a story of the negro Maimund. When a man asked him how much he could eat,he asked in turn,"Of whose dinner,yours ormine? If mine, a very little; if yours, a great deal" Then the old man said that this story reminds him of another story about that lazy,stupid,good-for-nothing

fellow. His master told him one night to close the door, but he was too lazy and didn't want to get up, so he said that the door was closed. Then in the morning when his master told him to open the door, Maimund answered, "Master, I knew that you would want the door open today, so I didn't close it last night."

"Get up then and do your work, for it is daylight now, and the sun is already high up."

"If the sun is high up, Master, give me my breakfast."

To which the master replied;"You good-for-nothing slave, do you want your breakfast when it is still night?"

"If it is night , let me sleep," was the slaves come-back.

At another time, the master said to the slave at night, "Maimund, get up and see if it is raining or not."

But he called the dog which was lying outside the door, and when he came to him, he patted his feet. Finding them dry, he said to his master:"Master, it is not raining."

At another time the master asked him whether there was any fire in the house. So he called the cat and felt of her to see whether she was warm or not. And when he found that she was cold, he said,"No, Master, there is none."

The young man said:"You have told me about his laziness, now I should like to hear about his deception."

The old man then told the following story:

"One day his master was coming home from the city, feeling happy, because he had had several profitable business transactions. Maimund met him on the way. When his master saw him, he was afraid that the slave would have some hard luck story or other as

usual, so he said to him: "Now don't tell me any bad news."

"I'm not going to tell you any bad news but our poor little Bispella is dead."

"How did she come to die?"

"Our mule was frightened and broke his halter, and while he was running away, he crushed the dog under his feet."

"How did the mule become frightened?"

"Your son fell off the balcony and was killed and that frightened the mule."

"Well, how is my wife?"

"She died of grief for your son."

"Who is guarding the house?"

"No one, because it and everything that was in it have burned to ashes."

"How did it catch fire?"

"The same night that your wife died, the maid who was sitting up forgot the candle she had lighted in the bedroom, and this set fire to the curtain, and so the whole house burned down."

"But where is the maid now?"

"She was trying to put out the fire,and a beam fell on her head and killed her,"said Maimund.

"Well, how did you escape,seeing that you are so lazy?"

"When I saw that the maid was killed, I fled." ( pages 88-89

....

Gregory the Great, who was Pope from 590 to 604, "was a man of curious contrasts: highly educated, yet an enemy of classical culture; a practical far-sighted statesman, yet a child of his times in his interest in the miraculous." ( page130 ) He wrote a

number of stories, which he called Dialogues, and which were very popular during the Middle Ages. They contain much of the miraculous and stuperstitious element that is so prevalent in Medieval tales, as the following story from this book shows:

"What I am about to relate took place in the province of Valeria, and it was told to me by my Abbott Valentio of blessed memory. A certain venerable priest resided there, who led a consecrated life, devoted to the praise of Good and to good works. When he died, he was buried in front of his church. There was a sheep-fold adjacent to the church, and this place where the priest was buried had to be passed through by anyone going to the sheep. Now on a certain night while the clerics were in the church singing psalms, a thief came, entered the sheep-fold, and carried off a wether (a castrated ram). But when he came to the place where the priest lay buried, he suddenly stopped and could not move a foot. He brought down the wether from his shoulders and was going to let him go, but he was unable to loose his hands. So the wretch stood there with his booty, guilty and frozen to the spot. He wanted to let the wether go, but could not; he wanted to go away with the wether, but could not. And so in a marvelous manner, the thief, who had feared to be seen by the living, was held by a dead man. Then, when morning came and the praises of God were ended the strange clerics came out of the church and found the stranger holding a wether in his hands. At first, they were in doubt whether he was taking away or bringing the wether, but the culprit quickly told them the punishment he was suffering for his guilt. All were astonished that the thief who had entered upon their

premises was standing there fastened to his booty by the power of the dead man of God. They at once offered prayers for him, and even by their earnest prayers they were hardly able to bring it about that he who had come to steal their property might be permitted to go away empty handed. And so,the thief who had stood captive for a long time holding his booty at last departed empty handed and free. " ( pages I33-I34 )

Gregory was a pious man and conscientous in carrying out the duties of the Papacy, as he understood them. He was bigoted and narrow-minded in certain respects, but we should blame that to the age in which he lived rathar than than to him as a person. He did many excellent things for the Church, and it was he who established the Papacy firmly in Rome. But his zeal for the honor of the Church carried him to extremes that seem rather incongruous today, as the following letter to Desiderius, Bishop of Gaul, shows:

" When the many good reports came to us about your zealous services, such joy sprang up in our hearts that we could not refrain from acknowledging the merits you deseved, dear brother. But later it was reported to us that you were expounding secular literature to certain people, a thing that we can not mention without a sense of shame. We were so annoyed by this report, and we felt so scorned that the words of praise we had previously uttered are turned into sorrow and sadness, because one mouth can not utter the praises of Christ and the praises of Jupiter. And we pray that you yourself consider how serious and unspeakable it is for a bishop to chant things which are not even permitted to the lay members of the Church.( praises of Jupiter ) And although our beloved son,the priest Candidus, when he came to Rome and was

questioned about these matters, denied them and tried to make excuses for you; still up to the present time, the question has not left our minds whether the facts in the case ought not to be learned with strict and undoubted satisfaction, since it is so detestable for this to be told about such a prominent bishop. Therefore, if hereafter it becomes clear that those reports that have been brought to us are not true, and if it is established as a fact that you are not devoting yourself to trifles and to secular literature, we shall give thanks to God, who did not permit your heart to be stained with blasphemous praises of sinful men, and then being without worry or doubt in the matter we shall consider the granting of the things you request. And now we commend to you in all matters the monks whom we are sending together with our beloved son, Laurentius, the priest, and Mellitus, the abbot, to our most reverend brother Augustine, the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. See that you help them in all respects as a brother and that nothing shall cause them to delay their departure. " ( pages I35-I36 )

The last sentence refers to a very important historical event for the religious life of the English people; namely, the first band of Christian missionaries to visit the island. So it will be fitting for me to translate from the Historia Ecclesiastica Gentis Angelorum of the Venerable Bede (73I), who is called the "father of English history", the story of how Christianity came to Britain:

"It is said that on a certain day after several traders had arrived (in Rome), many people, among others, Gregory, gathered to see the many things men offered for sale. Among other things there were offered boys of fair complexion and charming faces and lovely hair. When Gregory saw them, he asked where they came

from, and it was told him that they were brought from the island of Britain, and that the people there had the same appearance ~~ap-~~ pearance as these boys. He then asked ~~where~~ whether the people from this island were Christians or pagans. The reply was that they were pagans. Then with a sigh he said: "Alas, that the prince of darkness should have in his possession people so fair on the outside but so lacking in internal grace." When he asked what was the name of the tribe, he was told that the people were called Angli (Angles) "Well named,"he said,"for they have an angelic face, and such as these must be the coheirs of the angels in heaven. What is the name of the province from which they have come?" And when he was told that the provincials were called Deirá, he again said,"They are well named Deirá, for they shall be snatched de ira (from wrath) and entrusted to the mercy of Christ. What is the name of the king of that province?" The reply was Aelli. Then playing on the name, he said:"Alleluia, the praise of God, the creator of the world, shall be sung in those places."

It was not long after this experience that Gegory was elected Pope, and one of his first acts was to send a band of missionaries under St. Augustine to the island. It was to this group that the reference in the preceding letter referred. These were the first missionaries to work among the Anglo-Saxons, and so to them under the leadership of St. Augustine and to Pope Gregory the Great goes the honor of converting the early Anglo-Saxons to the Christian religion. This was about the year 600, shortly after the arrival of the Angles and the Saxons in Britain and fully two centuries before their German kinsmen on the mainland were converted to Christianity.

189

As superstition is one of the characteristics of many of the stories of the Middle Ages, I shall close my selection with one from the History of the Lombards, written by Paulus Diocanus, one of the group of scholars that Charlemagne had drawn to his court. It was written about 787, and it belongs to Teutonic mythology.

The Seven Sleepers. In the extreme north east part of Germany on the shore of the ocean, a cave is to be seen under a prominent rock where seven men have lain in sleep for unknown ages with their bodies and even their clothing unimpaired. These are held in great veneration from the fact that throughout all these cycles of years they have persisted without decay. Judging from their clothing, it is evident that theyare Romans. Once a stupid fellow, goaded on by greed, tried to strip one of these sleepers and directly his arms withered. This punishment so terrified the rest that no one since that time has ever dared to touch them. It is evident that divine providence has been preserving them throughout these centuries. Perhaps those tribes are to be saved someday by the preaching of those men, for it is generally believed that they are Christians.

The subject of this paper promised you some interesting stories of a thousand years ago. They should then have dated back to the year 934. Every story and historical event that I have presented was written previous to that time date. So I havevstuck to my subject in so far as time is concerned. Whether the stories were interesting will depend largely upon your attitude toward Medieval life. I hope,at least, that you have not found them boring.

Jan. 29, 1934

BLANK PAGE

BLANK PAGE

# Interesting Stories of a Thousand Years Ago

by F.H. Weng

I sometimes teach a course in Medieval Latin, and I thought the club might be interested in having me translate from the text-book I use, Beeson-" A Primer of Medieval Latin ", some of the more striking stories and historical selections. These will give us glimpses into the thinking of the Middle Ages. People then were still quite naive. Science as we know it today had not yet been born. The laws of nature were still in the realm of mystery. So astrology flourished, but astronomy was still a closed book. Philosophy was more concerned about the question of how many angels could stand on a pin-point than about principles of conduct that might improve the status of their social living. Education was at a low ebb. The feudal system being in vogue, there were lords and vassals but no middle class of citizens. The little learning there was, was kept alive in some of the monasteries.

The people were credulous, ready to believe anything anybody told them. So history became interwoven with legend. This was especially true in the case of Alexander the Great and his teacher Aristotle and in later times of Charlemagne. Alexander's dramatic expedition into India and the marvels of that strange land appealed to the imagination of the medieval world, and so we find an Alexander romance which was familiar to people in every part of Western Europe. A part of this romance is a letter which Alexander is supposed to have written to his teacher Aristotle from India. I shall translate a part of it that you may see how simple and naive is the thought of the writer and how far removed it all is toward

...display of riches:

...the month of May after we conquered Darius, the Per-
..., near the river Granicus, we subjugated all of his land
...noble and honored men in command of the provinces. We
...were enriched with great wealth. And that this fact may
...remembered, it seems proper that I write to you about
...size of the enemy's army, in which there were besides
..., 14,000 chariots-- all equipped with scythes, [illegible]
...-- all with towers on their backs in which three men
... fought. We also seized the king's city, and the royal
..., in which were 400 golden columns with golden capitals,
... of this palace were covered with gold foil which
... which is a man's thumb. There also hung suspended between
... of gold golden vines with golden leaves and with clusters
... which had fine gems and emeralds set among them.
... royal rooms were adorned with carpets and draperies. The
... of white ivory and paneled ceilings of [illegible], a sight
... in India and Africa. In front of the palace there were
... golden trees in which were perching birds of
... which had glazed talons and beaks and [illegible]
... size) ..., carpets--in some which both ... especially ...
... statues of small people."

... Pericles ... Persia ... [illegible]
... [illegible] ... [illegible]
... [illegible] ... [illegible]
... [illegible] ... [illegible]

...poor who can't have them, and so ... mass the destitute populace of the Middle A... fabulous wealth that Alexander found in the East.

... goes on to tell how Alexander crossed the ... of India and how he found it to be "trees with leaves ... people of that locality gather and make into ... themselves." Evidently cotton was not very well ... writer or he would not have referred to it as wool-... As the army advanced farther inland, the soldiers ... from thirst. This gives the writer another ... the beasts in Alexander's army at this time. ... as follows: " I saw with me 1000 elephants, which ... gold, and 400 scythed chariots often drawn by four ..., and 1,000 other chariots drawn by two horses each. Then ... elephants and horses that fell in the fights. " ( page ... Alexander comes to a large river where he has an en-... armies, which I'll let him tell in his own words: ... ordered two hundred of my speediest soldiers to swim ... river with light arms. We were closely set forth ... when suddenly a strange sight showed to us. We saw ... a river then elephants come up out of the ... river out very close to us these hippopotamuses before ... which I had sent to swim across the river. In ..., I ordered on a horse of the guides two more ... with those plans to be thrown into the river. ... hippopotamuses came forth like unto and were full of ... that we might have to fight with these hippopotamuses

...t, I ordered our camp to be moved."

...nother letter from the Alexander Romance describes ... inventions. This letter was found in Constantinople ... Leo, the arch-priest of Naples. It was said to have ...itten originally in Greek in about the third cent...y and ... as follows:

From there we came to the Red Sea. There was a very high ...tain there. We ascended this and it was as if we were in ... With my friends I planned a clever device by which I ... ascend to the sky to see if this were heaven. I prepared ...trivance in which I could sit and then I caught two griffins ... them with chains. Then I tied poles on their backs and ... ends of these poles I put some food for the animals. In ... attempt to get this they began to ascend heavenwards. There ... divine presence overshadowing them I trust them back to the ... We landed on a plain ten days' journey from my ..., ... uninjured in my iron ...ing. I had ascended to such ... that the earth looked like a field beneath me while ... looked like a dragon encircling this. After much difficulty ... reunited with my soldiers, who greeted me with praises.

"Now the desire came upon me to explore the depths of the ... called in astrologers and mathematicians, and I directed ... construct for me a vessel in which I would be able to ... to the bottom of the sea and study the ... animals there. They said that this could not be done unless we ... constructed a glass jar and bound this ... chains and had very ... skilful to manipulate it. I immediately ordered the con-

196

... not to be made, and so I reached the bottom of the sea. ... I saw fish of various shapes and colors. I also saw other ... resembling those on land--four-footed animals walking ... bottom of the sea. They would come up close to me and ... flee. I saw there also other wonderful things which I can ... relate. Farewell, beloved mother. " ( pages 34-35 )

We see in these letters the childish simplicity of the ... mind. Were they read as fact or fiction? I don't know, ... I am inclined to think that they were generally believed to ... be facts. Different versions of the Alexander Romance are ... in thirty languages, Beeson says, so they must have been ... popular.

We find that fables were often used in the Middle Ages, ... the moral derived from them was generally quite different ... from what it had been with the Greeks and Romans, among whom ... fables arose. They were generally used in sermons by the ... monks and so were given a religious bent. As these morals ... cast considerable light on the religious beliefs of the times ... when the devil was a reality, I shall translate some of them.

The Tortoise and the Eagle. A tortoise which dived in ... , at places asked an eagle to carry it high up into the ..., because it wanted to see the mountains and the hills and ... valleys. The eagle consented and carried the tortoise high ... into the air and said to him: "Now you see things which you ... never seen before." The tortoise answered: " Indeed I do, ... should prefer to be in my hole." So the eagle let him fall, ... as crushed to pieces.

...ual Interpretation. Thus it sometimes happens that ... in a humble house desires to ascend on high on the ... of the wind and to fly. He asks the eagle; that is, the devil ... to take him up in some way or the other. He undertakes the ... grants those things by which the poor man may ascend, and ...rough simony he ascends to high standing. It is thus that ... devil carries him up. But when he reflects upon his position, he realizes that it is dangerous and he would prefer to be back in his humble home rather than to be on this dangerous eminence. ...t the devil hurls him into sudden death, into the pit of Hell ...re he is entirely crushed. Hence the proverb:

" When a stupid man climbs on dangerous wings,
He falls from his ladder into dreadful things. " (page 42)

They must have had shyster lawyers even in the Middle Ages ...s the following fable shows:

Reynard the Fox and the Cat. A fox, whose name was Reynard, ...t Roberto, the cat, and Reynard asked her: " Tell me, how many ...icks do you know? " The cat replied that she knew only one. " ...t is that? "asked the fox.

" When dogs chase me, I climb up a tree and so escape them."

... ...n asked the fox,"How many tricks do you know?"

" I know eighteen and have a sackfull besides. Come with me ... I'll show you some of my tricks. When you learn these, you ... never need to fear the dogs. "

...s they were walking along together, behold some hunters ... pack of hounds came up behind them.

...e cat said,"I hear dogs,and I'm afraid."

" Don't be afraid,"answered the fox.

... the hounds approached nearer, the cat said,"I'm not goin... ...ou in, farther; I'm going to use my trick." And so she

... by climbing a tree. But the hounds closed in on the fox ... finally captured him. The cat, sitting on a high limb, from ... where she could see everything that was going on, shouted to ... the fox:"Reynard, open your bag, for now is the time when you ... need it. Evidently, all your tricks are of no use to you now."

Mystical Interpretation. By the cat, we are to understand ... the folk who know only one trick, namely to invoke God in ... order to climb the tree of the cross of Christ in faith, ... that they are freed from the dogs; that is, the enemies of ... our race. By Reynard,however, are designated the fraud-... ulent lawyers and attorneys who know eighteen tricks and have a ... few besides. Finally, the hunters come out of Hell, and ... with their hounds they pursue them and tear them to pieces. ... Then the just man may say to them:"Open your sack,etc." ( pages ... )

The Antelope. There is a certain animal called the ante-... lope which likes to play in the bramble bushes with its horns, ... but after its horns get caught in the bushes so that it cannot ... get them out, it then begins to utter a cry. Hearing this, the ... hunters come and kill it.

Mystical Interpretation. So it generally happens that the ... men who play with, and take delight in the affairs of this ... world are so ensnared by them that they cannot pull themselves ... out, and so they are captured and killed by the hunters; that is, ... by the devils.

The next fable teaches a good moral, but I am not sure that ... skeptics of today would admit the facts stated about the animal. ... Such is the fable of the panther.

The panther is an animal which emits a certain sweet odor ... fierce animals,such as the lion, the wolf, and the ...rd, wishing to injure it, become gentle and do not molest ... when they smell its sweet odor.

...stical Interpretation. So there are certain people so ...ind in word and deed that even their enemies, hearing their ...ntle words, become well disposed toward them, put aside their ...ger and hatred, and even love them. Therefore,,Solomon says ...s proverbs: " A soft answer turneth away wrath;but greyious ...ds stir up anger. " And again:" A pleasant word is above the ...st gift."

Some of you may not know why Jesus ever came down from ...aven and took on the flesh and blood of man. The following ...ble explains it in the Medieval way.

The Water-serpent. There is a certain animal, called the ...terserpent, whose nature it is to wallow in the mud so that it ... slide over the ground more easily. When it finds a crocodile ...sleep, it sleeps into its mouth, and so entering its stomach, ... bites its heart and the crocodile dies.

...stical Interpretation. The water-serpent signifies the ...on of God who took on the mud of our flesh in order that he ...ght slide more easily into the mouth of the devil and ~~biting~~ ...so entering his stomach and biting his heart, He kills him.

The fable ends here, but evidently the devil must have come ...to life again, because he plays a very prominent part in the ...religious literature of the Middle Ages, which comprises by far ...the greater part of their writings.

Several of the stories which were appended to sermons deal with the foibles of women, especially their quarrelsomeness. One tells how the devil in human guise hired himself out to a certain rich man, whom he served so faithfully that the latter presented him with great wealth and the hand of his daughter. But she quarreled with her husband day and night and gave him no rest, so at the end of the first year he went to his father-in-law and told him he wanted to return to his native country.

" And where is your native country?asked the father.
" I'
" I'll tell you the truth;" replied the young husband, " My native country is Hell, where I never suffered so much annoyance as I have this past year with my quarrelsome wife. I prefer to be in Hell rather than to live with her any longer! " And with these words, he vanished from their eyes. ( Page 86 )

Here is another story in similar vein, although it is introduced by a statement that leads one to believe that the author will criticize the men: " Behold how few men cling to their wives in fidelity and love, as was ordained by our Lord Jesus Christ who is blessed for ever and ever. Amen.

" Now I wish to add something about the wickedness of the daughters of Eve,which I heard concerning a young man who asked his father to give him two wives. When the youth persisted in his request, his father gave him one, promising that he would give him another at the close of the year. But the one made the young husband so downcast by the end of the year that

he could not stand it any longer and preferred to die rather ...n to live thus any longer. When the father asked his son at the end of the year if he now wanted a second wife, he replied: " If one has afflicted me nigh unto death, how could I endure two? " Now it happened in that city that a cruel robber was captured who had robbed and killed several prominent men. When the citizens stood around the judges'bench, and the judge asked them to suggest a plan whereby this robber might be punished ...t ...vely, one said, " Let him be tied to horses pulling ... the opposite direction and so be torn limb from limb"; ...ther said, " Let him be burned with fire"; and still others ...ed that he be skinned alive,But when the judge asked the ... ... who had the wicked wife, he replied: " Give him to ... I can't imagine how you could torture him more."

... not all the preachers' stories were like these. Some ... edifying. Many were given an allegorical meaning, as ... example,the story of the three caskets. A certain princess ... betrothed to the Emperor's son, but one day the Emperor ...ed the girl to his palace and said to her; "Beloved daughter, ... look upon you now and forevermore. But I must tell you that ... you can marry my son you must pass a certain test. " He ... had three caskets brought in. The first was made of pure ... precious stones,and it contained this inscription: " Who ... he will find in me whatever he deserves. " The second ... was made of pure silver, all studded with gems and precious ... it contained this inscription: " Whoever chooses me will

...e what nature has given." The third casket was made ... and contained this inscription: " I choose rather to ... to rest here than to remain among the treasures of a ... ." In this casket there were three precious rings.

...en the Emperor said to the girl: "Most beloved, here ... three caskets; choose whichever you wish, and if you choose ..., you shall obtain my son in wedlock." She then examined the ... caskets carefully and said in hereheart: "My God, who sees ... hings, grant me favor in choosing that for which I have ... so earnestly." She touched the first casket and read its ...ription. "The outside of the casket is precious," she ...t, but I do not Know what lies within; therefore I will ...ose it." Then she read the second and said, "Nature has ... ranted that the daughter of ~~my~~ father should be entitled to be united ... the son of the Emperor." When she had read the third in- ...ion, she said: "It is better for me to rest with the son ... than amid the treasures of my father." And with a loud ... exclaimed: "I choose the third casket!" When the Emp- ... ard this,he said: "Good maiden, you have chosen well. ... casket there are three precious rings--one for me, the ..., and the third for you as an emblem of your betrothal." ..., he prepared the wedding ceremony to be performed ... over his son to her and so they lived in peace the ... their lives.

Moral interpretation. By the first casket we are to understand powerful and rich people, who have this inscription: ... chooses me will find in me what he deserves."i.e., "Whoever

IL.

...ted from ... , God will ... in ... partly ...
... which I have committed. Woe to him who ...
... sword unsheat, We die to ... the ... hilt;
... eloquence shines like silver, but wit is ...
... dart. Nature ... that ... is ...
..., ... people with those ... are ...
... third basket, the ... are most ...
... are loud, because they do not ... for ...
... in them, there are three ...; viz., faith, hope, and
... He who chooses them may have the son of God rather than
... among the treasures of the world.

... Mullins, who used to be a member of our the faculty, and
... in the State Department of Education, tells a tale
... that some of you have heard and which always takes a
... We find the prototype of this story in one of the
... of the Middle Ages. I shall translate for the ...

... entitled the Slave Mahmud. A ...
... What shall I do when I am ... of a great city" Mahmud ...
... have it be the ... is ...
... and in your ... will

...s master told him one night to close the door, but he
... lazy and didn't want to get up, so he said that the
... closed. Then in the morning when his master told him
... door, Haimund answered, "Master, I knew that you
... the door open today, so I didn't close it last night."
... up soon and do your work, for it is daylight now, the
... already high up."
... sun is high up, Master, give me my breakfast."
... which the master replied;"You good-for-nothing slave, do
... your breakfast when it is still night?"
... it is night , let me sleep," was the slaves come-back.
... another time, the master said to the slave at night,
... , get up and see if it is raining or not."
... he called the dog which was lying outside the door, and
... came to him, he patted his feet. Finding them dry, he
... his master:"Master, it is not raining."
... another time the master asked him whether there was any
... the house. So he called the cat and felt of her to see
... she was warm or not. And when he found that she was cold,
... ,"No, master, there is none."
... young man said:"You have told me about his ... ness, now
... and hear about his deception."
... old man then told the following story:
... day his master was coming home from the city, feeling
... because he had had several profitable business transact-
... met him on the way. When his master saw him, he was
... that the slave would have some hard luck story or other as

...., so he said to him: "Now don't tell me any bad news.

I'm not going to tell you any bad news but our poor little

... is dead."

... did she come to die?"

"The mule was frightened and broke his halter, and while

... running away, he crushed the dog under his feet."

... did the mule become frightened?"

"Your son fell off the balcony and was killed and that

... the mule."

"Well, how is my wife?"

"She died of grief for your son."

"Who is guarding the house?"

"No one, because it and everything that was in it have burned

... ...s."

"... did it catch fire?"

"The same night that your wife died, the maid who was sitting

... the candle she had lighted in the bedroom, and this set

... to the curtain, and so the whole house burned down."

"But where is the maid now?"

"She was trying to put out the fire,and a beam fell on her

... killed her,"said Maimund.

Well, how did you escape,seeing that you are so lazy?"

When I saw that the maid was killed, I fled." ( pages 88-89

....

...egory the Great, who was Pope from 590 to 604, "was a rich

... contrasts: highly educated, yet an enemy of classical

...; a practical far-sighted statesman, yet a child of his

... his interest in the miraculous." ( page190 ) He wrote a

...of stories, which he called Dialogues, and which were ...popular during the Middle Ages. They contain much of the ...ous and superstitious element that is so prevalent in ...al tales, as the following story from this book shows:

What I am about to relate took place in the province of ..., and it was told to me by my Abbott Valentio of blessed ... A certain venerable priest resided there, who led a consecrated life, devoted to the praise of Good and to good works. ...died, he was buried in front of his church. There was a ...-fold adjacent to the church, and this place where the priest ...ried had to be passed through by anyone going to the sheep. ...a certain night while the clerics were in the church sing- ..., a thief came, entered the sheep-fold, and carried off a ... (a castrated ram). But when he came to the place where the ... buried, he suddenly stopped and could not move a foot. ...ught down the wether from his shoulders and was going to ... go, but he was unable to loose his hands. So the wretch ... there with his booty, guilty and frozen to the spot. He ...ed to let the wether go, but could not; he wanted to go away ... the wether, but could not. And so in a marvelous manner, the ..., who had feared to be seen by the living, was held by a ... Then, when morning came and the praises of God were ended ...clerics came out of the church and found the stranger ... wether in his hands. At first, they were in doubt ... he was taking away or bringing the wether, but the culprit ... told them the punishment he was suffering for his guilt. ... astonished that the thief who had entered upon their

... standing there fastened to his booty by the power ... the dead man of God. They at once offered prayers for him, ... their earnest prayers they were hardly able to bring ... about that he who had come to steal their property might be ... able to go away empty handed. And so,the thief who had ... captive for a long time holding his booty at last departed ... handed and free. " ( pages 133-134 )

Gregory was a pious man and conscientious in carrying out ... duties of the Papacy, as he understood them. He was bigoted ... narrow-minded in certain respects, but we should blame that ... the age in which he lived rather than than to him as a person ... did many excellent things for the Church, and it was he who ... established the Papacy firmly in Rome. But his zeal for the honor ... the Church carried him to extremes that seem rather incon- ... today, as the following letter to Desiderius, Bishop of ... al, shows:

" When the many good reports came to us about your zealous ... virtues, such joy sprang up in our hearts that we could not re- ... frain from acknowledging the merits you deseved, dear brother. ... But it was reported to us that you were expounding secular ... matters to certain people, a thing that we can not mention ... without sense of shame. We were so annoyed by this report, and ... were so scorned that the words of praise we had previously ... were turned into sorrow and sadness, because one mouth can ... utter the praises of Christ and the praises of Jupiter. ... and that you yourself consider how serious and unspeakable it ... is for a bishop to chant things which are not even permitted to the ... laymen of the Church.( praises of Jupiter ) And although our ... son,the priest Candidus, when he came to Rome and was

...bout these matters, denied them and tried to make ... for you; still up to the present time, the question ... our minds whether the facts in the case ought not ... with strict and undoubted satisfaction, since it ... for this to be told about such a prominent bish- ... before, if hereafter it becomes clear that those reports ... been brought to us are not true, and if it is estab- ... as a fact that you are not devoting yourself to trifles ... secular literature, we shall give thanks to God, who did ... your heart to be stained with blasphemous praises of ... men, and then being without worry or doubt in the matter ... consider the granting of the things you request. And ... commend to you in all matters the monks whom we are send- ... together with our beloved son, Laurentius, the priest, and ...ilius, the abbot, to our most reverend brother Augustine, the ...-bishop of Canterbury. See that you help them in all respects ... brother and that nothing shall cause them to delay their de- ...re. " ( pages 135-136 )

The last sentence refers to a very important historical ... for the religious life of the English people; namely, the ... band of Christian missionaries to visit the island. So it ... fitting for me to translate from the Historia Eccles- ... Gentis Angelorum of the Venerable Bede (731), who is calle ... the "Father of English history", the story of how Christianity ... to Britain:

"It is said that on a certain day after several traders had ... (in Rome), many people, among others, Gregory, gathered ... the many things men offered for sale. Among other things ... were offered boys of fair complexion and charming faces ...ely hair. When Gregory saw them, he asked where they came

...., and it was told him that they were brought from the island of Britain, and that the people there had the same appearance ~~ap-~~ pearance as these boys. He then asked ~~where~~ whether the people from this island were Christians or pagans. The reply was that they were pagans. Then with a sigh he said: "Alas, that the prince of darkness should have in his possession people so fair on the outside but so lacking in internal grace." When he asked what was the name of the tribe, he was told that the people were called Angli (Angles) "Well named,"he said,"for they have an angelic face, and such as these must be the coheirs of the angels in heaven. What is the name of the province from which they have come?" And when he was told that the provincials were called Deirè, he again said, "They are well named Deirè, for they shall be snatched de ira (from wrath) and entrusted to the mercy of Christ. What is the name of the king of that province?" The reply was Aelli. Then playing on the name, he said:"Alleluia, the praise of God the creator of the world shall be sung in those places."

It was not long after this experience that Gegory was elected Pope, and one of his first acts was to send a band of missionaries under St. Augustine to the island. It was to this end that the reference in the preceding letter referred. These were the first missionaries to work among the Anglo-Saxons, and to them under the leadership of St. Augustine and to Pope Gregory the Great goes the honor of converting the early Anglo-Saxons to the Christian religion. This was about the year 600, more than a century after the arrival of the Angles and the Saxons in Britain and nearly two centuries before their German kinsmen on the mainland were converted to Christianemity.

...superstition is one of the characteristics of many of ... of the Middle Ages, I shall close my selection with ... the History of the Lombards, written by Paulus Dio-..., one of the group of scholars that Charlemagne had drawn ... court. It was written about 787, and it belongs to Teu-...ic mythology.

The Seven Sleepers. In the extreme north eeeet part of ...ny on the shore of the ocean, a cave is to be seen under ...nt rock where seven men have lain in sleep for unknown ... their bodies and even their clothing unimpaired. These ... great veneration from the fact that throughout all ... of years they have persisted without decay. Judging ... clothing, it is evident that they are Romans. Once a ... fellow, goaded on by greed, tried to strip one of these ... directly his arms withered. This punishment so ter-...rent that no one since that time has ever dared to ...... It is evident that divine providence has been pre-... them throughout those centuries. Perhaps those tribes ... be saved someday by the preaching of those men, for it ... fully believed that they are Christians.

... subject of this paper promised you some interesting ... of a thousand years ago. They should then have dated ... the year 934. Every story and historical event that I ...esented was written previous to that ~~time~~ date. So I ...ect to my subject in so far as time is concerned. Whether ... were interesting will depend largely upon your ... toward Medieval life. I hope, at least, that you have not ... them boring.

Paper #16

# WITH SCOTT IN THE BORDERS

Read Before

Terre Haute Literary Club

February 5, 1934

By

Edwin N. Canine

# WITH SCOTT IN THE BORDERS

I suppose it is the inalienable right of an adolescent boy to admire a beautiful woman and to worship his outstanding hero. He, no doubt, does and certainly should reverse the process in his late teens or early twenties and keep it up the rest of his life. What boy of twelve to sixteen has not read the story of Mary, Queen of Scotts with the greatest admiration for her beauty and her wit. Certainly his life is not complete if he has failed to read Jane Porter's Scottish Chiefs. William Wallace and Robert Bruce were real heroes to him in those earlier days, even though the ruthless historian may later have torn away the mask from the life and motives of Bruce. Bannockburn became a shrine at which he worshipped long and fervently.

Somewhere in our early schooling we were taught to repeat with all the ardor of a campaign spellbinder:

"Breathes there a man with soul so dead
Who never to himself hath said,
This is my own, my native land?
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burned,
As home his footsteps he hath turned
From wandering on a foreign strand?"

Thus, said the Minstrel, in Canto VI, when asked why he sang of Scotland when the southern country (England) would have rewarded him so much more liberally.

Then again we may have imagined ourselves to have been a Booth on the real stage, as we declaimed:

"And Douglas, more I tell thee here,
- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -
I tell thee, thou'rt defied!
And if thou saids't I am not peer,
To any lord in Scotland here,
Lowland or highland, far or near,
Lord Angus, thou hast lied?"

Then another would-be Thespian's reply in the words of Douglas:

"Darest thou, then,
To beard the lion in his den,
The Douglas in his hall,
And hopest thou unscathed to go?"

This, you will remember as a part of the heated conversation between Marmion and Lord Angus, the latter being deemed lukewarm in the Scottish cause and so was left to protect the women and children. Striking spurs to his horse, Marmion dashed away just as the drawbridge was raised. Shortly afterward, we heard him repeating this old saying which was written on the blackboards of all the little red school houses a few generations ago:

"Oh what a tangled web we weave
When first we practice to deceive."

We may have known little and thought less of Scott or his poem Marmion when we, at least those of us who were McGuffeyites, learned to read and to enjoy these lines from Lochinvar:

"Oh! young Lochinvar is come out of the west,
Through all the wide Border, his steed is the best.
And save his good broadsword he weapons had none,
He rode all unarmed and he rode all alone,
So faithful in love and so dauntless in war,
There never was knight like the young Lochinvar.

* * *

"There was mounting 'mong Graemes of the Netherby Clan;
Foresters, Fenwicks, and Musgraves, they rode and they ran;
There was racing and chasing, on Cannobie Lee,
But the lost bride of Netherby ne'er did they see.
So daring in love, and so dauntless in war,
Have ye e'er heard of a gallant, like young Lochinvar?"

We possibly read some of the Tales of a Grandfather in extracts printed in our readers, if not from the complete story. Written for Scott's own grandchildren, these tales appealed to children.

I suspect that there are a few in my audience who remember when we were required to write a "review" of some novel as a part of our examination for a teacher's license. My first one was "Ivanhoe". And so we, like Scott himself, turned, temporarily at least, from poetry to novels.

Thus, Sir Walter Scott was no stranger to us in our younger days. I never attended high school and the novels of Scott did not come largely into my early boyhood reading. If, however, these novels are only for the young, I must confess that I am retaining my youth rather better than could be reasonably expected. Or it may be just that reversion to childhood of which some unkind souls talk. For the truth is I like to read Scott fully as much as I did in my earlier days. Of course, I know better now how to do a "judicious amount of skipping", as Dr. Samuel Bannister Harding used to tell me to do in reading the sermons of St. Chrysostom.

From what I have already said, I am sure you will understand that I have at no time studied or even read Scott extensively. I could not, therefore, qualify as a critic of this noted writer's works. No more would I have you think that I deem myself an authority on Scott's country just because it was my privilege to spend a fortnight in Edinburgh and its envirous. My brief excursion into the Rob Roy and Lady of the Lake country; my wonderings up and down High Street and the Cannongate from Castle to Palace; and a real joy ride into the Tweed valley to visit Abbottsford, Melrose, and Dryburgh, served only to show me how very little I knew of Scott and his people. At Keswick, while on a hill looking down on Lake Derwent water, I heard a young man and woman reading the Lady of the Lake. Possibly they had just visited Ellen's Isle and had driven through the Trossachs. I was on my way, and realized then and there that one should just take time, as did that couple, to enjoy the places visited, through recall of earlier reading.

The main results of it all were that I left Scotland determined to know more of the Scottish people and of their National hero, Sir Walter Scott. This interest was heightened perhaps because my mother was a McCord and Mrs. Canine's grandfather Connacher was born in Scotland. For more than a week, from our room in the Royal Hotel facing Princess Street, we looked out on the Scott monument, almost across the street from us. I realized that I must either become young again and know more

2/5

of Scott, or else know more of Scott in order to become younger at least. I have read or reread many of his poems and perhaps one third of his novels. I have read recently much of what has been written about Scott and the land he loved and served so well. As the result of it all, you are listening to this school boy essay about Sir Walter Scott and his Border haunts. If I could pass on to you only a very small part of the pleasure I have had in renewing my acquaintance with this Scottish genius, and in revisiting in imagination some of the lovely regions in which he had such great delight, I would feel amply repaid for the effort.

Bibliography

A detailed listing of a Scott bibliography would take many pages. In his preface to his book on Sir Walter Scott, Andrew Lang says there would be no need for his or other similar writings if all readers had the time and inclination to read the voluminous work of Scott's son-in-law, Lockhart. "All other books are but its (Lockhart's) satelites, and their glow, be it brighter or fainter, is a borrowed radiance." Lang, as well as others, has tried mainly just to condense these volumes for the ordinary reader. Being one of those ordinary readers, I have depended much more on Lange, Crockett, Canning, Hudson, and Buchan, than I have on the original source.

The Borders

In his introduction to a child's edition of Rob Roy, Wm. T. Harris says: "The Southern boundary of Scotland is a borderland settled on the south by the fiercest population of England, and on the north by a still fiercer population of Scotch. The most restless part of a nation's people drifts to the frontier". Back and forth across this border line came and went these belligerent people. To escape punishment for crimes committed, an Englishman fled into Scotland, only to have his place in England taken by a Scotchman in like difficulties with his

Scottish neighbours. It was this southern portion of Scotland along the valleys of the Tweed, the Yarrow, and the Ettrick that was commonly called the Borders. This, too, was the region known as the Scott country. Here "He lived and moved and had his being in a land of Romance", says Crockett. This border was the stage on which the most important conflicts between two nations were played out.

But Dr. Harris said further that Scotland was a country of many border lands. First was the English-Scottish border just discussed. Then there was that border land between the lowlands and the highlands of Scotland. Here we have the Anglo-Saxon pitted against the Celt. With this region, Scott became almost as familiar as with his beloved Tweedale and Ettrickshire. Here were found the main scenes of The Lady of the Lake, Rob Roy, Waverly, The Lord of the Isles, and many other novels and poems. There was also the border between the western shore and the Celtic inhabited islands along that shore. From these islands came the hero of The Lord of the Isles, a descriptive-narrative poem of the victory at Bannockburn and the preceding events.

Then there were the two spiritual borderlands, according to Dr. Harris, whom some of us remember quite well as a frequent visitor and speaker at the State Normal back in the '80's and '90's. First there was the borderland between the British constitutional form of government, and the Scottish absolute monarchical theory. Second, there was that great difference between the Catholic highlands and the Protestant lowlands. About these political and religious questions revolved much of Scotland's national life. About the events growing out of these differences, Sir Walter wove many a story and wrote volumes of historic fiction. He knew the common story of his people and how to tell it to common people. Marion Wright Mabie says of these stories--"For Scotland lives in the stories of her great romances as she lives in no work of history. What has happened to her may be read elsewhere; what has happened in her must be read in the Waverley

novels and in the poems by the same hand." He may not have had the finesse of some writers, but he had more to tell and told it more interestingly. He had a rich store of Scottish history and legends and never forgot them. For him there was no need of a card index. He was a child of the Border and was nourished by it.

Already I begin to wander. My title might well limit me to that Border along the English boundary. Dr. Harris kindly releases me and permits me to wander with Scott into other fields. Though Scott visited and knew other lands, he was not the world traveler as was his later fellow writer, Robert Louis Stevenson, also born in Edinburgh. Kenilworth, Ivanhoe, ~~Quentin Durward~~ and the Talisman were stories of other lands; but it was Scotland he loved and of which he sang---"This is my own, my native land".

History and Geography

I know full well how easy it is to forget the details of geography and history. In order that you may follow a little more easily, may I recall for you a few geographical and historical facts? Scotland, including the Hebrides islands on the west, the Orkneys and Shetlands on the northeast, is not quite so large as Indiana, having an area of 30,405 square miles. To the north, we have the more or less barren Highlands; between the Firth of Clyde and the Firth of Forth are the Lowlands, a very densely populated portion of the country; the Uplands consist of the hills and fertile valleys to the south, and make up what we call the Borders. Let the map tell the rest of the story.

We may be comparatively brief as to her history. Near the close of the 13th century, when the Scottish succession was in dispute, Edward I of England made the decision and established an English suzerainty. Then came the beginning of Scotland's alliance with France. At Sterling, in 1297, Wallace defeated Edward, only to lose at Falkirk a year later. You may remember that he was imprisoned at

Dumbarton, and finally beheaded at London. Wallace stands out as a real hero. He was never a turncoat as Bruce is said to have been. Then in 1314 Robert Bruce, at Bannockburn, overcame the second Edward. Bruce had served both for and against Edward I. Long says: "the intricacies of his perfidy are deplorable." We all remember the story of the sending of Bruce's heart toward the Holy Land. It was returned, however, and interred at Dryburgh.

With Robert II came the founding of the house of Stuart. Robert III is immortalized by Shakespeare in Henry IV and by Scott in the Fair Maid of Perth. Under these two kings, Scottish national life descended into the depths to be revived somewhat by James I. James IV married Margaret Tudor, daughter of Henry VII; thus providing for future Stuart Kings of England. It was this James IV, who at Flodden Field in 1513 suffered defeat by the forces of his brotherinlaw, Henry VIII of England. Henry V, son of James IV and Margaret Tudor, came squarely to the question--Shall Scotland ally herself with Catholic France or Protestant England? Was she to break with Rome or to cling to Rome? Cardinal Beaton, by opposing Henry VIII, made Presbyterian Calvanism possible in Scotland. Some one has said that Beaton sacrificed Roman Catholicism to prevent Henry Popism.

The unfortunate Mary, upon the death of her royal French husband, returned to find Scotland in political and religious turmoil. Her imprisonment, escape, defeat, and flight to England are vividly portrayed in The Abbot. Her son, James VI, became James I of England, uniting the two thrones. The story of Charles I, his overthrow by Cromwell, the restoration of Charles II, the revolution under James II, resulting in the enthronement of Wm. and Mary, are probably events fairly familiar to all of us. Out of these political and religious upheavals came numerous poems and novels from the hand and brain of Scott.

Hamilton Wright Mabie says:--"As a boy and youth, Scott became first familiar and

then intimate with the country and the history of Scotland". "He came of the right stock. The blood of romancers was in his veins. - - - - Kinsmen of the Campbells, the McDonalds, the Rutherfords, the Hardens, the great feudal house of the Bucclenchs." And Scott was very proud of this ancestry. No doubt, much of his grief in later life was the result of his trying to live up to his family traditions as a landed proprietor and lord. One may see yet the armorial insignia of his ancestors on the ceiling of the great hall at Abbotsford. Scott was born not only in the ranks of romance, but in what he was pleased to call the most romantic city, Edinburgh. (1771) He was born in that region now occupied by the University in the Old Town, about the same time that was born the New Town along Princess Street. "the most picturesque thorofare thru which the tides of life ebb and flow" (Mabie 265)

As you may know the Old Town stretches from the high rocks of the great Castle, down High Street, along the Cannongate to the ancient Palace of Holyrood, at the foot of Arthur's Seat. This, by Edinburghers, is called the "Royal Mile". Of this mile with its adjoining narrow wynds and closes, Mabie says: "The wild romantic history of centuries of struggle had left their records on every side. It was a veritable citadel of ancient tradition. Foul with the surviving odors of the evil smelling Middle Ages, full of squalor redeemed by touches of splendor, dark and gloomy, but rich in haunting memories, the city which held in its heart St. Giles and the Old Tolborth--The Heart of Midlothian--was a veritable fairyland to a boy of Scott's pictorial imagination." (Mabie 267) From the old Castle, where Mary, Queen of Scotts, gave birth to her son, James VI, of Scotland and I of England, to the Palace where she had married her cousin, Lord Darnley, and where some say she at least had guilty knowledge of the plans to murder her chief minister, Rizzio, one may yet find many reminders of the early days, tho many of them have gone.

No doubt, the most outstanding ornament of High Street is St. Giles which for possibly a thousand years has ministered to the spiritual lives of Edinburghers. The central pillars and arches are said to have been raised by Robert Bruce, while in recent years have been found parts of the Tower of David II. In another section, one will spend a delightful half hour studying and admiring the magnificent wood carving in the Chapel of the Knights of the Thistle. In the side walk, not far from St. Giles, we find the heart marking the site of the Old Talbooth, which played so important a part in the Heart of Midlothian, recognized as one of Scott's best novels. Further down one may see the house of John Knox and that of Moubray, which are representative of the architecture of Queen Mary's time. One can follow down a narrow close and see the site of "My Lord Seyton's House" where the impetuous Roland Graeme followed the beautiful Catherine Seyton. In fact, if one will listen to his guide as he walks or rides along this street, he can learn of more great events participated in by more real and fancied people, than even Scott knew or dreamdd.

Holyrood was the scene of the brilliant party described in the Abbott, where the regent Murray met the young Glendenning (Roland Graeme) and sent him off with the tantalizing Catherine Seyton, they to be page and lady to the deposed Queen Mary, then imprisoned at Loch Leven, north of Edinburgh. To this same palace Holyrood had come Marmion to carry the message of Henry VIII to James IV of Scotland. Here it was that, as James played the gallant to other ladies while Queen Margaret wept alone in Lithgow's bower, Dame Heron sang the song of Lochinvar, presaging of course, the carrying away of the Lady Clare by Marmion. (Fitz Eustace)

"Old Holy Rood rung merrily
That night with wassail, mirth, and glee;

* * * *

"This feast outshone his banquets past:
It was his blithest--and his last."
(Marmion Canto V, Sec. VII)

From the Braid Hills on the south edge of Edinburgh, Marmion earlier had watched the gathering of the Scottish hosts. From the parapet of the palace, St. Hilda had disclosed her secret to the Palmer, who there revealed himself as the long lost lover of Lady Clare. Together they had watched the pageant of all Scottish nobles on the City Cross, or Dun Edin's Cross.

"A vision, passing nature's law,
Strange, wild, and dimly seen;
Yet darkly did it seem, as there
Heralds and pursuivants prepare
With trumpet round and blazon fair,
A summons to proclaim."

The cross stands now not on Cannongate Street as then, but on a side street. To the north of Holy Rood is Arthur's Seat and beyond was the gathering ground of another Scottish army--we would call it a rabble. This was that motley gathering, preparatory to marching toward England, led by Prince Charlie, in a vain endeavor to again seat the Stuarts on the English throne. This scene is described in Waverly. Then, too, had been a great gathering in Holyrood Palace of Scotland's beauty and chivalry. This party was graced by one of Scott's most brilliant women, Flora McIvor, and by the likable, yet rather colorless Rose Bradwardine.

Did time permit we could continue to multiply instances in which Edinburgh and its environs were used by Scott in his writings. But we have already exceeded the limit for this city of his birth. We have merely recalled for you a few of the scenes that make it just what he called it--the most romantic city.

But Edinburgh, or that portion of it where the Scotts lived, seemed very unhealthful. Already the family had lost six children and Walter was in poor health, left lame by effects of teething fever. Then the parents, on the advice of Dr. Rutherford, Mrs. Scott's father, sent Walter to the country home of his

grandfather Scott when he was about three years old. At this early age, he was introduced into that region which still makes a part of the Scott country. The farm was Sandyknowe near Smailholm, a typical Scottish country village near the Tweed. About this village were some of the finest landscapes in Scotland. Nearby were Kelso, the Cheviot hills, Lammermoor, all familiar Scottish names. Given the most tender care by the grandmother, Aunt Jennie, and the servants, Scott regained his health. But it gave him much more--the inspiration and rare knowledge which served him so well in the later years. The grandfather was the typical Border farmer, descended from Wat Harden and the Buccleuchs, who evidently loved the boy and treated him well. But the kindly old grandmother was a regular depository of Border stories. All about was the atmosphere of romance, and the grandmother loved to tell it over and over. But this was by no means all of his good fortune, for Aunt Janet loved and devotedly cared for "the puir wee laddie". She read to him the stories from the Bible and from Scottish history and joined the grandmother in telling the stories of the Scottish Border. "He was living in the land of ballads and amid the scenes of many a bloody fray." (Crockett, Scott Country, p. 13)

When health was restored, he returned to Edinburgh and finished high school at twelve years of age. Rapid growth seemed to lessen his vitality and again he went to live with Aunt Janet and the grandmother, who had moved to Kelso and lived in Garden Cottage, later called Waverley Cottage. Scott calls Kelso the "most beautiful if not the most romantic village in Scotland, presenting objects not only grand in themselves, but venerable for their associations". (Crockett-Scott Country, p. 25-26) Situated at the meeting of the Tweed and the Teviot, Kelso was called the "Queen of the Border". Scott attended grammar school here, where the master was Lancelot Whale, his size corresponding to the name. Here he met his friend and later business associate,

Ballantyne. In the Kelso library, he found the books he loved, read them, and remembered them. As a child, he simply absorbed Border history and tradition. Surrounded by natural beauty and supplied with books telling the romance and stories of the Border, Scott became a real part of this Border country. To this region he returned in his young manhood; in it he spent much of his life. At Abbotsfords on the Tweed, he realized his dream of becoming a generous and hospitable landed proprietor; there, he died and was buried at Dryburg. So for all time, he was and is truly a child of the Border.

But Scott's country was all of Scotland. He said that love of natural beauty, ancient ruins, etc. "became with me an insatiable passion, which, if circumstances had permitted, I would willingly have gratified by travelling over half the globe." (Edward Thomas, A Literary Pilgrimage in Scotland, p. 302) He did see most of Scotland and the neighboring coasts in his youth and later travelled some in France and elsewhere; but as has been said previously, he was not a great traveller. "He learned to know men and earth and history together." He knew:

"Of lover's slights, of ladies' charms
Of witches' spells, of warriors' arms."
(Thomas--300)

Some say "words are the colors" of a romance writer--making pictures as clear as those on canvas. But Scott just set down in order what he remembered best of a scene, and trusted his readers to build up their conceptions from their own experiences.

As you may see readily, I am trying, however lamely, to portray something of the influence of surroundings upon the life of this very human genius. I have no intention to say his environment made him, but he used a most favorable environment to make himself. We are but little interested in the details of his life. At the university, he was but an indifferent student in most things. He learned languages, not because they were in the course, but because he found he

needed them in his researches. He never bothered with the grammar but learned to read and speak German, French, and Spanish, and possibly others.

He was educated for the law and went into practice with his father. He was by no means a brilliant pleader but did the formal side of his law work very well. He could no doubt have made a fair living in his profession. Bitterly disappointed in a first love affair, he married a girl of French rearing and had a happy family life, according to his son-in-law biographer. There were four children. For some years, they lived in a cottage on the Esk, near Edinburgh and also had a town house on St. George's Square. He continued to live there for some time after his appointment as sheriff of Ettrickshire. He was criticised for not spending the required four months annually in his district. Though he resented this interference, he gave up his Esk cottage and moved to Ashestiel, into a property belonging to an uncle. Here he resided from 1804 to 12, the happiest period of his life. He was not yet encumbered with the worries of Abbotsford, with the publishing business, and with speculations. Here he established his fame as a poet, producing his best known works. To reach the house, he had to ford the Tweed, but liked it and said he would ford a river any time rather than go a little further to a bridge. Scott was an expert in the management of a horse in the water and evidently was describing himself in Old Mortality when he said of Henry Morton as the latter guided his horse into the river in pursuit of Burleigh: "The management of a horse in water was as familiar to him as when upon a meadow". (Crockett, Footsteps of Scott, p. 60) Likewise the description of Marmion crossing the Tweed at Cold stream may have been based upon Scott's daring exploit in guiding Captain across the Tweed at Ashestiel when the flood was especially dangerous. And the experience of the priest and the White Lady of Avenell, described in the Monastery is but another example of the same. Scott was always an enthusiastic sportsman. Of the life at Ashestiel,

Crockett says: "We see Scott at Ashestiel thrice happy both in his work and in his play, a favorite child of fortune with not a cloud to darken his sky". (Footsteps of Scott, p )

It is said Scott gave eighteen years of his life to poetry and eighteen to the novels. He began with some fairly good translations, but as Lang says: "It was through his collecting and editing of The Border Minstrels that Sir Walter Scott glided into literature." (p. 7) His duties as sheriff and his excursions in his vacations or spare moments took him into every nook and corner of the Border region. His passion as an antiquarian led him, assisted by his faithful friends, Hogg, Leyden, Purdie, and others, to collect these ballads , to edit them with notes amazing in their historical and literary detail, and to publish them with acceptable results. I make bold to review one or two of these ancient ballads.

Berwick and Graeme had two sons who were good friends. In a drunken quarrel at Carlisle, Berwick responded to Graeme's toast thus:

"O were your son a lad like mine,
And learned some books that he could read,
They might have been twae brethern bould,
And they might have bragged the Border side
But your son's a lad, and he is but bad,
And billie to my son he canna be.
Ye sent him to the schools and he wodna learn,
Ye bought him books and he wodna read."

Graeme says of his son:

"But my blessing shall be never earn,
Till I see how his arm can defend his head."

Then, when young Graeme refused to fight his friend:---

"He's pitched his sword in a moodie-hill
And he has leapt twenty long feet and three,
And on his own sword he lap,
And dead upon the ground he fell."

Then young Berwick to his father:--

"Go dig a grave both wide and deep,

A grave to hold both him and me;
But lay Christie Graeme on the sunny side,
For I'm sure he won the victorie."
From Ballad of Graeme and Berwick.

I can only recall the story of Thomas the Rhymer. Near Earlston you will see the Eildon stone, which marks the site of the Eildon tree. Under this tree, Thomas had met the Faery Queen and followed her away to be gone for seven years.

"True Thomas lay on Huhlie Bank,
A ferlie he spied wi' his e'e,
And there he saw a lady bright
Come riding down by the Eildon tree."

He returned to prophesy the victory of Bruce at Bannockburn, the Scottish defeat at Flodden Field, and the bearing by a French queen of a son to rule England and Scotland, referring of course to Queen Mary and her son. But he was most famous for his version of the story of Sir Tristram, a Knight of the Round Table. Finally he followed a hind andhart, possibly again to his Fairy Queen, never to return.

Thomas the Rhymer is Scotland's earliest romanticist. Various versions of the derivation of his name are given. We are, however, more interested in the [illegible]. But two ivy covered walls, 30 feet high, remain of his tower; yet in [illegible], that remnant was bought by the Edinburgh Border Countries Association, and a [illegible] public celebration held six hundred years after Thomas died. Earlston was the camping place of James IV, on his way to Floddem Field. Here was the birth place of Cuthbert and the home of the Lindsays, and the Earls of March and Dunbar. It is said that Queen Mary was a guest in this ancient village. Of some of these things we were told as the Scotch women served a wonderful supper.

Not far away is Bemersyde House, the ancient home of the Haigs. After the [illegible], you may remember that it was purchased and presented to Earl Haig by an appreciative nation. So the words of the Border prophet yet ring true:--

"Tide, tide, what e'er betide
There'll always be Haigs in Bemersyde."

[illegible], glancing away to the east, one may catch a glimpse of Smailholm Tower, where Scott played as a "puir lame laddie."

From the Bemersyde Hill, one gets as fine a view as can be had in all Scotland. With Bemersyde and Gladswood on either side, the promontony valley formed by the sweeping curve of the Tweed, and the background of the Eildon hills to the south, one does not wonder that Scott always stopped here to drink in the beauty of the scene. So, too, one may easily believe the story, true or untrue, that as the Wizard's body was being drawn to Dryburg by at least one of his own horses, the team stopped at the accustomed place, as if bidding their master to take a last look at his beloved Tweed side.

If this Border land had helped to make Scott, he had now begun to repay the debt. From the time of the publishing of the Border Minstrels, the region was devoted to Scott. His very good friend, Lady Dalkeith, insisted that he attempt an original ballad. The result was the Lay of the Last Minstrel. It is not my purpose to review, at much length, this work which brought much honor to Scott. The main scene lies at Branksome Hall on the River Teviot, near Hawick. Here gathered the clans to meet their English foe. The mere recording of the names of the places from whence they came is turned by Scott into descriptions of all the Border land and into narratives of the deeds of valor of all her noble warriors. Read The Border Raid, CantoIV.

From Cantos I and II, we get the Ride of William of Deloraine, giving us that beautiful description of Melrose Abbey, and the region between Melrose and Branksome Hall.

"If thou wouldst view fair Melrose aright,
Go visit it by the pale moonlight;
For the gay beams of lightsome day
Gild but to flout the ruins gray.
When the broken arches are black in night,
And each shafted oriel glimmers white;
When the cold light's uncertain shower
Streams on the ruined central tower;
When buttress and buttress, alternately,
Seem framed by ebony and ivory,
When silver edges the imagery,
And the scrolls that teach thee to live and die;

When distant Tweed is heard to rave,
And the owlet to hoot over the dead man's grave,
Then go--but go alone the while--
Then view St. David's ruined pile;
And home returning, soothly swear
Was never scene so sad and fair!"
Canto II, Sec. I

The monk leads Deloraine to the tomb of Michael Scott, and takes therefrom the Book of Magic, for which the bold rider had been sent. On the return trip, he encounters Lord Cranstown and is unhorsed. The Elfin page of Cranstonn gets the book; but we can not tarry longer. The story of Marmion has already been mentioned. In it, one reads many a description of the home and haunts of Scott. The journey of Marmion to Edinburgh and much of the route of the Scottish army to Flodden is along Gala Water road which the Motor Traction Company advertises as the finest hundred miles in the Borders. Leaving Edinburg, one sees Craigmillar Castle associated with Queen Mary; Melville Castle, Dalkieth Palace, Newbattle Abbey, Dalhousie Castle, and Cockpen, all famous in Scottish history and literature. Near Cockpen, we see the cottage of Mistress Jean. Near Middleton Moor, one sees Borthwick Castle, where Queen Mary spent four days with Bothwell. When the King came, Bothwell fled and met Mary nearby, disguised as a man. Together they rode post haste to Dunbar. At Galashiels, the Scottish army encamped. I am sure they were no better fed than were the school teacher representatives of many countries in 1925.

Galashiels is not far from Ashestiel and Abbotsford. It has been and still is noted for the weaving of Scottish tweeds. One can think of Scott passing over this route many times in going from the courts in Edinburgh to attend to his duties as sheriff of Ettrickshire. The natural beauty and the historical associations were potent food for his appreciative soul.

The scenes for Scott's last great poems, The Lady of the Lake and the Lord of the Isles, as well as of his first novel, Waverly, were laid mainly in that

region we have called the Highland Borders. We might go to the western coast of England, passing many Border haunts of Scott on our way. Carlisle, just south of Solway, with remnants of its Roman wall yet standing was the birthplace of the ancestors of Wodrow Wilson. Here gathered the forces of Prince Charlie in their last stand for the recapture of the English throne, the actual battle or rather the rout, being at Culloden a few miles south. Here Waverley bade farewell to the talented and beautiful Flora McIvor; and here too, her brother, Fergus McIvor, staunch defender of Stewart claims, was executed and his head used to decorate the postern gate.

As one rides to the north toward Glasgow, he passes thru or in the vicinity of the scenes portrayed in Guy Mannering. Just before arriving in Glasgow, the [illegible] immortalized by Old Mortality is reached. Bothwell Bridge, scene of the final battle between the forces of the English Claverhouse, and those of the Scottish Covenanters led by Burney and Henry Morton, lies but a few miles to the south and east of Glasgow. In Glasgow, one could find many scenes related to various works of Scott. In the Old Cathedral, we could see the pillar behind which Rob Roy stood when he warned Francis Osbaldistone of his danger in Glasgow.

Travelling by rail or motor up the Clyde, one passes Dumbarton Castle on its island of rock in the broad river Clyde where William Wallace had been both warrior and prisoner; and where Queen Mary, too, had been held in bondage and from which she escaped. Here, too, you may remember that Archibald, the servant of the Duke of Argyle, had brought Jennie Deans and took boat for the nearby island beneath, the Duke's country seat. In this region, as tenant of the good [illegible], David Deans finished his life; Jennie married her preacher lover, Reuben [illegible]; and here too the erring sister Effie, as Lady Staunton, had come in later [illegible]. At Whistler's Cove, she was saved unknowingly by her own long lost son

and there later Staunton, who was of course the early lover who had betrayed Effie, was killed by this same son, The Whistler.

An enthusiastic author of a folder describing the Clyde Coast and Loch Lomond excursions has said: "To sail on Loch Lomond on a summer's day is to gain a foretaste of the joys of paradise. One has for company people from the four corners of the earth, for Loch Lomond side has been described as the summer rallying point of the nations of the world." It's twenty miles of length is studded by thirty islands, and its eastern shore is bulwarked by Ben Lomond. In and all about Lock Lomond, one is in the very heart of the Rob Roy country. You can land at Inversnaid, take the old coach and four with its liveried coachman and drive out past the Rob Roy cave, where his type of justice was meted out to many a Highlander. You can see the McGreggor farm home where Rob is said to have lived very peacefully in his later years. Not far away is Aberfoyle.

It was from Ben Vorlich's side, a few miles north of Callander, that the stag had started, in the Chase described in the opening sections of the Lady of the Lake:

"The stag at eve had drunk his fill
Where danced the moon on Monan's rill
And deep his midnight lair had made
In lone Glen Artney's hazed shade;
But, when the sun his beacon red
Had kindled on Ben Voirlich's head
The deep-mouthed bloodhound's heavy bay
Resounded up the rocky way,
And faint from farther distance borne,
Were heard the clanging hoof and horn."

"The antler'd monarch of the waste
Sprung from his heathery couch in haste.

* * * * *

With one brave bound the copse he clear'd,
And, stretching forward free and far,
Sought the wild heaths of Uam-Var."

* * * * *

Westward the stag had led the way through Cambusmore, and over Benledi's

rise, across the river Teith, when:

"Few were the stragglers, following far,
That reach'd the lake of Vennachar;
And when the Brig of Turk was won,
The headmost horseman rode alone."

As the hunter was ready to strike his prey:--

"The wily quarry shunned the shock,
And turned him from the opposing rock;
Then dashing down a darksome glen,
Soon lost to hound and hunter's ken,
In the deep Trossoch's wildest nook
His solitary refuge took."

Then the hunter's gallant grey fell exhausted:--

"And on the hunter hied his way,
To join some comrades of the day;
Yet often paused, so strange the road,
So wondrous were the scenes it showed".

Sections XI and XII give a vivid description of this Trossach's region, closing

thus:--

"So wondrous wild, the whole might seem
The scenery of a fairy dream."

Out of this glen, the hunter climbed, gaining a point from where he looked down

on Loch Katrine:---

"From the steep promontory gazed
The stranger, raptured and amazed,
And, 'What a scene were here' he cried,
'For princely pomp, or churchman's pride!
On this bold brow, a lordly tower;
In that soft vale, a lady's bower;
On yonder meadow, far away,
The turrets of a cloister grey;"
Sec. XV

Then from the isle came a boat guided by the fair Helen:---

"A chieftain's daughter seemed the maid;
Her satin snood, her silken plaid,
Her golden brooch such birth betrayed."

You remember that she was the daughter of the outlawed Douglas; that the hunter,

rac called himself James Fitz James, the Knight of Snowden, was represented by Scott to be King James V. On the following night, Roderick Dhu, refused by Helen, kept to rouse the Mc Alpine Clans to war. Swiftly the Cross of Fire was borne and promptly gathered Roderick's kinsmen and banchmen. Back to the Isle had come James Fitz James to plead his suit for Helen's hand. Struck by her honest confession of love for Malcolm, he gave her his signet ring and told her to ask what boon she would.

The huntsman then spent the night, unknowingly, as the guest of Roderick Dhu on Ben Ledi's side. Said the chieftain:--

"These are Clan-Alpine's Warriors true;
And Saxon, I am Roderick Dhu,--

* * * *

Fitz James was brave; tho to his heart
The life blood thrilled with sudden start,
He mann'd himself with dauntless air,
Returned the chief his haughty stare
His back against a rock he bore,
And firmly placed his foot before:--

"Come one, come all! This rock shall fly
From its firm base as soon as I."
Canto V, Sec. IX & X.

Then on to Coitantogle's ford, at the east end of Lake Vennachar, Roderick led his guest-foe. There they fought.

"Ill fared it then with Roderick Dhu."

The battle over Fitz James rushed away, along the Teith, past Doune, and into Stirling and his castle strong. You know how Ellen came, presented the ring and how her father and Malcolm were released. I have presented these parts of the poem merely because they describe this famous region much better than could any words of mine.

Not far from the place where the stag started near the Braes of Balquidder was the castle of Bradwardine to which Edward Waverley came. Here he met the

daughter, Rose. When the cattle were carried away in true Highland style, Waverley went with Evan Dhu to redeem them. It was here he met Firgus and Flora McIvor. Here he cast aside his commission in the English army and joined with his new friends in the ill-starred attempt to restore the Stewarts to the English throne. With forces mustered they passed on to Doune, and to Stirling, past the field of Bannockburn and on to Edinburgh. Flushed by victory at Prestopens they rushed on to utter rout and defeat at Culloden.

Back to the region of the Tweed and the Ettrick, we find the scene of The Monastery laid in the neighborhood of Melrose Abbey, which in the novel is called St. Mary's at Kennaquhair. The time was after Mary's return to Scotland, but before her deposition by her illegitimate brother, Murray, then heading the Scottish Reformers. The story is built around the downfall of the Catholic church as represented in the misfortunes of the Abbots, Ambrose and Eustace. While the region is much the same as described in the story, it is not identical. Overloaded with astral spirits or mysticismsof the White Lady of Avenel and the overworked Euphuism or symbolical jargon of Percie Shafton, the novel was not well received. Had Scott lost his cunning? Through the brothers Glendenning, Halbert was a staunch supporter of the protestant Murray,and Edward as the Abbott, the story is carried on in the much more highly rated novel, The Abbott.

From this region the story of the Abbott, followed the fortunes of Mary after her deposition and imprisonment, on to Edinburg and then to Loch Leven. Here we might, if time were not more than gone, enter into that other Border, the differences between the conflicting religions. In the Abbott, Scott used imaginary characters and incidents to give an impartial account of Scottish history and religious troubles. He portrayed Mary in a very favorable way, dwelling sympathetically upon her misfortunes. His description of her beauty is a classic. To her friends, she was angelic, without a fault; while her enemies rated her as a beautiful fiend. Her escape, defeat at Langside, flight to England, imprisonment,

and final execution by Elizabeth, are matters of history.

While The Abbott is called the sequel of The Monastery, critics say that it would be much better to speak of Kenilworth as the sequel of The Abbott. Both queens were impartially described.

Quoting from Canning--(124-5) "In fact, owing to Scott's great genius being always guided by his rare calm judgment, and shrewd knowledge of character, both these interesting queens might, and probably would, have been alike gratified by his successive descriptions of them in The Abbott and in Kenilworth. The ruins of Kenilworth Castle, far to the south in England, merit a page or two; but are clearly beyond our Border limits.

To leave the story without at least mentioning Abbottsford would be the old story of playing Hamlet without Hamlet. Unable to retain his lease at Ashestiel, Scott bought, in 1811, the unattractive, dilapidated Cartley Hole farm. The first simple plans were constantly enlarged in the years 1812 to 1824. More and more land was bought, increasing from 100 acres in 1811 to more than 1000 in 1816. Scott was intensely proud of his ancestry and delighted in the entertainment of his friends. Crockett says: "We blame him, not for being a lord of acres, but for being a lord of too many acres before they had become truly his own." (Footsteps of Scott, p. 80) Yet when the crash came, it was the determination to retain this estate and ~~yet~~ still pay his creditors that brought forth an output of literature and intellectual effort seldom equalled.

People differ much in their estimate of Abbottsford. Ruskin called it "the most incongruous pile that gentlemanly modernism ever devised." (Crockett, The Scott Country, p. 274) It faces the Tweed to the north, yet the visitor enters through the garden to the rear. He passes a fountain made from a part of the famous Edinburgh cross, steps upon a porch modelled on that of the Linlithgow palace, and is faced by the Old Talbooth door. This evidence of Scott's enthusiasm as an archaeologian is only an introduction to what one sees inside. In the armory is one of the finest collections of private arms in the world--the gun, sword, dirk, and

sporran of Rob Roy being outstanding. There too are the keys of Loch Leven Castle and those of the Old Tolbooth. On a writing desk, made of wood from ships of the Spanish Armada, are the pen and blotter found in Napoleon's carriage, after the battle of Waterloo. The chair was one used by Wallace. On the walls are portraits of Shakespeare, Queen Elizabeth, Rob Roy, and many others.

The motto:--

"To call this wooded patch of earth his own,
And rear the pile of ill assorted stone,
And play the grand old feudal lord again."

was doubtless the cause of his physical break down, as well as his financial ruin. The first stroke he seemingly overcame and continued to work at an amazing pace. Finally work was impossible and he was induced to go to Italy.

"Hame! hame! hame! O fain wad I be!
O hame! hame! hame! to my own caintree."

He was home sick and returned to London and then to Edinburgh. Once more, he was taken down the Gala Water road and so strong were the impressions on his life, that he revived to recognize the most familiar scenes. At Abbotsford, he lingered for some time, as ill mentally as he was physically. A very short time before he died, his mind cleared for a time and he called his family about him. On September 22, 1832, he died.

To Dryburgh, ruins of an Abbey founded about 1150 and used by the Druids hundreds of years before that, they carried his body. These ancient ruins, surrounded on three sides by his beloved Tweed, was the burial place of a long line of his ancestors. The place had been lost through a spend thrift grand uncle. Scott's father had wanted to buy it, but was dissuaded by the grandfather "and thus we have nothing left of Dryburgh, but the right of stretching our bones there." (Crocket, The Scott Country, 492-93)

One could quote many sayings about Scott. Canning, History in Scott's Novels, has on the title page this quotation from McCauley: "Sir Walter Scott has used those fragments of truth which historians have scornfully thrown behind them in a manner which may well excite their envy.

"He has constructed out of their gleanings, works, which even considered as history, are scarcely less valuable than theirs."

Harris, Introduction to Marmion, says:-- "A knowledge of Walter Scott's novels is essential to a good education. The motives of human action come nearer to the surface of consciousness in Scotland than any where else in the world."

Andrew Lang (Sir Walter Scott, p. 84-85) has this summary:--"It was Scott, the greatest of readers, who inaugurated the reign of novel reading, and very much chagrined he would be could he see the actual results: the absolute horrior with which mankind shuns every other form of study.----------
------Scott's own tales never usurped the office of the pulpit, the platform, or the Press; and if he did teach some readers all the history they knew, he constantly warned them that, in his romances, he was a historian with a very large poetical license." Indeed the long, detailed introductions to his novels are but frequently resumes of introductions to poems in his Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border. In the events there narrated students of Scott may find the incidents and plots for many of his novels. They were for the literary student and not for the casual novel reader. Carlyle, in his too frequent cynical way said Scott had neither message nor mission. But he did what Carlyle did not and could not do--he added much to human happiness--"his message was that of honor, courage, endurance, love, and kindness." (Crockett, 94)

An enthusiast could write many pages about individual characters in Scott's novels and poems. In general, his heroines were greater than his heroes; and his very best characters were drawn from "life's humbler walks, from classes despised and ever ridden". (Canning, Philosophy of the Waverley Novels, 49) The outlaw,

the mechanic, the poacher, the gypsy, the trooper, the rugged farmer, were all his favorites. It was his delight to humble the proud by the success of his humble people, as witness his treatment of the doughty Sir Robert Hazlewood in Guy Mannering. Certainly one would rather be a Dandie Dinmont, crude farmer and dog lover, a composite of possibly three of Scott's farmer acquaintances. Yes, or Davie Deans, true covenanter and successful dairyman.

Meg Merriles, in her gypsy life, possessed the qualities that could overcome evil. She died in her effort to right a grievous wrong; and was, of course, the real heroine of Guy Mannering. Jennie Deans has been called the only hero in the Heart of Midlothian. She had a real "original" about whose heroic devotion to an erring sister Scott wove the story of the Heart of Midlothian. And so one could go on and on, but would doubtless need much assistance to wake up his audience, should there be any remaining.

Possibly another quotation from Crockett may be a fitting close. He is speaking of the Lay of the Last Minstrel, but it applies equally well to much, indeed the most of Scott's work:--"It was the wild Border life, with its passions and intrigues, and jealousies; with its lovers and heroisms, that Scott found time to depicting and that passes panorama--like thru the whole piece." (Footprints of Scott, 73)

237

## BYBLIOGRAPHY


1. Adams, Mary E., Editor _Marmion_ Allyn and Bacon 1901

2. Buchan, John _Sir Walter Scott_ Coward-McCann, Inc. New York 1932

3. Canning, Hon. A. S. G. _History in Scott's Novels_ T. Fisher Unwin, London 1905

4. Carpenter, George Rice Editor _The Lady of the Lake_ Longmans, Green & Co. 1903

5. Clare, Haworth, Paul Editors _Standard History of the World_ Vol. 6

6. Crockett, W. S. _Footsteps of Scott_ Geo. W. Jacobs & Company Philadelphia

7. Crockett, W. S. _The Scott Country_ Adam and Charles Black 1902

8. Crockett, W. S. _The Scott Originals_ Scribners 1913

9. Holmes, John Haynes _The Heart of Scott's Poetry_ Oxford University Press, London 1932

10. Howitt, Wm. _Homes and Haunts of the British Poets_ Vol. II

11. Hudson, William Henry _Sir Walter Scott_ Sands & Company, London 1901

12. Husband, Margaret, F. A. _Dictionary of Characters--Scotts Novels_

13. Lang, Andrew _A Short History of Scotland_ Wm. Blackwood and Sons Edinburgh 1911

14. Lang, Andrew _Sir Walter Scott_ Scribners, 1906

15. Lockhart, John Gibson _Life of Sir Walter Scott_

16. Mabie, Hamilton Wright _Backgrounds of Literature_ The Outlook Company 1903

17. Pamphlet _A Trip Through West Lothian_ The Scottish Motor Traction Company, Ltd. Edinburgh, 1925

18. Pamphlets Describing Loch Lomond Tours---------_Clyde and Loch Lomond Sailings; The Clyde Coast and Loch Lomond; The Trossachs via Aberfoyle and Loch Lomond; Through the Trossachs._

19. Pamphlet _Scotland's Rivers of Romance_ Published by The Scottish Motor Traction Company, Ltd. Edinburgh, 1925

20. Pamphlet _The Finest Hundred Miles in the Borders_ Published by The Scottish Motor Traction Company, Ltd. Edinburgh, 1925

21. Redfern _The Wisdom of Sir Walter Scott_

22. Rolfe, Wm. J. Editor _The Lay of the Last Minstrel_ Houghton, Mifflin 1887

23. Scott, Sir Walter Guy Mannering Adam and Charles Black 1897 London

24. Scott, Sir Walter Heart of Midlothian

25. Scott, Sir Walter Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border

26. Scott, Sir Walter Old Mortality

27. Scott, Sir Walter Rob Roy Harris, Edith D. Editor The Story of Rob Roy Appleton 1898

28. Scott, Sir Walter The Abbott

29. Scott, Sir Walter The Monastery

30. Scott, Sir Walter Waverley

31. Thomas, Edward Literary Pilgrimage in England

32. World Federation of Education Associations Handbook of First Biennial Conference Edinburgh, 1925.

BLANK PAGE

Paper #17 241
2/12/34

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA

## MONEY AND INFLATION.

Money is something that one knows or expects that everybody is going to take as payment for what they want. Long before money was invented men were seeing things they wanted that other fellows had. Without money their only recourse was to trade articles they had less desire for, for articles they most desired. When did trading become buying and selling? The answer is, when groups of men first begun to pay with one kind of thing, or with a limited number of things, which they knew from experience others were going to accept in exchange. So long as they exchanged anything they had for anything that struck their fancy, it was simple barter. But when one thing, or several - whether it was skins, live animals, shells, grains, or arrow heads and tools, - was found that other men wanted all the time, and that the first bargainer had enough and to spare of it became a man's money. He begun to reckon other things in terms of it. It was usually the thing he happened to raise or produce. Thus the hunter "thought in terms of" skins, the farmers in those of grains or roughly woven cloth, the artisam in tools, weapons and ornaments, while the Virginia planter as we all know thought of tobacco in terms of money. How did he measure this value? First of all by the time and effort it took to raise or produce it, just as men still do today. The money of the cattle raising tribe was the "head" of cattle. Cattle money existed for many hundreds, perhaps thousands of years. The word "fee", meaning the price of something, is pretty generally believed to be the

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



changed form of a word which in the old European tongue meant "cattle." It was the same word from which came the modern German "Vieh", meaning cattle. So we see that any article in general use in a community might, before the origin of money, have served as money.

Here is a price list found by explorers to have been used in Iceland.

10 horseshoes equal 20 dried fish.
1 tube butter equals 120 dried fish,
1 hogshead wine equals 100 dried fish.

But man outgrew this stage of his money development. He begun to use things that were of no direct use, to represent the value of cattle, the skins, the food or weapons that he needed. Then money in its true sense came into use. The early evolution of money is rather obscure but we know of a few significant changes. For instance, there is the old Greek piece of money on which the figure of a cow is stamped or punched: there is an old Chinese piece of money that has a shirt on it. Here we seem to have the early progenitor of the bank check. One piece being good for a cow, the other for one shirt. Now this represents real monetary progress. The owner could carry these cow pictures with him but he could not carry the cow, and of course he could carry several extra shirts.

Another unique form of money was a small piece of cow hide. This represented in value one cow, but it lacked many characteristics of the money we are now apparently trying to discard. I have a feeling that it would not make good hot weather money.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



## Metal Money.

The thing that everybody seemed to want were the precious metals, bronze, gold and silver. They were compact, that is, they took up little space; they could be melted into many shapes; they were "rare" rather hard to get and, finally, they were valuable in themselves because of their beauty or usefulness.

At first gold and other metals were not melted into a particular shape. They were used "in the rough" and were reckoned by weight. Heroditus tells us something about early commerce, in speaking of the Carthaginians who lived in northern Africa.

> "There is in Lybia (Africa) a place near the pillars of Hercules" (this was the fancy name that the old time people had for Gibraltor) "a place where there are men with whom the Carthaginians trade. There they unload their cargo, ranging it along the shore, return to the boats and make a great fire. The natives at sight of the smoke come down to the sea and lay down gold and then retire to a distance. The Carthaginians come up and look at the gold, and if it seems to them to be worth as much as the goods, they take it and go away. But if it is not enough, they return to their ship and remain there. The natives again come up and add to the gold until the others are satisfied. Never on either side do they commit injustice. This indicates that fine business honesty was then in style, even among the lowly heathen."

Again says Heroditus:

> "One does not touch the Gold until it is equal to the goods. The others do not touch the cargo until the gold has been removed."

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



## Gold.

Money has been definied as anything which is universally acceptable in final payment for goods and services. Under this definition, gold coins are the only true money of which, if we are true patriots, we have none.

Our money at present might be termed credit money and this we could not do without in the present stage of business and civilization, but there are many reasons why we should consider gold, if not as money, at least as the basis of our credit. First, there is no other commodity that has the universal appeal that gold has. It is almost indestructible; it resists corrosion by powerful acids; it is large value in small bulk. One million dollars is represented by less than 3 cubic feet of gold. A room 30' x 30' x 30' will hold all the gold in the world. It is convenient to transport and economical to store. It is homogenous. Pure gold is all the same grade. There are many grades of cotton and wheat but only one of pure gold. It is both malleable and tenacious. This makes it particularly adaptable for coining. It is scarce. Moreover the supply cannot be rapidly increased. The annual production, even under the most favorable conditions, has never exceeded five per cent (5%) of the existing stocks. This tends to give a stability in value greater than that of any other commodity.

## The functions of money.

It serves four important functions in commerce:

1. It is used as a medium of exchange,
2. As a store of value,
3. As a standard of deferred payment.
4. As a standard of value.

Hence we see money bears a fourfold burden. Of course its most popular function is that as a medium of exchange. Complementary with its use as a medium of exchange, money serves as a standard of value. Value is expressed in terms of price. Value and price, however, are not the same. Value is a relationship: it means the worth of one commodity in terms of other commodities. A decline in the value of one commodity must mean a corresponding increase in the value of another commodity, or in the value of the other goods. Hence the total value of all commodities cannot change. But the general price level can change, since the value of all commodities is expressed in terms of a single commodity, Gold.

When Gold falls in value prices tend to rise, when gold rises in value prices tend to fall. By reason of this function, one has but to know the price of any commodity to appraise its value in terms of all other commodities. If wheat is quoted at one dollar a bushel, corn at fifty cents a bushel and oats at twenty-five cents, it is apperent wheat is twice as valuable as corn and that corn has double the value of oats. This function of money in acting as the common denomination of value is decidedly useful.

Money serves as a store of value. People often have goods or services to dispose of without a current desire for the other commodities or services. By exchanging the goods immediately for money, one may hold the money indefinitely, awaiting the desired time for exchanging for other commodities. In the meantime the money represents so much stored value.

In much the same way money serves as a basis for the security underlying credit transactions.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



Money serves also as a deferred payment. All credit transactions represent the postponed payment of money. If the transaction is not immediately completed, there must be some agreement between the buyer and the seller, or between the borrower and the lender, as to the method of settlement at the due date. The purchasing power of the money may substantially change in the meantime; nevertheless the number of dollars agreed upon remains the basis of the settlement.

The purchasing power of money.

The purchasing power of money is its worth in exchange for other commodities. When prices advance, the purchasing power of money falls; when prices decline the purchasing power of money rises.

In 1913 one dollar would have purchased one bushel of wheat; in 1920 one dollar would have bought less than half of a bushel. On an average basis one dollar in 1920 would have exchanged for but forty per cent (40%) of the commodities it would have commanded in 1913. Expressed the other way, it would require $2.50 in 1920 to buy the same commodities one might have purchased for one dollar in 1913.

Changes in price levels, therefore, represent concurrent changes in the value of money. It is important to appreciate that these changes exert a large influence upon business conditions. It profoundly affects credit transactions, since it creates an undesirable element of risk for both parties. It affects production as changes in the value of materials during process, interfere with expected profits.

This is the condition that the commodity dollar is supposed to correct. The commodity dollar is almost as old as civilization.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



It was tried out in this country during Colonial times without a degree of success. The theory back of it is that prices can be controlled by adjusting the value of the dollar to commodity prices. Its leading exponent in this country is Professor Irving Fisher of Yale. He did not invent the commodity dollar, which is less reverently known as the "rubber dollar", and makes no such claim. It is a plausible theory and might be practical for national trade, if it were possible to use all commodities as an index, but this is not practical and if it were the treatment would be worse than the disease. The most common suggestion is to use as an index fifty of our most important commodities. This might serve fairly satisfactorily for national currency but the commodities in different countries differ to such an extent that it would be practically impossible to have a commodity dollar serve as a basis for international exchange.

More than a century ago the plan was proposed in England and Simon Newcomb, the celebrated American astronomer, who had a mind that inquired into nearly everything, writing in 1879, when conditions were much the same as they are today and the going back to the gold payments was being debated, said:

> "The first and most obvious method of attaining the object is to issue a paper currency which shall be redeemable not in gold dollars of fixed weight but in such quantities of gold and silver bullion as shall suffice to make the required purchases".

The present administration appears to assume in this regard three fundamental ideas. These are as follows:

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



1. That the price level of 1926 was a desirable or normal one.

2. That it is practicable and desirable to restore the price level of 1926 thru currency depreciation.

3. That a "managed currency" or "staple dollar" is in some way more equitable than the gold dollar heretofore employed.

Let us examine these assumptions. The year 1926 was not, for the debtor or "depressed" classes of the community, a particularly fortunate period. Complaint was then constant on the part of the farm population, although it was then drowned in the general cry of "prosperity", and the politicians paid relatively little attention to it. Prices were then falling and had been falling for some time, and before the panic of 1929 they had fallen 100 points as compared with the post war high of 1920.

The farmers troubles were not due to a fall in prices, but to the fact that his products soon after 1926 began to fall out of proportion to other goods. This was a special condition due to the uneconomic nature of the farming situation. It will not be remedied by change in the monetary system and there is no good reason for so believing. If such changes be influential they will be likely to act more or less evenly upon all prices.

There is nothing in the restoration of the 1926 level of average prices that would assist the farmer or the debtor in the slightest degree. Such an average, if restored, would be better than the present level only if commodities were altered in relation one to another more favorably to the "depressed classes" within the general average or aggregate, and for such a change there is, as seen, not the slightest benefit in currency depreciation. Thus far there has been no success in the few countries which are supposed to have attempted such a procedure.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



British prices (domestic level), as shown by the British Board of Trade figures, are very nearly where they stood in September, 1931, when the depreciation policy was undertaken. Sweden's attempt has also failed. In the United States the advance of prices by about 17% (wholesale) said to have occurred since the beginning of the present year, has been effected by including such commodities as wheat, cotton and others whose prices are internationally fixed. Omit them and the price level, domestically stated, will be found to have advanced hardly at all. The price level has, if anything, fallen very slightly since the gold buying policy of Autumn was started; and there is no warrant for the thot that there will be greater success for the future as a result of this undertaking.

It is only if we assume the existence of a static world in which there is no invention, no industrial progress, no cheapening of mechanical processes, but in which from generation to generation costs of production remain the same. In such a world we would not need dollar stabilization. In an active and progressive world, in which great inventions follow one another with rapidity, and in which there is constant alteration of cost of production, it is clear that the stabilized dollar would not realize equity or anything like it.

To sum up the situation: the monetary policy known as the "Commodity dollar", which is a phase of the general philosophy of managed currency, has no scientific warrant behind it. The most constant thing in the physical and biologic world is change. So also the most constant thing in the economic world is change.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



## Inflation.

There are only two other ways of managing money to bring about higher prices which will relieve debtors and start business going. The first is to increase the amount of money simply by printing it, and the second is to increase the amount of deposit money by putting the banks in a position to lend more money. That is by credit inflation. That has been done in this country both thru the past and present administrations. To use a homely expression, it is like leading a horse to the trough to drink. Of course if the trough is dry the horse will not drink. Then we should pump some water, but after the trough is full there is certainly no use to pump more water. As I said before, the trough has been full ever since the depression started and is at present. When the banks were closed on April 19th, the Government printing presses issued in the course of a few days six billion dollars in Federal Reserve bank notes. This had absolutely no beneficial effects as we already had plenty of money. Evidently, the horse didn't want a drink. Evidently, the most important thing is confidence.

The banks make money on loans and are always anxious to make loans on good collateral, but the only parties who wanted loans, they were evidently afraid to loan to. The amount of money in circulation has never in this country, borne any real relation to prices. In 1929 when business reached its peak, there was less money in circulation than there has been at any time since. The only way that business can be stimulated by increasing the amount of money is to make it so cheap by increasing issues as to cause the people to lose confidence in it. Then they will rush to exchange it for commodities.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



This is an unhealthy business condition which always has, and always will, result in failure. If our citizens were definitely divided into a creditor and debtor class there might be some logic in attempting legislation or government action to attempt to relieve the debtor class. But that is not the condition. Our civilization is too complex to admit of any such division. Nobody gains by such a procedure, but those individuals who pay absolutely nothing towards their own support. This class always favors inflation and are responsible thru their voting power for inflation agitation during all depressions. But the class who realize that they have to support the government; that every dollar paid out by the government has to be paid back by taxation; that our present devaluation of the dollar takes from us in taxes three and a half billions of dollars, in addition to our present enormous tax rate, are not anxious to support any such procedure.

We have already too much paternalism in government. It does not pay. The law of supply and demand is basic in the changes of commodity prices. There is no exception to this law. In a world as intricate and complex as ours, no man or set of men is wise enough to interpret the many cross currents. It is these cross currents that defeat every attempt at government regulation of commodity prices. Any attempt to distinguish and weigh the infinite number of forces that play on the commodity price situation is impossible.

The fact is that the fundamental basis of all business depressions, whether in the stock market or general lines of industry and commerce, is nothing more or less than the working out of human nature, that is, man's reactions to his hopes and fears. Prosperity appears and men who have been thinking how carefully they will act

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



when times become better, during a time of depression, forget all their good intentions and go into excess in the way of credit expansion and slack methods of doing business.

If these statements are true, and they seem so to me, it would appear that the President should fire the "brain trust" and obtain the services of a good psychologist, that is, one who understands mass psychology. By this method the Washington crowd might be made to understand this mob psychology and accept it for what it is worth. They might instead of following this crowd try to curb it. Then it might occur to them that if taxes are reduced to the minimum by the elimination of all officeholders who do not earn their salaries; by the elimination of all government work except that which is really beneficial and by seeing that all who do government work earn their pay, they can relieve the taxpayer to such an extent that he can get himself out of the depression.

There are, however, two classes of people particularly hard hit in this depression. The first is the elderly group of people who, having lost all that they possessed, are unable to begin again and work up with the rising tide of prosperity which is now on the way and has been since July, 1932. The second is the youthful group who were too young to see the full effect of the 1921 and previous panics.

Neither of these classes will profit by the inflation. The small savings of old people will be depreciated as most of it is in life insurance and government bonds, and the younger class will have an unfair tax burden loaded on them. These two classes deserve our consideration more than any others.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



If the rest of us will weigh cautiously this political hot air, think a little and listen less (especially over their radio, which is completely subsidized) and recall the simple facts that money is not wealth but only its symbol; that wealth cannot be created by law nor nations made prosperous by politicians, we will then realize that the only way to gain a competence or accumulate wealth is to work for it, to save a little more than we earn; then and not until then will a surplus accumulate on the capital side of the ledger; then confidence will return, business pick up and we will embark on another period of prosperity which should swing upward higher than prosperity has ever reached in this country, with perhaps the exception of the hectic days of the world war. Until that time comes we need a little more backbone and a little less wishbone. Let us help ourselves and cease running to Washington for help. We begun that habit about twenty years ago and it has increased enormously since, until now we look to Washington for help instead of trying to help ourselves.

This country has been definitely started on a radically new monetary policy. The President clearly has determined to do two things: first, to inflate the currency, and, second, after inflation has gone far enough, to stabilize it. Having repudiated the Government Gold obligations and started the paper dollar on its downward course, it is now possible to continue the process of inflation as far as the President thinks proper.

As paper dollars are cheapened it will take more of them to buy commodities, that is, commodity prices will rise in terms of paper dollars.

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



The process so far of cheapening paper dollars in terms of gold is to offer more and more of them for an ounce of gold. This is to be accomplished by gradually increasing the price of gold.

After all, what a man who thinks about gold at all wants to know is, how much gold he can get for his paper - not how much paper he can get for his gold. Previously he knew just what he could get. That is, or was, 25.8 grains of gold nine tenths fine. Under the new plan he gets just what the Government thinks it is best to give him. Formerly when the Government gave gold for paper money it was called redeeming paper money. Under the new plan it is called selling gold.

When the Government wants to inflate the currency it will sell less and less gold for a paper dollar, or what amounts to the same thing, it will demand more paper dollars for an ounce of gold. When, if ever, it wants to deflate, it will sell more and more gold for a paper dollar or demand fewer dollars for an ounce of gold. The theory is to vary the number of grains of gold in such a way as to maintain the same purchasing power. It is a beautiful theory, but will it work? It is, it seems to me, the least objectionable policy of inflation that has been proposed but it is inflation nevertheless. It is simply borrowing our way to prosperity. It is creating purchasing power without the corresponding creation of goods (that is real wealth). Repayment of such debts thru gradual amortization is always a deflationary process as it takes purchasing power away from the people in the form of taxes.

In other words, we must pay. Why not pay now? Why load our children and their children with the mistakes of our generation?

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



We cannot spend or borrow our way to prosperity. We are told that the gold standard brought about the present collapse. I wonder if we as a people had anything to do with it. Let's not pass the buck. We were entering a period of depression at the beginning of the world war. The unusual and abnormal demand for goods saved us from a period of depression which would have been mild compared to the present one.

At the end of the war Europe owed us about twelve billion dollars. We demanded payment in gold. We refused goods. We prevented Europe paying us in goods by high tariffs, we prevented the normal action of the gold standard. We thought we could eat our cake and still have it. We suddenly became the creditor nation of the world and replaced England whose financiers had much more experience in world finance. We tried the same method England had used for centuries, that is, loaning more to our debtors, and probably would have been successful had it not been for the economic disaster brought on by the World War, and our high tariff.

England is in a better position to act as the world's banker because 25% of her trade is foreign trade while only 7½% of our trade is foreign. So if England had been the creditor nation the debtor countries would have had a better chance to pay their debts in exports, which is the only way a nation can really pay.

This country and France now possess over half of the world's gold supply. Suppose our present money policy causes France to go partially off the gold standard, that is, refuse to sell gold. They might shift to a paper curtency and send us all their gold on their left. We would then possess over half the world's gold supply. Would we be better off or worse? That in my opinion demands serious thought,

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



and that is a possibility.

The world's gold supply is now so unequally distributed that it is practically impossible for the leading nations to get back on the gold monetary basis and should our creditors decide to pay us on account, all the gold they possess, it would simply mean paper money for the rest of the world and we would be holding the bag.

The World War wrecked the gold standard and a similar war will wreck any other currency system. All the world is off the gold standard except France, Belgium, Holland and ~~Sweden~~ Switzerland. In all probability the gold standard will be gradually eliminated. In that case the world must have a managed paper money.

As most of the countries of the world depend chiefly on their internal trade they should strive for a fairly staple currency unit. This is only possible with a fluctuating foreign exchange. Previously the world has felt that a rather fixed foreign exchange was essential to foreign trade, but this is not so essential as a fixed internal currency. Suppose an international bank established a forward exchange market and since a forward exchange market can be instituted to shift the burden of exchange risk from commodity traders to voluntary speculators, paper currency can be made to work in foreign as well as domestic trade.

International traders selling goods abroad for foreign money due, say, on three months' credit, are enabled by means of the forward exchange market to sell the currency eventually due them three months hence at about the spot rate, thus eliminating their own exchange risk. Candidly, I think the gold standard will work if we permit its natural

ORRIS T. ALLEN, M. D.
ROOM 422 ROSE DISPENSARY BUILDING
TERRE HAUTE, INDIANA



flow across international trade boundaries to settle international trade balances. Paper exchange will also work but depends more on the human element. This human element should not be subject to the conflicting elements of political passions but should be as far removed from these as our Supreme Court Judges. It should not be the football of politics. It is not a political but an economic question and should be handled by an international group of practical economists and financiers.

Paper #18
Feb. 19, 1934

# SCARLET SUGAR

## The Curse of Cuba

By J. Marshall Taxay

American troops are encamped constantly on the soil of Cuba. It is territory yielded to us under duress. No secret it is that her independence is increasingly more one in name than in fact.

There are two objectives in ~~Cubarica~~ Cuba that dominate all else. One is that of American capital which seeks to harvest the largest profits without consideration of the inhabitants . The other is that of the State Department that concentrates on trying to maintain things as they are, to insure stability: Very often regardless of the desires of the natives.

These aims have been served by the Platt Amendment. To enforce it almost two dozen diplomatic interventions have resulted. Marines have been landed time and again. Our troops have been in Cuba, since its independence in 1902, over fifteen years. Four American governors have ruled the island openly, many others from behind the scenes. The Cubans know that they are not really free to conduct their own government. They know that independence is a fiction.

Gerardo Machado's regime was known as "the sawed-off shotgun" rule. He was called the "President of a thousand murders". Collective slaughter was carried on under his governement. Editors, business men, lawyers, physicians, labor leaders, members of Congress, professors and students were shot down in cold blood. They were ruthlessly slaughtered in their homes, on the avenue, or in prison by underworld gangsters, hirelings of the President.

He traveled in a $25,000 armored car. Troops unfailingly preceded and followed it. His Palace was encircled with machine guns. Police and soldiers packed it inside. Such popularity was not undeserved.

His father and he were known as cattle raiders. Taking part in the revolt against Spain, young Gerardo turned this pursuit into an exercise in patriotism, not without profit. When he was later elected mayor of the town he

st no time in burning down the building which contained documents con-
erning a criminal charge against his father.

He derived his experience in manipulating party machinery while serving
s Minister of the Interior. Handling light and power concessions he lavished
ese and other public utility privileges with measurable bounty for himself
n some of these enterprises he was given promotion shares, becoming half-
ner of the light company in the town he onee served as mayor.

The American Electric Bond and Share Co., entering Cuba in 1921 to buy up
ublic utilities, made Machado. It designated one of his intimates, Henry Cat-
in, who had been ushered out of another Latin-American country under a cloud,
resident and Machado vice-president. Two years later they had a monopoly
gas, electricity and water in over eighty communities.

The Havana Electric Light and Power Co., the Havana Electric Railway Co.,
e Cuban Electric, went through a series of intricate re-organizations and
tock wrenching. The Cuban Telephone system came under a subsidiary of the
nternational Telephone and Telegraph Co. The leading docks in Havana, managed
y the financiers of International Telephone, joined the family circle.
oth Electric Bond and Share and International are offspring of J. P. Morgan
Co. A tender solicitude for all of these sprawling brood was exercised by
Machado both before and after becoming President of Cuba.

Catlin, one of Machado's ~~intimates~~ cronies, furnished half a million fo
campaign. Friendly utilities invested another half a million. With the
tive backing of the elotric and banking interests, the former cattle raider
into the presidency.

He was nothing if not grateful. Arbitrarily the remaining light and powe
ions were crippled and later captured. The President's brother offered
ill in Congress to grant the light concerns perpetual fraenhises and to
e of them from all taxes present or future. When this failed the government
ected taxes to these interests in excess of ~~several~~ three million dollars. To-

ost no time in burning down the building which contained documents con-
erning a criminal charge against his father.

He derived his experience in manipulating party machinery while serving
s Minister of the Interior. Handling light and power concessions he lavished
these and other public utility privileges with measurable bounty for himself
n some of these enterprises he was given promotion shares, becoming half-
wner of the light company in the town he once served as mayor.

The American Electric Bond and Share Co., entering Cuba in 1921 to buy up
ublic utilities, made Machado. It designated one of his intimates, Henry Cat-
in, who had been ushered out of another Latin-American country under a cloud,
resident and Machado vice-president. Two years later they had a monopoly
f gas, electricity and water in over eighty communities.

The Havana Electric Light and Power Co., the Havana Electric Railway Co.,
he Cuban Electric, went through a series of intricate re-organizations and
tock drenching. The Cuban Telephone system came under a subsidiary of the
nternational Telephone and Telegraph Co. The leading docks in Havana, managed
y the financiers of International Telephone, joined the family circle.
ot. lectric Bond and Share and International are offspring of J. P. Morgan
Co. A tender solicitude for all of these sprawling brood was exercised by
achado both before and after becoming President of Cuba.

Catlin, one of Machado's ~~intimates~~ cronies, furnished half a million fo
s campaign. Friendly utilities invested another half a million. With the
ctive backing of the elctric and banking interests, the former cattle raider
le into the presidency.

He was nothing if not grateful. Arbitrarily the remaining light and power
.. ies were crippled and later captured. The President's brother offered
bill in Congress to grant the light concerns perpetual fraenhises and to
.. them from all taxes present or future. When this failed the government
..ted taxes to these interests in excess of ~~several~~ three million dollars. To-

260

...y, despite unusual privileges, Havana pays 17 cents a kilowatt hour; the ...est of the island from 22 to 29 cents.

A consumers' strike in Havana did not get very far. Machado terrorized ...leaders. He threatened to charge them with blackmail and, if necessary, "tear their heads off". Undaunted, other cities boycotted the concern. ...military authorites declared such movements treasonable and forbade all ...public gatherings and the press from discussing the issue.

Horrified as one may be at the manipulations of our banks and their use ...despotic instruments like Machado, there is a ghost even more terrifying ...hunting the hapless Cubans.

Because of us and for our benefit Cuba was made to bend every effort to ex... her sugar production at the expense of all other crops. Sugar and her ...dearness to us were responsible for Cuba's declaring war on Germany: purely ...to accomodate us. We thereupon reaped the choicest profits and later built ...able to defend ourselves at Cuba's expense. Of all our allies during the ...war Cuba was undoubtedly the best. Of all our allies we have treated her ...worst.

It is reality not rhetoric that declares that, "today, the white ghost ...in Cuba is sugar. This dread specter of Cuba's once flourishing industry stal... the sun-drenched land, striking fear through every heart. Her consort is ...tyranny. Behind her is a trail of murder and desolation".

Cuba was an armed camp. Men and women were jailed, tortured, murdered for ...trying to exercise legal rights, under Machado. But even today although ...political conditions are improving, economically Cuba is not a whit better ...off. Hordes of half-naked, scrawny wretches still roam the countryside, fal... like beasts on the slightest of morsel of food.

In 1908 Cuba produced 10% of the world' sugar supply. Because of our ...during the War Cuba was transformed into a gigantic sugar-bowl. In 1919 ...export of cane products was was 88% of all the island's exports. It was

arent she was heading for disaster.

The collapse came. American bankers alarmed for their loans to the ar powers pressed Machado. In 1925, at their behest, he began a paternalis— policy which ~~was~~ aggravated every evil beyond remedy for a long time. chose to side with the financial powers who were to reciprocate with loans carry on his tyrannous administration.

Machado instituted a system of state control, with restrictions of tput, not to benefit Cuba but to aid in salavaging the securites of Amerin bankers. When in 1926 a 10% reduction in mill output was ordered, the otas were assigned dictatorially. Machado's friends were taken care of.

Jose Tarafa, father-in-law of Cintas, a partner of ~~William~~ H. Woodin olitical schemes of high finance, was responsbile for limiting the Cuban in 1927 to four million tons. He went to Europe to form a syndicate of t-sugar producers of France, Germany, Poland, Holland, Belgium and Czechoakia.

Cuba, as a result of agreements with three of these countries, reduced crop another half million tons. Curiously the other countries were permitd to increase their output so that their producers could not even fill the otas. The price of sugar was not bettered; world production did not decte. The financial situation in Cuba grew worse.

With lowering prices, many producers were again threatened with bankcy. The banks became ever more alarmed at the possiblity of losing ared money, being already stacked with bought or foreclosed sugar. At this ncture there appeared a glittering Messiah.

At the end of 1930 Secretary Stimson repeated our "hands-off" policy; r ambassador Harry Guggenheim put his official seal of approval on the cent bloody elections. Cuba was to be saved: for the bankers. Thomas Chadrne went to Cuba to make sure of that.

e had a basis of understanding with Guggenheim because of mutual inte—

sts in aviation and mining. Previously he had been in touch with a Woodin
ng during the sugar lobbying in Washington. With three executives of Chase
t. nal Bank he served on the board of Otis Elevator Co. One of these direc-
rs, Charles Hayden, was interested in the Cuban Portland Cement Co, Coca-
la, which has huge investments in Cuba, and diverse toher Cuban sugar sub-
idiaries. Both Hayden and Chadbourne are heads of the Matanzas Sugar Co. in
t. His connections with Parkinson of Chase, G. M. Dahl, former president
ric Bond and Share, James Post, leader in Chase Bank sugar proper-
s' management, left no doubt of Chase's interst in ~~the~~ the Chadbourne scheme.

e advised Cuba that a genetlemen's agreement existed with American
ers regarding production restriction. No confirmation of such an agree-
t ever came to light. He proceeded to take Cuba for a ride on a scheme
which has brought ruin to ~~the~~ its masses ~~of Cuba~~.

He was at first domiciled in the American Embassy which appeared to
official color to his mission. The women of Cuba in a resolution of
protest charged our Ambassador with responsibility as one one of the prime
ers of the Chadbourne plan which proved "fatal to our economy".

The Chadbourne plan for the restriction of the sugar crop of Cuba involved
~~[illegible]~~ $42,000,000 bonds to be used in buying one and
f million tons of sugar, from supplies largely impounded by banks, and
it from the market. The agreement between the Republic of Cuba, the
National Bank and the National City Bank, and their creature, the New
Sugar Exporting Corporation, was signed December 16, 1930.

The scheme appears to have been designed to permit the banks to get
their loans and to allow the large foreign ~~plantations~~ contractors to break their
with the growers. It further benefited American beet-sigar growers
Be-growers in Hawaii, the Philippines and Puerto Rico. Reportedly Sec-
Wilson was personally interested.

For Cuba the plan has spelled economic suicide. For the major sugar country of the world, with costs of production as low as anywhere, to enter into a restriction agreement is, as it has proved itself, a fatal folly. Especially since under the scheme Poland and Hungary agreed to curtail production 14 and 5 percent respectively, while other countries were permitted to increase their output from 3 to 27 percent; but Cuba was pledged to cut production 33%!

The 1931 quota saw the European and Java cuts of 22% while Cuba's, in comparison to the 1929 crop, was over 51%.. For every pound Cuba held off the market other countries hastened to provide the want. Cuba which furnished 1/6 of the world's supply in 1925, in 1931 provided but 11%. Through the banks and American utilities keeping Machado in authority at the point of machine guns, through high pressure publicists and propagandists like Rockefeller's press agent prodigy, Ivy Lee, Cuba, according to an authority, "the world's most efficient sugar mechanism has been effectively broken across the back".

Hundreds have thrown up their hands and abandoned their properties to the jungle, the insects or the banks. Wholesale unemployment and a frightful reduction of wages have followed. The Chadbourne scheme has reduced the majority of the half a million workers in the industry to semi-starvation. The misery of the average Cuban in the countryside is so pitiful that despite their own crisis the horror cannot be accurately visualized.

Wages for one month of cane cutting do not average 25 cents a day. In some places the workers earn 9 cents, in others 3 cents a day--for one month's work a year. Thus even during the one month of employment the worker is starved; the rest of the year he lives on roots, sleeps in the streets of the city, begs or steals.

Says a Cuban economist, "While all countries are trying to solve the unemployment problem, in Cuba we are restricting the work we naturally have

in a vain effort to control our sugar price". At the normal proportion the wage outlay for an average crop would have yielded about $535,000,000 in wages for the period of the plan. The restriction means a loss of $180,000,00 at normal rates. With the synchronous drop in wages, the loss in five years will total over $400,000,000. All this in order to save a paltry $38,000,000 for American bankers.

The sugar industry, moreover, unlike petroleum or silver which can be left in the ground, is a perishable industry. An uncut cane-field deteriorates. In a few years it is lost. New machinery deteriorates; knowledge, for lack of continued research and alertness for new mwthods, new ways of promoting output, likewise deteriorates.

The bankers own today probably over three--fourths of the sugar properties through default. In raiding the industry they failed to consider the future. They sought only immediate profit. They have been so myopic that they have lost infinitely more than they have gained by the ruin of an industry and a people.

This is saddening not merely for Cuba, but for us in America. Sugar for hundred years ago was medicine or a rare spice. Today it is one of the exceedingly significant products. In normal times each of us in the United States consumes over 100 pounds a year. We pay for it much more than we should. The beet-sugar industry, artificial in character and dependent on ruthlessly exploited labor of children even today, coupled with its tariff policy has added $247,00,000 of annual cost to the American consumer. Not only 2% of our farmers cultivate beet-sugar; everyone of them uses sugar.

Our own beet-sugar industry can never meet our demands. We cannot supply our own sugar needs. It is also not merely a food but an indispensable commodity in war, essential for war industries and chemical manufacture. The only sugar country with which we can be sure of communication

in Cuba!

In case of war. Besides ruining a a valuable market, we have aided in destroying our national security. Private interests illustrate again their willingness to hazard our security, placing their own interests above the needs of the nation.

We HAVE brought Cuba into being. We have obligations there as well as rights. At our request Cuba loyally aided us in the late War. Can the conscience of America tolerate the policy of ruin and despair, pursued by a dominating coterie of brigands of high finance, which is leading Cuba through implacable tryanny to the holocaust of a bloody rebellion?

Is it too much to hope that a more enlightened Department of State will help exorcise the vampire of exploitation, that the ghost of scarlet sugar cease stalking under Cuba's calm blue sky?

Paper #19. 266

THE MARRIED WOMAN IN INDUSTRY

Manuscript of paper read by Chas. Zimmerman
before Terre Haute Literary Club, 7:30 P. M.,
Monday Feb 26, 1934

In these troubled times one hears on all sides discussions of the problem of the married woman in industry and, as is usual in such discussions, many statements are being made which are not based upon facts or reason. In my judgment the married woman is in industry to stay. She is not an isolated figure, but a part of our machine age. As I view this problem it is but a part of the whole woman movement which is essentially a demand for equality of opportunity between the sexes. It means that when a woman is as well qualified as a man to fill a position she shall have an equal and unprejudiced chance to secure it.

At the present time of the married woman is in a difficult position. In boom times industry seeks her services. In times of depression she is looked upon by many as a menace to the social standards of the community. She is held up as one depriving men of jobs. Yet if one takes time to think it thru, the discharge of all the married woman employees would not give many jobs to men. This point seems to have been overlooked by many.

Everyone realizes that the home of to-day is in a transitional period. Gone are the days when the home was a tailor shop, a bakery, a cannery, a butcher shop, a packing plant, and a laundry. In rural sections the wife is still able to contribute her share to the support of the home thru her garden, her poultry, her cow, and her household production. But in the city such a condition does not prevail. If the wife desires to contribute to the support of the family she is forced by economic development and

the specialization of labor to make her contribution in the form of money. This puts her into industry in a part or full time job.

Formerly marriage for the woman was looked upon as economic security. But to-day women no longer look upon marriage in this light since well trained, able, and deserving men under the new conditions are unable to make enough money to meet the needs of the family. Divorce, death, or loss of the family's money and income may put the housewife in the position where she is forced to offer her services to industry. What has she to offer if she has not been trained in industrial work.

Another of the changing conditions confronting us to-day is the continual pressure upon us to consume. The home of the past had for its goal conservation. This has changed to consumption. As we speed up the process of consumption, as our pleasure philosophy takes deeper hold, as the demand for luxuries, artificially stimulated by skillfull advertising, mounts steadily higher, there seems to be but one solution--the woman must become a wage earner. A two-car family ideal demands a two-wage family.

In the good old days the husband was looked upon as the wage earner. I am wondering whether or not our changing life has brought about a change such that we have come to look upon the home as a place in which all the adults may be wage-earners. Have conditions changed so that the modern wife does not need to work in the home from sunrise to sunset? Would we have a higher standard of living if the wife were a wage-earner along side her husband?

In spite of the fact that women are entering practically all the professions and pursuits in ever increasing numbers the deeply rooted idea persists that the place of the woman is in the

home and that she should not seek employment outside. This idea ignores the fact that many women are so constituted that they must have an outlet other than the home for their energies and that they have a desire for personal success. In such cases, unless the woman does some kind of work outside the home, marriage proves a restraint which in the end makes all parties more or less miserable. Should a college trained woman, upon entering the bonds of matrimony, give up her work and keep house,

What is the attitude of industry toward the employment of married women, In thinking over the problem, I wonder if woman is deliberatly setting about to free herself from home duties or whether industry, which originally pushed her into the home as her sphere has, because of its rapid changes and complexities, found her economically desirable. From a cold blooded economic view we realize that when the industrialist and the business man decide that the employment of married women will make greater profits and more satisfied customers sentiment now existing against the employment of the married woman will be swept aside. In the past, women in order to get into the industrial and business world had to have one of two qualifications: either they had to excel their male competitors or they had to work for less money. From 1920 to 1929 they took whatever crumbs they could get. With the onset of the depression these women became economically desirable with the result that of the 10,000,000 women wage earners about one out of four are the main support of the family. One of every 11 wives is gainfully employed to-day.

Why do married women seek work outside of the home? Studies made by the United States Bureau of Labor show, that generally speaking, they are in industry for one purpose only--to provide

269

necessities for their families or to raise their standard of living. Other studies show as reasons:

(1) Family income insufficient

(2) Desire to save money

(3) Desire to educate the children

(4) Wage earner sick

(5) Pay debts already contracted

(6) Desire for an occupation outside the home

(7) Provide conveniences for the home and family not obtainable on the husband's income

(8) Home life lonesome

Personally I am inclined to feel that most married women work in order to make both ends meet. This raises the question of whether or not it is ethical or sound economics to pay a man so little that he cannot keep his family as it should be kept. Under the present distribution of wealth many intelligent married women must face the problem of staying at home and bringing up the children in meager, ill furnished, unattractive homes, or of trying to do a double job by being homemaker, and wage earner. Personally I am of the opinion that the greater part of the married women now working would give up their outside employment should the husband's earning capacity be increased.

This paper would hardly be complete without a discussion of the married woman who desires a career. If this career is based upon natural ability and years of training, I see no reason why marriage should terminate it. Why should a woman skilled as a bacteriologist, or a musician, or a painter, or an actress give up her work upon marriage? But a danger looms ahead for the married woman seeking a career. When the time comes that the career becomes her main purpose in life, the home passes into the background and becomes a house in which people merely live. The basis of the home

270

is love. If the employment of the wife makes for conditions under which this love grows and flourishes, all is well, but if it substitutes a career for the love upon which the home is founded it is destructive.

There are many practical questions which may be asked about the whole problem. If a married woman has greater chance for financial success that her husband which career should dominate? Should the lesser stand in the way of the better? If a teacher whose wife is a skilled bacteriologist gets a call to a better position in a small college should he accept or reject it? Should the married woman gainfully employed and furnishing the good things of life to her family give up her nob or not? If the working of the mother provides the means of sending her children thru high school and college should she sacrifice them by not working? If your wife took a notion that she desired to be employed in a part time job what would you do about it? What is a mother to do whose family has grown up and left the old home-place?

During the past 3 years the business depression, unemployment, and the surplus of trained teachers have tended to increase the discussion of the status of the married woman teacher in the public schools. Generally speaking a woman teacher's marriage is equivalent to resignation or not being reemployed in the great majority of the American school districts. Such is not true in the other lines of work in which women are employed. Save in negligible instances, the office, the store, the factory, and the telephone switchboard put up no such wholesale closing of the door against women marrying, provided that physically, mentally, or temperamentally, they are capable of doing the work required in a satisfactory manner. Those who advocate the elimination of the

married women from the public schools are forced to take the position that the schools do not exist for the benefit of the child or that married women are inferior as teachers to single women--a position which would be difficult to prove. They are forced to maintain that single women have a better understanding of children than do married women and are therefore better able to straighten out the kinks in children, resulting from bad home training. They are forced to maintain that tax money is only for needy citizens. To make their case, they must prove that the child being taught is better taught by single women than by those who have married. The view point of the real school executive is that individual merit alone should determine who are to be the teachers of the children in the American public schools.

The average American schoolboard wants to do what it feels is best for the schools. Under present conditions the member of a school board is in a difficult position since the voices of the local umemployed teachers and their relatives, personal and political, are continually filling the ear of the school trustee with pleas to turn out the married women teachers. These are the voices of pressure while the voice of the schools is a still, small voice pleading for the American child, who has no vote and is unable to determine the conditions under which he shall live and grow.

One of the queer things to me is the attitude of school authorities who refuse to employ women who have made marriage a success but are willing to use those who have failed in that capacity. How can such a policy be justified?

If the married woman is in industry to stay what is our future? No one will dispute the statement that the American home will unquestionably change many of its outward aspects. The home of our fathers has passed into history. Who will say that the home of to-day

272

and of the future will have less love than formerly or that the parents of to-morrow will be less devoted to their children than the parents of the good old days? Who will say that the home of the future will not be better than that of to-day?

Paper #20

# THE MORMONS IN ILLINOIS

J. L. Lord

3/5/34

# FOREWORD

This is a story of the Mormons in their early years. It is concerned chiefly with their approach to, stay in, and exit from the commonwealth of Illinois in the 40's of the last century. Gov. Thomas Ford who was the state's executive during a very trying period left an unpublished history of the state of Illinois. As it was to be published after he had passed on and in death was beyond criticism for having spoken the truth clearly and to the point we find in it a candor rarely observed. Ford died in 1850. The History was published in 1854. It is very interesting from the standpoint of punctuation and literary style. It deals with all phases of early Illinois history. From it I have picked out almost boldly the story of the Mormons as he knew it. What I give you is but a meager portion of what he wrote. It will, However, touch upon all representative phases of the Mormon's activities and of the state's reaction to them. If it does not deal with polygamy, and some of the other moot questions which may arise in your thinking concerning the Mormons, to the extent you would like please remember that

"Much that may be thot cannot wisely be said"

unless like Ford you leave it to be published when you are dead.

The people we call Mormons, but who call themselves "the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints," began to figure in the politics of the state of Illinois in 1840. They were a religious sect, the followers of a man by the name of Joe Smith, who was claimed by them to be a prophet. Smith was born at Sharon, Vt., in 1805. His parents were in humble circumstances, and gave the son but an indifferent education. When he first began to act the prophet, he was ignorant of almost everything which belonged to science. He made up in natural cunning and in power of invention and constructiveness for deficiencies in schooling. When he was ten years old, his parents moved to Palmyra, N. Y. Here, his early youth was spent in an idle, vagabond life, roaming the woods, dreaming of buried treasures, and exerting himself in learning the art of finding them by the twisting of a forked stick in his hands or by looking thru enchanted stones. He and his father were what were called "waterwitches." There are many anecdotes of his early life giving bright promise of future profligacy.

Such was Joe Smith when he was found by Sidney Rigdon, a man of considerable talents and information. Rigdon had come into possession of a religious romance written by a Presbyterian minister in Ohio then dead, which suggested to him the idea of starting a new religion. It was agreed that Joe Smith should be put forward as a prophet; and the two devised a story that golden plates had been found, buried in the earth, in the neighborhood of Palmyra, containing a record inscribed on them, in unknown characters, which, when deciphered by the power of inspiration, gave the history of the lost tribes of Israel, in their wanderings thru Asia into America

where they had settled and flourished, and where, in due time, Christ came preached his gospel to them, appointed his twelve apostles and was crucified here, nearly in the same manner in which he was crucified in Jerusalem. The record then pretended to give the history of the American Christians for a few hundred years until the great wickedness of the people called down the judgments of God upon them which resulted in their extermination. Several nations and people were arrayed against each other in war. At last the great battle of Cumorah was fought in Palmyra between the Lamanites, the heathen, and the Nephites, the Christians. In this battle hundreds of thousands were slain on each side. The Nephites, the Christians, were destroyed except for a few who had deserted and for a few who had escaped into the south country. Among those who escaped were Mormon and his son Moroni, who were righteous men and who it was said were directed by the Almighty to make a record of all these solemn and important events on plates of gold and bury them in the earth to be discovered in a future age. It is needless to add that the pretended translation of the hieroglyphics said to be inscribed on these pretended plates was no more nor less than the religious romance of the Presbyterian pastor but which now appeared as the Book of Mormon.

The translation was effected by the use of two stones transparent and clear as crystal, the Urim and the Thummim, used by seers of ancient times, the instruments of revelations of things distant, past or future. The Urim and the Thummim were found alongside the plates of gold.

When the prophet first saw these things the news of his

discovery got abroad. The new prophet was the butt of lies, slanders, and mobs, and vain attempts to rob him of his plates. He moved to Pennsylvania where he continued his translations. All this was made possible thru the use of inspiration and the Urim and the Thummim. The story is remarkably well gotten up.

Smith did not lack for followers. In a short time he returned to another place in New York and after a short stay there started westward. The main body of his followers went to Missouri but Smith stopped at Kirtland, Ohio. Here he set up in grand style dealing in the civic as well as in his new religious ISM. His Missouri followers soon got into difficulty there and the major part of them went to him. A short period of arrogance coupled with unscrupulous dealings caused the people of Kirtland who were not of his faith to make it so uncomfortable for him that he "shook the dust off his feet as a testimony against Ohio."

Next they settledin northwestern Missouri. Here they purchased large tracts of land from the U. S. government and built the city of Far West and many smaller towns. Difficulties again attended them. They did not fail to display here the usual arrogance of their pretensions and were charged by the neighboring people with every kind of petty villany. It was a repetition of what had happened to the others who had settled at first at Independence while Smith was in Ohio: where "by pretending that the Lord had given them all that country, and in fact the whole world, they being His Saints, and by some petty offenses and by their general tone of arrogance, the neighboring people became much excited against them. Some of them were ducked in the river; some were tarred and feathered,

and others killed; and the whole of them were compelled to remove..." In a few years the quarrel between the Saints and the Gentiles (all non-saints) became utterly irreconcilable. The Mormon leaders said that they would no longer submit to the Gov't. of Missouri. The clerk of the Circuit Court being a Mormon was ordered by the prophet to issue no more writs against the Saints. The preaching of what has been called the "Salt Sermon" by Sidney Rigdon told the Mormons that the prophet had determined no longer to regard the laws of Missouri. The people assembled under arms to drive the Mormons from the state. The Mormon reprised by robbing and plundering the surrounding territory. The militia surrounded the city, Far West. The Mormons were compelled to surrender at discretion.

All the Mormons except the leaders were dismissed under a promise to leave the state. The leaders including the prophet were tried before a court martial and sentenced to be shot for treason. But as this was unconstitutional they were taken before a circuit judge and committed to jail for further trial on various charges. They finally made their escape out of jail and out of the state before they could be brought to trial.

The whole body of Missouri Mormons came to Illinois in the years 1339-1340. As they were the weaker party in the Missouri conflict much sympathy was felt and expressed for them by the people of Illinois. The Mormons represented that they had been persecuted in Missouri on account of their religion. "The cry of persecution if believed is always sure to create sympathy for the sufferers. This was particularly so in Illinois, whose citizens until sometime after this period, were justly distinguished for feelings and prindples

of the most liberal and enlightened toleration in matters of religion." The Mormons were received as sufferers in the cause of their religion. Several counties and neighborhoods vied with each other in offers of hospitality and in endeavors to get the sect to settle among them.

At last the Mormons selected a place along the Mississippi River afterwards called Nauvoo, as a place of their future residence. On this spot located on the east bank of the Mississippi River almost directly west of what is now Peoria, Ill., and about fifteen miles north of Keokuk, Iowa, they planned to build up a great city and temple to be used as the great central rendezvous of the sect. From here they planned to originate and spread the most gigantic operations for the conversion of the world to the new religion.

((From here on this paper will deal more with the political considerations connected with the Mormons as they affected Illinois than it will the religious aspects of their lives.))

In the state of Missouri the Mormons had always supported the Democratic Party. They had been driven out by a Democratic governor of a Democratic state; and when they appealed to Mr. Van-Buren, the Democratic president, for relief against the Missourians, he refused to recommend it for want of constitutional power in the U. S. to coerce a sovereign state in the execution of its domestic policy. This soured and embittered the Mormons against the Democrates. Mr. Clay, as a member of the U. S. Senate, and John T. Stuart, a member of the House, from Illinois, both Whigs, undertook their cause and introduced and countenanced their memorials against Missouri. Thus when the Mormons came to Illinois they attached themselves to the Whig party. In August, 1340, they voted unani-

mously for the Whig candidates. In the November following they voted for the Whig candidate for president and in August 1841 they voted for Stuart, the Whig who had espoused their cause.

At the legislature of 1840-41 it became a matter of great interest with both parties to conciliate these people. They were already numerous and were rapidly increasing by immigration. It was evident that they were to possess much power in the elections. They had already signified their intention of joining neither party, futher than that they would be supported by that party. They openly said they would support the party or persons who would give them most service.

The Mormons had now become about 16,000 strong in Hancock County and several thousand more were scattered about in other counties. Governor Carlin in 1842, had issued his warrant for the arrest of Joe Smith their prophet, as a fugitive from justice in Missouri. This warrant had never been executed, and was still outstanding. The Mormons were desirous of having the cause of arrest legally tested in the federal court. Upon their application a duplicate warrant was issued in the winter of 1842-43, and placed in the hands of the sheriff of Sangamon County. Upon this Joe Smith came to Springfield and surrendered himself a prisoner. A writ of habeas corpus was obtained from Judge Pope of the federal court, and Smith was discharged.

Upon this proceeding the Whigs founded a hope of obtaining the future support of the Mormons. The democratic officers in Missouri and Illinois were instrumental in procuring his arrest. He was discharged this time by a Whig Judge; and his cause had been

managed by Whig lawyers. As in the case decided by Judge Douglass, Smith was too ignorant of law to know whether he owed his discharge to the law, or to the favor of the court and the Whig party, Such was the ignorance and stupidity of the Mormons generally, that they deemed anything to be law which they judged to be expedient. All action of the government which bore hard on them, however legal, they looked upon as wantonly oppressive: and when the law was administered in their favor, they attributed it to partiality. In this manner the Mormons this time were made to believe that they were under great obligations to the Whigs for the discharge of their prophet from what they believed to be the persecutions of the democrats; and they resolved to yield their support to the Whig party in the next election.

An election for Congress in the Mormon district was to come off in August, 1843. Cyrus Walker was the candidate on the part of the Whigs, and Joseph P. Hoge on the part of the Democrats; both of them distinguished lawyers. The Mormons very early decided to support Mr. Walker, the Whig.

Dr. John C. Bennett, heretofore mentioned as an influential favorite of the Mormon Leaders, had been expelled from the Church in 1842. By publications and lectures delivered in various parts of the United States, he undertook to expose the doctrines, designs, and government of the Mormons, and to do them all the injury in his power. A part of his plan was to get up a new indictment against Joe Smith and Orrin P. Rockwell

for an attempt to murder Gov. Boggs in Missouri. An indictment was found in Missouri aguinst Smith and Rockwell on the 6th of June, 1843. On the 7th a messenger from Missouri presented himself to the Governor of Illinois with a copy of the indictment, and a new demand from the governor of Missduri. A new warrant, in pursuance of the constitution of the United States was issued, and placed in the hands of a constable in Hancock.

This constable and the Missouri agent hastened to Nauvoo to make the arrest, where they ascertained that Joe Smith was on a visit to Rock River. They pursued him thither, and succeeded in arresting him in Palestine Grove, in the county of Lee. The Constable immediately delivered his prisoner to the Missouri agent, and returned his warrant as having been executed. The agent started with his prisoner in the direction on Missouri, but on the road was met by a number of armed Mormons, coming to the rescue of their prophet, who conducted him in grand triumph to his own city. Cyrus Walker, Whig candidate for Congress, was sent for, as a lawyer to defend him; a writ of habeas corpus was issued out of the municipal court; Mr. Walker appeared as his counsel, and made a wonderful exertion, in a speech three hours long, to prove to the municipal court, composed of Joe Smith's tools and particular friends, that they had the jurisdiction to issue and act on the writ under the ordinance of their city. Mr. Hoge, also, the Democratic candidate, had gone to Nauvoo seeking the votes of the Mormons.

He and Mr. Walker were both called upon, in a public assembly of the Mormons to express their opinion as to the legality of this ordinance of the city giving to the municipal court power to issue writs of habeas corpus in all cases of imprisonment, and both of them gave their solemn opinion in favor of the power. The Mormons were thus deluded and deceived by men who ought to have known and did know better. It was a common thing for this people to be eternally asking and receiving advice. If judicious and legal advice were given to them, they rejected it with scorn, when it came in conflict with their favorite projects; for which reason all persons designing to use them, made it a rule to find out what they were in favor of, and advise them accordingly. In this mode the Mormons relied for advice, for the most part, upon the most corrupt of mankind, "This has always been a difficulty with the Mormons, and grew out of their blind fanaticism, which refused to see or hear anything against their system, but more out of the corruption of their leaders, whose objects being generally roguish and rotten, required corrupt and rotten advisers to keep them in countenance."

The municipal court discharged Joe Smith from his arrest; the Missouri agent immediately applied to Governor Ford for a militia force, to renew it; and Mr. Walker came to the seat of government, on the part of the Mormons, to resist the application. It was afterwards decided not to call out the militia, because the writ had been returned as having been fully executed by the delivery of Joe Smith to the Missouri agent; after which it was entirely a question

between Missouri and Smith, with which Illinois had nothing to do, except to issue a new warrant if one had been demanded.

The Democratic managers about Nauvoo, after the usual fashion of managing the Mormons by both parties, terrified them if they voted for the Whig candidate, as they were yet determined, with the prospect of the militia being sent against them.

Backinstos, a managing democrat of Hancock county, was sent as a messenger to Springfield to ascertain positively what the governor would do if the Mormons voted the Democratic ticket. Gov. Ford happened to be absent at St. Louis, and Backinstos went home pretending that he had the most ample assurances of favor to the Mormons, so long as they voted the Democratic ticket. The mission of Backinstos produced a total change in the minds of the Mormon leaders. They now resolved to drop their friend Walker and take up Hoge, the democratic candidate. Backinstos returned only a day or two before the election, and there was only a short time for the leaders to operate in. A great meeting was called of several thousand Mormons on Saturday before the election. Hiram Smith, Patriarch in the Mormon Church, and brother of the prophet, appeared in this great assembly, and there solemnly announced to the people, that God had revealed to him that the Mormons must support Mr. Hoge, the democratic candidate. William Law, another great leader of the Mormons, next appeared, and denied that the Lord had made any such revelation. He stated that,

to his certain knowledge, the prophet Joseph was in favor of Mr. Walker, and that the prophet was more likely to know the mind of the Lord on the subject than the patriarch. Hiram Smith again repeated his revelation with a greater tone of authority. But the people remained in doubt until the next day, being Sunday, when Joe Smith himself appeared before the assembly. He there stated that "he himself was in favor of Mr. Walker, and intended to vote for him; that he would not, if he could, influence any voter in giving his vote; that he considered it a mean business for him or any other man to attempt to dictate to the people whom they should support in elections; that he had heard his brother Hiram had received a revelation from the Lord on the subject of elections; but brother Hiram was a man of truth; he had known brother Hiram intimately ever since he was a boy, and he had never known him to tell a lie. If brother Hiram said he had received such a revelation, he had no doubt it was a fact. When the Lord speaks, let all the earth be silent."

This decided the Mormon vote. The next day Mr. Hoge received about three thousand votes in Nauvoo, and was elected to Congress by six or eight hundred majority. The result of the election struck the Whigs with perfect amazement.

While the Whigs fancied themselves secure of getting the Mormon vote for Mr. Walker, the Whig newspapers had entirely ceased their accustomed abuse of the Mormons. They now renewed their crusade against them. Every paper was loaded with accounts of the wickedness, corruptions, and enormities of Nauvoo. The whig orators groaned with complaints and denunci-

ations of the democrats, who would consent to receive Mormon support, and the democratic officers of the State were violently charged and assaulted with using the influence of their offices to govern the Mormons. From this time forth the Whigs generally, and a part of the democrats, determined upon driving the Mormons out of the State. Everything connected with the Mormons became political, and was considered almost entirely with reference to party. To this circumstance in part, is to be attributed the extreme difficulty ever afterwards of doing anything effectually in relation to the Mormon or anti-Mormon parties, by the executive government.

It appears that the Mormons had been directed by their leaders to vote the whig ticket in the Quincy, as well as the Hancock district. In the Quincy district, Judge Douglass was the democratic candidate, O. H. Browning was the candidate of the whigs. The leading Mormons at Nauvoo having not determined in favor of the democrats until a day or two before the election, there was not sufficient time, or it was neglected, to send orders from Nauvoo into the Quincy district, to effect a change there. The Mormons in that district voted for Browning, the Whig.

No further demand for the arrest of Joe Smith having been made by Missouri, he became more arrogant and overbearing. In the winter of 1843-44, the common council passed some further ordinances to protect their leaders from arrest, on demand from Missouri. They enacted that no writ issued from any other

place than Nauvoo, for the arrest of any person in it should be executed in the city without an approval endorsed thereon by the major; that if any public officer by virtue of any foreign writ should attempt to make an arrest in the city, without such approval of his process, he should be subject to imprisonment for life, and that the governor of the State should not have the power of pardoning the offender without the consent of the mayor. When these ordinances were published, they created general astonishment. Many people began to believe in earnest that the Mormons were about to set up a separate government for themselves in defiance of the laws of the State. Owners of property stolen in other counties, made pursuit into Nauvoo, and were fined by the Mormon courts for daring to seek their property in the holy city. Several of the Mormons had been convicted of larceny, and they never failed in any instance to procure petitions signed by 1,500 or 2,000 of their friends for their pardon. But that which made it more certain than everything else, that the Mormons contemplated a separate government, was that about this time they petitioned Congress to establish a territorial government for them in Nauvoo.

To crown the whole folly of the Mormons, in the spring of 1844, Joe Smith announced himself as a candidate for president of the United States. His followers were confident that he would be elected. Two or three thousand missionaries were immediately sent out to preach their religion, and to electioneer in favor of their prophet for the presidency. This folly at

once covered the Mormons with ridicule in the minds of all sensible men and brought them into conflict with the zealots and bigots of all policital parties; just as the arrogance and extravagance of their religious pretensions had already aroused the opposition of all other denominations in religion.

It seems, from the best information which could be gotten from the best men who had seceded from the Mormon church, that Joe Smith about this time conceived the idea of making himself a temporal prince as well as a spiritual leader of his people. He instituted a new and select order of the priesthood, the members of which were to be priests and kings temporarily and spiritually. These were to be his nobility, the upholders of his throne. He caused himself to be crowned and anointed king and priest, far above the rest, and he prescribed the form of an oath of allegiance to himself, which he administered to his principal followers. To uphold his pretensions to royalty, he deduced his descent by an unbroken chain from Joseph the son of Jacob, and that of his wife from some other renowned personage of Old Testament History. The Mormons openly denounced the government of the United States as utterly corrupt, and as being about to pass away, and to be replaced by the government of God, to be administered by his servant Joseph. It is now at this day certain also, that about this time the prophet reinstituted an order in the church, called the "Danite band." These were to be a body of police and guards about the person of their sovereign, who were to obey his orders as the orders of God himself. About

this time also he gave a new touch to a female order already existing in the church, called "Spiritual Wives." A doctrine was now revealed that no woman could get to heaven except as the wife of a Mormon elder. The elders were allowed to have as many of these wives as they could maintain; and it was a doctrine of the church, that any female could be "sealed up to eternal life" by uniting herself as wife or concubine to the elder of her choice. This doctrine was maintained by an appeal to the Old Testament scriptures; and by the example of Abraham and Jacob, of David and Solomon, the favorites of God in a former age of the world.

Soon after these institutions were established, Joe Smith began to play the tyrant over several of his followers. The first act of this sort which excited attention, was an attempt to take the wife of William Law, one of his most talented and principal disciples, and make her a spiritual wife. By means of his common council, without the authority of law, he established a recorder's office in Nauvoo, in which alone the titles of property could be recorded. In the same manner and with the same want of legal authority he established an office for issuing marriage licenses to the Mormons, so as to give him absolute control of the marrying propensities of his people. He proclaimed that none in the city should purchase real estate to sell again, but he himself. He also permitted no one but himself to have a license in the city for the sale of spirituous liquor; and in many other ways he undertook to regulate and control the business of the Mormons.

This despotism administered by a corrupt and unprincipled man, soon became intolerable. William Law, one of the most eloquent preachers of the Mormons, who appeared to be deluded but conscientious and a candid man; Wilson Law, his brother, major-general of the legion, and four or five other Mormon leaders, resolved upon a rebellion against the authority of the prophet. They designed to enlighten their brethren and fellow-citizens upon the new institutions, the new turn given to Mormonism, and the practices under the new system, by procuring a printing press and establishing a newspaper in the city, to be the organ of their complaints and views. They issued but one number; before the second could appear the press was demolished by an order of the common council, and conspirators were ejected from the Mormon church.

The Mormons themselves published the proceedings of the council in the trial and destruction of the heretical press; from which it does not appear that any one was tried, or that the editor or any of the owners of the property had notice of the trial, or were permitted to defend in any particular. The proceeding was an ex parte proceeding, partly civil and partly ecclesiastical, against the press itself. No jury was called or sworn, nor were the witnesses required to give their evidence upon oath. The councillors stood up one after the other, and some of them several times, and related what they pretended to know. In this mode it was abundantly proved that the owners of the proscribed press were sinners, whore-masters, thieves, swindlers, counterfeiters and robbers; the

evidence of which is reported in the trial at full length. It was altogether the most curious and irregular trial that ever was recorded in any civilized country; and one finds difficulty in determining whether the proceedings of the council were more the result of insanity or depravity. The trial resulted in the conviction of the press as a public nuisance. The mayor was ordered to see it abated as such, and if necessary, to call the legion to his assistance. The mayor issued his warrant to the city marshal, who, aided by a portion of the legion, proceeded to the obnoxious printing office and destroyed the press and scattered the type and other materials.

After this it became too hot for the seceding and rejected Mormons to remain in the holy city. They retired to Carthage, and the county seat of Hancock county; and took out warrants, for the mayor and members of the common council and others engaged in the outrage for a riot. Some of these were arrested, but were immediately taken before the municipal court of the city on habeas corpus, and discharged from custody.

On the seventeenth day of June following, a committee from a meeting of the citizens of Carthage presented themselves to the Governor with a request that the militia be ordered out to assist in executing process in the city of Nauvoo. No order for the militia was made. The governor arrived at Carthage on the morning of the twenty-first day of June.

Upon his arrival, he found an armed force assembled and hourly increasing under the summons and direction of the constables of the county, to serve as a posse comitatus to assist in the execution of the process. The general of the brigade had also called for the militia, en masse, of the counties of McDonough and Schuyler, for a similar purpose. Another assemblage to a considerable number had been made at Warsaw, under military command of Col. Levi Williams.

The first thing done by the Governor on his arrival was to place all the militia then assembled, and which were expected to assemble, under military command of their proper officers. He despatched a messenger to Nauvoo, informing the mayor and common council of the nature of the complaint made against them; and requested that persons might be sent to him to present their side of the question. A committee was accordingly sent, who made such acknowledgments that he had no difficulty in concluding what were the facts.

It appeared clearly both from the complaints of the citizens and acknowledgment of the Mormon committee that the whole proceeding of the mayor, the common council, and the municipal court, were irregular and illegal, and not to be endured in a free country; though perhaps some apology might be made for the court, as it had been repeatedly assured by some of the best lawyers in the State who had been candidates for office before that people, that it had full and competent power to issue writs of habeas corpus in all cases whatever.

The common council violated the law in assuming the exercise of judicial power; in proceeding ex parte without notice to the owners of the property, in proceeding against the property in question in not calling a jury; in not swearing all the witnesses; in not giving the owners of the property, accused of being a nuisance, in consequence of being libelous, an opportunity of giving the truth in evidence; and in fact, by not proceeding by civil suit or indictment, as in other cases of libel. The mayor violated the law in ordering this erroneous and absurd judgment of the common council to be executed. And the municipal court erred in discharging them from arrest.

As this proceeding touched the liberty of the press, which is justly dear to any republican people, it was well calculated to raise a great flame of excitement. And it may well be questioned whether years of misrepresentation by the most profligate newspaper could have engendered such a feeling as was produced by the destruction of this one press. It is apparent that the Mormon leaders but little understood, and regarded less, the true principles of civil liberty. A free press well conducted is a great blessing to a free people; a profligate one is likely soon to deprive itself of all credit and influence by the multitude of falsehoods put forth by it. But let this be as it may, there is more lost to rational liberty by a censorship of the press by suppressing information proper to be known to the people, than can be lost to an individual now and then by a temporary injury to his character and influence by the utmost licentiousness.

There were other causes to heighten the excitement. These people had undertaken to innovate upon the established systems of religion. Their legal right to do so no one will question. But all history bears testimony that innovations upon religion have always been attended by a hostility in the public mind, which sometimes has produced the most desolating wars; always more or less of persecution. Even the innocent Quakers, the unoffending Shakers, and the quiet and orderly Methodists in their origin, and until the world got used to them had enough of persecution to encounter. But if either of these sects had congregated together in one city where the world could never ascertain by personal acquaintance the truth or falsity of many reports which are always circulated to the prejudice of such innovators; and moreover, if they had armed themselves and organized into a military legion as did the citizens of Nauvoo, and had been guilty of high-handed proceedings carried on against the heretical press, the public animosity and their persecutions must have greatly increased in rancor and severity.

In addition to these causes of excitement, there were a great many other reports in circulation, and generally believed by the people. These reports have already been alluded to, and they had much influence in swelling the public excitement.

It was asserted that Joe Smith, the founder and head of the Mormon church, had caused himself to be crowned and anointed king of the Mormons; that he had embodied a band of his followers called "Danites," who were sworn to obey him as God, and to do

his commands, murder and treason not excepted; that he had instituted an order in the church, whereby those who composed it were pretended to be sealed up to eternal life against all crimes, save the shedding of innocent blood or consenting thereto. That this order was instructed that no blood was innocent blood, except that of the members of the church; and that these two orders were made the ministers of his vengeance, and the instruments of an intolerable tyranny which he had established over his people, and which he was about to extend over the neighboring country. The people affected to believe that with this power in the hands of an unscrupulous leader, there was no safety for the lives or property of any one who should oppose him. They affected likewise to believe that Smith inculcated the legality of perjury, or any other crime in defense, or to advance the interests of true believers; and that he himself had set them the example by swearing to a false accusation against a certain person, for the crime of murder. It was likewise asserted to be a fundamental article of the Mormon faith, that God had given the world and all it contained to them as his saints; that they secretly believed in their right to all the goodly lands, farms, and property in the country; that at present they were kept out of their rightful inheritance by force; that consequently there was no moral offence in anticipating God's good time to put them in possession by stealing, if opportunity offered; that in fact the whole church

was a community of murderers, thieves, robbers, and outlaws; that Joseph Smith had established a bogus factory in Nauvoo, for the manufacture of counterfeit money; and that he maintained about his person a tribe of swindlers, blacklegs, and counterfeiters, to make it and put it into circulation.

It was also believed that he had announced a revelation from heaven, sanctioning polygamy, by a kind of spiritual wife system, whereby a man was allowed one wife in pursuance of the laws of the country, and an indefinite number of others, to be enjoyed in some mystical and spiritual mode; and that he himself, and many of his followers, had practiced upon the precepts of this revelation by seducing a large number of women.

It was also asserted that he was in alliance with the Indians of the western territories, and had obtained over them such a control, that in case of a war he could command their assistance to murder his enemies.

Upon the whole, if one-half of these reports had been true, the Mormon community must have been the most intolerable collection of rogues ever assembled; or, if one-half of them were false, they were the most maligned and abused.

Fortunately for the purposes of those who were active in creating excitement, there were many known truths which gave countenance to some of these accusations. It was sufficiently proved in a proceeding at Carthage, while the Governor was there that Joe Smith had sent a band of his followers to Missouri, to kidnap two men, who were witnesses against a member of his church,

then in jail, and about to be tried on a charge of larceny.

Such in detail is the early set-up at Nauvoo. Things went from good to bad and from bad to worse. From an early welcome upon first arrival on the part of the native population the Mormons came to be regarded by this same group as vipers from which the community should be freed, even to the extent of using armed force to do the freeing. Joe Smith and his group likewise, determined to dominate, armed themselves. A state of potential and to a small extent actual civil war prevailed. The governor called out the militia to preserve order. Knowing the anti-mormon sentiments of the major part of the militia personnel he went to see justice carried out. The Smith's, Joe and Hiram, were arrested and for safe keeping sent to Carthage some twenty miles distant. Here they were to be kept until tried and sentenced or released.

Of the governor's sincere effort to avert trouble there can be no doubt just as there is no doubt of his inability to avert a final show-down between the two groups. I shall now turn to the pages from the governor's history to describe the end of the Smith's, to his characterization of Smith, and for a statement by him concerning the incoming Brigham Young, who afterward led the Mormons to the west where they have so thoroughly established themselves at Salt Lake City.

Gov. Ford says: "It was many days after the assassination of the Smith's before the circumstances of their death became known. It then appeared that agreeably to previous orders the posse at Warsaw had marched on the morning of the 27th of

June in the direction of Golden's Point, with a view to joining the force at Carthage, the whole body then to be marched into Nauvoo. But by the time they had gone eight miles they were met by the order to disband; and learning at the same time that the governor was absent from Carthage) at Nauvoo, about two hundred of these men, many of them being disguised by blacking their faces with powder and mud, hastened immediately to Carthage. There they encamped at some distance from the village and soon learned that one of the companies left as a guard had disbanded and returned to their homes, the other company, the Carthage Grays, was stationed by the captain in the public square a hundred fifty yards from the jail. Eight men were detailed by him, under the command of Sergt. Worrell, to guard the prisoners. A communication was soon established between the company and the conspirators and it was arranged that the guards should have their guns charged with blank cartridges.and fire at the assailants when they attempted to enter the jail. Gen. Deming, who was left in charge, being deserted by some of his troops and perceiving the arrangement with the others and having no force on which he could rely, for fear of his life, retired from the village. The conspirators came up, jumped the slight fence around the jail, were fired upon by the guard, which according to arrangements was overpowered immediately, and the assailants entered the prison to the door of the room where the two prisoners were confined with two of their friends who voluntarily bore them company. An attempt was made to break open the door

but Joe Smith being armed with a six barrel pistol furnished by his friends fired several times as the door was bursted open and wounded three of the assailants. At the same time several shots were fired into the room by some of which one of the friends received four wounds and Hiram Smith was instantly killed. Joe Smith now attempted to escape by jumping out of the second story window but the fall so stunned him that he was unable to rise, and being placed in a sitting posture by the conspirators below they despatched him with four balls shot through his body.

"Thus fell Joe Smith, the most successful imposter in modern times; a man who, though ignorant and coarse, had some great natural parts which fitted him for temporary success, but which were so obscured and counteracted by the inherent corruption and vices of his nature, that he never could succeed in establishing a system of policy which looked to permanent success.... His lusts, his love of money and power, always set him to studying present gratification and convenience rather than the remote consequences of his plans.

"It must not be supposed that the pretended prophet practiced the tricks of a common imposter, that he was a dark and gloomy person with a dark beard, a grave and severe aspect, and a reserved and saintly carriage of his person; on the contrary, he was full of fun, even to boyish romping, dressed like a dandy, and at times drank like a sailor and swore like a pirate. He could, as occasion required, be exceedingly meek in his deportment and then again rough and boisterous as a high-way robber, being always able to satisfy his followers of the pro-

priety of his conduct. He always quailed before power and was arrogant to weakness. At times he could put on the air of a penitent as if feeling the deepest humiliation for his sins, and suffering unutterable anguish, indulging in the most gloomy forebodings of eternal woe. At such times he would call for the prayers of the brethren in his behalf with a wild and fearful energy and earnestness. He was full six feet high, strongly built, and uncommonly well-muscled. No doubt he was as much indebted for his influence over an ignorant people to the superiority of his physical vigor as to his greater cunning and intellect.

"His followers were divided into the leaders and the led; the first division embraced a numerous class of broken down, unprincipled men of talents, to be found in every country, who, bankrupt in character and fortune, had nothing to lose by deserting the known religions, and carving out a new one of their own. They were mostly infidels, who holding all religions in derision, believed that they had as good a right as Christ or Mohammed, or any of the founders of former systems, to create one for themselves; and if they could impose it upon mankind, to live upon the labor of their dupes. Those of the second division, the led, were the credulous wondering part of man, whose easy belief and admiring nature, are always victims of novelty, in whatever shape it may come, who have a capacity to believe any strange and wonderful matter, if only it be new, whilst the wonders of former ages command neither faith nor reverence; they were men of feeble purposes, readily subjected to the will of

the strong, giving themselves up entirely to the direction of their leaders; and this accounts for every influence of those leaders in controlling them, in other respects some of the Mormons were abandoned rogues, who had taken shelter in Nauvoo, as a convenient place for the headquarters of their villany; and others were good, honest, industrious people, who were the sincere victims of an artful delusion.

"The more polished portion of the Mormons were a merry set of fellows, fond of music and dancing, dress and gay assemblies. They had their regular dancing parties of gentlemen and ladies, and were by no means exclusive in admitting anyone of them on the score of character. It is a notorious fact that a desperado by the name of Rockwell, having attracted the affections of a pretty woman, the wife of a Mormon merchant, took her from her husband by force of arms, to live with him in adultery. But whilst she was so living notoriously in adultery with a Mormon bully, in the same city with her husband, she was freely admitted to the best society in the place, to all gay assemblies, where she and her husband frequently met in the same dance.

"The world now indulged in various conjectures as to the further progress of the Mormon religion. By some it was believed that it would perish with its founder. But upon the principle that 'the blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church' there was now really more cause than ever to predict its success. The murder of the Smiths.....only bound the Mormons together closer than ever. The Mormon church had been organized with a first presidency, composed of Joe Smith, Hiram Smith and Sidney Rigdon, and twelve apostles of the prophet,

representing the apostles of Jesus Christ. The twelve apostles were now absent, and until they could be called together the minds of the 'saints' were unsettled, as to the future government of the church. Revelations were published that the prophet, in imitation of the Saviour, was to rise again from the dead. Many were looking in gaping wonderment for the fulfilment of this revelation, and some reported that they had already seen him, attended by a celestial army coursing the air on a great white horse. Rigdon, as the only remaining member of the first presidency, claimed the government of the church, as being successor to the prophet. When the twelve apostles returned from foreign parts, a fierce struggle ensued between them and Rigdon for supremacy. Rigdon fortified his pretensions by alleging that the will of the prophet was in his favor, and pretending to have several revelations from heaven, amongst which was one of a very impolitic nature. This was to the effect, that all the wealthy Mormons were to break up their residence at Nauvoo, and follow him to Pittsburg. This revelation put both the rich and the poor against him. The rich, because they did not want to leave their property; and the poor because they did not want to be deserted by the wealthy. This was fatal to the ambition of Rigdon; and the Mormons tired of the despotism of a one-man government, were now willing to decide in favor of the apostles. Rigdon was expelled from the church as being a false prophet and left the field with a few followers, to establish a little delusion of his own near Pittsburg; leaving the government of the main church in the hands of the apostles, with Brigham Young

a cunning but vulgar man at their head, occupying the place of Peter in the Christian hierarchy.

"Missionaries were despatched to all parts to preach in the name of the martyred Joseph; and the Mormon religion thrived more than ever. For awhile it was doubtful whether the reign of the military saints at Nauvoo would not in course of time supplant the meek and lowly system of Christ. There were many things to favor their success. The different Christian sects had lost much of their fiery energy by which at first they were animated. They had attained to a more subdued, sober, learned, and intellectual religion. But there is at all times a large class of mankind who will never be satisfied with anything in devotion short of a heated and wild fanaticism. The Mormons were the greatest zealots, the most confident of their faith, and filled with a wilder, fiercer, and more enterprising enthusiasm than any sect on the continent of America. Their religion gave promise of more temporal and spiritual advantages for less labor and with less personal sacrifice of passion, lust, prejudice, malice, and ill-will than any other perhaps in the whole world.

"At the death of the prophet fourteen years after the first Mormon church was organized, the Mormons in all the world numbered about two hundred thousand (one-half million according to their statistics); a number equal perhaps to the same number of Christians when the Christian church was of the same age. It is to be feared that, in the course of a century, some gifted man like Paul, some splendid orator, who will be able by his eloquence to attract crowds by the thousands who are ever ready to hear, and be carried away by the sounding brass and the

tinkling cymbal of sparkling oratory, may command a hearing, may succeed in breathing a new life into this modern Mahometanism, and make the name of the martyred Joseph ring as loud, and stir souls of men as much as the mighty name of Christ itself. Sharon, Palmyra, Manchester, Kirtland, Far West, Nauvoo, and the Carthage Jail may become holy and venerable names, places of classic interest in another age; like Jerusalem, the Garden of Gethsemane, the Mount of Olives, and Mount Calvary to the Christian, and Mecca and Medina to the Turk. In that event, the author of this feels degraded by the reflection, that the humble governor of an obscure state, who would otherwise be forgotten in a few years, stands a fair chance, like Pilate and Herod, by their official connection with the true religion, of being dragged down to posterity with an immortal name, hitched on to the memory of a miserable impostor."

ARM
3/19/34

Paper #22

JIMMY BONNER AND THE LAW.

Jimmy Bonner was up against it again and much as he disliked it, there seemed to be nothing to do but make the best of it.

When his first anger subsided and he could think over the matter calmly, he realized that half of the hurt came from his sense of humiliation instead of from his injured purse.

Even now he could fancy the glee with which the story would be recited at the hangout of the gang at the brick yard and the whole hearted way in which they would spend his money.

Two years ago when he and Anne first came to the country and built the addition to the camp that had since been their home, he had fallen into the trap set for him and had to pay nearly thirty dollars to the father of young Will Dee because the payment to him of his wages was not a satisfaction of his father's claim on the boy so long as he was a minor living at home and presumably supported by his father.

Patiently and kindly old Judge Long had explained the law to Jimmy; that the wages of a minor were the property of the father so long as the boy lived at home, unless the parent should have freed him by failure to provide for him or had in the presence of witnesses waived claim to him and his wages.

There was nothing else to do and Jimmy had paid double for what Will had done and firmly resolved not to be caught a second time.

Yet here he was again faced with an almost identical situation in spite of all his caution and in spite of his firm belief that the whole thing was a put up job.

How well he remembered the seeming sympathy of his neighbor on the south, "Doc" Hearn and the statement that "Seems like everybody is out to do you if they think you've got money", and here it was this time ~~when~~ that "Doc" himself had put one over.

The latter posed as a farmer but his principal means of livelyhood centered about "Jockey Alley" where he had an old and well known reputation as a smooth trader of anything, old or new, good or bad, anything that would turn a penny to the advantage of "Doc".

What little work was done on his place was through the efforts of Danny Keefe, a sturdy ~~urchin~~ youth who did odd jobs for almost the entire township and who was a better man by far than his father, a worthless, drunken scamp who appeared at infrequent intervals and, usually by request, retired into the unknown again.

Jimmy had used Danny several times and found him helpful and reliable, pleasant to have about and only too happy to get the little ready money that Jimmy paid for his help.

It was on one of these periods of employment that he had admired Jimmy's shotgun and learning that Jimmy never used it had oiled and cleaned it in exchange for the use of it the opening week of the shooting season.

Seemingly a born hunter, he had such wonderful success that they had come to terms by which Danny was to exchange ~~two weeks~~ some work for the gun, a mutually satisfactory arrangement and the gun was now Danny's.

Danny lived in a little frame house that had once been the shanty of the watchman at the old gravel pit in the days when the new pavement was being laid on the State Road and which he had moved at considerable effort to the vacant

lot on the corner of Doc Hearn's place where the Quaker Church had stood in early days.

Jimmy's place had been a part of the old Whittaker place and in his abstract was the dedication of the"acre in a square form" off the old place years before the subdivision by the heirs and the purchase by others. "To the Society of Friends, their Timber Creek Meeting and successors so long as said Meeting shall exist", it read and in their placid certainty that there would always be a Timber Creek Meeting the old elders gave no thought to later ownership.

Nominally a part of Hearn's land, no plow or spade had disturbed the sod for over eighty years and it was evident that to Danny at least it was soil of his only.

Warned by his former experience, Jimmy had inquired as to his age and as he thought, Danny proved to lack a few months of his majority, so when old Martin had appeared last fall, hanging around sheepishly until Danny came from town with Doc, Jimmy had inquired as to the status of Danny and been told by the father that he had no claim on the boy, that whatever he earned was his. Too late Jimmy remembered that Doc had been the witness to the statement, which at the time seemed to be fortunate rather than otherwise.

Not for a month longer did there seem to be use to be made of the situation and when the bargain was made for the gun, Jimmy recalled the statement made by old Martin and was content to let the whole thing rest securely on that basis.

And now this claim of"Doc's" for Forty Dollars for the services of Danny, a "bound servant" of his under an indenture entered into between Martin and Hearn on the very day that Martin had assured Jimmy he had no claim on the boy.

Faced with this claim, Jimmy had promptly gone to see Judge Long and together they had gone to the Recorder's Office; there to find set down in the "Record of Indentured Servants", page 138, the formal "binding" of the minor son.

"This indenture made November the fifth in the year of our Lord nineteen hundred and thirty three by and between Albert Densmore, Trustee of the Township of Sugar Creek, County of Vigo and State of Indiana and Jonas D. Hearn of the same place, witnesseth that the said Trustee has bound unto the said Hearn,Daniel Keefe a pauper, son of Martin Keefe, a wanderer with no place of abode in said county, aged twenty years on the seventeenth day of July last past, by and with the consent of the said Martin Keefe, wherefore the said Daniel is bound and put apprentice to the said Jonas D. Hearn, farmer,(which said business the said Hearn now follows) and with him as said apprentice to dwell, continue and serve until the 17th day of July 1934, or until he shall have attained to the full age of twenty one years, during all of which time the said apprentice, his said master shall well and faithfully serve, his secrets keep, his lawful commands obey; hurt to his said master he shall not do nor wilfully suffer it to be done by others, but of the same, to the utmost of his powers shall forthwith give nptice to his said master; the goods of his said master he shall not embezzle or waste, nor lend them without his consent to any; at cards dice or other unlawful games he shall not play. Taverns and tippling houses he shall not frequent, matrimony he shall not contract, from the service of his said master he shall not at any time depart or absent himself without his said master's leave, but in all things as a good and faithful servant shall demean and be-

have himself towards his said master during such term.

And the said master agrees on his part to teach the said apprentice the art and mystery of farming with all things thereunto belonging to the best of his ability or cause the same to be done in the best way or manner he can, and shall or will also find and allow to his said apprentice meat, drink, washing, lodging and apparel, both linen and woolen and all other necessaries fit and convenient for such apprentice during the term aforesaid and shall also give him three months schooling during and within said term and at the expiration of said term is to furnish said apprentice in addition to his common clothing, one superb suit of clothing worth twenty dollars and five dollars in cash."

Judge Long read it through carefully while Jimmy gave it but a few glances here and there, waiting anxiously for the explanation and comment of the Judge.

"Well Jimmy, I'm afraid we're stuck. About all we can do is to try to get back the gun".

"But Judge, I don't want to take the gun away from Danny; he gets too much good out of it for me to deprive him of it."

" But Jimmy" said Judge Long, "the gun isn't his any more, it's either yours or belongs to the old rapscallion that has put this over. An apprentice can own nothing himself. All that he has is his master's. No negro slave was ever more of a chattel than is Danny Keefe until the time is up next ~~next~~ July and then he is entitled to nothing more than is set out in these articles. Let's go back to the office."

Once there the Judge began looking through his books, one by one, but finally turned to Jimmy.

"By George," he said," I don't suppose there has been

an apprentice bound under that old form for fifty years, but it seems good enough to hold in the court."

Obsolete as it undoubtedly was in practice, it still laid there in hiding for some such purpose as it was now serving, dating back to the formation of the State and even earlier than that, for it was first used in Indiana to get around the provision of the Ordinance of 1787 when Virginia ceded to the United States the "Territory North-west of the River Ohio" and provided that " neither slavery nor involuntary servitude" was to be allowed in the territory."

To escape this provision and still hold their slaves, certain influential citizens procured the passage by the territorial legislature of a law adopted from the Virginia Code concerning servants.

Under this act slaveowners brought into the Territory negroes and mulattos who must within thirty days be taken before the county court and given a chance to become bond-servants for a term of years. Should the slave refuse, the master was allowed sixty days to remove his property from the Territory. Later sessions added some strength to this act and by 1810 there were 237 slaves in Indiana Territory in the portion that is now Indiana. In that year the law was repealed as far as it concerned negroes and mulattoes.

The careful explanation of the Judge failed to satisfy Jimmy, for his idea of the law was justice and he failed to see any in this case.

"How did he come to fix this amount of Forty Dollars", asked the Judge, "Did you agree to pay Danny that amount, or does he figure that is the worth of the gun"?

"No", said Jimmy, "we agreed that if he would work over the old Chevrolet roadster so as to use the motor for pumping and the frame for a trailer, I would give him the gun".

"Do you know how long he worked on it, how much time he spent away from Hearn's". "No" said Jimmy,"I never kept any account of the time and I doubt if Danny did either."

"In that case" instructed the Judge, "go and offer him what you think is a fair price for the gun, as payment for the work done by Danny".

So, the next morning Jimmy went over to see "Doc" and made the offer, only to have it refused.

"Then", said Jimmy, "make me out an itemized bill for the work and we will try to get together, I want to do the right thing and you seem to have me where the hair is short."

"That's the easiest way out of it, Jimmy", said "Doc" and with the aid of Jimmy's pen and a piece out of his notebook, he wrote out a bill for eighty hours at fifty cents an hour and handed it to Jimmy.

"Do you think that is fair" asked Jimmy " no one pays Danny at that rate, you don't yourself, do you?".

" I guess you found out what I pay him or you wouldn't be coming around to settle so promptly" was the reply, "and as for the rate of pay the Government has fixed that as the right pay for CWA workers and Danny is as good a worker as any of them". "You owe me Forty Dollars and I'm going to get it and you'd better get busy with it".

Jimmy felt his anger rising,"Doc" was rubbing it in and making him like it, yet he could not afford to have trouble added to all of this and he only replied that he would let him know inside of an hour.

Back home, he called the Judge and told him what had been said. On the older man's advice he went back to see "Doc" and offered him Twenty Dollars in settlement of the claim and on the refusal of his offer told him to go ahead as he saw fit, that the amount was rediculous and that before he collected anything, he would spend much more than he thought.

"Doc's"reply puzzled Jimmy and later the Judge had no explanation of the threat that he made that "If that old fogy lawyer of yours thinks he knows law, he has another guess coming, before I'm through with you, you'll wish you had never heard of the law".

Jimmy was to meet Anne at the Club and lunch with her, an event they both looked forward to from one time to another and Jimmy was on time promptly only to wait for Anne which was unusual, the situation being quite the reverse of ordinary and it was with a sense of relief that the desk called him to the telephone and he heard Anne speaking. The relief was short, for she was calling from the Police Station and for a moment Jimmy had visions of accidents, sudden death and calamity, and he lost no time in getting to the Station.

Anne, it seemed, had violated some traffic rule or other and had been ordered to report to the Station where she was told she had been reported for passing another car at a street intersection and must wait until the traffic officer returned from his lunch to make a charge against her.

Jimmy remonstrated against the delay, "We haven't had our lunch yet" he said. "Well, I told her to stay here, didn't I? Do you want a wagon sent to get her when he gets here and finds she ain't here?"

For the second time that day, Jimmy felt his anger rising to the boiling point and he steadied himself to ask: "Is this lady under arrest,"he asked, "Is there a charge against her or any reason she should wait here until it suits someone's convenience?"

"Well I'll tell you brother, she was told to come here and report and that's all I know about it", was the reply.

"All right" said Jimmy, "she's reported and that's that." "Come on Anne, let's eat".

Back at the Club, Jimmy left Anne to order the lunch and phoned Judge Long's office, leaving word for him to call the Club as soon as he could be gotten.

Anne told her story of the event and Jimmy for the life of him could see nothing out of the way, certainly not enough to justify what Anne had been through.

Stopped for the signal at Front Street, an immense transport truck just ahead of her killed its engine as it tried to start and Anne, impatient and already late, backed a little and passed it just as it started again only to be halted by the frantic whistle of the officer standing on the corner.

Ordered to the curb, she did so as soon as she could, waited in suspense while the officer took her license number and was ordered to report herself to the desk captain at the Police Station. Having done so, she was told to sit down on a bench in front of the window and told that the officer would be there in a few minutes. After waiting for what seemed to have been a half hour, she asked if she might use the telephone and called Jimmy. While doing this she saw her name on the sheet before her and opposite it "passing at intersection".

Before the lunch was over the Judge called and at his request they waited until he arrived shortly after and heard the story, then leaving Anne's car at the Club, they all went down to hear what it was all about.

Apparently mollified by his lunch, the officer had been in and decided not to file a complaint, but that was not enough for the old Judge who had them go with him ~~thx~~ to the office of the Deputy Prosecutor in charge of Traffic violations where they told the story and were assured that the officer would gladly apologise for his hasty action.

The Attorney told them however that an offense had been committed and that with an officer there on duty ~~they~~ Anne should have awaited his directions before pulling out of line.

Jimmy however, was not satisfied and wanted to know why the act was forbidden, why when traffic was snarled as it had been, one should not use his best judgement to correct matters.

The learned attorney told as best he could ~~how~~ that the best judgement of the Common Council had enacted the ordinance and that it was improper for others to criticise an ordinance, all that was left to do was to obey the law.

Satisfied that they were getting nowhere fast, they let the matter drop, thinking it was all over and done.

You may judge of Jimmy's surprise next morning, however when a constable appeared, not with a summons in the case of "Doc"Hearn, but in the case of the State of Indiana vs James Bonner, in which he was cited to appear at Squire Bailey's to answer to a charge of reckless driving, the charge being on the relation of Jonas D. Hearn. Not a word about a claim for money due, merely a complaint that Jimmy had driven recklessly and in violation of the law.

Judge Long called in a young man who handled small cases for him and handed the summons to him with instructions to appear for Jimmy and it eventually appeared that Jimmy had seriously wounded the feelings and dignity of the State of Indiana by driving over the Wabash Bridge "at a gait faster than a walk".

Jimmy never clearly understood why he wasn't hung for so serious an offense and resolved to watch his step thereafter.

But alas, how rapidly good resolutions crumble when put to the test. Within twenty four hours, Jimmy had committed so many offenses against the law that his life, however long, could not span the time to work out fitting punishment for them.

It began just before bedtime when Jimmy heard a soft tap at the rear door andopened it to admit Danny with a bundle and a box, who announced he was off of the "old man" for good and only wanted to leave some of his things there with Jimmy until he could send for them.

The shot gun, he told Jimmy, he had hidden in the loft over the garage but the other things he was afraid the mice might get into andwanted to leave in the house. He himself was going to Mattoon where he could get a job in a garage until he found something better and he wanted to get away because of the trouble he had caused Jimmy and Anne.

Knowing only too well how little money Danny had, Jimmy slipped him a couple of dollars and Anne having put up a rediculously fancy lunch for such a boy, they wished him well and let him out and on his way.

Not until next morning when the constable had summonsed

316

him to answer to the complaint of "Doc" in a suit for money due and he had gravely handed the papers to the Judge's aide, did he learn from the horrified Judge that he had committed two serious offenses against the State of Indiana.

Paying a witness to leave the state was bad medicine, Jimmy gathered from the lecture the Judge handed him and harboring and assisting a servant to escape from his master had at one time been nearly a capital offense. Down deep in his heart Jimmy wondered what the Judge would do if he told that the shot gun was hidden away on his own premises and decided he would say nothing about that part of it.

The Judge was inclined to talk this morning and as Jimmy had nothing pressing him he spent a hour and more listening while the old man enumerated various offenses against the peace and dignity of the great State of Indiana that Jimmy had never heard of and except that he had the word of Judge Long, he would not have believed possible.

An ordinance passed in 1834 and never repealed made it a serious offense for the Judge not to keep on hand ready for use at all times, one leather fire bucket and a short ladder, another prevented him from getting to and from his garage because it was illegal to drive over a sidewalk with a vehicle of aby description.

Others were designed to cause his gates to open into the yard instead of out upon the sidewalk, ~~xxxxxxx~~ forbade leaning against any lamp post or turning off the gas thereon, forbade him to fill any lamps after sunset or to hitch his horse to any shade tree.

Another serious offense was set out in an ordinance where-

37

under heavy punishment was meted out to anyone who left open a swing bridge after the passage of a canal boat.

Jimmy was astonished to find that he could be fined or imprisoned for what he had done almost daily for over a year when he took home in his car, without a permit, the lettuce and cabbage leaves that his grocer trimmed each morning as he opened for the day. Finest thing he could get for the chickens and the grocer was glad to save them for him but now he was daily risking arrest and punishment because all the garbage in the City, from whatever source was the property of the garbage contractor who was paid thousands of dollars for hauling it away to his own stock.

Certain things Jimmy understood were forbidden with good reason, double parking, displaying license tags and parking or leaving a car with the motor running, but twice that day he had seen a beautiful car in brightest red, double parked on Wabash Avenue between Seventh and Eighth, motor running and no license front or rear, no other identification that the name of a brewing company and the largest of nickled initials across the radiator, "C. V.".

He had seen hundreds of people crossing Wabash Avenue between crossings and as many more, college students all of them who should know better, jay walking on Mulberry and Eagle with at least a half dozen legal crossings set off for them.

He had seen police cars violate almost every clause in the ordinance, left turns where they were forbidden, full turns in the middle of the block, cutting the corners in front of traffic signals, double parked, parked diagonal where only parallel was per mitted and parked on the wrong side of the street and wondered what authority police had to

violate the law.

He saw overhead wires in the congested district where for thirty years the service company had supplied electrid service in defiance of the law requiring underground wires.

Nowhere it seemed could one turn without in some manner violating the law and those whose sworn duty it was to enforce the law, themselves tarred with the same stick as those who should be punished.

Yet year after year the legislature passed more laws, each month the Common Council ground out more ordinances, each day it seemed, the courts put a new construction on a law to bring about a new meaning to it.

Laws and more laws and more on top of those until it was small woxnder that so few knew the law and so many ran foul of it and suffered for their lack of knowledge.

Is it not true that "he governs best who governs least"?

# THE OTHER HALF

Every Federal investigation has its side show. In 1893, the Sugar Trust furnished the characters for the performance. Frederick Townsend Martin, an expert witness and an outspoken member of the "idle rich" remarked with charming frankness at the time:

> "It matters not one iota what political party is in power or what president holds the reins of office. We are the rich; we own America; we got it, God knows how, but we intend to keep it if we can by throwing all the tremendous weight of our support, our influence, our money, our political connections our purchased senators, our hungry congressmen, our public speaking demagogues into the scale against any legislature, any political platform, any presidential campaign that threatens the integrity of our estate."

With that half, I am not concerned. It seems too barbarous. Not yet having tasted of the fruits of success, power or influence, my sober relfections are spent upon that half which represents the remnants of stagnant ancestors of prior generations--those who labor physically for the necessities of life--those to whom sickness and ache and tiredness and lack of sanitation are the usual, instead of the unusual. In a land of money grubbers, such relfections are those of the minority, the ministerial class, the teaching profession, and a few others who have been caught by the little eddies along the rapids and prevented from rushing madly over rocks and stones and hills and valleys without any purpose or any goal.

It must be understood that this paper represents no experience of the writer. It represents only thoughts and opinions gathered here and there from the usual sources of information and the usual experiences of an average young man.

In the field of religion, I have been convinced that there is a moving force behind the universe to which we refer as God, but in modern fiction, better called Mr. X. It is a force which is purposeful. Every event which takes place, every tree, man rock and river which exists is part of the work of this force. But what puzzles me is for what purpose this force is moving the world. I cannot determine whether it is for good or evil, happiness or sorrow, or for any other purpose for which an intelligent universe might be created. I have been unable to determine what purpose there was in creating such distinctions among innumerable others as the rich and the poor.

Since an early period in the Age of Man, there has evolved certain virtues which we believe to be good such as honesty, education, beauty, art, and cleanliness. The minds of the religious teachers, thinkers and prophets of the past have been so designed and so created that they were able to discern good from evil. Thus they created good in the minds of people as a virtue more to be desired than evil, even tho more evil might be practiced than good. Therefore, I am led to believe that between good and evil, our moving force has chosen the former as its purpose.

If we make the deducation that good is the purpose behind this universe, then I am confronted with a more grave question. Why then, were the poor set off in dug outs and tenements and ghettoes to eke out an existence? Why were some men sent into steam canneries coal mines, factories, war while others sat at oak desks in leather chairs. The question elicits several answers. First of all, in order to attain the specialized form of man, that is, to reach the mean between the rich and the poor, it was thought best to start with two extremes such as the lord and the serf, then the master and the apprentice, then the employer and the employee, and then communism with slight digressions into fascism and persecution of minorities and other forms, until the mean shall be reached. Then the universe would so continue until new forms of life began to appear, perhaps a super-man. Although but three weeks ago a noted surgeon in the state of Washington predicted that a race of superior men would come in 100 years thru the advancement of the science of medicine which will combat the destruction of the body through nervous and mental disorders, I am led to believe the date set is ridiculously soon. But when the signs of the super man begin to show form, we archaic human beings willfind ourselves face to face with extinction thru some revolution similar to those which took place in geological history.

We are today living in the latest geological period of world history--the Psychozoic or Age of Man. The organic evolution of the universe takes us many millions of years into the past thru several stages, amongst which is the Paleozoic, the period of ancient life which saw the rise of the fish and amphibia. From the amphibia

which were able to survive, especially the vertebrate, came the evolution of Reptiles, fishes, birds and mammals. At the end of this era occured the Appalachian revolution which destroyed all ancient life and ushered in the Mesozoic, the Medieval life, the Age of Reptiles. The land reptiles soon reached the height of their specialization, grotesque and bizarre in appearance. Archaic mammals began to appear, and then with the end of the Mesozoic, came the great crustal changes of the Laramide revolution destroying in its wake the dominant reptilian types of land and sea, preparing the way for the evolution of the warm blooded mammals. These were to be the ruling dynasty of the next era, the cenozoic, as the reptiles had been the overlords of the previous one. During the Cenozoic, owing to continued elevation of great continents, the age of Ice was ushered in with its long periods of devastating cold. Late in the Cenozoic came the first signs of man, who because of his superior mental attributes was able to survive, and rapidly took his place as the dominant form of life, leaving behind the wholesale extinctions of mammals and other races of animals. With the final retreat of the ice, known as the Cascadian revolution, the Psycozoic era or the present Age of Man began. With the greater perfection of man's mentality and the assertion of his "dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth", we note the rise of world civilizations until their recent purging in the holocaust of the world's greatest war. In the many thousands of years thus far in the development of man, the overthrow of kings, and rulers and chieftains and dynastys, and the rise of the downtrodden, of labor, and of democracy are to me simply a series of important natural political changes during the present age tending toward the specialization of man, and his adaptability to change. Like the reptiles of the late Mesozoic, the kings of countries have been unable to adapt themselves to new environments, political rather than climactic, and they perished by the wayside. In their footsteps now follow the kings of wealth.

Evolution carries in its march forward, the inexorable doom of those who live but for themselves and for the present. Many thousands of years are yet ahead of us in this age. We must keep that in mind to live happily. We are but pinheads in a cosmic cushion. We will continue to wear our minds away with worry, fear, war, famine,desolation, as tho these are of the essence of evil, when they are of the essence of evolution. At the end of this process, at the end of the Age of Man, will come another revolution, perhaps the machine revolution, perhaps great land upheavals, the Revival of Atlantis, or climactic changes, or a war by disease in which continents of men will be blotted out. Those super-men who are able to survive and adapt themselves with protection will continue to carry out the wishes of Mr. X. The others will find themselves recorded in the contemporary organic history of the next age.

If the purpose of the poor is to discover the mean in the rise of man, then I can understand the purpose for the distinction. In the light of organic evolutionary history, there may be justification. In the light of the Psychozoic only, it appears to be a grave injustice. If they are made to suffer for the sake of evolution, then some solace should have been turned their way to comfort this unfortunate group.

This leads me to the second answer for the reason we have the ppor. Perhaps sufficient comfort was afforded them to offset the discrimination and make us believe that we are wrong in the belief that the poor suffer while the rich escape. One of the shelters to which the unfortunate ran and still do is religion. Was this the solace given them to make up for the tragic part they play in history? Our latest political development in the Age of Man tries to convince the world that religion is the opiate of the people. This axiom will consummate the truth if communism will in the Psychozoic represent the emergence of masses upon the utopia of equality. Then there would be no need for religion as a solace unless religion changes its color to red or adopts the cosmic religion of an Einstein or a Jeans. But thus far, I believe that religion was the palliative. It tended to make the poor happy with immortality, ascetism, puritanism, mysticism, super - stition. It tended to make them satisfied with the idiom that "Ignorance is Bliss".

It tended to make them believe that material things were evil in order that they would be content with what ever trickled into their empty pouches. They were satisfied with learning in teaspoonsful. Culture in mild dozes was a stimulant. As a result, with a few years of schooling, they meekly marched into the fields, the cotton mills, factories, slums, gangs or the battlefields. There was an occasional book, usually the bible which they were unable to understand and which their teachers were unable to properly interpret for them. If their luck was extreme they may have enjoyed a bit more of education. But that depended upon whether the mind had lost itself in the drain on the body.

Religion and a smattering of culture then, taught that apart ffom the bare necessities of life, there were no worries. Worries, together with suicides, perplexities, insanity, for good measure, were handed over to the other half to penalize them for being cast upon the positive side of life--to leave them at the end of a lifetime with an empty heart.

Taken in this light then, it would appear that rich or poor, the suffering is the same depending upon which side of the picture the mirror of suffering is shown. He escapes who nears the mean between the rich and the poor, between those who do not suffer and those who do not make others suffer. But in present day reality, I do not understand why the impression should be left by Mr. X. that to abound in material things brings joy, whereas it usually produces the opposite result. People know there is no joy in abject poverty, except perhaps in the tragicomedy of unusual cases. Perhaps Mr. X thought it better to start people from scratch and make them use their endowed energy to obtain material things required to attain the mean, instead of starting with ~~over-abundance of~~ material things which would necessitate a waste of energy. This, I am sure, would be a constant source of anger to Mr. X. The way energy is wasted on earth today to the great consternation of intelligent people and the great horror of the poor, it must drive him into a fury. If it effects me so, I should like to believe he visits an earthquake or tornado upon us, if only they would strike the responsible people.

Thus far, we have seen that one of the reasons for the rich and poor is that those characteristics are one part of those

necessary to continue the ancient struggle for existence in the Psychoic toward some end beyond our comprehension. In order to compensate those who were unable to reach the 10th round, religion was given for second prize. We mortals whose souls writhe in pain at the horrors of humankind are about as helpful and important in this evolutionary process as the dinosaur during the late Mesozoic. The ignorant poor today are comparable to the unthinking of ages ago.

I have never been able to understand the mind of the poor--the mind that knows no further than the day. I always picture it thru the man who has to go into a conference with his limbs every morning before he can get up, and goes to sleep a la liniment but so peacefully tired that all the angels seem to smile on him. He who has been able to return from a day with molten steel must surely feel that the angels are on his side, especially so, when as a boy, the blistering steam of canneries literally rolled the skin off his hands. He who enters the bowels of the earth for minerals, gases and oils so necessary to carry on the evolutionary process, surely must feel that he is in communion with God. He is playing with the mysteries of eons and earth. What petty things can interfere with this serenity! Is that what religion wants to teach him? He sleeps thru revolutions, financial disasters, and impending wars. He never heard of the National Economy League or the D.A.R. or the local problems clubs or the Hull House settlement, or any of the other groups who fret and worry their lives away over him. He gawks at the God like spirits who invade his castle of slums to give him sanitation. His ancestral ties to poverty must give him this outlook on life. He may regard living as a struggle toward the mean, yet feel that the battle is too severe and the risks too great, or else he does not understand just why he lives and makes no attempt to find out. To help him, we try to give him things he is unable to enjoy thru our lack of understanding. Instead of giving him understanding first, ~~me~~ and material things after, we cry aloumd about putting two flivvers in every car and two cars in every garage. We try to rout them out of their hovels by force without first educating the class which holds them in bondage.

These assertions, would of course, eliminate the dynamic part of this group who carry on the daily struggle, who organize collectively, who seek learning. These are in the great minority. These are the leaders. Their labors never cease. Those who fill up the ranks and become the cannon fodder take cruises into carnivals during so called prosperous times and then bare their breasts and tighten their belts thru pursuasion and coercion during economic crisis. Because it takes a debacle to creat a human struggle necessary to work toward the mean, we have them intermittently and in increasing tenseness. We are evidently beginning to reach a crisis in the development of man.

The agencies for providing these debacles are very simple. To stir up wars, Mr. X creatsmunitions makers with minds similar to our fictionized Dr. Fu Manchu who help both sides of the war massacre their own people for the delight of the filthy lucre they worthip. The international conspiracy and machinations of munitions makers ~~is~~ ARE no longer open to question. They are the true bearers of that great Christian ethic,"Love thine Enemy"Authentic reports show that French munitions makers united with those of Germany to elevate Adolph Hitler to power, and then the French, thru their own newspapers broke out in a fever of denunciation against the regime. In 1899 British soldiers were shot down by British guns that British armament firms had sold to the Boers. When in 1914, the Kaiser's armies marched westward into Belgium, German soldiers were killed by German guns manned by King Albert. In the event of war with Japan, American soldiers will find themselves mowed down by American implements of war in the hands of the Japanese. The cruelty to human emotions of Mr. X's methods can be seen in the incident in England. Mounted as a monument in a British village is a great gun captured from the Germans by the soldiers of that community in a conflict during the war. That gun successfully mowed down the useful members of that community; but the British persevered and captured the gun, brought it back to the little village and mounted it. To commemorate the dead, their names were inscribed on one side. On the other side was the name of the British munitions maker who manufactured it and sold it to Germany. There is a quality of delirium about facts like these.

A close study of all the facts/leads emotionally to delusions about the sanity of the world in which we live. Realistically, the munitions makers are taking us thru a few convulsions in the eternal development of man. The only reason that pacifists exist is to provide someone/willing to carry on the propaganda so necessary to stir up antagonism. They are as helpless to change this evolutionary process as Sir Arthur Eddington's definition of the Quantum Theory, that is, "Something unknown is doing we don't know what."

To stir up class struggles, he created the rich and the poor, the capitalist and the laborer. In Germany, the working class took it lying down. They simply prolonged the evolutionary process a few years. In Austria, they took it like courageous patriotic children, with slugs in their stomachs for the good of the cause. In France, it is said that the General workman's strike of February 12 shows that they will not succomb like the German workmen or wait until it is too late like the Austrians did. In America, a courageous president seeks to avoid the obvious clash, but I fear in vain. Every passing day some incident occurs which alone might seem insignificant, but when joined with the myriads of others, creats a design unmistakable in its course.

To stir up miscellaneous struggles, like the persecution of minorities, an occasional famine, he sends us fanatics and incompetents.

In this century, these struggles have reached world wide proportions. In future centuries, we may expect untold of universal agonies before the arrival of the substitute for the present mortal.

Latest trends in universal mass behavior seem to develop along more hopeful lines--toward the mean. Altho the progress is painfully slow, the tendency is first to liberate whole masses of people from bondage. Revolution succeeded in Europe, civil war in America. The emergence of India and China from the grips of a medieval imperialism is a matter of time. This trend naturally tends toward an emergence from ignorance for the simple reason that that is the aim of a purposeful and intelligent universe.

HEM 329

4/16/34

# FINANCING PUBLIC EDUCATION IN INDIANA

## A Brief History

Paper #24

In February, 1785 a committee reported a bill to the Confederation Congress that "surveyors should divide the territory (referring to the Old North West) into townships of six miles square, by lines running north, and others crossing at right angles as near as may be; that the plats of the townships respectively shall be marked by subdivisions into lots one mile square, or 640 acres, in the same direction as the external lines, and numbered from 1 to 36; and that there shall be reserved the lot number 16 (or section 16) of every township for the maintenance of public schools, and the one immediately adjoining the same, to the northward, for the support of religion." After a prolonged discussion of many months on numerous amendments the clause referring to the reservation of a section for religion was struck out and in May, 1785, the bill was passed. Thus we had the beginnings of our provisions for public education in Indiana. Contrary to popular belief, the above provision was not contained in the Ordinance of 1787 and we had the gist of the Ordinance of 1785 embodied in subsequent legislation relating to the sale of public land and the Ordinance of 1787 was more general and said that "religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind--schools and means of education shall be forever encouraged."

So thus the plan for support of education began and the principle of public support of education had its firm beginnings. The plan for setting aside land for support of institutions contributing to public welfare comes to us from England and was perpetuated in the original colonies, and consequently came to us through the legislation of their representatives. Maccachusetts, Conneticut, and others practiced this in New England. The common plans for educational land grants are three in number:

First, that of setting out a section wherein the grant was made to the inhabitants of a particular township for the support of schools within the township.

Second, the section was granted to the State for use of schools in the township.

Third, the section is granted to the State for the use of schools throughout the State.

The Enabling Act passed by Congress in 1816 giving Indiana the privilege of statehood granted to the settlers of the various townships the section of land for the use of the schools within the township. The sale of the land thus granted was prohibited until 1820 by the Constitution of 1816, and it was not until 1828 that an act was passed providing for such sale. The acts of the State legislature in 1833 and 1838 definitely set out that the proceeds from each sale should be made a township fund and should not be entrusted to the State. The original value of the land thus granted to the schools in Indiana is estimated at about $800,000. However, the land was not sold until some

later time and in 1852 it was estimated to be worth $1,600,000. The funds derived from the land sale were distributed to the counties and managed by the county auditors who loaned the money on real estate at 6% interest, which was distributed to the various corporations./ These funds, called the Congressional Township funds, in 1852 were merged with the common school fund and remained so for a three year period until a Supreme Court decision caused it again to be separated and continued as a separate fund, as it is today. The Congressional Township fund in Indiana now amounts to about 2½ million dollars. There is still some unsold Congressional Township land in Indiana numbering in acreage about 400.

Perhaps we can better understand what the Congressional land grants mean to us if we estimate its return in terms of the amount of money per pupil in average daily attendance in the common schools in Indiana each year./ An approximation as near as can be obtained on this shows about 23 cents per child is derived from this fund.

When Indiana made its first constitution, article 9 of the constitution set out one of the most forward looking conceptions of education that may be found in any of the state constitutions made in the first half of the 19th century. However, the duty of setting up a system of public education "ascending in a regular gradation from township schools to a university wherein tuition shall be gratis and equally open to all" was more of a name than a fact, and the problem created by the forward looking statement in the constitution was one that was not solved in any satisfactory manner during the existence of the state government under its first constitution.

Some sporadic attempts were made during this early period at a school system, the first one being the law of 1824, but the success of any of these plans was decidedly limited. Schools were opened in the best counties only, and in the older settlements. The terms were seldom more than 3 months in length and often less; tuition was not free and the whole set-up was far from the generous provisions of the first constitution. About 1840 it was estimated that we were reaching 47% of the children in the state with a kind of educational program.

One should not overlook, when dealing with this period, certain bright spots, among them the efforts of such leaders as Caleb Mills, the laws resulting from his work, and the vote in 1848 on free schools which while not preponderantly in favor of free schools, did have a small majority, 16,636 out of a total vote of 140,410 for free schools. When the constitution of 1851 was adopted it provided for a common school fund. It was not an entirely new step and its formation was chiefly by merging several existing funds and providing revenues from other sources and making it possible for the legislature to provide additional funds by taxation. A wide range of sources provide for this common school fund. The original sources of the common school fund brought over from the period of the first constitution were the county seminary fund, the Saline fund, delinquent tax fund, bank tax fund, a sinking fund, and a surplus revenue fund. All of these have practically lost their force in building up the permanent school fund. The constitution of 1851 provided that

fines and forfeitures, escheated estates, certain state and swamp lands, and a corporation tax should be added to the common school fund, and since that time we have added a number of others, such as the Michigan road lands fund, the coroner's find of property, the estrays and articles adrift fund, the transcient merchants' licenses, the veterinary board excess fees, the optometry surplus fees, hydrophobia fund, exhibition licenses, and sale of seized conveyances.

This permanent school fund has accumulated to the point where there is about $17,426,227.43 in the fund. This is being added to at the rate of about $133,000.00 each year, and the returns from the fund amount to about $1.25 a year per child in average daily attendance.

From time to time the Indiana legislature under provisions of the second constitution has levied a general property tax for the support of schools in varying amounts. This money has been distributed under terms of the statutes upon the basis of the number of pupils in their respective corporations. This rate of taxation has varied from time to time but for the past 12 years has been the 7 cent levy; prior, however, in almost every instance, the rate was higher. It is evident from the description of the means of support that so far given little could be done in the way of education, and the development of education in Indiana came as a result of laws which made it possible for local units to levy taxes for the support

of their schools. The school law of 1852 with its provisions for local taxation and building funds paved the way for the development of education in Indiana during the past three quarters of a century, respecting, of course, the revenues from the permanent funds previously described.

The question of local taxation has had various curbs in the way of statutory limits from time to time through the above mentioned period, reaching its peak in the laws on our statute books at the present time governing local taxation for schools wherein $1.50 per $100 of valuation may be levied for the operation of the schools and teachers' salaries. This is not to be confused with the $1.50 tax limitation law of 1932.

Thus continued the support of education in Indiana until 1905 when we set out upon our first attempt to carry out the provisions of the constitution, namely that of providing "a general and uniform system of common schools wherein tuition shall be free and equally open to all." It is not hard to recognize the great inequalities of schools in the state in many instances due largely to the ability to support education on the part of the communities. One does not have to go farther than Vigo County to find the great inequalities in the matter of ability to support the schools. One corporation in Vigo County has $953 of assessable wealth back of each enrolled child and the other extreme is over $7000.00. Indiana as a state furnishes more glaring examples of inequality if one cared to run down the cases.

The law of 1905 provided that 5.2% of the state school revenue raised by the tax on property of the state should be

placed in an equalization or state aid fund to enable school communities to approach the minimum standards which are set up by the State Board of Education. One might preface these remarks by saying that throughout the period between 1851 and 1905 all events had been pointing toward a state school system. Court decisions, legislation, etc., all definitely placed upon the state certain responsibilities in setting standards, but only in a very limited way did the state assume the responsibility of paying for the standards that it required the communities to reach. So the law of 1905 was the first effort at equalization and aid to the poorer communities of the state. This plan of state aid has continued in Indiana to the present time with considerable modification and increase in the amount of money from the state levy set aside for relief purposes.

Between 1905 and 1918 only 5.2% of the state school tax levy was provided for state aid. In 1919-1920 8.2% went to this fund and between 1921-28 30%. The period 1929-32 increased it to 45% and in 1933 the entire state school levy became an equalization fund and the provisions for participation in the fund were made such that many more corporations within the state are participating in this distribution. This was accomplished by reducing the eligibility rate from $1.20 to 50¢-this made possible by the 1905 law.

The legislation of 1933 brought many other changes in the state support of education in Indiana with which most of my listeners are familiar--an intangibles tax providing something over $1.00/yearly per pupil in average daily attendance; an excise tax providing more than $1.50/yearly per pupil in average daily attendance and the general state

support law providing for the payment from the state general fund of not to exceed $600 per teaching unit. All are a long way from the early provisions provided for the support of education, which were chiefly the Congressional Township fund and the common school fund, both of which, however, are still furnishing an appreciable amount to the support of education in Indiana. Thus we have progressed from a very meager state support of education in our beginnings to a rather liberal local support of education, and when this system broke down, we have gone back to a more liberal state support plan wherein the provisions of the constitution which set out that we should have a uniform system of schools is being more nearly approached than ever before. Just what the state holds for us along this line is of course a question. Most of us who are connected with the schools believe that state support upon an even wider basis such as has been outlined is the salvation of education. There are those who still insist that education is a local function.

This program of state support of course is dependent upon a tax system that will yield a sufficient sum for the state to distribute back to the local communities and just now a severe attack is being made upon the gross income tax, the method now employed to raise the bulk of the money now going to state support of schools. If this tax is repealed without another being passed to substitute for it, then the state support will be a matter of law but there will be no money to make it a reality. With this condition school standards will be jeopardized and in all probabilities brought to a much lower ebb than even at the present.

The whole future, then, of state support resolves itself back to a question of taxation and the enemies of a tax plan to raise a sufficient sum for state support of schools are putting themselves in a position of favoring lowered school standards in Indiana.

A larger phase of the problem is now facing us in the matter of whether or not the Federal government shall participate in the support of public education in the states. It is a rather well-known fact that the Federal constitution does not in any manner deal with the problem of education, but leaves the problem entirely to state support. State support in many instances has fallen down just as local support in many places within our own state. We have for years discussed the importance of having a greater national leadership in the field of education. Suggestions have taken the form of a department in the President's cabinet to look after this important function, or a more powerful commissioner of education working independently of other governmental bureaus. The crisis through which we are passing has brought us forcibly fact to face with the issue of--"Shall the Federal government participate in the support of education?"

Many thinkers today say that support of education is a problem devolving upon the local, state, and national governments. They say that whether America will continue to exist as a free democracy depends to a great degree upon whether we can develop a program of education in keeping with our reconstructed economic program. If we continue to finance education as it was financed in the days when local communities

were self-sustaining we shall fail. Those days are gone. We face entirely new conditions. "These conditions demand that the problem of financing the education of our children be handled as a national problem." These words by Paul Mort have the support of many educational leaders throughout the country. Another great leader in educational thought in America has recently said that we will not become truly a nation until we have a national system of schools, pointing out that strong nationalities accomplish nationalism to a considerable extent through their school systems. These and other leaders at the same time point to the logic of national support of education from purely an educational point of view, likewise point out that certainly the government's participation in banking, industry, and agriculture is no more in place than would be their participation in the support of education. Other leaders warn us that Federal subsidies will bring Federal rule and they point to the fact that national educational systems might tend to regiment the children, as has happened in some of the European countries. They further insist that education is a local matter and the states are well able to support education if they will properly organize and set up a tax system that will function.

Lately I have been reading the comments of outstanding educators both pro and con on the matter of Federal aid to education, and I believe that we fear that which we do not know about and with which we are unacquainted. Such is the situation so far as Federal support is concerned. A few years ago we feared state support. Now we have it in at least a

reasonable form and we have found that there is not so much to be feared. The chief fear that we have now is that the money will not be forthcoming as anticipated, and certainly this fear has little to say in its favor if you are considering the merits of a state support system.

Lately there has been much study on the matter of the support of education, the work of the Joint Commission on the Emergency in Education and their recommendations for financing education are perhaps the best suggestions we have at the present time. In brief this report asks for first, an adequate system of education that will meet the needs of the community, both upon a child and adult basis and will guarantee to the people who are participating in this system, that is the teachers, a reasonable compensation; second, that the system of education so set up be of such manner as to teach at least from a minimum standpoint all parts or sections of the state or corporation in question; third, that the organization of the local school districts should be such that it will provide for sensible and economic administration and organization; fourth, that a tax system drawing its sources from a rather wide variety of sources without undue dependence upon the property tax be adopted; fifth, that careful administration of the funds so secured be guaranteed through a comprehensive state system which will scientifically study the problems within its boundaries; sixth, that the Federal government should stand ready to meet the emergency and to restore educational opportunity to sections which are helpless in the face of the crisis, and that they

should go further and work out a plan wherein they will participate in the education of the children throughout the country in such a way as they will help guarantee a suitable foundation for education.

No greater problem is facing us than the one which we have tried to briefly outline-just what shall be the method of its solution is not immediately at hand. If one looks over the list of bills before our national Congress he is convinced that certainly we have not yet arrived at even agreement on this matter. One thing is certain--it is going to take an open mind and much careful thinking and planning if the school boys and girls of the present and the future, who will pass this way but once, are given a square deal by those of us who are individually and collectively responsible for their education.

Presented to the
Terre Haute Literary Club
April 16, 1934.
H. E. Moore

# BIBLIOGRAPHY

Allman, H. B. - Origin, Growth, and Management of Permanent School Funds in Indiana

Boone, Richard G. - History of Education in Indiana

Holmstedt - Current Trends in School Finance in Indiana

Report of the Joint Commission on the Emergency in Education on the Financing of Education

Files of

School Life

School Management

The Nation's Schools

Journal of the National Education Association

Indiana Teacher

Indiana Yearbooks

Paper #25

# HUNTING DINOSAURS

by

Guy Stantz

Read to

Terre Haute Literary Club

April 23, 1934

# HUNTING DINOSAURS

It, no doubt, is rather presumptuous of me to write on a subject which belongs to science as I have taken very little science in high school or college. The viewpoints in this paper are, therefore, that of a consumer and not a scientist. I became intensely interested in prehistoric animals in the summer of 1932 while passing through the Bad-lands of South Dakota. On this occasion there was a Paleontologist with four college students staying at a camp in the Bad-lands. They were hunting fossilized bones. When they found a good specimen they would dig it out, crate it, and ship it to a museum where it was studied, classified, and perhaps assembled, mounted, and placed on exhibit. Previous to this time I had been interested in wild flowers, ferns and other plants as a matter of recreation. I now added the study of geology to my interest in plants. I have tramped through most of the woods and hollows within fifty miles of Terre Haute that show any promise of being interesting. I have transplanted many of the interesting wild plants in my back yard. I have a number of fossils, imprints, and castings of plants and animals. It is a greater pleasure for me to go hunting with trowel, geologist's pick, and camera than with a gun. I get a greater "thrill" in finding a clump of polypody, the fossil of a gastropod, or the casting of a cycad than I do in shooting a bag of quails. When I see a fern growing beside a rock and then

see an imprint of apparently the same fern in the rock, I can see in my imagination a succession of ferns coming up each spring for millions of years. The fern is a real "blue-blood."

Last summer I was in the mountains of Wyoming a month. I spent some time in two rather noted locations where a large number of dinosaurs in fossil form have been excavated--Como Bluff and Bone Cabin Quarry.

In order to get a background for the study of dinosaurs let us make a brief study of this chart.

Note Chart Attached At End

If a place could be found where sediments had been deposited continuously from the beginning of deposition to the present day and the beds thus formed were cut vertically so that their edges could be viewed from the side, the cut would show an unbroken geologic column. This column might be subdivided and its parts named and described so as to form a table of geologic time. But over large areas periods to uplift and erosion intervened between periods of deposition. Every such interruption in deposition produces what geologists term an unconformity. At many places the time divisions shown in the complete geologic column may be absent in whole or in part and be reporesented by unconformity lines.

Each geologic age had its peculiar and characteristic forms of animal and plant life. As time progressed, the surface of the earth was changed. Through inconceivably long periods high-

lands were worn down and lowlands were built up, rivers changed their course, swamps were formed where dry land had been, lands were subdivided, and seas changed their places.

As the changes progressed, plants and animals were obliged to change their habits or perish. This necessity of adaptation to new conditions gave to each age its characteristic forms of life. Many of these forms are preserved as fossils, and from them something of the life of each age is known.

The length of the geologic ages can only be estimated. No reliable measure of time in years can be given. Many estimates have been made by men who have given the subject special attention and therefore are best qualified to judge. But the estimates should not be taken too precisely. At best they are only relative approximations to the truth.

The Mesozoic era is known as the age of reptiles. This era is divided into three periods--Triassic, Jurassic, and Cretaceous. The age of reptiles begun with the Triassic period or at the close of the preceeding period, the Permian. Reptiles dominated the land, sea and air. Probably the most notable of these reptiles were the dinosaurs, name meaning terrible reptile. They constituted the reigning dynasty of the Mesozoic Age. Some of these ungainly creatures walked upright and had three toes which made tracks like a bird. Some became swimmers such as turtles and ichthyosaurs. Others developed batlike wings and took possession of the air.

The closing of the Jurassic period was marked by a world wide revolution. Earth disturbances caused the sea to retire from Western America. On the floor abandoned by the Jurassic Sea great swamps were formed, and sluggish streams followed winding, shifting courses to the sea. In the great swamps and along the winding streams developed a group of the most remarkable reptiles the world has ever known.

Let us paint a picture of a scene at this time. Broad swamps stretch before us, their banks clothed in trees that resemble palms. In the distance rise a few low hills, from which flow broad and shallow rivers that wind to and fro in their sandy channels. Though the region is one from which mountains will rise, they are not foreshadowed by its subtropic marshes and lowlands, which extend from New Mexico to Montana.

Among the succulent plants of the bayous, a great dripping and splashing prevails. Blunt, stupid heads rise upon snaky necks that are borne by partly submerged bodies. There are hints of massive shoulders and legs--of long, muscular, lash-tipped tails.

We are watching a herd of feeding dinosaurs, the most powerful denizens of Mesozoic America. The shortest is more than sixty feet long, and the longest an inch or two less than ninety. Weights range from twenty to thirty tons, yet brains are limited to ounces. Despite their size and imposing titles, these monsters are both dull and peaceful. Their chief concerns are water

for wading and plants for food, with enough sunshine to make them comfortable. They care neither for battle nor rivalry, each reptile wandering about indifferent to its neighbors unless they happen to block its way. Without thinking much about it, they know how to walk, eat and avoid danger, and to mate with their kind at the proper season. Beyond these limits their minds rarely go.

From these ancestors two contrasting groups of dinosaurs arose. One included those we've just seen: huge quadrupeds with massive, elephantine legs, thick bodies and long necks and tails. Their heads always were small, and bore teeth that were both few and simple. Probably they were just sharp enough to cope with the soft marsh plants. Thus food, like habitat, was a matter of necessity, not choice, with these swamp-dwelling dinosaurs, whose teeth were too weak to cup plants of the land and whose legs were useless out of water. Only with the buoyant aid of water could they support the enormous bodies above them, whose weight, as we've said, reached thirty tons. The upper leg bone of one of these reptiles is more than seven feet in length, and the rest of the skeleton is in keeping with it. The height at the shoulder was twice that of the elephant Jumbo, while the neck arose twenty--six feet higher. Although the tail was shorter than in some species, it was very thick, thus adding its part to the forty tons that the beast must have weighed.

The other group were land animals who were flesh eaters.

immense size. The biggest ones failed to rival the herbivores: yet in the forests that fringed the Jurassic swamps there stalked dinosaurs thirty-four feet long, whose great ambition was to kill. Their hind legs were long and powerful; their toes were armed with talons, while their large skulls and jaws bore six inch teeth, replaced as fast as they were broken.

Before such engines of destruction, the herbivorous types sought the protection of deep water. Yet not always were they successful: a careless wader, coming too near the shore, would find himself seized by rows of merciless teeth, his body torn by powerful, clawed feet. The unequal struggle soon was ended, and the victor dragged his prey to the bank, there to tear it to bits at leisure. Large though the Jurassic hunters were, they were by no means the greatest. They did not reach their Zenith until late in Cretaceons times, after the huge, plant-eating dinosaur had become extinct. Tyrannosaurus, as he was called, was forty-seven feet long, with a heighth of twenty feet, and a weighth greater than Jumbo. His head was four feet three inches long and his powerful jaws were armed with teeth three to six inches long and an inch thick. The sharp claws that terminated his enormous toes were six to eight inches long and were curved like the talons of an eagle. The forearms were so small as to indicate that rex must have walked entirely on his powerful hind legs.

As he ranged the slowly rising plains, Tyrannosaurus was the largest and strongest carnivore ever seen upon land. In case of attack, he was ready for any comer--though few not of his kind dared approach him. But in seeking for prey he was less fortunate, for his prospective victims were not the simple, defenseless creatures that had wallowed and fed in Jurassic swamps. Some were swift runners and swimmers; others were armored forts of flesh upon which the longest of teeth were useless. They had followed the example of Tyrannosaurus himself, and against his teeth and muscles opposed agility and weapons as well as armor, plus a surly temper that made them willing to stand their ground before all opponents, no matter how large or how savage.

Whenever destruction threatens, many animals find means to avoid it. In some, these take the form of keen mind or ready instinct, coupled with agility of body. In others, there are special structures whose sole value seems to lie in the prevention or repair of injury. Why they were developed, we do not know--nor do we know why they so often are matched by other species whose ways and structures seem perfectly fitted to overcome these means of protection.

Yet doubt as to causes does not weaken the fact. The most cautious skeptic in evolution admits that since the very beginning of animal history, attack and defense have gone together. The hard tests, or shells, of Cambrian trilobites turned the

strong pincers of some of their neighbors, while blind dwarf species found safety in burrows. The shells of cephalopods protected their soft bodies, while their long tenacles were weapons of attack. All record the ancient struggle among things living; of the need to kill and the threat of destruction that are two keynotes of nature.

One of the commonest means of attaining safety, and one readily shown by fossils, is the development of some form of armor.

Few early dinosaurs indulged in armor. Small ones sought safety in running; larger kinds pursued them by speed. The huge herbivores found comparative safety in the water, where their chief enemies could not follow. But, as necessity for protection arose they developed armor. The best known, perhaps, is Stegosaurus, a twenty-foot walking fortress that roamed the forests of the late Jurassic. His head was small and his brain was simple--but his sides and flanks were studded with bone, two rows of sharp plates ran down his back, and his tail was set with two rows of spines. He could confront an enemy with something more persuasive than armor: one blow of that spiked and muscular tail would teach caution to the hungriest carnivore, while a pounce delivered on his sharp back-plates would net little but pain and broken teeth. When Stegosaurus became extinct (as he did at the end of the Jurassic period), he succumbed to attacks more persistent and subtle than those of any carnivorous reptile.

For a time, armor seemed out of fashion. Then, toward the middle of the Cretaceous period, there appeared a new group of herbivorous dinosaurs that in their own way outdid even Stegosaurus. By limiting shields and weapons to their heads, they retained their ability for active movement. Thus they held their own to the end of their era, keeping even Tyrannosaurus at bay.

The Cenozoic Era brought on an age of tumultuous earth action. Earthquakes were then doubtless violent, and volcanic eruptions were numerous. Apparently the slow-moving dinosaurs found life too strenous for endurance, for they dissappeared forever soon after the beginning of the Tertiary period. Several explanations have been offered for their extinction. Some have held that the bulky creatures were not able to endure the earthquake shicks. Others have maintained that their disappearance was due to the prevalence of volcanic dust, which choked them. Still others believe that their eggs were eaten by the increasing swarms of diminutive mammals. Some believe that they could not endure the colder climate that came about. The explanations thus to be offered are all somewhat fanciful, and there seems to be no more reason for seeking a special explanation of the disappearance of the dinosaurs than of that of the mammoth or of any other of the thousands of species of animals that flourished for a time and then became extinct.

The dinosaur, who ruled the earth for millions of years, is now a collection of fossil bones and known to the average man only

as a means to advertise a certain motor oil. Since life first appeared upon the earth many species have come into existance, yet all but a few have become extinct. Man himself is part of this series of species, destroying and replacing other animals even of his own species. In its time each of these creatures seemed good, and held the promise of successful existance. If a beast could think he would rank man as the greatest and most irrational disaster that the long suffering world has ever endured. Only insects and germs have profited by it and they, like men, are greedy destroyers.

Such is our prized organic progress: a series of origins, rises and declines whose end often has been destruction. Standing at the crest of a wave of dominance such as no other species has known, we view the means of our coming as good and ourselves as the goal of evolution. Perhaps we are, for man has such power to kill that few animals may oppose him. Even a new and more competent humanity would be wiped out as it began existance, should it do so in a way contrary to our customs and wishes. In this power to destroy lies man's chief guaranty of a future. Let it decrease or become too highly developed, and he will be confronted by organisms more experienced in the ways of the earth than he, ready to contest his rule of the land.

Yet despair will come no nearer truth than does the present optimism of conceit. Evolution is a process, not an agent: its ways can be neither good nor bad. Stripped of human prejudice

and desire, it presents imposing yet unconscious indifference to accepted standards of purpose or value. Its one great result is change, and change may bring either plenty or peril. New habits and structures may insure success, especially if the earth's surface is changing. They may result, however, in swift extinction, while forms survive whose most striking virtue is the stubborn retention of primitive structure.

Most of us wish to see man continue, much as we lament his present faults. Yet honesty compels the admission that desire may mean as little in human survival as it meant in that of the dinosaurs. In the cycle of life there seem to be factors which bring decline almost as surely as rain makes rivers. Species vanish in the midst of plenty which their ancestors found highly favorable. Mammals have long since passed their zenith; today they form a diminishing race whose fate may be shared by their prodigal, man. His intelligence doubtless will prolong the struggle by enabling him to kill organic enemies or to build artivicial conditions more tolerant of his needs than are those of nature. Man has gone far on his path already: in the thousands of centuries that lie before him, he is bound to achieve what we deem miracles.

| ERA. | PERIOD | EPOCH | LIFE | ROCKS |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Cenozoic<br><br>15,000,000 years to 97,000,000 years | Quaternary | Recent<br><br>Pleistocene | As at present time<br><br>Man | Alluvium |
| | Tertiary | Pliocene<br><br>Miocene<br>Oligocene<br><br>Eocene | Mammals<br><br>Titanothere<br>Higher - order of - plants | White River<br>{Wasatch<br>{Conglomerate<br><br>Ferris |
| Mesozoic<br>50,000,000 years to 305,000,000 yrs. | Cretaceous | | Reptiles<br>Dinosaurs | Dakota-ss-sh. ss<br>Morrison-sh-ss Base ss |
| | Jurassic | | Shell-fish<br>Flying-reptiles | Sundance<br>Sandy sh |
| | Triassic | | Birds<br>Mammals<br>Cycads<br>Hard-woods | Jelm. cong-sh<br>Alcova Ln<br>Chugwater, Sandy Ln |
| Paleozoic<br><br>125,000,000 years to 1,300,000,000 years | Carboniferous | Permian<br><br>Pennsylvanian<br>Mississippian | Amphibians<br>Club-moss<br>Horse-tail<br>Ferns<br>Flowering-plants<br>Trees<br>Amomtos<br>Sharks | Forelle. Lms<br>Satanka Sh<br>Casper. ss Embar<br>Tensleep<br>Fountain. ss<br>Madison. Lms |
| | Devovian | | Fish<br>Molluscs<br>Amphibians<br>Land-Plants | |
| | Silurian | | Cephalopods (Nautitus)<br>Crinoids<br>Eurypterids<br>Corats<br>Fishes | |
| | Ordovician | | Cephalopods<br>Brachiopods<br>Trilobites<br>Insects | |
| | Cambrian | | Trilobites<br>Brachiopods<br>Seaweeds | Deadwood |
| Proterozoic<br><br>625,000,000 years to 3,000,000,000 yrs | Algonkian | | Crustaceans<br>Brachiopods<br>Seaweeds | Granite<br>Crystaline |
| | Archean | | No fossils | Granite<br>Gneiss<br>Schist |

BLANK PAGE

356

-34

4/30/34

Paper #26.

# THE COWBIRD: A PARASITE

The common name for the species generally known as the Cowbird varies with different people and with different sections of the country. Cow Blackbird, Cow Bunting, Lazy Bird, Brownheaded Blackbird, and other appellations are among the synonyms in use. Whether most appropriate or not, usage seems to be crystallizing upon the term 'Cowbird,' for the reason that members of the species are so often found among cows in pastures. The reason for this association with cattle is not exactly known. Some writers see no relation between such association and the life of the bird, while others believe that insects, driven from the grass and weeds by the cattle, furnish the foundation for such a habit.

It is as a parasite upon other species of birds that the Cowbird is most interesting. It never builds a nest of its own, it does not incubate its own eggs and it takes no care whatever of its young. Its eggs are deposited in the nests of other birds, usually smaller than itself, and the foster parents incubate them and feed them along with their own. Most evidence indicates that the Cowbird deposits its eggs directly in the nests of its victims. Not less than ninety-one species, according to Bendire are victimized in this manner. Since its egg is, as a rule, larger than those of the rightful owners of the nests, it receives most of the body heat during the period of incubation and frequently hatches a day or two ahead of the other birds. This gives the young Cowbird the advantage over his nest-mates, with the result that he gets the greater amount of the food brought to the nest and soon starves the others or shoves them entirely from the nest. According to my own observations the number of Cowbird eggs in a single nest may range from one to three, along with from one to

five of the rightful owner. Greater variations than this have been reported. The Report of the New York State Museum for 1912 states that in every instance the Cowbirds destroy the rightful owners of the nests. Barrows, in 'Michigan Bird Life', however, states that the Song Sparrow frequently rears one or two of its own young in addition to one or more young Cowbirds. My own observations show that this is also true of the Field Sparrow, the Towhee, and the Catbird.

The observations upon which this paper is based were made in the vicinity of Winona Lake, Indiana, between June 14 and August 20, a few summers ago. A report of these observations as a whole and of specific instances will make clear the nature of the Cowbird.

On June 17 I was fortunate enough to find a Towhee's nest containing four eggs, all very much alike. Three were white with reddish brown spots well distributed over the entire surface and one was slightly brownish with the spots not so pronounced as in the other three. They were all so nearly the same size that from the eggs alone no one could have stated definitely whether they were of two different species or merely variations of the same species.

The truth of the matter was revealed by the subsequent history of the nest. By June 23 three of the eggs, including the one of slightly different color from the other three, had hatched. (The other egg never hatched.) All three young birds looked very much alike at first, but, by the 26th differences began to be noticeable. Two of them were covered with a down of grayish color and had white rimmed mouths, while the third one was covered with a darker brown and had a yellow-rimmed mouth. The first two were developing more rapidly than the latter one. By June 30, when the young were about

ready to leave the nest, the differences were very evident. The two were much more completely feathered than the one. They were of a brownish gray color above and light underneath, with darker stripes becoming visible. The one remained dark. The result clearly consisted of two Cowbirds and one Towhee.

While we do not class the Cowbird as a praecocial bird, the above example, as well as others observed, indicates that it develops more rapidly than other altricial birds. This is one characteristic which greatly aids it in being extraordinarily successful in its parasitic life.

While I observed only the one Towhee's nest, I repeatedly saw Towhees feeding young Cowbirds during the latter half of June and the first half of July. The Cowbirds in every instance received the entire attention of their foster parents, there being no young Towhees present. They readily accepted all food offered them and continued to call for more. On several occasions between June 16 and June 25 I saw the same pair of Towhees feeding two young Cowbirds—the male attending to one and the female the other. Although my observations covered only a short period of time late in the nesting season, they indicated a high percentage of Cowbird parasitism among Towhees.

Some writers contend that Cowbirds are careful to lay their eggs in nests where there are already eggs of another species. Others attempt to refute this by citing instances of nests containing Cowbird eggs only. It seems to me, however, that all the circumstances which produce such a condition have not been considered. For example, it is not always possible to tell whether a nest has been used in raising a brood of birds or whether it has been deserted. I doubt

very much whether one who did not know could have told on July 1, after the young birds had left the nest, whether the Towhee's nest referred to above was one which had been used or whether it was a deserted one. Yet there was one unhatched Cowbird egg, at least the hollow shell of one, remaining in the nest. Who could say that it had been laid in an empty nest? Again, on July 6, I found a nest, apparently of a Song Sparrow, containing one Cowbird egg. It did not seem to be in use. It was impossible to tell certainly whether a brood of birds had been raised in it and this egg had failed to hatch, or whether it had been deserted because the Cowbird egg had been found in it. Not knowing the complete history of the case, both assumptions are equally probable. Two other similar nests were found late in July.

One other observation proves conclusively that only Cowbird eggs may be found in a nest without having been deposited originally in an empty nest. On June 18 I found the nest of a Warbler containing three eggs of the Warbler and two of the Cowbird. On my next visit to the nest, June 21, I found only the Cowbird eggs remaining in the nest. The others had been destroyed, and the shell of at least one of them was lying on the ground near the nest. This, in addition to giving light on the subject in question, is circumstantial evidence, that the Cowbird sometimes destroys the eggs of the rightful owner of the nest. Unless the Warbler eggs in this case were destroyed by the Cowbird, why were the Cowbird eggs spared? The same two eggs were still in the nest on June 26, when I last visited it, but they were cold, and numerous ants were crawling about the nest and upon the eggs. Evidently the destruction of the eggs caused the desertion of the nest.

360

I do not contend that the Cowbird always lays its eggs in nests containing other eggs. There is evidence that they frequently do otherwise. According to Barrows of the Michigan Agricultural College, "The Yellow Warbler is constantly victimized by the Cowbird, and in places where this parasite is abundant many deserted nests are found containing from one to four eggs of the Cowbird, with or without some of the Warbler. . . . As is well known, this Warbler not infrequently covers a Cowbird egg with a new layer of material in the bottom of the nest, raising the rim of the nest correspondingly, and instances have been known where this has been done a second time, making a three-storied nest." One two-storied nest of this species was found on July 6 in a raspberry bush just north of Indiana University Biological Station. The Cowbird eggwas almost completely buried in the bottom, and the two stories of the nest were very distinct. Undoubtedly a brood of birds was raised in the upper story while the Cowbird egg remained in the basement unincubated.

Of three other nests of the Yellow Warbler found in use, one contained a Cowbird egg. Owing to the fact that after the birds hatched the nest was robbed, I did not observe the struggle for existence between the Cowbird and the Warblers of this nest. One Kentucky Warbler's nest, found June 22, also contained a Cowbird egg, but this nest was robbed before any of the eggs hatched. Out of a total of six Warbler nests found, whose history was certain, four had been contaminated, indicating a very high percentage of parasitism by the Cowbird among the Warblers.

On June 17 I found the nest of a Scarlet Tanager containing one bird and two eggs. The eggs never hatched and on June 22 when I last saw the young bird, it was evident that it was a cowbird.

According to Amos W. Butler in his 'Birds of Indiana,' the nest of the Scarlet Tanager is a frequent receptacle for the eggs of the Cowbird.

A nest of the Wood Thrush was found on June 29 containing two eggs of the Cowbird and none of the Thrush. What had become of the Thrush eggs, if any had been laid, could not be determined. On July 2, one egg hatched and on July 3 the other was gone. On July 16, the young Cowbird, fairly well feathered, left the nest, constituting the entire brood of one of our most beneficial birds.

A second nest of the Wood Thrush, containing two eggs of the owner, was found on July 14. On my next visit to this nest on July 17, one of the Thrush eggs had been picked, evidently by a bird, and thrown from the nest. Two Cowbird eggs had been deposited in its place. This, again, is circumstantial evidence that the Cowbird destroys the eggs of other birds. By July 28 all three eggs had been hatched. All three birds thrived well until August 5, when one of the young Cowbirds was found dead, from some unknown cause, in the nest. It was removed by its foster parents on the same day. The other two birds, one Thrush and one Cowbird, continued to thrive and left the nest on August 8. Although the Cowbird was a little more developed than the Thrush both probably survived and reached maturity.

There is every reason to believe that the Sparrows suffer heavily from the Cowbird. Of fourteen nests observed, ten of the Field Sparrow and four of the Song Sparrow, all contained one or more eggs of the Cowbird except three nests of the Field Sparrow. In two of these three nests the young were raised unmolested. The eggs of the third nest were destroyed before the period of incubation began and the nest was deserted. The fourth nest, found June 29, contained one

egg of the Sparrow and two of the Cowbird. By June 30 one more Cowbird egg had been deposited. The period of incubation now began. On July 12 one of the Cowbird eggs was found missing and the Sparrow egg was found on the ground near the nest with the young Sparrow almost ready to emerge, apparently a little prematurely, from the shell. I replaced it in the nest, but found it dead, the Cowbirds dead in the shells, and the nest deserted the next day. So many tragedies of this character are found among the birds that one wonders how we have as many feathered friends as we have.

A fifth nest, found June 30, contained one egg of the Field Sparrow and one of the Cowbird. Persons who had observed this nest, previously, informed me that one Cowbird had been hatched here but that it had disappeared from the nest a few days after hatching. On July 1, my sixth nest of the Field Sparrow, containing four eggs of the rightful owner and one of the parasite was found. By the 5th all the eggs had hatched, two Sparrows and the Cowbird having appeared as early as July 3. It is interesting to note that the Cowbird had one or two days the start of at least two of the Sparrows; also that one Sparrow had been crowded out before July 7 and another before July 12, when two Sparrows and the Cowbird left the nest. The seventh, eighth, and ninth nests of this species were found during the second half of July and each contained a Cowbird egg or eggshell. The previous history is unknown in all three cases. The tenth nest, found July 19, contained three Sparrow eggs and one Cowbird egg. All four eggs had hatched by July 30, but the nest was robbed and the birds destroyed, probably by a Hawk, on August 3 or 4.

The first Song Sparrow's nest, found June 28, is interesting because of the large number of eggs and its subsequent history. When

found there were five Sparrow eggs and three Cowbird eggs. By 4 o'clock P.M. of the same day, one Sparrow egg had disappeared. By July 7, another was gone. On July 10, when I visited the nest, I found two young Sparrows, two young Cowbirds, and one egg of each; on July 12, three Sparrows, two Cowbirds, and one Cowbird egg; on July 13, one Sparrow, and two Cowbirds. On the morning of the 15th the Sparrow was found dead; one Cowbird was found in a similar condition on the 16th. The remaining Cowbird, now receiving the food of the entire brood, grew very rapidly and left the nest on July 17 or 18. The other three nests were found late in July, after the nesting season was over, but each contained one Cowbird egg. Repeated observations, between June 22 and August 18, of Song Sparrows feeding young Cowbirds tend to confirm Barrows' statement that "probably this species rears more Cowbirds than any other species which we have."

On July 19, a nest of the Acadian Flycatcher, containing one Cowbird about to leave the nest, was found. On this same date a member of this same species was observed feeding a young Cowbird which had left the nest. The small, frail, shallow nest of this Flycatcher makes it almost certain that it does not raise any of its own in the same brood with a Cowbird.

In addition to the birds which I have found nesting which were victimized by Cowbirds I have noticed several species feeding young Cowbirds which had left the nest. The young Cowbirds, usually already much larger than their foster parents, were always calling for food more frequently than it could be found and carried to them. Indeed, after they were well able to fly, they followed their foster parents about and almost incessantly repeated their hunger-call. They were,

undoubtedly, fed long after they were able to care for themselves. I have seen Vireos, Maryland Yellow-throats, and American Redstarts imposed upon in this manner. If these birds had any offspring of their own, I did not see them. They gave the young Cowbirds their undivided attention, while the adult Cowbirds flitted merrily about, probably spying out new victims.

During the period of my observations I saw at least ninety different species of birds. Thirty-three of these were either nesting or feeding young which had left the nest. Thirteen of these thirty-three were victims of the Cowbird. In other words, almost 40 per cent of the species found nesting or feeding young birds were rearing young Cowbirds. Probably, if the entire truth were known, the figures would show a still higher percentage. Considering some single species, such as the Field Sparrow, Song Sparrow, Towhee, Yellow Warbler, and Maryland Yellow-throat, there is every reason to believe that in some localities the percentage of parasitism approaches very nearly 100 per cent.

The status of the Cowbird cannot be determined without viewing it from an economic standpoint and noting its relation to agriculture. Four questions must be answered in doing this: (1) Of what does the food of the Cowbird consist? (2) Of what does the food of its victims consist? (3) How does the food of a single Cowbird compare in kind and quantity with that of the brood of birds it has replaced? (4) What, if any, service to man does the Cowbird perform that cannot be performed by victimized species?

According to Barrows, in 'Michigan Bird Life,' the food of the Cowbird is 22 percent animal matter and 78 per cent vegetable matter. Of the 22 per cent of animal matter, 20 per cent consists of insects

365

as follows: grasshoppers, which during August furnish 45 per cent of the food of the species, 10 per cent; weevils, 2 per cent; caterpillars, including cutworms and army worms, 2 per cent; and wasps, bees, ants, and miscellaneous insects, 6 per cent. The vegetable matter consists mainly of weed seeds and grain, the former predominating. The latter is largely waste grain, but some is from newly sown fields. I have also seen young Cowbirds accept wild fruit, such as mulberries and raspberries from their foster parents. Undoubtedly, the food habits of the Cowbird are, on the whole, beneficial.

In answer to our second question above, we learn from Barrows, in 'Michigan Bird Life,' and Butler, in 'Birds of Indiana,' of what the food of some of the birds commonly victimized by the Cowbird consists. The Towhee feeds mainly upon weed seeds and insects. Although it is fond of wild fruits and eats almost everything from strawberries and blackberries to wild cherries and grapes, it does no damage to cultivated fruits and plants. Owing to the nature of its haunts, it is not as beneficial as many other species. In view of the fact that it frequently raises two or more Cowbirds along with one or more of its own young, it is questionable whether much economic loss results from its victimization by the Cowbird.

All the Sparrows, with the exception of the English Sparrow, are very beneficial in their eating habits. Weed and grass seed, an immense number of injurious insects, and small wild fruit constitute the bulk of their food. It is easy to see the harm done by the Cowbird when we know, for example, that the Song Sparrow raises more Cowbirds than any other species and that, as a rule, one Cowbird is raised at the expense of an entire brood of Sparrows.

The food habits are uniformly beneficial. They consume largely insects, spiders, small wild fruits, and insect eggs. They usually make use of food most easily obtainable. Forbes has shown in one case that where an orchard was infested with canker-worms, these larvae formed two-thirds of the food of the Yellow Warbler. While Cowbirds are voracious feeders, and one of them undoubtedly destroys many more harmful insects than a single Warbler, the good done by one Cowbird by no means balances with that accomplished by the entire brood of Warblers at whose expense it exists. In addition to this consideration, a comparison of the esthetic, sentimental, and educational value of the two groups places the Cowbird in exceptionally ill repute.

How does the food of a single Cowbird compare in kind and quantity with that of the brood of birds which it has replaced? This question has been answered partially already. In kind, the comparison is favorable; in quantity, unfavorable. One Cowbird certainly does not consume as many injurious insects and seeds of noxious weeds as the three or four song-birds whose place it has taken.

What, if any, service to man does the Cowbird perform that cannot be performed by parasitized victims? Edward H. Forbush, in 'Useful Birds and Their Protection,' says: "This much-maligned bird is, nevertheless, an essential part of nature's plan. Birds that rear their own young are confined by necessity to a certain radius about their nests; but the scattered bands of Cowbirds form a wandering, unattached light squadron of insect destroyers, which all summer long can go where their presence is most needed. In the warmer months of the year they feed almost entirely upon insects, but during the colder months they live on seeds." From my own observations, however,

367

places are rare where we find the Cowbird in which we do not also find species of more exemplary habits just as capable as the Cowbird of consuming insects and weed seeds detrimental to human welfare. The numbers of these species would be even more numerous if Cowbirds were exterminated. I doubt whether the "unattached light squadrons" of Cowbirds cover any more territory than is covered by the various species of birds working out from their nests as centers.

Paper #28.

Mackell
5/14/54

# Cosmic Rays

During the last two or three years in newspapers, in periodicals, and upon the screen the attention of the public has been directed at many times toward a new form of radiation which goes by the name of cosmic rays. We all know that one of the achievements sought for in the recent stratosphere balloon flights was that of securing more specific data concerning these rather remarkable rays in a region which is somewhat removed from ordinary terrestial disturbances. In a similar way the Antarctic expeditions of Commander Byrd are being used, in part, to settle certain questions about these rays in regions of the globe having certain magnetic features.

In order that we may better understand what is meant by cosmic radiation, let us first look into the history of the phenomenon.

For many years it has been observed that charged electroscopes would lose their charges gradually, even though every precaution were used as regards insulation, shielding, etc. This effect was thought to be due to radiation from radioactive matter in the earth's crust, and the general name of "penetrating radiation" was applied to the agent.

In 1903 McLennon, Rutherford and their collaborators succeeded in demonstrating that the discharging effect could be very largely reduced by surrounding the electroscopes with several successive layers of lead. It was thus shown, however, that a certain residual amount of this radiation managed to get through the very thick lead screens. As a consequence it seemed that the most penetrating part

of the radiation had a much greater penetrating power than the emanations from radium or any of the known radioactive materials, and more penetrating, of course, than any form of xrays. The very appropriate name of "penetrating radiation" was thus fastened upon this form of energy.

In 1910 the Swiss physicist, Gockel, took an enclosed electroscope up in a balloon to a height of 4500 meters and found, much to his surprise, that the effect was greatly increased as the balloon ascended. This showed rather conclusively that a part of the penetrating radiation, at least, must come from the upper atmosphere or indeed from regions beyond the atmosphere.

During the next four years, 1910-1914, Hess in Austria and Kolhurster in Germany made flights similar to that of Gockel and found that there was a slight decrease in the effect up to 1000 meters, and then the effect increased gradually until, at 9000 meters, it was seven times as great as at the earth's surface.

The war put a stop to these experiments for the time being, but in 1921 and 1922 Millikan and Bowen of the California Institute of Technology took the next important step by building recording electroscopes and sending them up in sounding balloons which rose to a height of 10 miles. When these balloons fell, the electroscopes were recovered and their records examined. It was found from these data that, while the results thus obtained bore out the general conclusions drawn from the Hess and Kohlhurster data, yet the magnitude of the increase in the effect was nothing like as great in the case of Millikan and Bowen.

Since the magnitude of the effect as calculated from the Millikan

and Bowen data did not support the theory of Cosmic origin for these rays, it was thought that perhaps radioactive material in the upper layers of the atmosphere might be the origin of the rays. This hypothesis could be checked readily by testing the hardness of the rays in much the same manner as the hardness of xrays or radium rays is tested. If the rays were no harder than those of thorium D or radium C, we might conclude that the hypothesis is correct or, at least, plausible.

The next step, a step to test this hypothesis, was made in the summer of 1923 by Kolhurster in Europe and by Millikan and Otis in America. In Europe the work was carried out in the Alpine glaciers and in the shallow bodies of water near sea level. In America the work was done at the top of Pikes Peak by electroscopes shielded by thick lead screens. In both of these cases attempts were made to measure the penetrating power or the hardness of the rays directly and not to measure the total magnitude of the effect as had been done previously. In both these experiments the data seemed to indicate that there was strong probability that the rays originated in radioactive materials of terrestial origin, and there was no conclusive data which supported a type of cosmic radiation of greater hardness than that of radium C. In addition to these data, Swann and his collaborators at the University of Minnesota, by means of ionization measurements in high pressure containers, found nothing to support the cosmic origin theory. In passing, the writer of this paper might add that he was working in the same laboratory with Swann at Minnesota and observed his work from day to day over a period of three years. Swann is one of the foremost authorities in America

today on the subject of atmospheric electricity in general, and since the time that his work at Minnesota was carried out, he has gone to the Bartol Research Foundation of the Franklin Institute, where he is now the director. It was Swann who wrote the material on atmospheric electricity, including the chapter on cosmic rays, in the most recent edition of the Encyclopedia Brittanica.

Up to 1925, therefore, no positive evidence was at hand which indicated that these penetrating rays were of cosmic origin, but in the summer of that year, Millikan and Cameron found what they thought was unambiguous evidence which indicated that some of the rays were of much greater penetrating power than any rays from radium or thorium. The effect was much weaker than was expected but of a much greater penetrating power and of a much shorter wave length than was anticipated. The spectral band of these rays ranged in wave length from .00065 Angstroms to .00038 Angstroms, or, in other words, from 1/20 to 1/30 the wave length of the hardest gamma rays of radium.

This experiment of Millikan's was the one which won for him world-wide fame. It consisted of sinking sealed electroscopes in deep snow-fed lakes, and in one of these cases he found that the electroscopes had to be sunk to a depth of 60 feet before the effect was totally eliminated, in so far as it was possible to detect it with electroscopes of such sensitivity as were being then used. In other lakes data of exactly the same significance were found, and it was further shown by subsidiary experiments that the rays did not have their origin in the lakes themselves; thus pointing conclusively for the first time to an origin outside the earth or its atmosphere. Further tests made at times when the sun was overhead and when it was beneath the

horizon indicated that the radiation did not originate in the sun. Another test made in a similar manner as regards the Milky Way indicated that the effect was independent of the position of the Milky Way, and thus indicated that the origin of these very penetrating rays was indeed in the depths of the Cosmos, far removed from the galaxy or our part of the Universe.

Further tests were made by Millikan and his co-workers during 1926 and 1927 in the Andes of the Southern Hemisphere and in lakes farther north than those previously used in the Northern Hemisphere. All these experiments brought out data which agreed in every particular.

Late in 1927 Millikan devised other electroscopes of much greater sensitivity and with these super-sensitive instruments he was able to carry out his readings to a sensitivity of ten times that afforded by his former instruments. He found that rays of much shorter wave length could be detected and consequently of much greater penetrating power. It was found, for example, by these instruments that the rays could pass through some 200 feet of water or the equivalent of 18 feet of lead before being totally absorbed. This corresponded to a minimum wave length of .00006 Angstroms, or, in other words, about 1/200 as long as the shortest and most penetrating gamma rays of radium.

As a result of Millikan's experiments, he was led in 1928 to postulate a new theory of the evolution of matter which, to make a long story short, is something like this: In the regions of interstellar space atoms of hydrogen and helium are being used continually to build up such atoms as silicon and iron, and when this takes place a certain amount of residual energy is liberated in the form of cosmic radiation.

This naturally raises the question as to where the building blocks, namely the electrons and protons, get their origin, since it might well be assumed that the original supply of these primordial entities would long ago have been used up. The only answer to this riddle seems to lie in the conclusion that radiant energy released from the hot stars by the annihilation of atoms must in some manner, as yet unexplained, be transformed into electrons and protons. The possibility of this occurrence is not so far fetched when we remember that the conditions as regards pressure and temperature in interstellar space are the exact opposite of the conditions prevailing in the hot stars and, thus, it might be assumed that the process of changing atoms into radiation, which most certainly does take place in the stars, might be reversed in interstellar space. The cycle of creation would, therefore, be complete and we find ourselves now in absolute possession of all the links leading to a more comprehensive theory of the Conservation of Energy and Mass. In other words we might say that in interstellar space, atoms are being built up from positive and negative electrons which are in turn being created out of radiation emanating from the disintegration of atoms in the hot stars. These stars are nothing more or less than aggregations of atoms similar to the ones which were built up in the first place in space. The Universe is thus pictured as being a continuous self-acting engine which should go on forever or at least as long as conditions in the Universe as a whole remain as they are at present. These so-called cosmic rays of Millikan are just one link in the chain of evidence, cosmic signals, as it were, that this evolutionary process is still going on.

We have followed the course of cosmic ray investigation thus far up to 1928 when Millikan and Cameron made their report of a rather exhaustive study made in both the Southern and Northern Hemispheres. It will be recalled that they found no apparent orientation of the effect with latitude and they were led to the conclusion that these rays were not primarily electric particles, but rather that they consisted of photons or, in other words, that they consisted of waves or quanta whichever we choose to call them just as we designate the individual units of light, xrays and gamma rays.

In 1930 another great school of physicists, led by Arthur H. Compton of the University of Chicago, entered the field of cosmic ray explorers. From now on the public is to be treated to the spectacle of two great Nobel prize winners, Compton and Millikan, engaged in a friendly controversy with reference to the nature of the rays.

Compton and his colleagues organized a very formidable party of co-workers embracing practically the whole globe with eight different expeditions, extending into Africa, Asia, Europe, North and South America, and Australia.

In March, 1933, Dr. Compton made a partial report in the Physical Review, and in this report he produces data collected from these several expeditions which indicate to him, at least, and to his colleagues that the rays are due to high speed electrons originating in outer space and crashing into the earth's atmosphere at enormous speed. He comes to this conclusion primarily because of the fact that the data show a decided variation with geographic latitude, the effect being some 14% greater near the North magnetic pole than at the equator at sea level, some 22% greater at an altitude of 2000 meters and about 33%

greater at an altitude of 4360 meters.

This effect as shown by the Compton data fits in quite well with the theory of Lemaitre and Vallarta which considers the effect of the earth's magnetic field upon high speed electrons coming into the earth's atmosphere from remote space.

In December, 1933, before the annual meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science at Atlanta, a rather lively discussion was entered into by Compton and Millikan. As regards the actual data they were in rather close agreement, but as regards the nature of the rays, they differed rather widely in their views. Millikan still holds to his original theory that a very appreciable part of these cosmic rays are of the nature of photons, not electrons, while Compton holds to the contrary notion that they are primarily electrically charged particles, electrons and protons.

As to what causes the discharging of electroscopes, both agree that they are electrically charged particles, but, whereas Compton considers that these particles come from outer space, Millikan contends that these electrified particles are merely parts of atmospheric atoms which have been smashed by the cosmic photons coming from outer space.

Compton contends that Millikan's electroscopes at the bottom of lakes are discharged by photons which are produced by these high speed cosmic electrons in much the same manner as xrays are produced by cathode rays or ordinary electrons.

From data collected during the recent stratosphere flights of Picard and others, Millikan is able to draw conclusions which, to his way of thinking, support his theory as to the origin of the rays.

Compton, on the other hand, is able to draw conclusions from the same data which, to his way of thinking, are in support of his theory.

It is thus seen that the scientific world finds itself today in possession of a great store of data bearing upon cosmic rays and this store of data is mounting every day. However, we find two of the world's greatest physicists, Compton and Millikan, unable to agree as to the nature of the rays.

Research of all kinds is being carried out at the present time, not only to secure evidence of the nature of the rays, but to see what they will do. The phenomenon is too new for us to justly appraise its implications as regards organic life and the general nature of things as we find them on earth, but it is certainly likely that rays of such enormous penetrating power may have played a very important part in the whole field of creation. The next few years will likely yield more evidence bearing upon the nature of these remarkable rays and also upon their effects upon all nature.

J. J. Mackey
May 14-1934.

# TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

# VOL 14

# 1934—35

# TERRE HAUTE

# LITERARY CLUB

# PAPERS

VOLUME XIV

1934- -1935

Program

# The Terre Haute Literary Club

CHAMBER OF COMMERCE
MONDAY EVENING
7:30

1934-1935

KEEP FOR REFERENCE


-Volume XIV- -1934-35

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| ıcy- -H.E.Moore- | -Paper | #15 | |
| ıtributions- -W.O.Shriner- | " | 24 | 205-214 |
| ly- -D.L.Harmon- | " | 19 | |
| ıel- | " | 21 | |
| .onial Massachusetts | " | 11 | 88-112 |
| the Dutch | " | 16 | 144- |
| Man,The- -H.S.Hickman | " | 28 | |
| - -N.R.Van Cleave | " | 1 | |
| etts- -F.H.Brengle- | " | 11 | |
| | " | 17 | |
| .Canine | " | 16 | |
| Factors in Heredity | " | 8 | 63-72 |
| | " | 10 | 74-87 |
| ure Take its Course | " | 4 | 43- |
| Cultural Study | " | 19 | |
| ors in- -H.E.Elder- | " | 8 | |
| the Character of Man- | " | 28 | 287-300 |
| nt | " | 29 | 245-261 |
| cient Poets- -F.H.Weng | " | 14 | |
| edity- -H.E.Elder- | " | 8 | |
| Stantz- | " | 27 | |
| -L.C.Halberstadt | " | 4 | |
| e North Pole | " | 30 | 250-261 |
| hilosophy in 1935- | " | 25 | 215-223 |
| | " | 6 | 50-61 |
| | " | 3 | |
| -H.E.Elder | " | 31 | 270- |
| in a Democracy- | " | 15 | 136-150 |
| | " | 6 | |
| Canine | " | 16 | |
| on | " | 21 | 181-196 |
| .P.Mackell | " | 30 | |
| N.R.Van Cleave | " | 1 | |
| Ancient- -F.H.Weng | " | 14 | |
| | " | 23 | |
| | " | 38 | |
| | " | 10 | |
| -C.T.Lulan | " | 25 | |
| a and ibutions- | " | 24 | 205-214 |
| | " | 27 | 227-236 |
| | " | 23 | 196-204 |
| | " | 17 | 162-177 |
| | " | 1 | 3-24 |
| | " | 13 | 113-126 |
| | " | 13 | |
| | " | 14 | 121-136 |
| | " | 29 | |
| | " | 8 | 30-42 |

Politician- -L.R.Sutin -
Scepticism,The New- -C.T
Senescence- -D.H.Forsyth
Shakespearian Philosophy
Shriner,W.O.- -Archimede
Stantz,Guy- -Indiana,the
Sutin,L.R.- -Politician-
Taxay,J.M.- -Dixie Laugh
Van Cleave,N.R.- -The Ph
Wade,F.C.- -Where Do We
Where Do We Go From Her
Weng,F.H.- -Horace,the
What Do I Want- -R.W.
Wisely,J.B.- -That M

# Program

**OCTOBER**

1. N. R. VanCleave,
"The Philosophy of Confucius"
G. E. Francis and H. E. Elder.
8. F. E. Wiedemann,
"Wilhelm Conrad Roentgen"
J. E. Mackell and O. T. Allen.
15. J. B. Wisely, "That Man McGuffey"
L. R. Fair and E. N. Canine.
22. W. E. Ouweneel, "Bird Migration"
H. E. Elder and Guy Stantz.
29. L. C. Halberstadt,
"Let Nature Take Its Course"
D. L. Harmon and J. E. Lord.

**NOVEMBER**

5. W. F. Mitchell,
"The Triumph of Mediocrity in Business"
C. T. Malan and A. N. Levin.
12. Rev. George E. Francis,
"Stephen C. Foster"
N. R. VanCleave and F. H. Weng.
19. A. R. Markle,
"Jimmie Bonner and the Heroes"
C. Y. Kelly and L. R. Sutin.
26. L. R. Fair, "Modern Poetry"
J. B. Wisely and E. N. Canine.

**DECEMBER**

3. Dr. D. H. Forsyth,
"Restoration of the Erie Canal Reservoir"
H. S. Hickman and J. E. Mackell.
10. F. E. Brengle, "Home Ownership"
R. A. Acher and O. T. Allen.
17. E. L. Welborn, "Trends in Education"
D. H. Harmon and H. E. Moore.

**JANUARY**

7. F. C. Wade, "Hitler"
L. C. Halberstadt and H. S. Hickman.
14. F. H. Weng,
"Horace, the Most Modern of Ancient Poets"
L. R. Fair and J. B. Wisely.
21. H. E. Moore, "Adult Education"
E. L. Welborn and R. A. Acher.
28. J. M. Taxay,
"Fascism and Communism"
A. R. Markle and C. Y. Kelly.

# Program

**FEBRUARY**

E. N. Canine, "Our Debt to the Dutch."
F. E. Brengle and L. C. Halberstadt.
J. L. Lord, "The American Legion."
N. R. VanCleave and W. F. Mitchell.
D. L. Harmon,
"Astronomy, a Cultural Study."
J. E. Ewers and Guy Stantz.
R. A. Acher,
"The Nature of a Nerve Current."
H. E. Moore and C. T. Malan.

**MARCH**

H. E. Elder,
"Indeterminate Factors in Heredity."
W. E. Ouweneel and D. H. Forsyth.
O. T. Allen, "Will Democracy Fail?"
D. H. Forsyth and F. E. Wiedemann.
L. E. Sutin, "Politician."
W. F. Mitchell and A. R. Markle.
C. Y. Kelly, "Sidney Carton."
G. E. Francis and J. L. Lord.

**APRIL**

C. T. Malan,
"Shakespeare's Philosophy in 1935."
W. E. Ouweneel and J. M. Taxay.
A. N. Levin, "Was the New Deal New?"
F. C. Wade and J. M. Taxay.
Guy Stantz, "Indiana, the Beautiful."
F. E. Brengle and F. E. Wiedemann.
H. S. Hickman,
"The Ghost in the New Deal."
J. E. Ewers and A. N. Levin.
R. W. Himelick, "A Teacher."
F. H. Weng and F. C. Wade.

**MAY**

J. E. Mackell,
"Peary and the North Pole."
E. L. Welborn and R. W. Himelick.
J. E. Ewers,
"Who'll Plan Our Industry?"
R. W. Himelick and L. R. Sutin.
ELECTION OF OFFICERS.
ANNUAL DINNER.



Volume XIV- -1934-35

oy- -H.E.Moore- - - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
tributions- -W.O.Shriner-
y- -D.L.Harmon- - - - - -
el- - - - - - - - - - - -
onial Massachusetts - - -
the Dutch - - - - - - - -
Man,The- -H.S.Hickman - -
- -N.R.Van Cleave - - - -
etts- -F.E.Brengle- - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
.Canine - - - - - - - - -
Factors in Heredity - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
re Take its Course - - -
Cultural Study - - - - -
rs in- -H.E.Elder- - - -
the Character of Man- -
nt - - - - - - - - - - -
eient Poets- -F.H.Weng -
edity- -H.E.Elder- - - -
Stantz- - - - - - - - -
-L.C.Halberstadt - - - -
e North Pole - - - - - -
hilosophy in 1935- - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
ly - - - - - - - - - - -
- -H.E.Elder - - - - - -
in a Democracy- - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
Canine - - - - - - - - -
on - - - - - - - - - - -
.Mackell - - - - - - - -
.R.Van Cleave - - - -
Ancient- -F.H.Weng -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
- -C.T.Malan - - - -
fea and Contributions
al - - - - - - - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
- - - - - - - - - - - -
of Confucius- - - -
re - - - - - - - - - -
le - - - - - - - - - -
ient Poets-
- - - - -
- - - - -

Politician- -L.R.Sutin
~~Scepticism,The New ~~-O.
Senescence- -D.H.Forsyth
Shakespearian Philosophy
Shriner,W.O.- -Archimedes
Stantz,Guy- -Indiana,the
Sutin,L.R.- -Politician-
Taxay,J.M.- -Dixie Laugh
Van Cleave,N.R.- -
Wade,F.C.- -Where
Where Do We Go
Weng,F.H.-
What
Wisely

MEMBERS

| | |
|---|---|
| Acher, Rudolph A. | Malan, C. T. |
| Allen, Orris T. | Markle, A. R. |
| Brengle, Fred E. | Mitchell, Waldo |
| Canine, Edwin N. | Moore, Harold E. |
| Elder, Harry E. | Ouweneel, W. E. |
| Ewers, J. E. | Shriner, Walter |
| Fair, L. R. | Stantz, Guy |
| Forsyth, D. H. | Sutton, Lewis |
| Francis, George E. | Taxay, J. Marshall |
| Halberstadt, L. C. | VanCleave, N. R. |
| Harmon, D L. | Wade, Frank C. |
| Himelick, R. W. | Welborn, E. L. |
| Kelly, Chester Y. | Weng, F. H. |
| Levin, A. N. | Wisely, J. B. |
| Lord, J. L. | Wiedemann, Frank E |
| Mackell, James | Zimmerman, Charles |

HONOR ROLL

| | |
|---|---|
| Ball, Spencer F. | Richardson, Joseph P. |
| Cooper, J. A. | Seiler, Michael |
| Harvey, W. W. | Schell, Walker |
| Mack, Wm. P. | Scovell, Josiah T. |
| McBeth, W. A. | Shortridge, Curtis G |
| Peddle, Charles R. | Thompson, Charles O |
| Rhoads, Baskin E. | Thompson, R. W. |
| Wiley, W. H. | |

HONORARY MEMBERS

| | |
|---|---|
| Alden, Lyman P.* | Reynolds, S. M. |
| Cox, E. O.* | Robinson, John C.* |
| Crum, J. H.* | Roll, Charles |
| Bersch, H. D. | Royse, C. A. |
| Davis, S. R. | Statz, Wm.* |
| Ehrmann, Max | Schlicher, J. J. |
| Faurot, Albert A. | Hollingsworth, J. H. |
| Fidlar, Chester* | Holmes, J. A.* |
| Hathaway, A. S. | Lee, M. G. |
| Havens, E.* | Leipsinger, E. W. |
| Hines, L. N. | McNutt, Cyrus F.* |
| Kemp, Elwood W. | McTaggart, A. |
| Monger, A. E. | Starbuck, J. E. |
| Noyes, W. A. | Tilley, J. M. |
| Parsons, W. W.* | Tippy, W. M. |
| Rettger, L. J. | Townly, H. P.* |
| Wickersham, James A. | |

* Deceased.

COMMITTEES

Program—Ouweneel, Stantz, Kelly.
Membership—Brengle, Halberstadt, Harmon.
Attendance—Wiedemann, Elder, Mackell.
Foundation Fund—Wade, Wisely, Wiedemann.

OFFICERS

President ..... N. R. VanCleave
Vice-President ..... Rudolph A. Acher
Secretary-Treasurer ..... Harry E. Elder
Historical Secretary ..... A. R. Markle


# Index- -Volume XIV- -1934-35


Adult Learning in a Democracy- -H.E.Moore- - - - - - - - - - - - -Paper #15
~~Allen,O.T.- -The New Scepticism- - -~~ - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - ~~- -~~
Archimedes,His Life and Contributions- -W.O.Shriner- - - - - - - " 24 205-214
Astronomy,The Cultural Study- -D.L.Harmon- - - - - - - - - - - - - " 19
Bird Migration- -W.E.Ouweneel- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 21
Brengle,F.E.- -Crime in Colonial Massachusetts - - - - - - - - - - " 11 - - 88-112
Canine, E.N.- -Our Debt to the Dutch - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 16 - - 144-
Change of the Character of Man,The- -H.S.Hickman - - - - - - - - - " 28
Confucius,The Philosophy of- -N.R.Van Cleave - - - - - - - - - - - " 1
Crime in Colonial Massachusetts- -F.E.Brengle- - - - - - - - - - - " 11
Dixie Laughs- -J.M.Taxay - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 17
Dutch,Our Debt to The- -E.N.Canine - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 16
Elder,H.E.- -Indeterminate Factors in Heredity - - - - - - - - - - " 8 - - - 63-72
Forsyth,D.H.- -Senescence- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 10 - - - 72-77
Halberstadt, L.C.- -Let Nature Take its Course - - - - - - - - - - " 4 - - - 43-
Harmon,D.L.- -Astronomy,the Cultural Study - - - - - - - - - - - - " 19
Heredity,Indeterminate Factors in- -H.E.Elder- - - - - - - - - - - " 8
Hickman,H.S.- -The Change in the Character of Man- - - - - - - - - " 28 - - 237-
Himelich,R.W.- -What Do I Want - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 29 - - 245-
Horace,the Most Modern of Ancient Poets- -F.H.Weng - - - - - - - - " 14
Indeterminate Factors in Heredity, -H.E.Elder- - - - - - - - - - - " 8
Indiana, The Beautiful- -Guy Stantz- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 27
Let Nature Take Its Course- -L.C.Halberstadt - - - - - - - - - - - " 4
Mackell, J.F.- -Peary and the North Pole - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 30 - - 250-267
Malan,C.T.- -Shakespearian Philosophy in 1935- - - - - - - - - - - " 25 - - 215-223
Markle,A.R.- -On Our Way - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 6 - - 50-61
McGuffey,That Man- -J.B.Wisely - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 3
Minutes for 1934-35,complete- -H.E.Elder - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 31 - 270-
Moore, H.E.- -Adult Learning in a Democracy- - - - - - - - - - - - " 15 - 136-
On Our Way- -A.R.Markle- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 6
Our Debt to the Dutch- -E.N.Canine - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 16
Ouweneel,W.E.- -Bird Migration - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 21 - - 181-
Peary and the North Pole- -J.F.Mackell - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 30
Philosophy of Confucius,The- -N.R.Van Cleave - - - - - - - - - - - " 1
Poets,Horace the Most Modern of Ancient- -F.H.Weng - - - - - - - - " 14
Politician- -L.R.Sutin - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - " 23
~~Scepticism,The New- -O.T.Allen - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

Paper #1

# The Philosophy of Confucius

Nelson R. Vanderleave

Oct. 1, 1934.

The varied and steadily increasing discussion of china in books, periodicals and the daily newspaper attests an increased interest in the far East and more particulary in the oldest, the largest and potentially the most powerful country of the Far East. A great statesman has affirmed that whoever understood China politically, economically, religiously and socially would hold the keys to the Pacific for the next 500 years. Whether or not such a political forecast be accurate, it may yet be maintained that an attempt to comprehend certain aspects of Chinese civilization would be highly desirable. An interest in China that is tempered by a measure of insight, of which there is yet but little, as well as by cordiality, of which there is already a great deal, would lead to a better understanding between China and the West to the mutual benefit of each.

The growing interest in things Chinese in her commercial opportunities, her art, her poetry, and her politics, is destined to arouse a wider interest than has hitherto existed in the West in her philosophy. If philosophy be the guide of life and nowhere has philosophy aspired to play this high role more persistently than in China, a familiarity with the character and purposes of Chinese philosophy in it's more general aspects must be indispensable for an appreciation of Chinese civilization and an intelligent understanding of China as a political problem.

East and West are obviously different and the recognition of the fact that a profound difference exists must be the beginning of mutual understanding. That the twain shall never meet is a sentiment that is more poetically appealing than psychologically sound. The events of our day are already belying the poets' prophecy. But if they are to meet in any intimate and fruitful fashion, it must be on the plane of understanding, and on an understanding of differences, the merits and duration of which are other matters.

The first feeling of the average man on coming to the consideration of chinese thought is that of entering a land strange and alien, shut away behind inflexible and rigid customs, peopled by men and women whose movements of mind and spirit have become almost automatic from the long discipline and constraint imposed upon them inwardly and outwardly. We expect no independence, no spontaneity, from the chinese, either in philosophy, faith, or the conduct of daily life; all must be regulated by precedent and opinion. They are interesting because so far from our experience.

But, we forget that the achievements of a nation in art or in beauty are conditioned by its philosophy; and it has taken the West a long time to discover that China has probably made a larger contribution to the world's well being, through her one achievement and the achievement of those she influenced than any other nation. We forget also that, highly as her philosophy is beginning to be appreciated in the West, it is still not known in its fulness and can not be until our familiarity with the Chinese and their literature and habits of mind is much greater than at present. We must be placed completely at their point of view before their thoughts can color our own in the mass as those of Plato and Aristotle have done.

Yet, it is quite as possible as desirable to understand China, and the writer who succeeds in humanizing Confucius to the level of western comprehension and brotherhood will have deserved more of the world than the most learned scholar who has translated his words into difficult English for Confucius

is China. Without him, she could never have been the China which demands our comprenhension, and demands it as one of the pressing necessities of the time we live in.

On the Confucian ideal China has modeled herself with all her own patience and discrimination. Whether a man of her people is Buddhist or Taoist he will also be Confucian. He cannot escape it nor would if he could. And not only so. This mighty influence was accepted by Japan and in a very subtle measure it moldes the nascent character of that great people.

The whole world has to reckon with this man who lived so long ago and with his ideals of government. When present troubles are forgotten and we are brought more closely into relations with China, we and our posterity shall be constrained to own that no character in history is of more importance to us than his from its results upon two mighty nations and, their reactions upon the civization made and upheld by the white races.

Like all other philosopies, this dynamic force has not been wholly advantageous to China's progress, for the very fulness of acceptance made it a drag in the wheel sometimes; but that it has been the most powerful means of holding the nation together and keeping the empire afloat, in the stormy seas of shock and change in which so many civilizations have gone down, can never be denied by those who know the facts.

It is necessary to learn to know the man and his times before his teachings can be appreciated in its strong and

simple verity. I tell his life according to the facts admitted by the greatest scholars but I do not omit the ancient traditions which the Chinese themselves believed and handed down. Such stories, divested of actual legend, are often truer than have fact, because they give the imaginative point of view, which penetrates to the essential, as true imagination must in art and all else. This is the imagination which apart from actual historical record has reconstituted for us the figures of Buddha and the Christ. It should not be disdained in striving to arrive at a living conception of the man who has influenced at least as many millions of lives and thoughts as either.

The greatest and most honered family in China is that of the K'ung, the descendants of Confucius, who himself is known in China as K'ung Fu Tsu and Confucius is the Latinized form of this name and title. They have enjoyed many privileges and immunities and were the only subjects of the empire not of royal blood who were permitted a hereditary title of nobility. This family holds an authentic genealogy which may well be older and more illustrious than any other in the world. The account of the ancestry of Confucius gives his descent from a family related to the last emperor of the Shang dynasty 1121 BC. He had every reason for pride in his ancestry, which is universal but perhaps most marked in China. There was not one of his forebears, beginning with the imperial House of Shang, whom he could not mention with con-

fidence; they had all been ministers, soldiers and scholars.

China at that time was a collection of small kingdoms under one more or less nominal head, the sovereign. The vassal states under him were held in feudal tenure. Wu Wang, the great ruler, had divided his empire and placed his own relations on minor thrones. It ended as such a system generally does, in disunion among the several states and disloyalty to the sovereign. The state of China at the birth of Confucius was one of rapine and turbulence. Not only were the states often at war among themselves, but powerful families in some of them disputed the rule with the princes just as in the wars of the Barons in England. In the state of Lu where Confucius was born, there were three such families, and their head virtually governd the state, having made their prince or duke a mere cipher.

The father of Confucius, Shuhliang Heih, was a soldier who played a stirring part in the distracted times. He was a sort of a Chinese Hercules, brave and faithful, distinguished by his height and strength. He had married while a young man and his wife had borne him nine daughters but no son. When he was seventy years of age he decided to marry again in order that he might have a son. It is uncertain whether or not he divorced his wife, but a failure to produce sons was grounds for divorce in China because a son was necessary for the observance due to a fathers spirit. He presented his suit to a gentleman of the noble house of Yen who had three

fair daughters. Their father summoned his three daughters and put the case before them. He enumerated the good points of the elderly suitor and asked which would be his wife. The daughters responded with submissive silence until the youngest daughter said, "Father, why do you ask us? It is for you to determine".

The father looked her in the eyes and replied, "Verywell, you will do".

Chingtsai married the old warrior and gravely comprehending the reason of her marriage and the duty required of her threw herself on the mercy of heaven and the great spirits for help. From this union Confucius was born in Oct. or Nov. 551. BC. thus being almost a contemporary of the Buddha of India.

Confucius father died when Confucius was only 3 years of age, but he was very carefully brought up by his mother and from his earliest years displayed an extra-ordinary love of learning and veneration for the ancient laws of his country. The prudence, rectitude and philosophic gravity of his conduct while a boy, are also highly extolled by chinese writers. At the age of 17 he was made an inspector of the corn marts and distinguished himself by his industry and energy in repressing fraud and introducing order and integrity into the whole business. When only 19 Confucius married but divorced his wife four years after marriage that he might have more time for study and the preformance of his public duties.

He was next appointed inspector general of pastures and flocks and the result of his judicious measures, we are told, was a general improvement in the cultivation of the country and the condition of the people. The death of his mother when he was 23 years of age interrupted for a time his administrative functions. According to the ancient laws of China, children were obliged to resign all public employments on the death of either of their parents; Confucius, desirous of renewing the observance in his native land of all the practices of venerable antiquity, did not fail to conform to this long, neglected enactment. The solemnity and splendor of the burial ceremony with which he honored the remains of his mother struck his fellow citizens with astonishment and they determined, for the future, to bury their dead with the ancient honors. Their example was followed by the neighboring states and the whole nations, except the poorest class, has continued the practice to the present day. Confucius now came to be regarded as an authority in regard to the past. He shut himself up in his house to pass in solitude the three years of mourning for his mother, the whole of which time he dedicated to philosophical study.

He reflected deeply on the eternal laws of morality, traced them to their source, imbued his mind with a sense of the duties which they impose indiscriminately on all men, and determined to make them iminutable rules of all his actions. He began to instruct his countrymen in the precepts of morality,

Gradually his disciples increased as the practical nature of his philosophy became apparent. After his years of mourning and meditation were over he travelled through various states in some of which he was employed as a public reformer. Confucius disciples were not the young and enthusiastic but men of middle age, sober, grave, respectable and occupying important public situations.. This fact throws light both on the character and design of his philosophy. It was ethical not religious and aimed exchisively at fitting men for conducting themselves honorably and prudently in this life. Confucius divided his scholars into four classes; to the first, he taught morals; to the second, rhetoric; to the third, politics; and to the fourth, the perfection of their style in written composition.

For a time he was governor of the people in his home state where his inflexible virtue awed them into morality and the delightful monarch conferred the highest dignities on the philosopher; but the arrival of a bevy of beautiful dancing girls from a neighboring state which was jealous of the success of this state, suddenly over turned the edifice of morality which Confucius was constructing; and in despair, he again went abroad in search of less vacillating disciples.
His later wanderings were very unpropitious; state after state refused to be improved. He was sometimes persecuted; once he was imprisoned and nearly starved; and finally, seeing no hope of securing the favorable attention of the mass

of his countrymen while alive, he returned in extreme poverty to his native state, and spent his last years in the composition of literary works, by which posterity at least might be instructed. He died in 479 BC in the 70th year of his age.

Immediately after his death, Confucius began to be venerated, and succeeding ages adorned his name with golden epithets.

The doctrines of Confucius relate principally to the ethics of political and social life. The attainment of perfect virtue is the true aim of living; none can live well who do not so regard it.

It has been charged against him that he ignores the personal God and but slightly recognizes a future life. It would seem a sufficient refutation to the first charge, that Confucius observed the religious ceremonies which fully enough recognized the idea. It would not be fair to charge him thus with these words upon his lips "He who offends against Heaven has none to whom he can pray" and "But there is Heaven that knows me". To show his trust and confidence in God, and that his troubles which were many and great came not of his appointment he also said "I do not murmur against Heaven".

Along with the worship of God in China there existed from the earliest historical times the worship of other spiritual beings, -especially, and to every individual, the worship of departed ancestors. Confucius recognized this as an institution to be devoutly observed. He sacrificed to the dead as if they were present; he sacrificed to the spirits as if the spirits were present. He said, I consider my not being present at the sacrifice as if I did not sacrifice". The custom must have originated from a belief of the continued existence of the dead.

There are several points in the philosophy of Confucius that may need a passing notice, though the language of the

text is clear enough. He is a consistent theist. He believed in immortality for man. His aim in this life was perfect virtue. His system of education was superior to that of the Hebrew, or any of the Western nations at that time. Of his theory of morals a striking analogy has been discovered between the Golden Rule of Jesus "all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to unto you, do ye even so to them and Confucius analects 15-23. "what you do not want done to yourself, do not do to others" and again in chap.V. "what I do not wish men to do to me, I also wish not to do to men".

He has outlined seven steps in his Great Learning which may be taken by any one. They are. 1. The investigation of things 2. the completion of knowledge. 3. the sincerity of the thoughts. 4. the rectifying of the heart. 5. the cultivation of the person. 6. the regulation of the family and 7. the government of the State. The sanctions of religion as taught by the so-called orthodox churches, that is, Heaven and Hell, do not enter the lists of incentives to virtue in Confuciu's code, and this perhaps more than aught else, has caused the missionaries to object to his system of practicing virtue for virtue's sake.

He studied the teachings of the leading thinkers of his day. Lao tzu the founder of the mystic Taoist taught that in inaction alone peace can be found; Motzu proclaimed the doctrine of universal love; that we should love all men as

we love ourselves, love the parents of others as we love our own parents. Upright men fled or were driven from the world, Confucius often met them in his wanderings and was reproved for not doing as they did. But his practical mind told him that inaction could not help the world and that to find a remedy for the nations ills their cause must first be learned. This could only be done by historical study. He therefore devoted himself to the study of the past. He wrote the Book of History and Spring and Autumn a history of his native state from BC. 722 to BC. 484. He declared that if the golden days were to return they must return to the principles of Wen and Wse the kings who had rebuilt the empire after tyranny and selfishness had laid it low. Of impractical ideals and renunciation of the world no good could come.

He gave stability to his country when he set forth a code for marriage. His views have influenced the history of China. In China the family is still the unit and the safe guard of the land and will so remain after the billow of Bolshevism has broken on the sands of time, though family life may succumb later to the more insidious inroads of western expansion and education.

He says "Marriage is the natural condition of man and the state which best enables him to fulfil his destiny in this world. It is a state which dignifies those who enter it, but it must be seriously considered, that its duties

may be scrupuliously carried out. These duties are two fold--those which are common to the two sexes and those which belong to either respectively.

The husband as master must command; but both are equally required to act in the way which best harmonizes with and imitates the relations between heaven and earth by and through which all things are created, sustained and preserved. The basis should be reciprocal tenderness confidence, truth and scrupulous consideration for each others feelings the husband leading and directing; the wife following and yielding, while every act is kept within the limits set by justice, modesty and honor".

This is a beautiful ideal if every husband were worth following and every wife right in yielding. "In every condition of her social life the wife is entirely dependent on her husband. Should he die she does not recover her liberty. Before her marriage she was under the authority of her parents or her nearest relative. As a wife she lives in subjection to her husband and as a widow is subserviunt to her eldest son. And it is the duty of this son while serving her with all possible affection and respect to watch and guard her from those dangers to which from the natural weakness of her sex she may be exposed. Confucius gives seven justifiable reasons for the divorce of a wife.

1. When a wife cannot live on good terms with his parents.
2. If she be found to be incapable of bearing sons.
3. If she be guilty of immodest or immoral behavior.
4. If she injures the character of her family by spreading unfounded or calumnius reports.
5. If she suffers from ailments which produce a natural feeling of repugnance.
6. If she cannot be restrained from using violent language.
7. If she secretely appropriates, no matter from what motive, any thing belonging to the household without her husbands knowledge.

To the western mind these rules and regulations for marriage, even the formality with which they are set down may appear ridiculous and impossible. Yet let us remember that China is very old and very wise. We are young and perhaps foolish in spite of our precious mechanical achievements--which really matter so much less than success in the social adjustments of life. As an old Chinese gentleman once said "In the West you think it of much importance to reach a place in 60 minutes rather than 60 hours. In China we consider that what matters is what you do when you get there".

Based on the family and its pietits China has survived as a great nation during nearly 2500 years of wealth, poverty, storm and battle since Confucius uttered those words. Who would dare to prophesy the same duration for the white civilization.

Whether or not Confucianism may properly be called a religion is something over which opinion is divided. But if, for the sake of convenience, we call it a religion, certainly there is no single system of any sort in the West, save perhaps the Christian religion that coresponds to the pervasiveness of its influence in China. It is not a matter of counting the number of adherents that profess or practice one faith or the other. It is a matter of determining the depth and the extent to which either religion has modified the thoughts and actions of men in two widely separated portions of the globe. Here then the correspondence between Confucianism in China and christianity in the West ceases. Christianity, as interpreted and practiced in the West, is by no means a simple thing. It is a composite growth into which numerous cultural streams from the civilized pagan world have entered, and, with greater or less success, have been accommodated to the pressure of historical circumstances .Confucianism, on the other hand, has remained virtually an unaltered dctrine imbedded as an unequivocal rule of faith and practice in the minds and hearts of countless generations of Chinese. If we could imagine the Christianity of Apostolic days as neither a fulfillment nor a criticism of an older religion, and with no taint of other worldiness, intrested in society as such; if we could further imagine that because of its interest in human society as such it provided clear-cut counsels as to the best method of social organization; and if, finally, we

17

could represent to our minds its continous and unchanged acceptance by Western people throughout the two thousand years of its history, we would have something like a parallel to the character and course of Confucianism in China. Then only could we say with any degree of accuracy that Christianity is to the West what Confucianism is to China.

Confucianism has been commonly characterized as an elaborate system of ceremony. It has been called the "soulless system of intellectual aristocrats;" it has been dubbed the doctrine of the Superior or Princely man. It has been considered as the apotheosis of ancestor worship. Now Confucianism is all of these and more.

The Occidental, with his bluntness and his bruesqueness is prone to identify Chinese morals with Chinese manners in fact to reduce the former to the latter, and to think that Chinese morality is entirely a matter of observing the minutiae of etiquette. He may be charmed with the oriental politness if he has had the fortune to have travelled or lived in the East. He may be fascinated by its quaintly exacting details of good form, exasperated by the oriental lack of directness or annoyed by what seems to him mere superficiality and want of sincerity.

The conduct of the Chinese is largely determined by the teachings of the Li Ki (Book of Rites or ceremonies) which is a very exact and complete treatise of the ceremonies necessary in all activities of family, society, morality and

religion and yet we must not be lead into supposing the Confucian morality is merely a matter of decorum, nor an exacting system of deportment.

One who reads the Confucian analects is bound to be struck by the frequency of the recurrence of the word li and the way in which it is employed as practically synonymous with the highest form of life. Yen's dictionary defines this word as "Consonance with established principles, rules or customs." It has been translated by Dr. Legge as "propriety."

Confucius said, "To subdue one's self and return to li (propriety) is perfect virtue" also, Let the superior man never fail reverentially to order his own conduct, let him be respectful to others and observant of li,(propriety) --- then all within the four seas will be his brothers." and "If you do not learn the rules of li,(propriety) your character cannot be established." These passages indicate how important Confucius considered li to be.

To accuse a Chinaman of a lack of li is to charge him with the worst serious moral obliquity. It is to impute to him an unnatural human deficiency, an absence of li means for the Chinese mind an opposition to nature. Their is in Confucianism the basis condeption that nature herself is good and prescribes principles and rules for the right conduct of humans. The course of nature is mysterious, its ways are past finding out. There is therefore in the practice of men a fatalistic submission to its decrees. Human fortune and misfortuns, human happiness and human disaster are ordained; and since there is no science giving rise to the idea

of mastery and control of natural events, they are literally inevetable. But these inevitable appointments of nature, however harsh or severe they may seem, are felt to depend upon the behavior of humans, nature is not at bottom bad. She is simply just and requites good with good and evil with evil. The Chinese proverb "Richteousness has its own reward; if the reward has not yet come it is because the time is not yet ripe." Nature is moral and acts in a moral way.

But now along with the basic view of nature as good, there is in Confucianism the equally basic view that human nature is good. Under the ancient system of education that is only beginning to be superseded by something more modern, the first book that was placed in the hands of the Chinese student was a book called The Trimetrical Classic, complied in the 11th century of our era.

This book contains about a thousand characters arranged in 178 double lines which the students must commit to memory by way of making his first acquaintance with the written language. It has been described as "a ford which the youthful inquirer may readily pass, and thereby reach the fountain head of the higher courses of learning, or a passport into the regions of classical and historical literature." The opening lives of this curious little volume, which the Chinese student knows far better than the Western youth knows his Sunday School stories read as follows:--

Men at their birth are by nature radically good;

Though alike in this, in practice they widely diverge. If not educated, the natural character grows worse.

Such is the pabulum upon which the growing mind is made to feed, and the contrast with what the Western child early learns about human nature oribinal disobedience and fall is too striking to be passed over. Very early in life then, the mind of the Chinese child is indoctrinated with this basic point of view. It is literally drilled into his soul, and through out all his later education he is reminded that man is by nature good. Confucius summed up the matter briefly in the analects where he said, "By nature men are nearly alike; by practice, they get to be wide apart.

We have now arrived at the two fundamental propositions that serve as foundations for the whole often bewildering, superstructure of Confucianism. To repeat them, they are first, that nature is good, and second, that human nature is good. These two propositions are not separate and distinct truths independent of each other. On the contrary, they are intimately related. The first conditions the second; the second is actually a corollary of the first, for it represents an extension of the principle of the goodness of nature to comprise specifically human nature. Man's nature being only a part and product of a more comprehensive reality, must inevitably exhibit the attributes of the all embracing cosmic process called nature. This reasoning may therefore be cast into the form of a syllogism in which we would have as a major premise the proposition, the order of

nature is good; as a minor premise, the proposition, Man's nature is a portion of nature. The conclusion would clearly follow that man's nature is good. The ethical problem then becomes one of determining and regulating our conduct in accordance with general principles of order and harmony perceivable in the course of natural events. This is what Confucius meant when he said that character could not be established without li. The ethical ideal becomes a matter of li or propriety, i.e. consonance with established principles of nature herself.

It is apparent then that propriety is not mere ceremonialism but it provides according to Chinese logic, the real inwardness of morals and manners.

It can hardly be denied that the teachings of Confucius has lead to formalism. It is a peculiar paradox that the very principle which was intended to give life to morality and be a protection against formalism should have actually contributed to formalism and this has come about through the fact that consonance with the goodness of nature has come to mean conformity with the details of ceremonial practices.

Confucianism differs from Taoism. Tao is an impersonable Principle or Power which, viewed in the absolute sense is inscrutable, indefinable and impossible to name. It cannot be correctly translated as God as it appears to have been

before God. Tao is however the source and support of all things, calmly, without effort, and unceasingly, it works for good; and man by yielding himself to it, unresisting, unstriving, may reach his highest well being. Suffering is the result of man's departure from the Tao state of pristine innocence and simplicity. It would be well to give up all study and the pursuit of knowledge, and return to the absolutely simple life of Tao. War, striving, suffering would then all cease, and, floating along the placid river of time, the individual in due course would be absorbed in the ocean of Tao. Taoism recommended a "do nothing" policy while Confucius recommended the careful observance of rules and regulations for every day life and practice.

It differs from Buddhism. To Confucius virtue is found only in human relationships and outside of them it has no meaning. To be father, son, husband, friend, subject or prince, and to perform one's rightful duties, is the task set before us. To succeed is life, joy and peace, to fail is destruction. The founder of Buddhism forsook wife, parents, child and Empire in the search for salvation.

It differs from Christianity. Underwood says; "Confuciunism, knowing no higher ideal than a man, is unable to produce a godly person. Its followers may be moral but never spiritual. On the other hand, a christian, having God to look unto, as the author and finisher of his faith, is a man all the way up, however small he may be in himself.

A Confucianist begins in man and ends in man. A Christian begins in man and ends in God. Christianity says 'Go and teach' Confucianism says 'Come and learn'."

The following quotations give us something of the depths of the philosophy in which he profoundly believed, the philosophy he lived and which he earnestly tried to teach:

1. Is it not pleasant to learn with a constant perseverance and application?

2. Is it not pleasant to have friends coming from distant quarters?

3. Is he not a man of complete virtue, who feels no discomposure though men may take no note of him?

"Fine words and an insinuating appearance are seldom associated with true virtue."

He who aims to be a man of complete virtue, in his food does not seek to gratify his appetite, nor in his dwelling place does he seek the appliances of ease; he is earnest in what he is doing, and careful in his speech; he frequents the company of men of principle that he may be rectified:--such a person may be said ~~to~~ indeed to love to learn.

He who exercises government by means of his virtue, may be compared to the North Polar star which keeps its place and all the stars turn toward it.

If a man keeps cherishing his old knowledge, so as continually to be acquiring new, he may be a teacher of others.

The study of strange doctrines is injurious indeed.

He who offends against Heaven has none to whom he can pray.

If the will be set on virtue, there will be no practice of wickedness.

The superior man wishes to be slow in his words and earnest in his conduct.

When I walk along with two others, they may serve me as my teachers. I will select their good qualities and follow them, their bad qualities and avoid them.

It is not easy to find a man who has learned for three years without coming to be good.

When good government prevails in a state, to be thinking only of his salary; and when bad government prevails, to be thinking only of his salary; this is shameful.

The Man, who in the view of gain thinks of righteousness; who in the view of danger is prepared to give up his life; and who does not forget an old agreement, however far back it extends:--such a man may be reckoned a <u>complete man</u>.

Confucius said,

There are three things men find enjoyment in which are advantageous and three things which are injurious. To find enjoyment in the discriminating study of ceremonies and music, to find enjoyment in speaking of the goodness of others; to find enjoyment in having many worthy friends these are advantageous. To find enjoyment in extravagant pleasure, in idleness and in the pleasures of feasting. These are in-

jurious.

Those who are born with the posession of knowledge are the highest class of men. Those who learn and, so, readily get posession of knowledge, are the next. Those who are dull and stupid and yet acquire compass the learning are another class next to these. As to those who are dull and stupid and yet do do not learn; they are the lowest of the people."

In modern times we have our tests and measurements to classify individuals as to their ability to learn but it seems that Confucius had his own method for this classification even in the long ago.

Despite his best endeavors, Confucius failed to fill the office of a great religious leader, for he failed to guide his people out of an animism or polytheism doomed to end in limitless superstition. The day is already dauning when the soul of this race will demand its rightful share in the Nobler truth which the mind of Confucius but dimly apprehended, and which will relegate him to the honorable position no Christian will gainsay, of chief classical master and moral philosopher of this potentially great nation.

But the aim of Confucius was not so much the renovation of the individual as the renovation of the state; his mind and object were ethico--political, his desire the renaissance of the golden age of antiquity through a return to the virtue of primitive times. Therefore the prince as father of his people must take the lead, and as the rivers that make fruitful

the land take their rise on the mountain tops, so moral renovation must begin at the summit of the state. Alas! the mountain tops were waterless, and what our sage was able to pour upon them rapidly distilled in so rare a moral atmosphere; for if the rich shall hardly enter into the realm of moral nobility, how much less shall princes, degenerating through the allurements of luxury and lust, be able to filter the vitalizing waters of moral chastity to the thirsty souls of their people? On these arid heights Confucius failed, for even in his own state, when the indications were most hopeful for success, the eighty singing and dancing girls sent to entice the prince proved more potent than the lofty virtue of the Sage, and, in the end, it was in the hearts of his pooer disciples that his doctrines found their early and more hardy growth, rather than in the courts of the great.

May I conclude with this statement from Prof. W.E. Soothill, Prof. of Chinese in Oxford University.

"Though failure dogged his wandering footsteps while with men, his philosophy was not allowed to die, but has become both the base and summit of Chinese religion and morals. A man who lived so long in the esteem and affections of a huge nation cannot but be classed amongst the mightiest forces of the past: Never the less, his inferiority to Moses, who lived a thousand years before him, either as legislator, administrator, moral philosopher, or religious seer, is manifest to those who are willing to study the

Pentateuch, and his own writings lack that throbbing pulse of divinity which has made the history, poetry and soul-inspiring prophecy of the Old Testament live with perennial vitality. Despite a limited vision and an inelastic nature, Confucius nobly did his best to benefit humanity with what inferior material in history, poetry and ritual he had at hand, and the missionary and the student may well be profoundly grateful to him for rescuing so much of varied interest and value from the rapacious maw of destructive Time and the barbarous hands of ignorant men.

10/15/34 30

To Am.

Paper #3.

That Man McGuffey

John B. Visely

Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good govern-
and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall
rever be encouraged.

The state of Ohio, the first to be carved out of the Northwest Ter-
ry, for which our forefathers set up this admirable scheme of educa-
n, furnished at least three men who did a great deal toward the real-
ion of this ideal. William Holmes McGuffey compiled the readers which
were not only used in his own state as texts in the schools, but all over
the United States as well, for nearly four generations. Joseph Ray
wrote the text in arithmetic, known as Ray's Arithmetic, Third Part, which
was used in the same schools for almost as long as the readers. When
was a boy, the teacher who could solve all the proolems in Ray's Third
art Arithmetic was held in awe by his fellow teachers. Thomas W. Harvey*
the third member of this triumvirate. He was one of the first champ-
ions of the rural schools. He was one of the organizers, and the first
president of the Northeastern Teachers Association, in 1869, an organi-
zation which had great influence in encouraging an adequate free public
school system in the state of Ohio. These three men stood for free public
schools and their influence was widely felt throughout this entire west-
ern country. The greatest of thes three, as all concede, was William

Holmes McGuffey.

McGuffey was born in Claysville ?, Pennsylvania, September 23, 1800,
of Scotch-Irish parents. His grandfather, William, came from Scotland in
1774. His father, Alexander, Indian-fighter, under St Clair and Ind Ar-
ayne, married Anna [illegible] in 1[illegible] and moved to Youngstown, Ohio.

*Thomas R. Harvey-was also author of Harvey's Grammar also widely used in those early days.

3/

some government land near Youngstown, and on this homestead,
William Holmes McGuffey lived for sixteen years. There is no better place
in the world to develop a strong constitution and Character in a boy than
on a farm, and McGuffey credited his experience in helping his father to
develop this farm here in the wilderness for his good health and much
of his success in life. He depended upon his mother and the irregular, ~~short~~
short terms of country schools for his early education. Later, he had the oppor-
tunity of studying Latin with the pastor of the Presbyterian church at
Youngstown, where he showed such ability at memorizing, that he was call-
ed a prodegy. It is said that he could repeat from memory entire books
of the Bible and much other literature. Afterwards, he graduated with
distinction from Washingtoe College, Pennsylvania. During this period in
which he was striving to obtain an education, he taught school at inter-
vals, chiefly in Kentucky, for his parents were poor, and like many anoth-
er boy in those early days, especially, William had to earn hisown way.

In 1826 McGuffey was chosen Professor of Languages in Miami Uni-
versity at Oxford, Ohio, and in 1827, he was married to Miss Harriet Spin-
ner of Dayton, Ohio. Two daughters and three sons were born to this union.
Also in 1829, McGuffey was licenced to preach in the Presbyterian Church.
However, he never did hold a regular pastorate, but while he taught at
Oxford, he preached every Sunday in the small town of Hartstown, four
miles away. He always spoke extemporaneously, though not without careful
preparation, and in after life, he was often heard to say, that he had
preached 2000 sermons but had never written any of them.

In 1832, he was made Head of the Department of Philosophy and Philol-
ogy at Miami, and in 1836 he was called to the presidency of Cincinnati
College in Cincinnati. Famous as a lecturer by this time, he organized,
with the assistance of Samuel Lewis, the college of teachers in this school,
among the first school of education ever organized in a college. With
Stowe, Fay, and Harvey, he worked diligently at this time for the passage

the law under which the common public schools of Ohio were first organ-
ized.

In 1839 he was elected president of Ohio University, at Athens, Ohio, and when that school was forced to close its doors, in 1843, on account of lack of funds, after a brief term of service in Woodward College in Cincinnati, he was appointed to the position which he held for the remainder of his life. In 1845, he was made Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Virginia. Here he taught until a few weeks before his death at the age of seventy-three. All this time he was an ardent advocate of a free public school system, and during the Civil War and throughout the reconstruction period, he was famous for his philanthropy and generosity among the poor and esoecially among the negroes.

These are the bare facts of the life of this noted man. I have been unable to find out much about the little personal traits of the man, his likes and dislikes, his peculiarities, idiosyncricies, his crotchets, diversions and hobbies, which would put a human element into the narrative of his life to make it interesting. One wonders if he liked athletics or games, what amusements he enjoyed, what he did with his leisure time if he had any. One would be interested in his family life and wonders how his children turned out and what became of them. All these things are lost, I suppose, because McGuffey was just a school teacher, and at no time attract attention to himself as a public character would naturally do. We know from his pictures, I suppose they are authentic, that he was a fine looking man, perhaps six feet or more, with good strong features, showing character, high forehead and well shaped head, expressive of intelligence, blue eyes, and that he had red hair because his boy companions called him "Red."

Of course, we know William Holmes McGuffey chiefly by his Eclectic Readers. There were six of them, and in addition, a McGuffey's Juvenile Reading Book, prepared by Alexander, a brother of William Holmes. The

irst and Second readers were published in 1836; the Third and Fourth in [illegible] and the Fifth in 1844. The Sixth reader was completed in in 1857. These books were all published by Truman and Smith Of Cincinnati. After- [illegible] this company passed into the hands of Van Antwerp, Bragg, and Comp- [illegible], which finally merged into the American Book Company of Cincinnati, and this firm still publishes the books.

These readers immediately became popular, passed through many editions, have been revised five times, were used widely in thirty-seven states, were translated into Spanish for use in the Philippine Islands and Proto Rico, when Japan was innoculated with the spirit of Western education, they were translated into the Japanese language and used in that country. The first edition of the books was published in 1901 and they are still in use in many places. More copies of these readers have been sold than of any other text book ever published. The publishers estimate, that since 1836, up to 1927, more than 122,000,000 copies have been used.

It is almost a century now since these books were first published, yet their author is perhaps better known and more popular today than he was at the time of publication. McGuffey clubs have sprung up all over the United States, his adherents meet to celebrate his anniversary, and McGuffey En- tertainments and parties, at which selections from his readers are recited, are not infrequent. Monuments have been erected to his memory. At the [illegible] City of Chio, there is a McGuffey museum and many fine trees have been set to his memory. At Oxford, Chio, there is a beautiful monument, the work of Lorado Taft. On the top of the shaft, is a bust of the author, while clustered around the base of the monument is a group of little children. The latest monument is one erected by Mr. Ford just recently. He had already done much to perpetuate the name of McGuffey in his model village, where he has rebuilt the house in which the author was born. This new monument is a great granite boulder, with a copper plate inset, on which is engraved the name of McGuffey, with the words, "Dean of American Educators." It [illegible] stood on the old McGuffey homestead, in the valley of Little

34

ling Creek, fifteen miles west of Washington, Pennsylvania. At its ce-
lebration the other day, Dr. Ralph C. Hutchinson, President of Washington
Jefferson College, said, "It might be well if this nation, now super-
stitious and distraught, returned to the lessons McGuffey taught."

If we try to explain the popularity of this man and the unusual suc-
cess of his readers, we must look into the books themselves. They were
not popular alone because, in that early day, there were no other readers.
There were other readers in this country and in England. New York state
and New England never did use these books to any great extent. The people
of this region looked upon the west as a wild and wooly country, and per-
haps thought that no good could come out of it. At any rate, they made
no great use of McGuffey. There were other readers then, and since then,
hundreds of other readers have been compiled. Of course in those early
days, reading matter was not plentiful in the homes of the people. These
readers were a small library of good literature in themselves. They took
their place by the family Bible in these pioneer homes. But this is not
sufficient to account for the popularity of the books long after private
and public libraries were numerous.

These books were carefully prepared by a great teacher, a scholarly
man, and they have merit. The subject matter was not only carefully se-
lected but much attention was also given to the method of presentation
to adapt the work to the child's mind and arouse his interest. When
McGuffey was working on them, while he was Professor of Languages at Al-
leghany, he took classes of children in reading to try out his method on them.
Even the simplest lessons in the primary readers, though containing obvious,
sometimes explicit morals, were designed to win the pupil's interest,
and the advanced readers are full of well chosen selections from the great-
est English writers. They introduced boys and girls to the treasures
of literature from Homer to Longfellow. I ran through the table of contents,
hastily, in the Fifth Reader, and found selections from the following

35

... Rousseau, Longfellow, Mrs. Hemans, Bible, Webster, Irving, Byron, ... Pitt, Adison, Shakespeare, Schiller, Johnson, Southey, Bacon, Gray, ... e, Pitt, Scott, Dickens, Ossean, Macauley, Leigh Hunt, Goldsmith, La..., ...rt, Hood, Wordsworth, and Whittier. This list does not exhaust, by any means, the authors from which he obtained his materials in the other books.

These books are largely responsible for the literary taste and morals of four generations of Americans. Their influence, moral and cultural, upon half the children of the United States from 1836 to 1900 contributed ... to the shaping of the American mind in the nineteenth century. In these readers, there is the greatest variety of literature: prose, fiction, essay, oratory, poetry, humor, pathos, love, sorrow, perhaps to much on death and the preparation for death. It was the only literature nine out of ten had in their homes during these early days. These readers, in their stories, fables, mottoes, adages, and proverbs, present the homely virtues of mankind, codes of morals and conduct, standards of propriety, homely aphorisms, "horse-sense" and axioms. Their serious purpose, their kindly spirit, their high moral tone, their discrimination for the best in literature, make them unique. Mark Sullivan in his book "Our Times", calls the ... "the largest body of ethical teaching outside the Bible." Even in the primary readers, he put into the lessons homely, moral virtues, and phrased them in a simple literary style.

McGuffey does not "beat about the bush" in teaching these good things. ... al is a spade a spade. He does not take it for granted that the child will infer the meaning and somehow or other absorb the virtue, which he wishes him to acquire. He does not believe in indirection or hinting at it ...th the hope that the child will "catch on". Oftentimes, the truth to be taught by the story is stated in so many words at the close of the lesson, as in the story of the boy who was sent to take care of the sheep in the ...lds near the village:

"The truth itself is not believed

From one who often has deceived."

[illegible] us the story of "Meddlesome Matty", shows the child the consequence in her case, and makes it perfectly clear that meddlesome people are not liked by anyone. They are nuisances in society. He tells the story of the idle boy, and by experiment, has him find out that it is unusual for boys, trees, brooks, and butterflies to be idle. "What! Is nobody idle? Then little boys must not be idle." "Harry and the Guide Post" shows how senseless most of the fears of children are; and after Harry's experience with the guide post, he decides that whatever frightens him again, he'd walk right up to it. The boy who got angry easily and quickly, and threw things, picked up a hot poker to throw at his sister. That cured him. Kindness to animals and birds is taught in many lessons, like that on "Don't Kill the Birds", and the story of the boy who called the dog up to him on pretext of giving him part of his lunch, and then struck him over the head with his stick.

Mark Sullivan says that in Europe, people are surprised to learn that we have societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals over here, and he wonders if the teachings of McGuffey had anything to do with the formation of such societies. Gene Stratton Porter, in one of her novels, attempts to poke fun at McGuffey's "Birds in their little nests agree". But anyone who knows his McGuffey can easily see that she quibbles and her feeble effort falls flat.

In recent years, every now and then, we see some criticism of selections in these readers. You have all seen parodies on "The boy stood on the burning deck", "Mary had a little lamb", "I like to see a little dog", etc. Even Mark Sullivan, much as he appreciates McGuffey, in explaining his teaching on war, as illustrated in "How big was Alexander, Pa, that people called him great", wonders if McGuffey was not a pacifist. The boy questions his father and finally drives him to the conclusion, that if one man kills another, that is murder; but if he killed a great many men, that would not be murder. That would be war. Also in Southey's "Battle of Blenheim", with old Kaspar and little Peterkin and little Wilhelmine sitting in the son and talking about the Duke of Marlborough's exploits,

37

... "was a famous victory", though old Casbar, no more than the children, what it was all about, McGuffey scores another point against war. And then ... an wonders whether or not he was a pacifist, and a writer in the ew York Times calls these two lessons, "a piece of pacifist propaganda as direct as "Did not raise my boy to be a soldier but much better done", which ... it is a tribute to McGuffey's method at least. But these two writrs must surely be jesting when they call McGuffey a pacifist. He was opposed to war. It is easy to see that. The child sees it clearly. But certainly ... were few pacifists in McGuffey's day. Besides he came from fighting stock. His father campaigned against the Indians with Mad Anthony Wayne, and who ever heard tell of a red-headed Scotch-Irishman who was an pacifist anyway? (besides)

One could go on indefinitely showing how great truths, moral principles, virtues are taught by the lessons in these books and taught directly, though skilfully. As a writer in the New York Times of February 25, 1934 says, "The advanced readers from which were drawn the passages which the bigger boys spoke as 'pieces' provided a feast, ranging from Shakespeare to Patrick Henry, from Byron to Whittier, from Sir Walter Scott to Tom Hood, from Blackstone to Mrs Hemans. Mark Antony came to bury Caesar not to praise him; the echoes of old St John's awoke again to "Give me liberty or give me death'; among the isles of Greece, burning Sappho loved and sang; old Fuller on a summer's day raked the meadows sweet with hay; Lord Ullin cried out across the stormy water, 'I'll forgive your Highland Chief, my daughter, oh, my daughter'! 'Stitch, stitch, stitch, in poverty, hunger and dirt' sounded the 'Song of the Shirt'.

"... Mrs. Hemans 'stern and rock-bound coast' received the Pilgrims' landing; Longfellow's 'Footprints on the sands of time' were stamped into ... [illegible] much more retentive than such shifting stuff could be; we learned ... out Poker's Vector from Poe; the 'Elegy in a Country Churchyard' ... our too high spirits; and the rounded periods of Webster, dedicating ... Payne, Lincoln ...

...relative merits of Massachusetts and South Carolina, gave us at once a peep into history, a slant upon politics, and a lust for oratory."

A genuine spirit of courtesy and a fine neighborly helpfulness, as illustrated in the story of Peter Pindar, the contented boy, who caught the runaway horse after he had thrown his rider from his back, and then refused to take a reward for his neighborly deed, permeates all these lessons, even in the primary readers. We could certainly use some of this fine spirit in our practical, selfish age. The best of it all is that these lessons stuck in the minds of children. In writing this paper, I have consulted the readers readers only a few times, although it has been fifty years since I used them. These lessons are fresh in my mind and I can give from memory many of the stories and poems. I think this is the common experience of most people who were brought up on McGuffey. In my later school days, I used Appleton's readers, but I do not remember much about them.

About the beginning of this century or perhaps as far back as the "gay nineties", pedagogues and modern psychologists, especially, began to criticize McGuffey's direct method of teaching morality and literary taste, which I have already explained. They had the idea that literature or art could not be taught; that a piece of literature should not be analyzed or picked to pieces, because that destroyed the unity of it and prevented the child from seeing its beauty. They left out or forgot the inevitable process of the mind by which it reconstructs the thing which it has analized or picked to pieces. To analyze literature, they thought, made the study of it too much like work and the child would turn from it. My own experience teaches me that the pieces of literature which I have analyzed most care... like Gray's "Elegy in a Country Churchyard" and many of Shakespeare's ...ave are the selections that I prize most highly. Moreover, these people had the idea that literature was not to teach lessons of any kind; and ... selection taught a moral or had a lesson in it, it was not a high form of literature. Literature was just to be read and enjoyed. This was

the beginning of the period of "soft" education, which taught that the child must be made happy at all times; that he must not be required to work hard or do disagreeable things in the course of his education, else he would acquire a dislike for literature, books, and school. They could not see that children can be trained to do hard things and find pleasure in overcoming them; that their highest joy, both in school and when they get out into life, comes from accomplishment.

This period of the nineties was also the time when realism in literature was at its height. These realists insisted that literature is to depict life, not simply the good, the ideal in life, but all life, bad as well as good. Zola was considered by them the greatest novelist of this period, and some of his books are so nasty as to be repulsive to most healthful mature minds, to say nothing about children. Most of the rotten modern plays and novels, I think, may be credited to the influence of realism., and most of the salacious pictures which may be seen on the screen today may be credited to the same influence.

The literature which is found in the McGuffey readers is just the opposite of this. It was written with the idea that literature is to depict the highest, the best in life. It does often depict evil but only for the purpose of showing that it is not desirable. It always leaves the sympathy of the reader with the good and the true and the beautiful, and not with the bad and the false and the ugly. There is no doubt in the mind of the reader when he gets through reading the selection as to the author's meaning.

These same people in this period made also an assault on McGuffey's direct method of teaching morals. There was much talk about silly, namby pamby, Sunday-school stories, in which the good are always rewarded and the bad always punished. They called some of his stories silly and thought that his method was too bald, too raw ; that he buried the moral in too hard; that the child would be disgusted; and that McGuffey's method would not get his purpose. Of course this criticism would not hold against most of the selections in the advanced readers, which were taken from the best

ish Writers. The matter in the primary readers was intended to appeal to the immature minds of children. What seems silly to mature minds does not always seem silly to children. Children did laugh about some of these stories and make fun of them. I know that we children used to dramatize many of the lessons and use them in our play. We charged upon a flock of geese and put them all to flight, except one sturdy gander that thought to show us fight; and there was never a boy among us who would stand on the "burning deck" as long as Casabanca did. We saw that these stories were not literally true, that they were not history; but we did not object to them on that account; I think that we never failed to get the point to the story. We saw, I think, that actual life was not always like life depicted in the story, but we also saw that it ought to be. We saw that in actual life the good are not always rewarded as they are in the stories, but we also saw that the stories were right , and that in actual life the good should be rewarded just as they are in the stories, and I think that is what literature is for, to depict life as it should be.

I have no doubt, however, that there is some truth in the criticisms made by the opponents of McGuffey. Life has changed and we live in a different world from that for which McGuffey prepared his books. Perhaps there is some medium ground between McGuffer and his critics. Of one thing, however, I am convinced. We do need a more direct or effective method of teaching morals in the family and in the public schools , especially. It is impossible for children simply to imbibe virtues; they do not catch them as they do measles, or breathe them in with the air. They must be taught the difference between right and wrong, and they must see, that just from a practical, worldly point of view, at least, it is always better, in the long run, to be virtuous.

At any rate, there are many things that may be said in favor of the direct method of teaching morals. The Bible calls a spade a spade. It does not beat about the bush or suggest what is right or hint at what is wrong. It says "The wages of sin is death". The writers leave no doubt in the mind of the reader as to where he stands on moral problems.

44

...ere never was a greater or more skilful teacher of virtue than Shake-
...speare and he lived before McGuffey. Take up any play you please and his
...ability along this line will stare you in the face. Hear him in Macbeth:
"Here's the smell of blood still; all the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this little hand", says Lady Macbeth after she had murdered Duncan.
...listen also to Cardinal Wolsey in Henry VIII:

"O Cromwell, Cromwell!

...ad I but served my God with half the zeal I served my King, he would not in my age

Have left me to mine enemies."

...ain he says to Cromwell in the way of advice:

"Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy Country's,

Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,

Thou fall'st a blessed martyr!

...ton is noted for his direct method of teaching morals. I make only one quotation from his "Comus":

"But evil on itself shall back recoil,

And mix no more with goodness, where at last

Gathered like scum, and settl'd to itself,

It shall be in eternal, restless change,

Self-fed, and self-consumed."

...However effective this direct way of teaching morals in our day and in our schools and families might be, there is no doubt that it was successful in McGuffey's time, as all who are familiar with his readers or were brought up under his regime will testify. He says in the preface to the edition of 1879 that his purpose was" to obtain as wide a range of leading authors as possible, to present the best specimens of style, to insure interest in the subject, to impart valuable information, and to exert a decided and helpful moral influence." In all that I have read about the author, I have seen nothing to show that he did not accomplish his purpose with the children of his day and generation and for a long time

42

five afterwards. Mark Sullivan calls him the Confucius of America. He also speaks of him as the most popular American of the second half of the nineteenth century, and says that children knew him as McGuffey's, not McGuffey, as if he were an institution, which he really was.

The writer in the New York Times, from whom I have already quoted, says in concluding his article, " Not the thousandth part of it has been told. But if you would see the monument of William Holmes McGuffey, look not merely at the little house in which he was born, which Mr. Ford has saved as a memento, look not merely at the six little books which Mr. Ford has rescued from the oblivion into which all old school books are doomed to fall; look also at the generations of Americans with fast-graying hair that are still active in the affairs of the world." He might also have called our attention to the generation of pioneers who have gone on before.

And with these and many others who might be called upon to testify, I wish to conclude this paper with the expression of my belief that William Holmes McGuffey was a man who did more for American education, morals, and culture than any other one man of his time, , and whose readers, next to the Bible, had the greatest influence upon those who ~~read~~ studied them.

LCH

10/22/34

1
43

Paper #4.

"LET NATURE TAKE ITS COURSE"

Today, we find a few people that think things have "gone to the dogs" and that there is little that can be done about it. Others believe that society is sick, but we do not know enough about the case to prescribe for a sick society. Perhaps it has been sick before but came out of it and will do so again. Why should we interfere with nature? Just let nature take its course and we will come out all right sometime. A lot of "fool reformers" can stir up a mess which will not help things and may even retard nature from taking its course

Still there is another group that believes intelligence and study can be used in the direction of human affairs and should be pressed into service. They realize that all is not well but believe intelligent planning and care can righten things. They think that it required nature a long time to produce an organic structure or even a social organization but that man through artificial selection can accomplish in a few years what nature required ages to produce. True progress comes where man bends the forces of nature to his advantage. Are we willing today to become the "victims of destiny"?

Thomas Malthus published in 1798 an essay on population. He maintained that population when unchecked increased in a geometrical ratio and doubles itself every twenty-five years. The increase in the food supply was only in an arithmetical ratio. Hence, population was kept in check by war, famine, pestilence, disease, vice, misery,and prudential restraint.

In 1776 Adam Smith published his "Wealth of Nations" in which he advocated the laissez-faire theory: Permit each man to seek his own ecomic advantage unhampered, and the best interests of society will be furthered. About the same time Ricardo's "Iron Law of Wages" was preached. This principle was that laborers must sell today's labor today or lose it. So wages were pushed down to a "bare subsistence wage" by labor competition. Darwin also taught the theory of the survival of the fittest in society. All of these theories seem to indicate to the people of that age and to many today that nature's laws are unalterable and that man is nature's plaything. About all one could do would be to grit one's teeth and wait the onslaughter.

All of the gloomy predictions did not come to pass, Misery exists today but not to the great extent that it did in the past. Income has increased, so has wealth and standards of living. Why? Well, man took a hand and upset a few things.

We have discovered that the needs which primitive man felt are not much different from those of today. The main difference is the way that they are being satisfied today. T his process of satisfaction may change from age to age. These changes come about because of increasing knowledge in inventions. New facts are discovered and brought to bear upon the way men try to satisfy their wants. New inventions, be it a bow, an arrow or a pencil, have been introduced so that the processes by which we satisfy our needs have been revised and bettered. New social arrangements have been devised and are being devised so that we work better. We have made progress as to means due to facts, inventions, social discoveries but of course little as to ends.

The study of culture and of society has given us a new concept. It is that we must not "let nature take its course". Human social behavior can be scientifically investigated. The study that has been given to it already has revolutionized our nations of nature. So today social phenomena are subject to change by inventions, discoveries, and rarely show a stability and fixity that we find in physical nature. We are reading and studying about relativity in the social sciences. We are studying social trends, trends that may change things overnight because of some invention, discovery or emotional reaction of the people.

Can progress be made to order? Yes, I think so. We must see to it that discoveries and inventions are constantly forth coming. This can be done by encouraging research in our high schools of learning, foundations, and research departments of great business organizations. Artistic, philosophical, mechanical and social inventions should be encouraged and fostered. In the second place, the findings must be widely distributed to the masses. Man can work out his salvation.

We teachers might as well ask ourselves: What part do we play in this great movement? How can education help in a dynamic society? I will attempt a feeble answer:----

1. We must have an integration of the social studies. There are writers in the field who believe in a synthetic view of social life. They think all social studies tend to converge toward a definite goal--a social philosophy has been born. It is that man's progress may be controlled. The goal of all social sciences should be toward the melioration of the ills of society as a whole. Applied social studies should be founded that look toward the solutions of many of society's ills.

2. Perhaps all studies should be more socialized and stress the welfare of the group. Geography, biology, physchology, economics, and political science are leading the procession. Let the others follow.

3, Let us look to the social background of our teachers. All teachers should study past civilizations so that past educative systems that have continuity and development can be revealed to them. They will see that culture has been passed down from generation to generation by some sort of educative process. We can not afford to neglect the contribution of the past. Such a study also will reveal that the pattern set of life of the individual is determed by adjusted habits, thought, and attitudes. Even individual nature is modified by artifical selections. They will come to realize that our social organizations are mental entities that are made up of customs, mores, habits, beliefs and techniques that we think best at that particular time. Plasticty of our minds is making it possible for the educative process to pass it on.

4. Our teachers need social information. They must have this information so that it can be imparted in all of their various lines of activity. Progress can not come without the spread of social facts. We must prevent distortion, suppression of the truth, dishonesty and free ourselves as much as possible from the deepest prejudice of the past. We must see to it that our teachers get this social knowledge.

5. The social studies should become the core of our school curriculum. In order to increase the opportunities to inpart social information the day is demanding that such

studies as history, government, economics, ethics, and sociology be given a larger place in our high school curriculum. There is little use to make social discoveries etc., and then deny the opportunity to teach them and to make them common knowledge. Our elementary curriculum should not be neglected in this respect but perhaps is in better shape at present than the high school.

6. Voters are called upon to vote on questions of school policy. Some of these issues will be local, some state and some national. The school should help prepare the voters for such responsibilities. The history of education, particularly of American education, should be taught in our public schools. Boys and girls should be taught the economic principles involved in our tax system. They should know about the lives of the great leaders in this field. Intelligent patrons and supporters of public education must be encouraged.

7. Social education is to make education perform its functions. With a flow of new facts, and discoveries, passed on intelligently by school and press, with boys, girls and adults studying social problems governmental questions can settled not by chance but by selection. We can predetermine the social organizations of the future. Education has improved us during the past century. It is falling short. False culture must be forgotten and a selective culture passed on.

If our life is a matter of mental interactions, and institutions and social organizations are prevailing ways of thinking, feeling, and willing; then social change is only changing the "prevailing habituated states of mind". The institutions of the future depend upon us. If we want democratic government to work, wish people to be law abiding, etc., we must get busy. We have the social machine whose business it is to see to liberal education. A system adapted to the various capacities of intellect so that all can receive in proportion to their ability, we must have. It is not fair to the citizens of this country to have any other kind. It is not fair to boys and girls to have no schools and poor schools. It is not safe for democracy to have unequal educational opportunity. Otherwise our super-civilization must go down. Will nature take its course again?

ATRM
11/5/34

50

ON OUR WAY.

A. R. Markle.

Paper #6.

Among the peculiarities of the so called human race are memory and imagination, which, though possessed by some if not all of the lower orders, have been used by man alone for his progress and advancement.

Of the two, memory is probably the older for it has in many cases taken on an aspect of inheritance called instinct.

Certain things we learn by repetition, others we know by instinct and between the two there is no hard and fast line.

Imimagination is a product of an older mind, not necessarily in years but in that growth that takes place in all life.

Memory is concerned wholly with the past, imagination largely with the future, particularly with the process that leads to progress and invention.

Youth looks forward with imagination, age backward with memory, to the young the future is rose tinted, to age it is dark with gloom.

Youth fórgets the past and sees only a happy life ahead while age sees only the scandals of the present, disaster in the future and longs for the "good old days".

It is said that there is nothing new under the sun and this may be true of human words and deeds but not of the machine which is born of imagination or the orderly thinking out of a result desired by a process imagined.

True, many inventions come about by accident but their improvement is seldom by accident.

Countless centúries must have passed before some prehistoric Burbank added another row to an ear of maize of saw

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



the need of an apple with more meat than core.

The fundamentalist has no doubt that wheat grew in Eden and may be as positive that maize was there also, but the archeologist is in doubt as to which came first and where.

While it is usually accepted that human life began in Asia, there is a modern tendency toward the view that America discovered Columbus rather than the opposite.

Long before there were shepherds to watch their flocks by night and observe the course of the stars, Central America had a calendar old enough to predict the cycles of many centuries and based on an astronomy as profound as that of the East.

When men of Asia were clothed in skins of beasts and fed on berries, nuts and seeds, gatherdd as they wandered, early Americans wove their ancient fabrics, cultivated the soil and cooked their food.

How many ages must have been needed to learn to bake and cook and how much longer to learn to use the cassava from the pounded fibre of which the poisonous sap must first be removed before man could partake of tapioca.

But it is hardly necessary that we follow back to that far off day when life crawled out of the sea and began to use the earth as a home.

Sufficient it is that there was once a man, naked and defenceless, faced with the primary needs of food and shelter and forced to battle with all the world for his existence.

Millions of his race must have perished from starvation, exposure and the carnivorous beasts before he armed himself, before he learned good food from bad and before he learned to store up food for the time of need.

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS C



All of these he must have done before he could be certain of existence, could mate and multiply and develop a mind that could communicate its impulses to others or write a record of his past.

Somewhere he acquired a sense of numbers, probably before he could talk he could tell when he had an additional male in his clan or when a wife was absent.

Then came a sense of ownership, his wives, his children, his weapons, the products of the hunt or field and his home however crude, were his alone and to be defended against all who might attempt to take them.

Free though ignorant, he wandered where he would, occupied any land not used by others, free to do anything he wished so that he interefered with no one else in a like right, a simple soul that knew no "real" property and possessed only "personal" assets.

The earth, the air, the sunshine, the rains of heaven were all his to use freely and to share with all others but there was nowhere a civilization and he was but a savage, his kind later to be hunted off the earth by those who had somehow become owners of the earth.

An ideal age when therewas never quite enough to eat or wear, yet each shared his feast or famine with others until wisdom taught him to store against later needs roots and grain in earthen jar or woven basket.

It is possible that the fear of want brought about a desire to acquire an over supply of food or clothing or that through the survival of those who did care for the future, a policy of providence was adopted and that this was only an

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



outgrowth of a sort of hoarding instinct, but in time the human race began to lay up a store devoted particularly to him who saved.

Largely this was common property to which the entire clan was entitled in time of need but there grew up a distinction as to those who could and those who could not share in the store and this, no doubt, was the origin of the clan or tribe as distinguished from the alien or foreigner.

As time passed this feeling of separation grew and out of it came raids on the stores of others, tribal wars and separate ownerships.

With advancing civilization there came a parasite class within the tribe as well as tribes which lived by raiding instead of producing and there arose the need of a system of rules and regulations for the protection of life and property.

Thus there came into being Law, a certain rule almost unchanging, governing the relations of men among themselves, a contract or agreement as to their conduct.

Many generations were to come and go before laws became uniform in their intent or their performance and still more ages were required before all men became equal under them.

The hard won victory at Runnymede gave little to the common people, the barons were not wholly unselfish in their treatment of King John which resulted in the Magna Charta.

For the greater portion of the men of England were to remain virtual slaves for years to come.

Few though they were who gained their right to liberty they still were the seed from which sprung constitutional government.

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS C



Five and a half centuries were to pass before the world was to see a people rise in their might and proclaim that representation was a prime requisite to taxation, to follow with a declaration of independence and the creation of a republic whose rights, duties and limitations were set out in the Constitution of the United States.

The thirteen colonies united to wage a war of defense, a Continental Congress and Articles of Confederation bound them to a common purpose and with the final freedom from the mother country won, local jealousies and individual selfishness seemed fairly in the saddle.

Determined as they were to abolish monarchial government, the delegates to the Constitutional Convention were probably the nearest to a genuine representative body that the world had known.

Aristocrats, former Colonial officials, military and financial giants were in a large majority and for a long time the outcome was in doubt but finally there emerged from their councils a document of unusual worth.

Federalists and States Rights men alike agreed upon the preamble and the purposes there expressed for union, justice, peace, defense, welfare and liberty.

The division of responsibility between the executive, legislative and judicial branches, the duties of each clearly defined, their rights and limitations fully set forth, provided for a government of a type never known, as well as a truly representative one.

It was intended that each of these branches should not only have full power over matters entrusted to it but that there

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



should be no intereference by either of the others with its rights.

Framed in the days of slow communication between men, we find much to irk us in these days of rapid interchange of thought and action.

When it took a month or two for Congress to assemble, when a week was required to receive the news of its doings and to reply from home, when life moved slower and men deliberated carefully every action and word, it was not intended that a basic and fundamental document could be lightly changed or altered.

The results of a war extending over eight years were not to be lightly considered nor did emergencies exist that called for haste.

Check and countercheck were used to make certain that the right might prevail and each of the three divisions of government was expected to preserve the equilibrium of the others.

Congress itself might pass laws of only certain well defined natures, both houses must agree upon the passage and the President might disapprove their action by his veto.

To offset his autocratic veto, Congress might pass over his power by a two thirds majority in each house, after which the Supreme Court might annul the act as unconstitutional.

Certain types of legislation were forbidden Congress and reserved to the States by specific mention and positive prohibition of any legislation not explicitly set out in the Constitution was not only given first but by the Tenth amendment, "The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the states, are reserved to the

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



states respectively, or to the people."

The Constitution sets out the duties of the Executive and all the powers which he may possess, all the authority which he may exercise and all the rights of his office are there set out, ~~in the Constitution~~.

As the executive officer of the government, he is sworn to" faithfully execute " his office, and "to the best of his ability, ~~preserve~~ preserve, protect and defend the Constitution of the United States". This oath is a necessary precedent to his assuming the office and is a requirement of almost all of those taking office under the government.

The Constitution itself prohibits him from exceeding the powers set out in its requirements of the office.

He may not make laws or interpret their meaning, those being powers jealously reserved for the Congress and Courts.

Congress may not, however willing, delegate powers to him that are theirs by the Constitution, nor may the Courts allow him to function in their place. He is the Executive of the laws.

Barred from the exercise of legislative or judicial acts, it follows that he can not delegate any such powers to any subordinate bureau or commission.

Neither he nor any appointee of his may "crack down" on one who dares to dissent from his opinion unless he be a violator of a law duly passed by Congress in accordance with the Constitution.

Congress has no Constitutional power to legislate on matters that are strictly intrastate, this being forbidden it.

Congress has no power to enact nor the Executive to enforce any law as to the right of the individual to contract for his

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



property or his services. Even the right of a child or its parents to labor for a pittance through long hours under mean conditions is reserved to the states for their own legislation until an amendment of the Constitution shall give Congress such power.

The Fifth amendment to the Constitution provides that no person shall be deprived of "life, liberty or property" without due process of law and it follows from the Constitution that the law must be constitutional also.

The Constitution has no reference to emergencies, it is in itself inflexible and unchangeable but its provisions for such changes or amendments that the future might require make it an ideal instrument, all the more wonderful when we consider those who made it and the wide changes in mental and physical progress since its adoption.

The men of that day were pioneers, their simple needs were satisfied by things at hand, they themselves could use the tools to which they had access, if none were provided they knew how to make them and in themselves were largely self contained and self reliant.

The machine age had not arrived, each man was a power to himself, capable of meeting any emergency and of overcoming any difficulty.

One of our early congressmen was once on his way to Washington by stage when an accident made almost a complete wreck of team, stage and harness.

Not one of the passengers was a mechanic in the sense of daily occupation but in an hour or so everything had been repaired without recourse to a settlement, the roadside forest

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



providing all the materials needed and the pocketknives of the passengers and their native ability all the machinery used.

Our congressman told of his own part in mending the harness with elm bark thread and his early experience as an apprentice.

Men of those days were self reliant individualists as compared with us of today who make up the cogs of the machine, wholly dependent on the mechanic and our habit of letting George do it.

At home they ~~provided~~ supplied their own needs, grew their grain, harvested it and took it to mill, grew their cotton, wool and flax, their own families spun and wove, their clothing from top to toe was of their own home manufacture, the village smith their dependence on factory made goods.

Their farms and plantations, their shops and stores were their own, their ways and manners a pattern to themselves and others, good people and good neighbors.

Tasks too large for the individual were shared by all, the log rollings, the house raisings, the corn hushings and harvests, the cares of birth and death shared by those nearest, even though strangers, their common needs served by co-operation.

Each rose early, worked hard, produced all that he could, stayed out of debt if he could or got out as fast as he could, happy that he was a part of a life that was rich and full.

The farmer felt it was better to raise fifty bushels of wheat at fifty cents than twenty five at a dollar and he was able to ship the surplus down the river to a market which, though of varying price was certain to take it.

A twelve hour day was not unusual, work at home was even longer occupied and with no newspapers, few books, fewer ma-

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



mines, scattered communities had little use for the abundant leisure of today.

The tannery, the cotton and woolen mill, the flour mill and the packing house took away from the home much of the labor and released the women as well as the men from household tasks, enabling a larger agricultural program, which aided by the reaper and the cotton gin brought about a use for more land.

The desire for more and cheaper land opened new country, produced larger crops, required more transportation and milling facilities which in turn required more capital to build canals, buy machines to use more products which would need more roads and more canals, more mills and more machines.

Pyramid on pyramid piled up until the whole system collapsed, a panic arrived, spent its course and the cycle began again.

So came about our first period of prosperity, saved from ruin by the War of 1812, another expansion into the northwest territory, the need for capital to supply the needs of the pioneer who would expand on credit, the building of the internal improvements, the utter collapse in the panic of 1837 when even sovereign states went bankrupt in a strictly honorable way.

This time no war with its fancied prosperity intervened to save us and real hard times set in until the Mexican War and the days of 49 with its outpouring of yellow gold again brought a fancied boom culminating in the civil war. Then fortunes were made by those in the know and a debt so colossal as to stagger the nation and to make it a fixed policy without which we could not even have a banking system.

The resumption of specie payments, the demonetization of silver, the railroad age and the era of corruption followed by the initiation of a gigantic pension system and an expansion of

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



government bureaus and officeholders brought us to the eighties.

Tariff subsidies, trusts and combinations in industry brought about labor troubles and financial difficulties from which the opening of new lands and the Klondyke again saved us and the new century opened almost coincidently with the arrival of the interurban railway and the automobile.

Important as the latter has been in the changes in modes of transportation, its chief contribution to the age of machinery was the assembly line where a constantly moving piece of metal becomes a machine under the hands of a stationery line of individuals who each have but a single function and whose duty is to do that and that alone but to do it well.

Mass Production was not a new thing in industry, the making of shoes, for instance, had long been a matter of each man doing a single thing incessantly repeated until his action became a part of a gigantic machine.

Then we had a reversal of the old processes of manufacture, a system no longer dependent on orders for so many units as of old but a system of production requiring a forced sale in order that more might be made at still lower costs in still greater quantities and re quiring more salesmen and greater pressure on the buyer.

Unsold goods requiring capital until they could be sold built up a selling method on a credit basis, yearly changes in models built up a buying desire for the new through obsolescence rather than deterioration.

Our needs grew faster than our ability to pay, the luxuries of out fathers became our necessities, our increased leisure called for more luxuries and the inevitable followed, over production reared its ugly head and want and misery were strewn in

COLONIAL WARS
THE WAR OF 1812
SOCIETY OF BERKS



61

the land, we had too many hogs, too much milk, too much corn and wheat, too much cotton, worked too long and paid too little for what we could buy.

Then in order that we might buy more goods, the price was raised, the banks were not to lend us money to build or buy, capitol went into hiding for fear of its life, food stuffs were destroyed, we were to work shorter hours, money was to be given us by the Federal government to help us to care for ourselves, wasteful works were started where money could be paid for even less valuable services, states and cities were encouraged to borrow from the Government whose only source of funds to squander was from the taxation of the people who were to be helped.

In the name of relief, Congress attempted to delegate its constitutional powers to the Executive, unheard of measures were adopted by which private industry was to be worried into insanity, commerce and industry alike panic driven into shackles that they welcomed then regretted only to find the courts unable to relieve them because of a construction of law ridiculous in its nature.

The powers of Britain's monarch are but empty shadows in the light of those enjoyed by our President, despite a Constitution purposely designed to curb usurpation, ~~enslave~~ his victims designed to wait in futile patience the slow course of the Courts.

Truly, we don't know where we're going but we're on our way.

F COLONIAL WARS
F THE WAR OF 1812
L SOCIETY OF SONS



11/19/34

Paper #8.

# INDETERMINATE FACTORS IN HEREDITY

Harry E. Elder
1221 South Fifth Street
Terre Haute, Indiana

# INDETERMINATE FACTORS IN HEREDITY

## The Problem

Whence came we? Whither are we bound? How much of our journey have we completed? How may we predict the future of our race? How may we prevent or retard the appearance of undesirable, or hasten the development of desirable, racial traits? All these and many other related questions have vexed the minds of thinking people for thousands of years. Unable to answer, men's actions have been controled frequently not by facts but by baseless beliefs of which one of the most widespread is that of maternal impressions upon offspring. [8]That this and other common superstitions date from a very early time is evidenced by the Genesis account of how Jacob proceeded to secure great riches for himself on the strength of Laban's promise to give him all cattle, sheep, and goats that were born "ring-straked, speckled, and spotted." It is reported as truth that Jacob "took him rods of green poplar and of the hazel and chestnut tree; and peeled white strakes in them, and made the white appear which was in the rods. And he set the rods which he had peeled before the flocks in the gutters in the watering troughs when the flocks came to drink. And the flocks conceived before the rods and brought forth cattle ring-straked, speckled, and spotted. And it came to pass, whenever the stronger cattle did conceive, that Jacob laid the rods before the eyes of the cattle in the gutter, that they might conceive among the rods. But when the cattle were feeble, he put them not in: so the feebles were Laban's and the stronger Jacob's."

## Progress in the Study of Heredity

Even today great masses of our population have no more knowledge concerning many of the primary facts of life than had Jacob. But, in

spite of popular credulity and with due regard to scriptural authority, there is no warrant for such flimsy beliefs. Enough progress has been made in the study of heredity and evolution in the past generation, and sufficient valid information has become available to change our views on many problems and to give us an open mind toward still others which the thinkers of only a few decades ago considered settled forever.

When DeVries, in 1901, discovered mutants among his evening primroses he was able to present and announce definitely for the first time living evidence of experimental evolution. [3] In summarizing "A Generation's Progress in the Study of Evolution" Edwin G. Conklin makes these pertinent observations: "Mutations are always inherited; that is, they represent changes in the germ plasm, whereas changes which first occur in the developed organism are not inherited and are called fluctuations. This is indeed the chief distinction between the old evolution of Lamarck and Darwin and the new of Weismann and DeVries; in the old, attention was fixed upon the developed organism and evolutionary changes were supposed to be first made in the adult and by some mysterious process to be transferred to the germ cells; in the newer views of evolution changes are first wrought in the germ cells and only later in the devloped organism."

## Outward Manifestations of Evolution and Heredity

But outward manifestations of organic evolution and of heredity were observed long before the causes were understood. For example, it was observed that the first hybrid generation resulting from crossing red and white four o'clocks were all pink; it was further discovered that in the second hybrid generation one-fourth were red, one-fourth were white, and one-half were pink. By continued experimentation it was learned that the "reds" and the "whites" of this second hybrid generation bred true while the "pinks" produced a generation one-fourth

red, one-fourth white, and one-half pink. This situation was found to prevail in almost, but not quite, all cases in which the original parents differed in only one respect and in which the question of dominance and recessiveness did not enter. If, in this case, the factor which produced the trait red had been dominant over the white-producing factor, the first hybrid generation would have been all red rather than all pink, and the second hybrid generation would have consisted of three red four o'clocks to each white one. Of the second hybrid generation all whites would have bred true while only one-third of the reds would have produced reds only.

As a further illustration of independent assortment the author of this paper submits the following personal experience. In a study of genetics mutant fruit flies were mated with normal flies and traced through two or three hybrid generations. This was done for cases representing from one to three pairs of factor differences. The results of the experiment may be stated in the words of Babcock and Clausen: [1] "When two (or three) pairs of factor differences are involved in a hybrid the same laws apply in segregation and recombination as apply in a monohybrid. The two (or three) pairs of factors segregate independently of each other and give character combinations in $F_2$ to be expected on the basis of chance factor distribution. . . . . Just as a 3:1 ratio is typical for the monohybrid when one of the contrasted factors is dominant, so the 9:3:3:1 ratio is characteristic when one member of each pair of factors is dominant; and 27:9:9:9:3:3:3:1 is typical for trihybrids if dominance occurs in the three pairs of factors involved." In other words, where three pairs of factors are involved one may expect that only one fly out of sixty-four in the second hybrid generation will be homozygous for all its factors and will, therefore, breed true.

From such simple observations Mendel deduced his laws of heredity without understanding that "separate gene-pairs are shuffled and dealt independently of each other."

## Mechanical Basis of Heredity

In the study of evolution and heredity it has been quite simple to observe that certain laws seem to prevail; it has been more difficult to understand the underlying basis for the observed phenomena. However, according to Conklin, [3] "almost coincidentally with the rediscovery of Mendelism and the establishment of the mutation theory came the discovery of the cellular basis of these phenomena in the germ cells. . . . Inheritance material is located in the nuclei of the germ cells and chiefly, if not entirely, in certain threads called chromosomes. . . . . When egg and sperm unite in fertilization their chromosomes commingle but retain their individual identity and in the sepeated divisions of the fertilized egg, which lead to the developed animal, every chromosome in every nucleus splits lengthwise and its halves separate, going into the two daughter cells; . . . . every cell of the developed organism has half its chromosomes from the egg and half from the sperm. . . . . Finally, when this adult organism in turn forms eggs or spermatozoa the number of chromosomes in these sex cells is reduced to half those present in all other cells . . . . When the chromosomes of egg and sperm unite in fertilization the full number is restored again."

"Since on the average organisms inherit as many traits from one parent as from the other and since they receive an equal number of chromosomes from each parent, it seemed highly probably that the chromosomes contained the inheritance material; but at the beginning of this century no one had demonstrated any particular relationship between any particular chromosome in a germ cell and any particular developed character."

We know now that germ cells are the only living bonds not only between generations, but also between species and that they contain the physical basis for both heredity and evolution. The material bases for sex, heredity, mutations, and evolution are believed to consist of ultra-microscopic inheritance units or genes which lie in the chromosomes.

[1]The in heritance of white eye color in Drosophila, the fruit fly, illustrates well the role played by chromosomes in the transmission of a given trait from parent to offspring. In this case it is evident that the carrier of white eye color and the sex determiner are at least not identical, for the Y-chromosome, always found in the male and never found in the female, has no effect on body characters. (See Chart I).

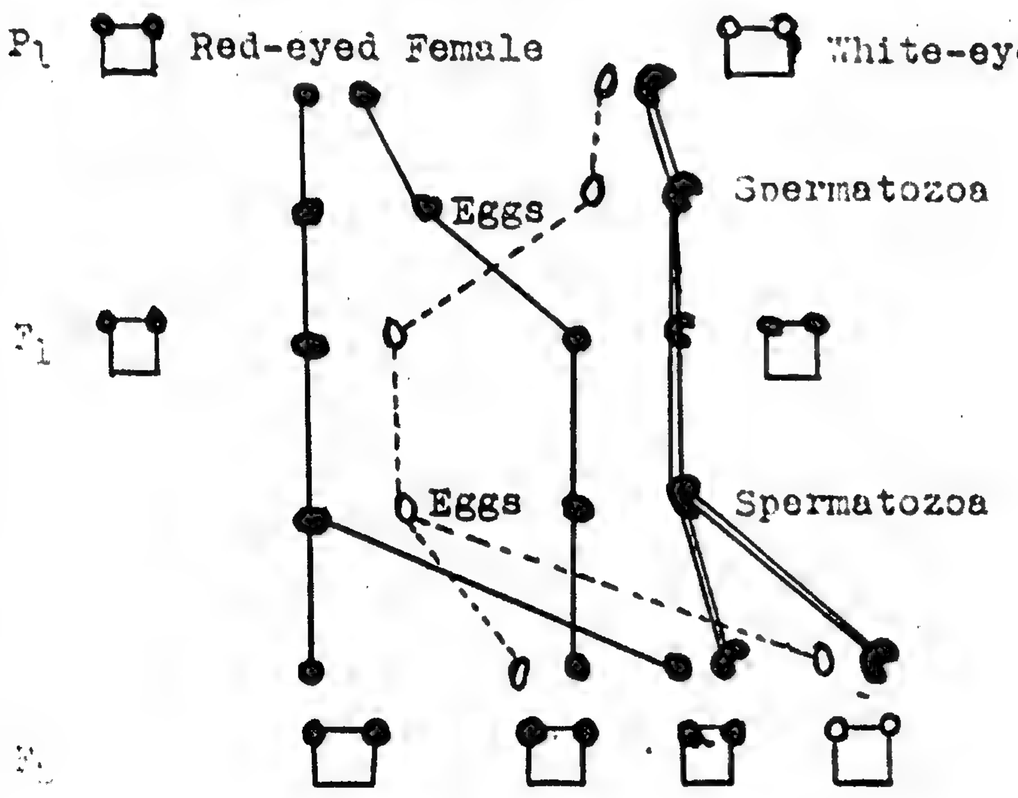



CHART I. Inheritance of White Eye Color in Drosophila.
(Red-eyed female mated to white-eyed male. Solid lines indicate history of chromosomes; dotted and double lines, of the male.)

## Nature and Causes of Mutation

If there were no mutations, if no new species ever arose, and if the inheritance of given factors always followed absolutely the laws of chance and independent assortment as previously outlined, there could be no evolution and there would be only determinate factors in heredity. As has been hinted before, such is not the whole truth; fluctuations and mutations do occur, the former disappearing and the latter continuing through subsequent generations.

It is these indeterminate factors of heredity and the actual bases of evolution to which attention is now directed. In general, mutations or changes in heredity are due to one of three causes: [3](1) "Changes in the numbers and associations of whole chromosomes". (2) "Changes in the composition of individual chromosomes". (3) "Changes in the genes themselves". It seems pertinent to consider briefly each of these causes.

(1). DeVries' original evening primrose has fourteen chromosomes; in each of seven different mutants there are fifteen. This difference evidently is due to an irregularity of some sort for some unknown reason at the time of the reduction from the diploid to the haploid number in the process of the development of the germ cells resulting in what is commonly known as disjunction. When this occurs there are some germ cells with eight or more chromosomes rather than the expected seven, one-half the number common in ordinary somatic or body cells, and the result is an individual primrose, a mutant, carrying fifteen chromosomes in each cell rather than the fourteen which characterizes the body cells of its parents.

(2). Sometimes the synaptic pairs of chromosomes twist around each other, break, and reunite so that portions of two or more become interchanges, resulting in what is commonly called "translocation" or "crossing over". Such complications seem to be the causes of many mutations.

69

(3). Probably the most common bases for mutations are changes in the ultra-microscopic genes themselves. Although this is found in practically all animals, the vinegar fly, Drosophila melanogaster, capable of producing a new generation every twelve days, has been most commonly used in experimentation and no less than 500 mutations have been found in the past twenty-five years. [3]Quoting Conklin again, "It has been possible to locate the particular genes that have undergone mutations in particular chromosomes and even in particular regions of those chromosomes, so that chromosome maps have been constructed giving the location of these mutant genes in the different chromosomes." It has been demonstrated that these mutations go in all <u>possible</u> directions but not in <u>all</u> directions, for many are lethal and, therefore, kill their possessors.

In addition to the many lethal mutations which may not be transmitted to subsequent generations, the majority of all others are degressive rather than progressive. This fact causes some students to question whether mutations actually are the materials of evolution but it is essential to remember that evolution may be either degressive or progressive and that the small number of progressive mutants only teaches us at what a price progress has been bought.

What is the nature of the changes in genes which in turn result in changes in the adult individual? While this question has not been definitely and finally answered, it is thought that they may be either chemical or physical. Experimentation indicates that many gene changes may be due to some form of radiation. For example, Drosophila subjected to X-rays, produced 150 times the usual number of mutants, more than half of which were lethal while others carried through fifty generations without reverting. It seems definitely established that radiation also

causes breaks and translocations in chromosomes which in turn cause marked changes in such living organisms as barley, corn, jimpson weed, wasps, etc. Heat, also, has been effective in producing mutations.

## Heredity in Humans

One does not see the full significance of factors of heredity until studied in the light of humans affairs. Thoughts from present day writers serve to focus attention upon both determinate and indeterminate factors of heredity, with Homo Sapiens substituted for Drosophila melanogaster.

[6]Otto L. Mohr states that inbreeding, called intermarriage when applied to humans, will favor the desirable or undesirable gene in double quantity and that the results will, therefore, be either <u>good</u> or <u>bad</u>, depending upon the nature of the double quantity. Using his exact words, "from the point of view of a pure-bred dog, we are all curs", but "for general purposes a cur is on the whole much more valuable than most of pure bred races. . . . . The word 'pure' does not involve any general superiority" and "to construct family trees"; continues Mohn, "is not apt to promote our respect for blue blood". He believes also that good and bad germinal material is scattered at random among different social strata and that, therefore, "the effect of sterilization is at best very, very slow", so slow, in fact, that "if sterilization of every albuietic individual were carried out in every generation it would require a period about equivalent to the Christian era to reduce it to one-half its present dimensions". As a further corollary to this random scattering of good and bad germinal material, failure to reproduce themselves on the part of certain classes of society will not result in "race suicide".

[4]Let Aldous Huxley give his interpretations of the laws of heredity: (1). Speaking of the civilization of the Mayas, he says, "My own con-

viction is that distinguishing peculiarities were due to such personal accidents as birth, in a favored social position, of exceptional individuals". (2). "Why is one artistic tradition different from another? Geographical, climatic, and economic factors play their part. So, perhaps, does racial idiosyncracy. But the final decisive element is accident -- the accident of the unusual combination of chromosomes and the consequent birth of an unusually gifted person; the accident of the existence of royal or clerical patronage -- and so on, indefinitely. If we wish to risk a generalization, we may say that the main features of a culture are predictable by anyone acquainted with the impersonal forces at work upon and within the community; but the details are the results of accident and are therefore unpredictable. . . . . Sometimes there will be, so far as the arts are concerned, an extraordinary run of luck. The literary, or pictorial, or musical lucky number will turn up again and again; there will be a long succession of artists of genius, of patrons with good taste, Then, suddenly, the luck will turn, and for generations the winning color or number will obstinately refuse to come out. These runs of luck and of mischance are enough to account for most of the differences in quality between one national art and another. . . . . . Once established (mainly as a result of personal accidents), an artistic tradition canalizes the activity of artists -- and the more isolated and homogeneous the society, the more strict, as we have seen, is their conditioning."

Quotations from Wesley R. Coe are equally interesting and thought-provoking: (1). "Evolution is an accumulation of mutations." (2). "There is no evidence that mutation can ever stop." (3). "Although the physical apparatus for producing mutations may be found in many laboratories the experimenter has as yet no control in directing the types of mutations

which he produces." (4). "The progress of organic evolution seems to be mutually dependent upon the instability of the hereditary mechanism on the one hand and on the action of the environment in eliminating unsuitable mutations on the other."

[5]In an address on September 5, 1934, before a meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science at Aberdeen, Scotland, James Hapwood Jeans pointed out that there are so many unobservable and indeterminate factors even among physical phenomena that "the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth," is not easily or accurately conveyed. One gains the impression that no science, certainly not biology, is as sure of itself in 1934 as it was only a few years ago. That the present trend is from certainty to uncertainty is definitely expressed in these words: "From the dawn of human history, man has been wont to attribute the results of his own incompetence to the interference of a malign fate. The particular picture seems to make fate even more powerful and more all-pervading than ever before; she not only has her fingers in human affairs, but also in every atom in the universe. The new physics has got rid of the mechanistic determinism, but only at the price of getting rid of the uniformity of nature as well!"

## Conclusion

The whole trend of the new science as it touches heredity and evolution is forward looking. It opens vistas of greater possibilities for the future than had been previously imagined and removes man from the control of fate and places his future progress in charge of his own initiative, will power, and ideals. The new science leaves no doubt as to the possibility of raising above their present levels human capacities for educability, altruism, leisure, immunity from disease, and for life itself.

Harry E. Elder
Indiana State Teachers College
Terre Haute, Indiana

# Bibliography


1. Babcock, E.B., and Clausen, R.E. Genetics in Relation to Agriculture. McGraw-Hill Book Company, Inc., New York, 1918.
2. Coe, Wesley R. The Evolution of Earth and Man. Chapter 13. Yale University Press, New Haven, 1929.
3. Conklin, Edwin G. "A Generation's Progess in the Study of Evolution." Science, Volume 80, pp. 147-156, August 17, 1934.
4. Huxley, Aldous. Beyond the Mexique Bay, Harper and Brothers, New York and London, 1934.
5. Jeans, James Hapwood. "The New World-Picture of Modern Physics" Science, Volume 80, pp. 213-222, September 7, 1934.
6. Mohr, Otto L. "Heredity and Human Affairs". Forum, pp. 118-121, August, 1934.
7. Pink, Alderton: A Realist Looks at Democracy. Frederick A. Stokes Company, New York.
8. ell, H.G., and Huxley, Julian S. The Science of Life. Doubleday, Doran and Company, Inc., New York, 1931.

DHF
12/3/34

74

Paper #10.

SENESCENCE

In the very heyday of man's powers, in the the full summer of his creative possibilities, and of his desires and ambitions, the life drama played by each human actor discloses, quite suddenly and unexpectedly, its true tragicomic motive. It is as if the player, himself had been acting a part in a drama, the course and the end of which he did not fully comprehend. It had begun as a pleasant play of exciting incident, joyous adventure, vital desire and satisfaction, ambition and achievement. The actor has wantoned with his role to his own pleasure, and now, well past the middle of the second act, he is startled by a sharp hint from the promoter's box that his interpretation of his role must be changed into another key- one less pleasant, more difficult and less satisfying. From now on to the end of the third act he must portray the picture of gradually flaging desires and failing powers, of disallusionment, fading pleasures and progressive fatigue, in other words the portrayal of senescence, until his role ends



in ultimate death. The title of this tragicomedy is "The Life of Man"; its three acts are: 1. Evolution; 2. Maturity; 3. Involution. It is the story of a living, Muticellular organism, a chemicophysical machine, transforming, storing and releasing energy, capable of building up and restoring its own substance, and repairing its wear- and - tear damage, within certain bounds. But it can do this only for a limited period of time. As is the case with all energy producing machines, the life of the individual human machine is not immortal, but

has, perforce, from the very nature of its substance and construction, the complexity and intricate relationships of its' manifold parts, and peculiar nature of the work it has to do, a limited period, of active and useful existence. The individual machine wears out: but before wearing out it has the power of producing out of its own substance and energy store the materials for another machine of the same type. Although mortal as an individual organism, it secures a potential immortality for its own kind. Id does this, however, at the price of its own self-destruction, for under normal conditions its normal ultimate duration of existence is determined by factos inherent within the machine itself - determined by the quality of the chromosones.

Many are depressed by the scientific view that old age and death are physiologic process, necessary and inevitable. We have no moral philosophy of life in which they are rationally considered and evaluated. In the place of the old legend of a fountain of perpetual youth, we are now offered the conception of age and death as diseases which can be inhibited or even prevented, a physiologic and morphologic rejuvenescence of the individual, a pushing ahead of the life limit to ages much advanced, or the abrogation of unpleasant features of age. These are among the biologic conjectures and promises of the day.

The body is a living protoplasmic animal organism carrying on the vital function of nutrition and metabolism, irritability, motility and reporduction. The cesation of these functions is death. The vital machines have the power of self-repair and

and self-restoration within certain degrees. They possess further the ability of reproducing themselves from minute portions of their bwn bodies, but only through the cooperation of two separate types of vital machines, the male and female, through the union of sperm and ovum. Through sexual reproduction the continued existence of the human organism upon the earth is maintained, for the individual machines are doomed to wear out and to disappear. It is as if each machine was charged with an energy potentially sufficient to carry it along for a limited period of time. The union of the sperm and ovum mark the charge of the individual energy machine: That energy charge is expended at a constantly diminishing rate through the period of growth and development until maturity is reached, and after this it declines much more rapidly until the machine finally comes to a standstill. This termination of activities of the protoplasmic energy machine due to the loss of intrinsic energy, independent of the action of extrinsic forces, is normal or biologic death, and the period of its activity the biologic life limit.

The essential goal of the individual life appears to be the perpetuation and evolution of the life of the species through the successive renewal of the energy charge by the union of the sperm and ovum, in other words the procreation, maturation, transmission and modification of the germ plasm. When this is accomplished the individual life machine has served its purpose. Its duration of existence is determined, therefore, by the conditions and factors necessary to accomplish racial preservation and progress. The normal duration of life is, therefore, intrinsic and inherited.

In all this succession of energy cycles the mind of man can see a broad purpose running, the mechanism of species evolution and adaptation to the changing environment of the earth. We need then to recognize law and order in all this and to take heed about the efficiency of our own energy machine - to see that it perfomrs its work in the best possible way and to provide new machines with unimpaired energy charges to carry on.

The life of the human individual created by the union of the sperm and ovum represents a continuous progression from its beginning to its end, but passes through a number of well defined periods. The first work of the energy machine is to attain its full development, then follows its maintenance at its height of maturity until the energy loss brings about its decline and finally its end. The curve of life willshow an ascending portion, the period of growth (evolution), its apex a relatively short plateau (maturity), and the decending curve the period of retrogression (involution). For the sake of brevity we shall pass hastily over the period of growth up to maturity. Practically speaking, maturity has been fully attained when an equilibrium is established between intake and the replacement of tissue loss through wear-and-tear processes without the formation of additional tissue. This stage is not a sharp peak,but is a softly rounded almost unrecognizable elevation falling usually somwhere in the period from the thirty-fifth to the fifieth year, occuring earlier for the female than for the male.

The period of maturity is preeminently the period of reproductive activity. Both the sexes have completed their

primary and secondary sexual development and are now prepared for the consumation of their greatest function, the propagation of their race.

All of the morphologic and functional differences between the fully developed male and female are purely the expression of the different roles each one must play in the all-important business of reproduction. All the vital energies of this period of bodily maturity urge them to this consumation.

Other functions of the male ~~more~~ as important, perhaps, ~~than~~ as reporduction are providing for and protecting the mother and her children. The period of sexual activity is, therefore, for the male the creative and productive age. And upon the collective sex life of the individuals of the species, rests the future, of its existence - evolution or retrogression and eventually extinction.

For the production of progeny undoubtedly the fourth decade of life brings the best results. Ideal ages for marriages are twenty-eight to thirty in the male and twenty-six to twenty-eight in the female. In these years physical and mental developments have reached the stage to secure the moral character and high ideals most favorable to the next generation. If measured by fertility alone, the high point in America falls somewhere between the twenty-fifth and thirty-seventy years. The production of progeny alone cannot be taken as the index of highest efficiency and achievement. The long and expensive period of postnatal care now for children necessary has determined a later marriage age and has led to a concentration of births in the early part of the fourth decade and the

latter part of the third.

The theory is now pretty generally accepted, that the human organism passes through the well defined stages of a unicellular animal, a metazoan invertebrate, and vertebrate animal, and finally reaches the height of its evolutionary progression as a mammal. Various portions of man's organic structure pass through temporary stages typical of fully completed development in other vertebrates, in order to achieve at last the so-called human form divine. This body is not simply the result of cell increase and cell differentation. Involution is as necessary as growth in the complete building plan of the animal organism. Indeed the two processes have been coexistent from the time of fertilization and throughout the whole period of development. The retrogression or involution of certain temporary organs and structures has been taking place; these serve their purpose of usefulness for a given period and then are gotten out of the way, these are known as the minor involutions. The individual himself comes to a similar end when he has lost his functional capacity. Service is, after all the keynote of organic development.

Among the minor involutions may be mentioned: the loss of half the chromatin content, loss of the tail of the spermatagoan, loss of the polar bodies of the ovum, loss of the gill slits, thyreoglassal ducts, bronchial vessels, notochord, Wolffian body and duct, post-anal duct, supernumary mammary glands, tail, Placenta, Umbilical cord, Umbilical vessels, Urachus, ductus arteriosis, milk teeth, thymus glad and tonsils, involution of uterus and breasts. Death and life are unseperably connected from the very beginnings of the multicellular organism.

Largely through the medium of these involutionary processes, the human embryo recapitulates the evolutionary history of the species in its passage through lower invertebrate and vertebrate forms.

Especially remarkable among the minor involutions, and yet typical of ~~the~~ involutions all, is the life history of the placenta. At the time of birth it is a senile structure, repeating in detail the essential pathological tissue changes that later appear in the major involution of the mature organism; sclerosis of the arteries with obliteration, fibrosis of the stroma, atrophy and degeneration of the chorionic epithelium, thrombosis, calcification, etc. It has passed through the well-defined stages of evolution, maturity and senescence, to be discarded as useless - prophetic of the fate of the organism as a whole.

Loss of use, reduction in function, and not overwork, is the reason for involution. Neither can involutions be explained upon the basis of wear-and-tear, or upon toxic etiology. Loss of use or function is the key-word and the tissue changes are identical in kind with those in the major involution which we call old age.

## OLD AGE - THE MAJOR INVOLUTION.

We are apt to regard the appearance of the signs of senescence as a tragic joke played upon us, which we resent more or less and with a bitterness that is hopeless. It steals on us slowly and stealthily but from the moment it is first recognized, the decent is progressive and inevitalbe to the final moment of extinction. Senescence is a gradually developing complex, or syndrome of organ involutions and tissue involutions, and when these become sufficiently advanced to be clinically apparent, then we say: "Age is upon us".

We are defending the thesis that senescence is a normal involutionary process, and that its underlying laws and phenonrona are essentially identical with tose of the minor involutions of the growth period of the organism. Minor involutions affect single specialized structures of temporary function which are to be removed as useless. The major involution, senescence, affects all of the vital organs and functions and for the purpose of getting rid of the organism, itself, as a whole. The individual human machine has fulfilled its function, and, now useless, stands in the way of the progressive evolution of the species. It is but logical to conclude that when the carrier of the immortal germ plasm has arrived at maturity and continued at that stage long enough to have secured its survival in progeny, he, himself, is then in the way of evolution. Biologically useless, he disappears from the scene by the gradual fading - away process of senescence. The old saying that "When the reproductive capacity has ceased, then the man is as good as dead "; is based upon an absolute foundation fact. We live but to create new models of later design than our own, which can help along the great process of evolution.

Fortunately, the cerebral functions have not yet completed their possiblities of development at the beginning of senescence, and these may continute an ascending curve for perhpas twenty or more years after the first sign of senescence, until senility is well established. Normally this should be the period of full ripeness. Certain functions particularly the sexual, assert themselves with less urgency, more comfortably. It is normally the settled age.

If we should judge the course of the reproductive function by the fertility of the human race, we should find t that it's peak is reached in the third decade of life. There are so many other factors determining the production of children during this period, that fertility and reproductive capacity do not necessarily produce parallel curves. It is much more probable that the peak of capacity falls rather in the later part of the fourth decade. After this there is a very rapid decline in reproductive capacity for both sexes, earlier and more rapidly in the female, so that between forty-five and fity years she usually looses completely her function of reproduction. The same climacteric for the male is usually placed about ten years later. It has been generally assumed that active spermatogenesis in man persists usually into the sixties and in some men until a much later period.[v] It would seem probable that virility prolonged into the period of established senility has something of the pathologic about it. Many men over fity years of age, priding themselves on the preservation of their virility, find that they are unable to produce offspring in marriage with younger women.

We can say reasonably that the peak of life coincides with the peak of the reproductive capacity (spermatogenesis). Coincident with the retrogression of sperm-cell production go other evidences of a progressive loss of energy, chronic and progressive fatigue, lack of aggressiveness, disillusionment, mental and spiritual depression, and a gradual lowering of all activities, mark this decline in varying degrees. It is probable that some of the reactions of this period are due to overconsciousness and a secretely troubled mind over slight alterations in his sexual reactions.

In fact a certain degree of sexual neurasthenia is found in many, if not in the majority, of men about the age of fifty.

Hundreds of involutionary changes could be enumerated and described but suffice it to merely mention a few of the more important ones. The bones become more brittle; the joints limited in their range of motion; deposits of lime salts begin to appear in cartilages, blood vessels and various other places; the permanent teeth are usually lost; there is a decided loss in acuteness of hearing; the digestive function is frequently below normal; presbyopia appears at about forty-five years and increases up to the sixteth year, making glasses necessary for near work; there is a decreased pulse rate, hardening of the arteries and increased blood pressure; the urinary functions are usually much disturbed and frequently very annoying. To sum up all of the functional evidences of the major involution, and group them in the order of their appearance and importance, it is interesting to note that the first signs of age presented by the average male are: presbyopia, sexual nensthenia, and chronic fatigue. This triad of symptoms may be taken as marking the advent of senescence, and usually appears five or ten years in advance of the other functional changes of senescence. "Taking to golf" is said to be a definite characteristic of this period.

Between the sixty-fifth and the seventy-sixth years the processess of the major involution have become so evident that the fully developed picture of Old Age is presented. That picture is known to everyone and may not be so pleasant to contemplate. It may lead ultimately to the fully developed stage of second childhood and senile dementia. All who live

sufficiently long must inevitably come to this more or less marked degree of senile imbecility or exaggerated second childhood.

The tremenduous importance of the declining sexual function and the way in which this is met by the senescent male who has had an active sexual life, cannot be over emphasized. Much of the abnormal psychologic manifestations attending senescence and senility have their well-spring in the maladjustment of the individual to his declining virility. On the other hand, the average senescent female meets the loss of sexual function on her part with equanimity, even with relief, and turns to new activities with zest and pleasure, so that the early years of senescence are often for her a period of revivification.

When the involution of the organism has reached such a degree of functional lowering that any one of the vital functions cannot carry on, then normal or biologic death takes place, and the career of the individual human being is closed. Such a biologic or normal death is rarely achieved by man. He usually succumbs to influences of the environment, that is accident or disease, or dies prematurely because of inherent pathologic defects in his organism.

The cause of biologic intrinsic death is intrinsic within the cell and is an inherited character, fixed for the given species in the given period of evolutionary development.

Theoretically, this biologic age limit is about one hundred years but most people die younger by twenty or thirty years. So the popular mind has grasped the Psalmists three score and ten as the ideal term of human life. Only a small per cent of those born alive can hope to attain this age.

85

Only four to eight per cent pass the sixtieth year. Two to four per cent attain the age of eighty years.

Atophy of the individual cells of the organism is invariably associated with intrinsic death. As to the nature of this atrophy it can only be said that it is the morphologic expression of the reduced energy process of the cell. Atrophy and reduced energy go constantly hand in hand. Atrophy is the visible result of the exhausted cell - Myocardial atrophy and inadequacy is the most probably natural terminal lesion. The purely senile death then should be a cardiac death.

Most human beings die a pathologic death. The cause may be extrinsic or intrinsic. If, intrinsic it is inherent in the germ plasm and manifest itself in the form of inherited disease, or as a mutation. Their prevention then becomes wholly a genetic problem: they can be prevented only by a breeding-out process, Arteriosclerosis and cancer are examples of such intrinsic diseases found deeply rooted in certain families.

Extension of the life limit in man is so strongly desired by the average individual that he is easily carried away by the proponents of any new movement like periodic health examinations. It is true that the average longevity in America has been raised from thirty-five years in 1880 to forty-two years in 1910; and to fifty-four years in 1920; but this does not warrant the prpphecies that the average longevity will be raised to sixty-five years in 1930, and to seventy-five, eighty and still higher life averages in future decades. The increase already attained has been due to the saving of life through the prevention of extrinsic pathologic death, in the earlier decades of life. But there has been no extension of the biologic life

86

limit. Improved hygenic conditions, health examinations, etc., have not increased the number of survivors after the age of ninety and perhaps can never do so. There is a danger, in the next evolutionary phase, that there may be a shortening of the biologic limit of life as we are saving increasing numbers of the unfit in the middle decades.

With regard to rejuvination by the transplantation of testicular gland or ligature of the vas deferens of the testis, an immense mass of literature has accumulated with results so contradictory that positive statements can hardly be made at the present time. However, if anything does result from these proceedures it is nothing more than a re-erotization, associated with certain evidences of increased energy of the general metabolism. There is no evidence that the transplanted glad produces any secretion by living cells; what effects are produced are the results of resorption processes. The most recent workers agree that this operation, aside from the psychical influence on the patient, is without any specific effect, either on sexual life or on the process of senescence. In the very nature of things the whole proceedure is an absurdity. Anyway what advantage would be gained for the individual or for the race by increasing the number of human dependents in the period of their second childhood.

But if age is inevitable, what shall be done about it? Meet it, of course, with courage and common sense; moreover, the possibilities of old age are great; it is the period of ripeness of experience and observation. The compensations of the seventh and eighth decades are many because of the longer pre-

servation of the spiritual and mental functions over the other functions. Happy indeed, is the man who comes into senescence with capacity for mental pleasures and with a variety of hobbies., diversity of interests keeps the mind young. Of all the avocations that of gardening is the best adapted to the needs of the aged individual. Happy is the senescent who can approach his inevitable end with a normal rate of involution, still capable of intellectual pleasures, and the mature contemplation thereof, to meet a speedy release before the unhappy days of second childhood are upon him.

"Whatever is natural must be accounted good. When death comes to youth, nature is up in arms and revolts. Yet to old men what is more natural than dying." (Cicero)

"The days of our years are three-score years and ten: and if by reason of strength they be four score years, yet is their strength labor and sorrow: for it is soon out off, and we flay away". (Psalms 90, verse 10)

Fred E. Brengle 88

12/10/34

Paper #11

## Crime in Colonial Massachusetts

To even think of the Pilgrims and Puritans who settled Massachusetts as having criminal tendencies is bad enough, but actually discover that they committed no little crime probably will be startling, to say the least, to some people.

They began their career of law violation before they left England. There were laws in England against the holding of religious services other than those of the Church of England, but both Puritans and Pilgrims held such services despite the laws. There was also a law against people taking goods out of England without permission. This the Pilgrims transgressed when they made their clandestine attempt to reach Holland. They were caught in the act however, some of them were imprisoned but all eventually freed and sent home.[1]

As the colony grew other offenses were committed. The charter specified that the Governor was to be elected by the freemen but instead those in authority placed this function in the hands of a small group called Assistants. The charter was further violated by limiting the franchise to church members instead of extending it to all freemen. They also coined money, persecuted non-Puritans, imprisoned and otherwise put themselves outside the pale of the law.

But there are certain compensating circumstances. There are times and conditions in the lives of men when to flaunt the law is the only honorable thing to do. Further, not all the law-breakers in Massachusetts were of the Pilgrim and Puritan faiths. Of the passengers of the Mayflower, 102 in number, says James Truslow Adams,

"...ly about one-third of the company were of the Leyden people. ... other sixty-seven were evidently a very mixed lot, comprising ...irable characters, as well as some excellent ones."[2] As for ... Puritans he says that ". . . approximately, not more than ... five of the adult males who went even to Massachusetts was ...fficiently in sympathy with the religious ideas then prevalent ... become a church member, though disfranchised for not doing ..."[5] Much of the crime, then, was probably committed ... non-Puritans and non-Pilgrims.

The latter two groups, however, can undoubtedly be held responsible for much of the crime which they themselves did not ...mit. Their harsh and strict theology, and their suppression ... amusements simply challenged people to do their worst. The ...dom afforded by frontier conditions was also no doubt a factor.

Contemporary authorities admitted that morality had sunk to a ... ebb and had their explanations for it. William Bradford, Governor of Plymouth Plantation from 1621 to 1657, had this to say ... it, "Marvelous it may be to see and consider how some kind ... wickedness did grow and breake forth here, in a land where the ... was so much witnessed against, and so narrowly looked unto, ... severely punished when it was known; as in no place more, or ... much, that I have known or heard of . . . especially drunkennes ... uncleanes; not only incontinencie between persons unmaried ... but some maried persons allso . . . . One reason may ... that the Divell may carrie a greater spite against the Churches ... Christ and the gospel here, by how much the more they endeavr ... preserve holynes and purities amongst them . . . that he might ... blemishe and staine upon them in the eyes of [the] world."[4]

...her reasons, he pointed out, were because of the very restraint ...d upon people by the strictness of the New-England code; ". . . the country became pestered with unworthy persons" loaded ... vessels by ship captains who wanted to make up their cargoes; ...perhaps it was more a matter of appearances than reality. "They are here more discovered, and seen," he said, "and made pub- ... by due search, inquisition, and due punishment."[5] "And thus, ... means or other, in 20 years time, it is a question whether ... greater part be not grown the worser."[6]

Factors not mentioned by contemporaries, so far as I know, ...hich probably played their part, were what appears to be a ...id and erotic curiosity about sex on the part of the old Puri- ...ns, and their supersensitive awareness of sin of any kind.

The Charter of "The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay ...New England," granted March 4, 1628-9, provided for the Annual ...ction from among the freemen of the Company, A Governor, a ...y-Governor and eighteen assistants. Among other duties they ... constitute a court known as the Four Great and General ..., to convene quarterly. With the increase of population ...rts became necessary. Consequently, the General Court, ...session held March 3, 1635-6, passed a law providing for ...er-Courts to be held in four different parts of the Colony,—[7] ...ich, Salem, New Town and Boston.

"Every of their courts shall be kept by such magistrates as ... dwelling in or near the said towns, and by such other per- ... of worth as shall from time to time be appointed by the General ..., so as no Court shall be kept without one magistrate at the ...

...ast, and that none of the magistrates be excluded, who can and ... 'intend' the same; yet the General Court shall appoint which ... the Magistrates shall specially belong to every of the said ...urt. Such persons as shall be joined as associates to the ...gistrates in the said Court shall be chosen by the General Court, ... greater number of such as the several towns shall nominate ... them, so as there may be in every of the said Courts so many as (with the magistrates) may make five in all. This Court shall try ... civil causes, whereof the debt or damage shall not exceed 10 ..., and all criminal causes, not concerning life, member or ...bsolvent."[8] This law further gives the right of appeal, under ... conditions, from these inferior Courts to the "next Great ...r Court" at Boston. The inferior Courts were to be held ...th, the last Tuesday in June, and the rest the last Tuesday ... every of the said months,"[9] April, September, December and ...ch.

... the further increase in population more frequent sessions ... Courts became necessary, and on June 2, 1641, the General ... ordered, "that there shall be four quarter Courts kept yearly ... magistrates of Ipswich and Salem . . . the first court to ... the last third day of the seventh month at Ipswich, (and ... at the same time the former Courts were), the next quarter ..., the 3rd quarter at Ipswich, the 4th at Salem, and the ... of Ipswich and Salem to attend every of these Courts . . . . . The fines of these Courts to defray the charges of ..., and the overplus to be returned to the Treasurer for ...blic."[10]

These Courts were to be presided over by the magistrates of
[illegible]ms, by assistants of the magistrates, and by associates,
[illegible]nted by the General Court on nomination of the freemen of the
[illegible], "to be joined as associates in commission with the assistants." 11
[illegible] were to be five magistrates and associates in each Court,
[illegible]quired to constitute a quorum, one at least being a magistrate. 12
These County or Inferior Quarterly Courts had jurisdiction in
[illegible] civil and criminal cases except those of divorce and crimes in-
[illegible]ing life, member, and banishment. They had power to summon
[illegible] and petit jurors, to select their own clerks and other officers,
[illegible]lay out highways, to license ordinaries, to see that a proper
[illegible]istry was supported, to prove wills, grant administrations, and
[illegible] general control of matters in probate. 13 They appointed
[illegible]tees of small legacies, a master of the house of correction,
[illegible]rs of money, and viewers of fish. They confirmed the nomi-
[illegible]n of military officers, apportioned charges for the repair
[illegible]ridges; they licensed innkeepers, and packers of sturgeon,
[illegible]unished violation of licenses; they looked after keeping the
[illegible]ys cleared, punished idle persons, punished overcrowding,
[illegible]led return of excess charges by merchants, looked after the
[illegible], and settled wage disputes; they investigated heretical
[illegible]ines, and punished heretics, and looked after the Christianiz-
[illegible]civilizing of the Indians. 14 In this enumeration of the
[illegible] phases of the Court's jurisdiction--and there are many there
[illegible]ned--it is clear that the Court dealt with practically
[illegible] issue that came into the lives of the people of the County,
[illegible]l, criminal and religious.

...o avoid unnecessary expense, County Courts were empowered to ...nt three men on request or approval to try cases involving not ... 40s. The select-men were to act as judges in case a commissioner should be a party in a cause. In case a trial came up ... parties of different towns the plaintiff could select the ... wherein he wished the trial to be held, otherwise commissioners ... limited to the jurisdiction of their own town. In case ...ilure of commissioners to enforce penalty the custom permitted ... County Court. Appeals could be made from all lesser magis-
15
...s commissioners to the County Courts.

The commissioner's oath was as follows: "You do here take God ... and do swear by his name that in all causes or controversies that shall come before you you will in God's fear use your ...kill and ability diligently to search out and rightly to judge ... partiality between causes the causes and party according to the testimony and evidences that is brot before you. So
16
... God." The constable took similar oath to perform faithfully his duties of his office--preserve the peace, make arrests, ... all papers delivered to him--during the year that he ... . "You will on favor to find out and present all disorders ...on victualling houses and all offence of drunkenness and you ... that true weights and measures be kept in use by all
17
... your town, so help you God."

...ccording to the terms of the Charter the Inferior Court ... to make the laws. This Court met for the first time ... 16, 1636, and there were only eight members of the company ... The Deputies Assistants, of whom there were to be eight ... the Charter, ... the Assistants elected ... Governor ...

[illegible] themselves. The Assistants then became the law making body. [illegible], the whole body of freemen met and declared that the General Court alone had power to make the laws. The General Court [illegible] was made up of the Assistants and the deputies of the [illegible], two from each town, elected by the freemen.

In 1636, the question of preparing written laws came up. Comparatively few laws had been passed by the Legislative body and the [illegible] had been instructed to reach decisions as far as they could [illegible] to the existing law, but where there was no law to cover [illegible] they were to decide "as near the law of God as they could." [illegible], under these conditions, came to exercise such wide discretion that the people came to desire a body of written laws. A Body of Liberties was consequently drawn up in 1641, modeled after the Mosaic Code--a combination of the existing laws of the Colony, the laws of England, and the "laws of God." Yet even this attempted [illegible] such discretionary power to the judge. Many of the old laws were abolished, and penalties were made comparatively light. [illegible] against unnatural children and faithless parents [illegible]. Until 1641 the laws did not permit imprisonment for debt, [illegible] the debtor had property which he refused to produce. [illegible] penalty was to be inflicted only for twelve offenses, namely, adultery, man-stealing, false witness, witchcraft, blasphemy, "false witness willingly to take away any man's life." [illegible] first session of the Essex County Court was held June 7, [illegible] Salem. Captain John Endicott, Esq., Capt. Nath. Turner, [illegible] Bishopp, and Mr. Tho. Jeruys were present at the [illegible] were sworn to faithfulness. Fines were ordered [illegible] great bible and one of the fourteen [illegible] books.

...t, a ruling was made in regard to ~~causes~~ canoes, and three civil cases ... brought before the court. A complete record of the second session ... 21 Salem follows:

...lem, 27; 7; 1636.

... Sent; Cp. Jno. Endicott, Esq., Cp. Nath. Turner, Mr. Townshend ...lthorp, and Mr. Tho. Scruggs. Tho. Standley fined 1Cs. for absence ... court; corn in Mr. Wm. Wood's hands to be attached. Canoes ~~Causes~~ ... to be marked on day to be appointed. William James and his ... Elizabeth held in 40 li. to appear at next court in Boston ... answer for confessed uncleanness.

...lliam Dixie paid 3s. fine for taking 3s. per day. James Smith ... 10s., John Stone and Jno. Sibley fined 3s. each for taking ...ceive wages.

... Brooke fined 10s. "for being overseen in drink;" fine ... by his master, who is to b satisfied by Brooke working out ...ime.

... Adams whipped for running away from his master Thorndike.

... Thomas Scruggs fined 5s. for a pound breach.

...: Jno. Blackleech, foreman, Charles Gott, Phillip Virrin, ... Gardiner, Lawrence Leech, Jeffery Mousie, Thomas Smith, ... Graves, Robt. Driver, Sarg. Walker, Robt. Bottfish, and ... Goldham.

... Cases:--

... Gotta v. Sargt. Dixie. Assault.

... Gotta v. Jn. Jeggle. Assault & Battery.

... Gallows v. James Smith. Trespass.

... Mousle v. Ben Felton.

... Weston v. Richd. Hutchens. Debt.

. . Stone v. Ricr. Hollinworth. Mr. Peters mentioned. John
Horne and Samuell Archer by the procurement of Richr. Hollinworth
. . w the trees he felled within six days.
. . Hor v. James Smith.

The County Court was authorized in 1664 to make freemen.
. . first this power was limited to the jurisdiction of the General
. . t, but it soon came to be so far away from the various towns
. . the power was conferred upon the County Courts. Freemen
. . li ited to churchmembers. "It was . . . ordered and agreed
. . for time to come no man shall be admitted to the freedom of
. . body politic, but such as are members of some of the churches
. . the limits of the same."[22] The oath administered solemnly
. . the individual to help maintain and support the government
. . which he lived and to exercise the franchise without fear or
favor but according to the direction of his own conscience.[23]
. . first freemen were made by the Essex County Court, October 27,
. . L, when nine men took the oath.[24]

In 1685 the magistrates of each County Court were authorized
. . as a Court of Chancery.[25] "And if there fall out to be
. . atter of apparent equity, the judges shall determine such
. . of equity."[26]

Both trial and grand-juries were fashioned after the modern
. . .[27] According to the order of 1641, no juryman was to be
. . ed" from one town to the other, and to each of the towns a
jury was to be "warned" once a year.[28] The petty jury was
. . for only one term of court. The jury was to find the fact
. . Court to declare the law or direct "the jury to find
. . the law."[29] The venire for the drawing of jurors

much simpler in form than it is now. The constables were
fied by the Clerk of the Court to see that the required number
jurors came from each of the towns in the Court's jurisdiction.
The constable then notified the freemen of each town to elect
their quota, and their returns were endorsed on the venire naming
30
the selected.

A "Clerk of the Writs" was chosen by each town and approved
by the County Court. It was his duty to issue summons for wit-
31
nesses, grant summons and attachments, and take bonds. Bonds
were frequently given in the form of produce; corn in the early
history of the County, later, lumber and iron. Husbands often
gave security for the appearance of their wives in court;
thus, Tornish bound for the appearance of his wife Mary at next
32
Salisbury Court." It seems that bonds were never very large
or frequently forfeited.

There were many cases of trespass, due largely, no doubt,
to the land system and the insecurity of fencing. The basis of
the system was common fields, fences, and herds, along with
individual cultivation. Individual allotments in the common fields
were not fenced off thus making trespass very easy.
The common fields were kept closed from early spring until the
crops had been gathered, after which the herds were turned
out. In the records of the Court session held in Salem, November
5th, 1639, is this entry, "Wm. Ivorie and Daniel King presented for
33
their cattle in the several field before harvest." Herdsmen
were hired in most places, but many individuals would refuse to
keep their quota, or would attempt to herd their own stock and
34
cause considerable trouble. May 2, 1631, the General

ordered that in case one man's cattle trespassed upon the
field of another, the owner of the cattle should thoroly idem-
fy the other party. In case of pigs, the pigs were to be
[35] to the public to be used in making good the damage.
1657 a law was enacted compelling the owner of cattle and hogs
to make good all damages resulting from trespass on the common
[36] before all the crops were harvested. It was later (1662)
ordered that in case of poor fences the owner of the land should
pay the damage if the cattle and hogs were thereby yoked and
[37]. Otherwise the owner of the stock should pay.

Every town was required to build and maintain a pound into
which strey and trespassing stock would be placed. Towns failing
to provide the pound were brot before the court: "Exeter, being
fined for want of a house of entertainment, a watchhouse,
[38] and . . . ." And later, "Town of Exeter fined for
[39] the common pound." The first poundage case came before
the court, October 27, 1636; "Josua Folgrime ordered to appear
[40] and breeches." And later Geo. Harris was fined 5s. "for
[41] the pound 6c of swine."

The Court of Assistants, April 12, 1631, ordered that all
[42] the companies should train every Saturday. November 20,
the year the court decreed "that trainings should be kept
[43] this year." On October 1, 1673, a law was passed establishing
punishment for soldiers absenting themselves from training
[44] within two days they gave a satisfactory excuse. November
1, 1675, the magistrates were given power to excuse persons from
[45] the payment of certain fees to be used by the company.
Men released from training because of age, disability,
etc.; "Thomas Browning discharged from training, paying 10s a

t the company."[46] The payment did not have to be in money
following entry shows: "Richard Window released from or-
training, paying a bushel of corn per annum to the use of
pany."[47]

April 12, 1631, the Court of Assistants at Boston ordered
"a watch of four" should be kept every night at Dorchester
Watertown.[48] May 14, 1634, the General Court ordered "a
f two every night to be kept in every plantation."[49] A
law was passed May 6, 1646, establishing punishment for
failing to keep the watch when called upon, unless exempted
or unless they provided for some one to take their place.[50]
ually some one would refuse to serve his turn at watch and
brot before the Court; "William Thorns presented for re-
to watch in the military watch,"[51] or, in a little different
r, "John Pickeringe fined for neglect of watching, 3 ins home
d."[52]

The body of the community was made up of the laborers. Many
settlers were paupers, and lived in extremely poor circum-
s. They usually lived in wretched hovels grouped together
groups were given such names as "Purgatory," "Hell-
," etc. Many of them had voluntarily bound themselves to
some master for a period of years to defray transpor-
expenses. They were vicious, shiftless, worthless and evildly
ta.[53] This element was quite prominent before the court
ness and running away. A good many laws were passed
the servants. By act of Sept. 28, 1630, it was ordered
rvant could give or sell "any commodity or truck whatsoever,"

...ut license from his master, under penalty of fine and im-
...ment.[54] April 1, 1634, a law was enacted empowering the
...ble to whip runaway servants and send them home.[55] Serv-
...re forced to serve out their time by law, except under
...in conditions, and laws were passed looking toward the cap-
...al return of all runaway servants.[56] The County Court
...ds contain many interesting entries pertaining to servants
...as the following: "Wm. Dodge's boy whipped for running away
...his master several times."[57] Women were servants as well as
...nd were given the same sort of punishment; "Peter Palfrey's
... Jane Wheat whipped for killing his neighbor's poultry,
...lying and loitering and running away from her master."[58]
... seems to have had about four counts to her credit. The
...owing case would lead one to believe that the system of
...ide was at times carried over into that of slavery, "John
..., servant to Henry Walton, severly whipped for lying, steal-
..., disgraceful behavior toward his master, and absenting him-
...f from his service. Fined 30 li., which, if he cannot satisfy
...price, his master 'hath power to sell him.'"[59]

Judging by the constable's oath drunkenness must have been
...f the very common evils with which the authorities had to
...l. This is further substantiated by the Court Records.
...first drinks were beer, brewed from barley malt, and cider.
...ladies used them "from the clergy to the pauper." Rum,
...r the molasses imported from the West Indies was intro-
...ut the colony in the latter half of the seventeenth century.
...illness, also a cardinal sin with the Massachusetts settlers,
...ally accompanied drunkenness, and the laws of the General Court

...ling to one usually included the other. Many of the laws
... ing to drunkenness were included in the regulations relative
... licensing of liquor dealers. The General Court in session
... 1, 1637, ordered "that no person shall sell either wine or
... ng water without leave from the Governor or Deputy-Governor."[61]
... 3, 1634, the court fixed the price of beer to be charged by
... ers, and prohibited their selling tobacco.[62] The Court
... Nov. 2, 1637, "that no ordinary keeper shall sell either
... strong water."[63] This restriction was later much modified.
... 6, 1638, innkeepers were given permission to brew their own
... .[64] The General Court, in 1639, gave towns liberty to choose
... to sell wine upon obtaining license from the proper court,
... any one should become drunk in his house he should "pay
... ry such offence 5 pounds."[65] These conditions were also
... ified reducing the fine of the master of the house to 5s. and
... drunkard various fines depending upon the degree of his
... e. For example, he was fined so much for sitting drunk and
... the same place for half an hour, and so much for "excessive
... ng." "Excessive drinking" was defined to be the "drinking
... than three half a pint of wine is allowed at one time to
... a to drink."[66] Oct. 17, 1649, the General Court ordered
... ers of inns or ordinaries to always have a plentiful supply
... beer on hands for strangers, or suffer fine for the first
..., or for the second offence, forfeiture of license.
... ther this was a move in the direction of temperance or not is
... difficult to determine! Anyhow, by 1648, the Court began
... that their laws had helped the cause of temperance but little,
... tended to make a number of rules and regulations ...ly

...ibiting the sale and further use of intoxicating beverages.[68]
...ber, 1647, the power to grant licenses for the sale of wine and
...s given to the County Courts by the General Court.[69] The
...unty Court Records contain many entries pertaining to the liquor
...ction; "Roger Denhurst fined for excess of drinking. He was
...presented for being disguised in drink."[70] Christopher Yonge
...three presentments against him for abusing the watch. "We
...hear a laughing noise at Mr. Pester's and saw some light and
...asked why they did not go to bed, etc. Pester faltered
...speech and smelled of drink."[71] "George Dill fined 40s.
...drunkenness, and to stand at the meeting house door next lecture
..., with a cleft stick upon his tongue, and a paper upon his hat
...ibed for gross premeditated lying."[72] "Mr. Obadiah Brewer
...Gloucester licensed to draw wine."[73] "Robt. Beachan fined 5s.
...selling wine without license."[74] The Court granted many
...and renewals. The session of March 6, 1675, renewed
...licenses.[75] The liquor business must have been good despite
...restrictions.

The Massachusetts people seem to have had a greater horror
...eco than of liquor. An order of October 3, 1634, pro-
...and established a penalty against the public use of to-
...[76] In fact they passed an order in 1634 prohibiting the
...bacco on the part of individuals, either publicly or
...ly.[77] In 1646, it was ordered that a man should take to-
...within five miles of any house, because of danger from fire,[78]
...that dist new he was warned against firing the woods.
The Records read; "Richard Lambert fined 10s. for smoking a pipe
...openly in the street."[79] The instructions from England

.. he Government in Massachusetts prohibited the planting of
30
..

Simplicity of dress was a cardinal virtue with the Puritans ... with increased prosperity frail human desire for finery and ... ...ls, as well as a surprisingly inordinate vanity, prevailed ... Puritanical simplicity. Confronted with this situation ... ...ers and magistrates interested themselves in the passage of ... sumptuary laws.

... John Winthrop, Governor of Massachusetts Bay off and on ... 1629 to 1649, put it in 1639: "The court, taking into con- ... in the great disorder general through the country in ... ...ches of apparel, and following new fashions, sent for the ... of the churches, and conferred with the ...about it, and ... upon them, as belonging to them, to redress it, by urging ... the consciences of their people, which they promised to do. ... little was done about it; for divers of the elders' wives, etc., also
... were measure partners in this general disorder."

...pt. 3, 1634, the General Court forbade the making or buy- ... "any apparel, either woolen, silk, or linen, with any lace ..., silver, gold, silk, or thread, under penalty of forfeiture ... clothes," because of superfluity, indecency, and extrava- ...
... Nicholas Denton and his wife Esther, wife of Joseph ..., Jr., John Gerain and John Parker, of Lynn, were all fined ... silver lace. It seems that if one could prove ... financially able to afford a little luxury now and ... allowed to do so by the Court. The General Court, in ... praised its "utter detestation and dislike that men or ... condition, above their callings should take upon

...the garbe of gentlemen by the wearing of gold or silver lace ... or poynts at their knees, to walke in great boots, or ... of the same rank to weur silke or tiffany hoodes or scarfes." ... hundred pounds seem to have marked the dividing line. "Wife ... Nicols Noice, presented for wearing a silk hood, was dis-... d, her husband being worth two hundred pounds." "Wife of ... Chandlour fined 10s. for wearing a silk hood." Evidently ... couldn't afford a silk hood so the court would place an ... burd n upon him for his extravagance. Rank, position ... iety, seems also to have had its redeeming qualities. ... of John Hutchings, presented for wearing a silk hood, was ... d upon testimony of her being brought up to the ordinary ..." Mrs. Hutchings, no doubt, was of finer stuff and she ... silk to harmonize with her delicate nature. She can ... ubbing the other ladies whose husbands had not pay fines. ... wouldn't prevent the ladies, who couldn't afford them, ... ing silk hoods just like Mrs. Hutchings'. A further act ... in 1639 which ordered "that hereafter no woman shall ... with short sleeves, whereby the nakedness of the arm may ... ed in the wearing thereof." Here we get a hint of in- ... the Puritanic nature of the people. The court found ... of clothes regulations were in the charges, while ... were tried before the Court.

...ation between men and women to have been extremely ... by the number and kinds of cases that came before ... Extremely strict laws were passed pertaining to this ... "Presentments" in this early period were ... different. They were made up in the different towns of

...urt's jurisdiction and signed by the grand-jurymen. April ..., two men, Joseph Flood and Jarrate Spencer, make the ... presentment: "We present Ould Churchman for living ... eight years without his wife and for having the wife of ... kept locked with him alone in his house." Ould Churchman [87] ...ld! The cases of men living apart from their wives became ...rous and menacing to the social order that the General Court ...ally took action. In 1647, an act was passed compelling men to ... to England who had come to the colony without their families, unless they were making arrangements to have their families over [88]. In 1652, Thomas Ward was "presented for living lose and ... life in England, was ordered to go to her." [89] Many such orders ... by the County Court. Evidently many of the men did not ... the order for later the Court decreed: "Executions to be ... the Marshall for the fines of those men who have not gone ... their wives." [90] The session of Oct. 27, 1657, alone re- ...ur cases of wife beating and six cases of beating and wife ... [91] ...port. Guido Fally was ordered whipped for beating his wife. ... it would appear to be a greater crime for a man to beat ... his master than for a man to beat his wife, judging from ... the punishments in the two cases. We believe that ... many married people were not all reconciled. For Fallie's ... Dorothy was presented "for frequent layeing hands ... her husband ... her life, and extending the authority of the ..., ... post, being allowed to exercise the place of God's ... until she repents.'" [92] Three months later Dorothy was ... [93] ...ed to beat her husband. Young people were ... by law from ... letting marriage ... the

[illegible] of parents or friends. The peculiar punishments of the [illegible] visited upon the young man who "inveigled the affections [illegible] maide or maide servant without such consent." "Thomas Willus [illegible] fined 5 pounds for making love to Mary Smith and seeking to [illegible] her without consent of her friends."[95] The situation becomes [illegible] at times as, for instance, "Micr. Graves fined or be [illegible] for kissing of, and ungeenly carriage to Goody Kent, William [illegible] supposed that 'he heard Ric Graves kissed Goody Kent twice.'[96] [illegible] said it, and that he 'spoke foolish and base words.'" Or, [illegible]. Becker betrothed himself to [illegible] securely to one maiden, and then [illegible] stood with another woman. To be severely whipped, and to pay [illegible] fine, who subsequently married the first maiden, 5 [illegible]."[97] A case of more serious nature; "Elizabeth Osgood to be [illegible]ly whipped thirty stripes for fornication. Her father, Mr. [illegible], and for her appearance. Parmahas Laws bound to support [illegible]ild of Elizabeth Osgood, if [illegible] other father appeared, and [illegible] his estate as security. Also to be whipped twenty-five [illegible] for fornication."[98] One wonders why Parmalus was given [illegible] stripes than Elizabeth. The woman, on the whole, was [illegible] severely than man in the records that her transgressions [illegible] transmitted to her children.

[illegible] seems likely that there was a organized crime [illegible] broke out here and there merely on the part of individ- [illegible] of these individuals were quite disreputable, however, [illegible][99] for the court says it [illegible]. Richa Iver was presented at [illegible] time of slander, stealing, and [illegible]. Mr. Becker, [illegible] accused of abusing the watch and drinking, his father [illegible] brought against him, and accuses others of such the same

...he had committed, no doubt with the idea of evening things
101
... Nimeduke Burton ran away from his master and filed the
... end of his foot, ran away again and "pilfered" some houses,
... examined about some salt, and whipped and fined for receiving
... silver. He was finally sent up to the General Court at
... where he was "condemned to slavery, and to be branded, and
... remain in slavery till the court take further order about him."
102
... Mrs Fenion was before the Court twenty-two different times.
... time he was presented for beating his wife. Eight months
... he was accused by his wife "for killing five children."
...ly his wife's accusation was false, in spite of the fact that
... two witnesses, for he seems to have been still running
103
... last recorded before the Court. Mary Oliver was be-
... Court in 1639 "for her speeches at the arrival of the
..." sentenced to prison in Boston, 1647, [illegible]
... and "abusing Capt. Hathorne;" in 1648, presented
... her husband, in 1649, for at [illegible], for
... against the Governor, and, in the same year, ordered out
... community within three weeks. Here the County Court seems
... it upon itself to banish an individual. Lidia Hanna,
... considered a perfectly exemplary young lady who
... by, "was admonished for sitting [illegible] night . . . and
... bid and the fellow at eight o'clock at night without
104
... or mistress's consent."

... were dealt with by the Court much as it dealt with in-
... They were presented and unlike [illegible]. The
... Dec. 1641, fined ten shillings or Marblehead 10s. "for
... in 3 weeks." Later in the same month the [illegible]

ley, Salisbury, and Hampton were "presented" by grandjurymen
105
for not keeping their high ways mended. "Town of Ipswich pre-
106
sented for not training eight times in 1642."

The Court in session, January 30, 1641, ordered Gershom Bulkley
to call a general town meeting the second day of the week to see
107
about a free school." The General Court, Nov. 11, 1647, or-
dered that every township, on reaching a population of 50 house-
holders, should appoint a teacher for their children, and that
when the town had reached 100 families they should set up a gram-
108
mar school. Towns violating these laws were fined.

The clergy claimed the support of the civil power in enforcing
these laws were guarding the churches during services from
noise on the streets on the Sabbath, blasphemy and capital
crimes. By act of 1646, church attendance was made compulsory
109
under fine of 5s. imposed for violations. The General Court
110
passed laws regulating the establishment of churches. All
inhabitants of the towns were compelled by law to support both
ministers and to be financially or lay themselves open to "assess-
111
ments or distress to be levied by the constable." The minister's
salary and up expenditures for church repair were ordered annually
112
by freemen in town-meeting assembled.

At the session of the Court of Assistants, Oct. 17, 1644, Lady
Deborah Moody was presented for not believing in infant baptism.
She was, however, acquitted "the matter in question
113
being only about the elders." According to the first Records
of Boston, she had put a lot of opposition. Roger Scott's
"wife and son sleeping at public assemblies on Lord's day,
114
and Mr. Gould was presented
for not having his children baptized."

[illegible] in the stocks an hour and be severely whipped next lecture

[illegible] for "reproachful and unseenly speeches against the rule of
church."[115] John Colever was presented "for carrying a burden
Lord's day."[116] Jane Werein was presented "for absence
religious worship."[117] "Nicholas Phelps fined for defending
[illegible]'s writing and sent to the house of correction at Ipswich
[illegible] indefinite time for confessing himself a Quaker."[118] And
[illegible]ust, found guilty of stealing and burglary on the Lord's
[illegible], 'it being his first offense, he was ordered to be branded
[illegible]ehead with a 'B' and have one of his ears cut off."[119]
[illegible]uch of the evidence in all these cases was obtained from
[illegible]nd neighbors. Spying and informing were encouraged by
[illegible]ities. According to the record, "Witnesses in present-
[illegible] absence from public worship ordered [illegible] paid by the
[illegible]ll."[120]

Money fines ranged largely from 5s. to 10 li. Fines were
[illegible]ly assessed according to the culprit's ability to pay and
[illegible] record. In the case of John Kertland v. Mr. Howard,
[illegible] fined only 20s. "since it was his first offence and
[illegible] is not great."[121] They were frequently paid in kind.
[illegible] for the plaintiff in the case of Adm. Brewer v. Thos.
[illegible]n Mr. Alford, was seventeen bushels of corn at 3s. 4d.
[illegible] which might be considered quite a lack of balance [illegible]
[illegible] the administration of justice. Servant Wm. Pole
[illegible] freed to dissolve [illegible] service for his master,
[illegible] Mary, while Philip Deane,[122] having caused "distraction
[illegible]e" in the house of Thomas Hill, was ordered "to keep
[illegible] Hill's house and office."

110

There seems to have been a tendency to condone various
s. Where the offense was more or less common, such as
ng away, the culprit was severely punished, but a man might
is wife and the offense be considered merely a rare lapse
genial current of events, and receive comparatively light
ment. Other methods of punishment [125] were, being chained
st, a cleft stick on the tongue, imprisonment, learn the
ism, lock upon the foot, paper pinned on the hat proclaiming
fence, pillory, stocks, whipping, etc. Even divorce was
ered a punishment rather than a crime, and instead of grant-
if the Court would force it upon a wilful couple. In the case
r. Bacheler and his wife, Mary, the Court decreed that if
y deserted the other, they would be taken before the Court
[126]
Assistants at Boston," to consider a divorce." A common
kind of punishment which prevailed in the first Salem church
the first, was to require the culprit to confess his or her
fore the congregation in church assembled. The records
his entry; "Willia Edmond's wife to confess her sine before
[127]
gregation." This was an extremely trying ordeal as
dy attended church and witnessed the ceremony. In case
made insufficient confession or refused to appear
he was admonished, excommunicated, or otherwise pun-
[128]
ished. Ralph Fogge, who had slandered the church and its
the Governor and the grandjury, and the grandjury, the
, was asked to make the following confession before the
n, "I, Ralph Fogge, do acknowledge that I did very
ly and sinfully in that I did in the face of the congre-
deny that either the church or any particular member

[illegible] make known to me any one particular for the which the
[illegible] proceeded against me the which in saying I did very falsely
[illegible] the Church of Christ and that I did very sinfully in
[illegible] that the Governor had done me wrong and that he was the
[illegible]ry and the Grandjury was him for all which I am very
129
sorry."

The following entries reveal by whom the punishments were
[illegible]ted: March, 1650, "Francis Jordan appointed as the officer
130
[illegible]ate corporal punishment, being allowed 20s. per year,"
[illegible]ter the "Constable of Salem to have two shillings 6d. each
131
[illegible] they whip."

Occasionally cases brought before the Court were turned over
[illegible] individuals to be settled by arbitration. Joseph
[illegible], Thomas Wheeler and Timothy Cooper, all of Lynn, bound
[illegible]s together "to abide by award of Samuell Bennett and
[illegible] Richards as to differences between them. If they cannot
132
[illegible], to refer the matter to Mr. Corwin, as a third man."

The general notion is that the Puritans of Massachusetts
[illegible]nless, crimeless people, but a study of the Court Records
[illegible] that there was enough evil present to keep the
[illegible] Courts pretty busy. There was much [illegible] which
[illegible], but especially was the [illegible] between man and man.
[illegible]. Tell us to have been the crime next to [illegible],
[illegible], fornication ranking second, theft third [illegible],
[illegible]. Only three cases of murder, however, occur in the records
[illegible] 1692 and 1676, and divers whipping [illegible] were
[illegible] duly inflicted. In December, 1638, "Dorothy Talby
[illegible] to be whipped for murdering her own daughter, a child of

...rs old."[133] The year before, "Two men were hanged at ... for several murders." Both men, John Williams and William ..., had criminal records. Schooler "had lived a vicious ..., and now lived like an atheist."[134]

The Court was as sensitive of derogatory remarks as the ... was of slander. It was quite arbitrary in many respects ...ried its discretionary power almost to extremes at times. ...ll Houlden had been examined in court and discharged. Goody ..., "for saying that Houlden suffered wrong by the Court ...ld be vindicated," was ordered to be whipped.[135] In ..., the Court made this ruling, "Those who disturb the Court ...king to be fined 12d."[136] The Court here legislates and ... the amount of the fine.

In all this litigation before the courts nothing is said ... attorneys. Litigants could have said, but, as Channing ..., "The colonists, indeed, disliked the legal fraternity and ...t by enactments to prohibit the payment of fees to legal ...ilitioners."[137]

From the records thus far it is quite evident that there ... connection and cooperation between the church and the ...ental agencies. The duties and jurisdictions of court ...rch were very much intertwined. The church interested ...f very much in the worldly affairs of the people; the Court, ...k in their religious life. Strict rules and severe and ...lating penalities seem not to have checked crime and worldli- ... The saints fought a losing fight. By the end of the first ... most of the laws enumerated above were dead letters.

FCW 1/7/35 113

Paper #13.

WHERE DO WE GO FROM HERE?

No one knows the age of the earth but it must have existed in its present form for many millions of years, and no one knows how long man has inhabited the earth but we know he has been here for many, many thousands of years. Our recorded history extends back nearly ten thousand years but we know man has been here for a much longer period. Every year yields evidence of ancient civilizations and no one knows what future discoveries will reveal. History is a recording of man's development, his relation to his fellow man, political and social and his religion or his relation to his God. We know little of the pre-recorded history of man but we know his life must have been very simple and his contact and relations with his fellow man quite limited. The laws of God, nature and the universe were the same then as today, yet he knew nothing of the radio or the steam engine and his knowledge of electricity was limited to the belief that when his God became angry with him He smote him dead with a mighty bolt of fire out of Heaven. It mattered little to him what his fellow man did with the mighty elements of the universe for his chief concern was to keep peace with his God that he might be spared as long as possible. As he progressed in his development he became more concerned in his relations to his fellow man and less interested in appeasing an angry God.

It is extremely interesting to study the social and political development of man as recorded in his history. Many of his social and political relations appeal to us as most

absurd and we wonder why many of them were as they were. Why were some given so much power, wealth and authority and why was human slavery sanctioned and tolerated so long? We cannot in reason or justice account for these things.

Time and talent will not permit tracing the development of man from his beginning to our present complex civilization. We have developed such a complicated, complex life wherein the problems of the present and the future so overwhelm us that we are inclined to forget the lessons of the past.

Seven score and nineteen years ago our fathers brought forth on this continent a new nation, conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal. We are now engaged in a great economic crisis, testing whether that nation or any nation so conceived and so dedicated can long endure.

We are but one of the many nations who are fighting this world wide depression. We have weathered many panics or depressions but never before have we had one that extended to all the world and that started with an abundance of everything.

When our present political and economic system was established our people had nothing with which to produce but their hands, a few simple tools, their horses and a few oxen. It then required the efforts of every member of the family from twelve to fourteen hours per day to supply all their needs. Since then we have discovered and harnessed steam, electricity and the other elements until now one workman, modernly equipped, will produce more on an average than one hundred did

when our government was established.

Our problem today is, can we make an Eighteenth Century political and economic system function with a Twentieth Century Machine Age? We have not yet successfully done so and we are now engaged in a great struggle testing whether it can be done.

One-half of our able bodied working people, supplied with the most modern equipment, working eight hours per day, can produce sufficient to satisfy the needs of us all. How are we to provide for the other half who are not needed and for whom we have no place in our present industrial system?

The depression is now well into its sixth year and the annual income of our favored few has increased, while our unemployed is increasing at the rate of nearly half a million a year. In 1932 we had but twenty men whose annual income was a million dollars but last year there were forth-six individuals in the United States whose annual income was a million dollars or more and one was in excess of five million dollars, while approximately one-fifth of our people were unemployed or on relief. During this time we spent nearly four billion dollars restricting production and destroying food and clothing, to combat the depression and restore prosperity to our people.

Have we been successful in developing our government, conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal? Are we sure that this government of the people, by the people and for the people, shall not perish

from the earth? Are we yet able to say ours is a rising and not a setting sun? These are the problems that are facing you and me, and every other red blooded American today.

Our government has adopted a definite plan or program known as the New Deal which it is hoped will cope with and solve these difficulties. The federal government through the N.R.A. is attempting to regulate and control industry and business to correct the inequitable and intolerable distribution of the blessings of this Twentieth Century civilization. It can be done if our leaders are large and unselfish enough to do it and it must be done if our government is to survive.

If we judge the future by the past, the outlook is none too bright. History records many civilizations that have gone the cycle, whose people, at our young age, could not have seen the inevitable end of their respective systems. What right have we to assume that ours is the one to survive indefinitely? Does our future look more stable than that of Rome at the beginning of the third or fourth century? Could not that civilization have been saved had the people been willing to pay the price?

The N.R.A. or New Deal has many faults and its directors have made many inexcusable mistakes but it is an effort, a step in the right direction and is the only plan or scheme offered to save our much boasted and cherished rugged individualism or capitalist system. I seriously believe it is that

or outright government ownership.

I believe we have the best form of government ever devised by man but I an convinced it is not perfect, that it can and must be improved if it is to survive. We must preserve its blessings and eliminate its imperfections.

We have a dual form of government. Each state is a sovereign within itself, with all the powers and privileges of sovereignty. Certain of these have been ceded to the federal government. All powers and authority not ceded to the federal government are retained by the respective states. These respective rights and powers are determined by the constitution of the United States, the supreme law of the land. The states have retained the right of local government, the police power and control of industry, except that involved in interstate commerce. Most other powers are ceded to the federal government.

At the time of the adoption of the constitution conditions were very different and many states were extremely reluctant to cede their powers to the federal government, contending that most of the rights of government could and should be exercised by the respective states. This resulted in many compromises and amendments. Conditions of life, industry and government have changed so rapidly in the immediate past that we find it very difficult to adjust our long established customs to this Twentieth Century Machine Age. The conflicts resulting from our dual governments renders our governmental machinery cumbersome, slow and ineffective to cope with and handle the many

new and complex phases of our civilization which could not have been forseen or conceived by our founders.

The N.R.A. is attempting to avoid these difficulties by a cognizant disregard of these constitutional restrictions, on the theory of a justifiable emergency. This might have been well and good, had there been no mistakes, or had the beneifts been so outstanding and universal as to leave no ground for attack. However, humanity is too selfish to expect the privileged few to cede these privileges without a struggle.

Thus we find the stage for the raising of the curtain in 1935 on the climax of this struggle between these conflicting elements, the outcome of which will determine the future of our people.

I believe the purposes of the N.R.A. are good and it is the only workable plan offered to preserve our highly prized rugged individualism but many of its provisions, I think, are in direct conflict with our constitution and will be the subject of much court contention, causing extended delays and obstructions that will hazard the very existence of our government.

We are not afflicted with over-production, nor lack of work for our people. These conditions may come but they are not here and will not be for at least another generation. There is ample work for every able bodied American citizen, if our political and industrial system can be adjusted to develop it to the satisfaction and advantage of a majority of our people.

(Caesar had his Brutus, Rome its Nero and well may the people of the United States profit thereby.)

I have briefly reviewed conditions as I see them and the picture is none too bright. I hesitate to attempt suggestions but yield to that desire to venture where angels fear to tread.

If I were king or dictator of the United States I would change many things. Had I been king there would have been no agricultural or N.R.A. program to restrict production. However, we have that and must start from scratch, as we find conditions on this 7th day of January 1935. If I were king of the United States today, I would reverse the A.A.A. program and pay a bonus to the farmer for every bushel of grain or pound of food he produces, if, and as longas it is necessary, to preserve his industry. I would put every able bodied man and woman in the United States to work, at some constructive work, building electric power plants, flood and drouth control, conservation and development of our resources, and I would not stop until every man, woman and child in the United States could have all necessaries and the luxuries our modern civilization can produce. I would amend the constitution, extending to congress control or concurrent control of industry, whereby every industry would be licensed and supervised by a highly trained government civil service commission, designed to give a fair distribution of the abundance of this Twentieth Century Machine Age. I would create a system of supervision and prosecution that would discourage or eliminate graft among our officials. I would exclude from our markets, except on a balanced

exchange, all commodities that can be successfully produced by our people.

As I view the situation we are at the cross-roads--conditions were never so bad and opportunities for leadership of large calaber, never so great. The people are expectant and ready to back any program that gives a fair promise of results, but they are growing impatient, and, if 1935 disappoints them, I shudder to think what may happen.

Frank C. Wade.

FHW 11/1/35 12

Paper #14

# HORACE, THE MOST MODERN OF ANCIENT POETS

Last month Dr. Welborn read a paper on Charles Lamb, saying that a consideration of his life and work was timely then, since December commemorated the one-hundredth anniversary of Lamb's death. In like manner I have chosen to write about Horace at this time because the year 1935 commemorates not the one-hundredth, the two-hundredth, or the five-hundredth year of his birth, but the two-thousandth year. That is a long period for a man's work to be remembered, and yet plans are being made at the present time in this country, as well as in most European and South American countries, for the Bi-Millennium of Horace's birth. Naturally Italy is taking the lead in this movement and is asking peoples of other countries to join with her in honoring her famous poet by attending appropriate exercises that will be held from time to time next summer in his birth place in Venusia, in southern Italy, in Rome, where he spent most of his life, and at his home in the Sabine hills where he found his happiest moments.

Though Horace lived so long ago, even before Christ was born, Will Showerman correctly estimates his place in the world when he says: "Horace's place is not among the dim and uncertain figures of a hoary antiquity. Only give him modern shoes, an Italian cloak, and a walking stick instead of sandals and toga, and he might be seen on the streets of Rome today. Nor is he less modern in character and bearing than in appearance. We discern in his composition the same strange and seemingly contradictory blend of the grave and the gay, the lively and the severe, the austere and

the trivial, the dignified and the careless that is so baffling to the observer of Italian character and conduct today."

To understand Horace we must know something of the times in which he lived. As a matter of fact, we never can understand the life of any human being unless we know something of the environment in which he worked and suffered and frolicked and played. The individual largely reflects his time. As a rule, the more active or troubled the times are, the deeper are the experiences of the individual's life. Such experiences are the foundation of the products of a great poet or musician, of an artist or a writer. It does not follow that everybody who lives in such an age will be a great poet, musician, artist, or writer. The great majority of people are comparatively unaffected by the deep emotional experiences to produce a great writer or artist. He must have the ability to convey to others his own thoughts and feelings in some material way. This is done in the case of the poet by elevated diction, choice vocabulary, proper metrical sequence, and other external forms of writing.

Horace's life fell in one of the most disturbed periods of history. The Roman Republic was breaking to pieces and the Empire was just emerging. Horace was born in Venusia, a mountain town of the Apennines, in southern Italy, on December 8, 65 B.C. His life was uneventful in comparison to the lives of his contemporaries. His father had been a slave in his youth, but due to his energy and ability he had been freed and was able, not only to gain a livelihood for himself and family, but even to send Horace to Rome

for higher education after completing his primary education in his home town. It was the custom in those days for the wealthy families of high rank in the state to send their sons to Athens, in Greece, to complete their education there in the most famous university of antiquity. Horace's father was able to send his son there also.

It was while he was a student in Athens that the civil war broke out between Brutus and Cassius on the one side and Antony and Octavius on the other. Horace was now twenty-one years old. He was fascinated by the words of Brutus, who had come to Athens to enlist the students there in the cause of the Liberators, as the senatorial party called itself. Horace joined his army and was immediately made a military tribune, which would correspone with the office of colonel in our army, though he knew absolutely nothing about warfare. When the decisive moment of battle came, the Liberators were soon in flight, Horace in their front ranks, after throwing away his shield and sword, as he humorously tells us later in one of his poems.

When Horace returned to Rome, soon after this battle, he faced a dismal prospect. His father was dead. All of his father's property had been confiscated and had been given over to the victors as a part of their spoils. This was indeed a rude shock for the young scholar, poet, and philosopher, as he had considered himself to be while a student in Athens. But Horace possessed a great deal of energy, was not afraid to work, had a genial nature, and managed to eke out a living for the next two or three years. At the age of twenty-four, we find him a clerk in the treasury office

of Rome. His troubles for physical comforts were now over. He was in governmental employ, and that was almost sure to be a permanent position. It gave him a salary, safety, respectability, considerable dignity, and what in the end proved most valuable, a certain amount of leisure time to do that which nature impelled him to do, namely, to write poetry. This brought him his greatest pleasure and enjoyment.

It was during this period that he wrote his Satires, as they are known now. He called them merely Conversations or Talks. These Satires were written in dactylic hexameter verse, and they gained considerable popularity among the more cultured and better educated Romans. I might say, incidentally, that education among the Romans was almost entirely limited to the upper classes of society. And still, this is not absolutely true, because there were schools in Rome everywhere for children of all classes of society above slaves. Public education in our sense of the word, where schools are maintained from public funds, was of course unknown to the Romans and the Greeks, and to all other ancient nations, as it was to the English and the French and the German and all other nations of medieval times. The public school in our sense is a very recent product. So when we consider Horace's audience, or any other writer's audience in ancient or medieval times, we must think of a rather limited class of people. This fact explains why Horace and Virgil, for instance, have so many allusions to mythology and history, and why they take for granted a familiarity with the philosophical and governmental background of the readers. Horace attracted the attention of a large number of men in this group, and

he was soon introduced to Virgil, who at that time was the most prominent poet in Rome, and who was a friend of Maecenas.

Through Virgil, Horace was taken into the circle of poets centering around Maecenas. It would probably help to understand what his position was if I digressed a little to tell who Maecenas was and to show how he gained this position. There had been a long series of bloody civil wars in Rome during the first century B.C. At the middle of the century, Caesar and Pompey had fought for supremacy, with the shedding of much Roman blood. Then following Caesar's assassination in 44 B.C., when Horace was twenty-one years old, an even more sanguine civil war arose between the Liberators, referred to above, and the heirs of Caesar. This strife was immediately followed by a contest between the victor, Octavius, who was later known as Augustus, on the one side, and Mark Antony and the Egyptian queen Cleopatra on the other. It was only in the year 30 B.C. that the clouds lifted and the skies became clearer for a war-worn weary world. Of all the claimants for power, Octavius alone was left. Fortunately for Rome, he was a wise ruler, and though coming to power as a young man, he lived to a ripe old age. On all sides there was rejoicing at the prospect of long continued peace and quiet after the Catyclasms of an entire generation preceding. But the wars had left deep wounds, as civil wars always do. There was scarcely a family that had not lost one or more of its members in this strife. Property damage was great. Public buildings and temples had been robbed, despoiled, and even burned to the ground. I need not go into details which you can easily supply for yourself.

Anarchy in its worst sense had been rife everywhere. So, though a new day shone, it shone upon derelicts and debris.

Octavius set about to heal the wounds, to restore public buildings, to send men back to their farms, and to create employment wherever possible. The worst after-effects of the civil wars were not so much material as spiritual. There was social anarchy and there was a degeneration of morals. Augustus set himself the task of building up the state in every possible way. He had hundreds of temples rebuilt or built anew. This was comparatively easy, as it was easy for Augustus to revive religious worship, but it was a far more difficult task to win men from dissolute ways and to make religion a living force issuing in true morality. It was for this purpose that Augustus had directed his counselor Maecenas to win the support of the literary men of the day for the cause of the state. Maecenas was liberal in giving material assistance to the poets and writers whom he gathered around him. Virgil was placed into easy circumstances through Maecenas's generosity, and it was through Virgil's influence that Horace was introduced to Maecenas. Other members of this poetic group were Rufus, Tucca, Plotius, and many others in whom we have no special interest.

From the time of Horace's introduction to Maecenas, he was independent of all worries of livelihood. Maecenas gave him many valuable presents, but the thing that he valued most was his Sabine farm lying in the foothills of the Appennines near the town of Tivoli, about thirty miles east of Rome. Here Horace had his home and his farms, his tilled land, his orchards of fruit and olives, his vineyards, and his little forest, managed by his eight slaves. His greatest delight was in coming from the city to his Sabine farm and resting

... the shade of the trees in summer and drinking of the cool Bandusian spring. Two years ago I had the privilege of tramping over the ruins of Horace's home, including a bathing establishment and a bakery, and of drinking some cool water from his Bandusian spring a short distance from his estate. I shall quote a part of his poem relating to this spring as translated by Eugene Field:

"O, fountain of Bandusia, more glittering than glass,
And worthy of the pleasant wine and toasts that freely pass,
More worthy of the flowers, with which thou modestly art hid,
Tomorrow, willing hands shall sacrifice to thee a kid.

The Dog Star's cruel season, with its fierce and blazing heat
Has never sent its scorching rays into thy glad retreat;
The oxen, wearied with the plow, the herd which wanders near
Have found a grateful respite and delicious coolness here."

"Among the noble fountains which have been enshrined in fame,
Thy dancing babbling waters shall in song our homage claim."

When we consider how dependent Horace and these other poets were upon state funds doled out to them by the ruler and his minister, we might wonder whether there was any independence left in these poets, or whether they became civil hack-writers. This may have been the case with some of them, but it was not true of Virgil or Horace. Both of these poets did glorify the state and sing its praises, and both of them did even refer to Augustus as a god, but in this they were no different from the other writers of the time. Horace sincerely believed that Augustus was ushering in a new era, and that he was establishing an empire which would last forever, with "Eternal Rome" as its center. We know that Maecenas had suggested to Virgil that he write a long poem glorifying farm life, thereby inducing more people to go from the larger cities, and especially Rome, to recondition the farms which had been ruined

during the civil wars. Virgil did this at Maecenas's request, but he did it wholeheartedly. There was nothing servile about it. Virgil expressed his own views and the work would have been the same whether Maecenas had suggested it or not. Horace wrote his hymn to Apollo and several other poems at the request of Augustus to be sung at the festival of Apollo or some other god, but this does not detract from the merit of these poems. Horace was the Poet Laureate of his government at that time, just as Tennyson was Poet Laureate to England in Queen Victoria's time, and he was probably no more servile in his works than was Tennyson. We know that Horace did not do always what had been requested of him. On one occasion, he was asked to write an epic poem honoring the deeds of Agrippa in his Germanic wars. We have one of Horace's poems in reply to this request in which he facetiously remarks that his verses, being limited to humbler themes, could not think of soaring to so high a flight, and he suggested that Varius be asked to do this. On another occasion, the emperor, Augustus, asked Horace to become his private secretary, an honor which Horace declined, because he feared that accepting this office would interfere with his freedom of action. Many other instances could be cited illustrating Horace's independence of action and thought.

The outline given above shows that Horace touched life at both extremes. He had been born the son of a former slave. He went to a country school with children of other freedmen and of soldiers located at Venusia. He knew farm life in a small village. He was acquainted with beautiful scenery in the Apennine foothills. As a youth, he lived in Rome, and later among the Greeks in Athens.

He spoke Latin and Greek fluently. He had some war experiences and no doubt heard many soldier's stories. He was poverty stricken at one time and living in affluence another. He associated with men of high station and with men of low degree, with even the Emperor himself at the top. He knew the thoughts and the emotions of all these classes, because he was an unusually accurate observer. Horace's poems abound in philosophical expressions and still it is hard to classify him as a devotee of either Epicureanism or Stoicism, which were the two leading schools of philosophy in Rome at that time. Stoicism was the doctrine of a providence guarding human destinies. It considered virtue the highest good, the "Sumum Bonum". Epicureanism considered pleasure the "Sumum Bonum" --not pleasure in the sense of enjoyment, as Epicureanism has so often been understood in both ancient and modern times, but pleasure in the highest sense of that word. Perhaps our word happiness would express the thought better than pleasure. So to say, "Let us eat and drink and be merry, for tomorrow we are dead," is a popular expression of Epicureanism, and was used as such in Horace's time, but it is not the true meaning of the Epicurean philosophy. Both of these schools developed an elaborate system of thought and action which we cannot go into now. But Horace was little concerned with these systems. He wanted a philosophy as a guide of life. He made his own philosophy, leaning sometimes towards Stoicism, and sometimes towards Epicureanism. Above all, he included in his personal philosophy the golden mean. Over and over again in his Odes he admonished his friends to avoid excesses, either in joy or in sorrow; in extravagance or in frugality; in partaking of

food or of drink; in their aspirations and ambitions, as in every walk of life.

The world around Horace was discontented and restless. There was greed for money or wretched ambition for power. Greed and avarice abounded on every hand. The rich were carrying on a fruitless search for happiness in large villas by the seashore of the Bay of Naples and on cool mountain lakes and by constant change of scenery, flitting from one villa to another. Horace believed that it would be possible to find a cure for these ills in philosophy, and in that he agreed with the two principal schools, both of which thought that the supreme question in life was the discovery of the secret of happiness and the nature of the highest good. He found this "Sumum Bonum" in simplicity and frugality of life. The Stoics called the men who best embodied their philosophy kings, irrespective of their worldly possessions, because, they reasoned, the man who could control his own soul had nothing to fear, he possessed absolute power, and was in every sense a king, though, of course, his realm was small. Horace probably agreed with this tennet of the Stoic philosophy. He believed that all happiness, for instance, was in your own breast, and that upon you yourself rested every obligation for controlling your temper, for mastering your passions, and for regulating your conduct honorably. He would have agreed with Milton, who says: "The mind is in its own place and in itself can make a heaven of hell, a hell of heaven. Contentment of mind and purity of conscience will enable a man boldly to confront any assault of person." What a source of inspiration to righteousness and constancy Horace's readers must have found in the ode

entitled "Justum Et Tenacem", from which I shall quote a part:

"The man of firm and noble soul
No factious clamors can control
No threat'ning tyrant's darkling brow
  Can swerve him from his just intent...
Ay, and the red right arm of Jove,
Hurtling his lightnings from above,
With all his terrors then unfurl'd,
  He would unmoved, unawed behold:
The flames of an expiring world
  Again in crashing chaos roll'd,
In vast promiscuous ruin hurl'd,
Must light his glorious funeral pile:
Still dauntless midst the wreck of earth he'd smile."

Horace did not consider it possible to attain perfect happiness, but he did consider it encumbant upon anyone valuing life above that of a sphere of human drudgery to strive to attain the highest measure of happiness possible. This could be done, he said, by getting solace in literature, by building a philosophy of one's life, and living up to that philosophy, by winning firm friendships, and always living true to their obligation, by enjoying the beauties of nature, of mountain and spring, of lakes and bays, and even by the enjoyment of the pleasing changes of the seasons, from sharp winter to pleasant spring, and from hot summer to cool fall. Horace's counsel is always for moderation. He has many drinking songs, and of course he was not a total abstainer, but on the other hand, he was not a "wine bibber" either. The ancients believed that a vine was the gift of a god, and that its product was not to be despised by man. Still, Horace does preach against excessive drinking. "Pleasure with after-taste of bitterness," he says, "is not real pleasure. Pleasure purchased with pain is an evil."

Judging from his poems, Horace had many love affairs, but he never married. He did extol family life, no doubt at the sugges-

tion or request of Augustus. The cry then, as of Mussolini in Italy today, was for large families, especially among the Romans of the upper classes, as their families were becoming smaller and smaller. So Horace preached purity of home life, and for that purpose retold the stories of Curius, who despised Samnite Gold, while he himself had nothing but carrots and beets to live on. Two stanzas from one of his poems referring to the ideal frugal life of their early ancesters read as follows:

"Scant were their private means, the public, great;
'Twas still a commonwealth, that State;
No portico, surveyed with private rule,
Assured one man the shady cool.

The laws approved the house of humble sods;
'Twas only to the homes of gods,
The structures reared with earnings of the nation,
They gave rich marble decoration.

Horace is consistant with his view of life in the only prayer to one of the great deities worshipped at the time, when he closes with the following two stanzas:

"Ripe berries from the olive bough,
Mallows and endives, be my fare.
Son of Latona, hear my vow!
Apollo, grant my prayer!

"Health to enjoy the blessings sent
From heaven; a mind unclouded, strong;
A cheerful heart; a wise content;
An honored age; and song."

This suggests the question of Horace's attitude toward the gods in general. As we have seen, he depended more upon philosophy than upon religion as a guide of life. In fact, the great gods, most of whom had been imported into Rome from Greece, never did strike a very responsive cord in the hearts of the masses of people. They were the State gods, worshipped at grand and sublime festivals

with gorgeous solemnities in magnificent temples. No doubt these gods awed the people, but they did not reach their innermost being. The common people believed that these gods were supernatural beings with superhuman powers. Men like Horace, Augustus, Ovid, and others did not believe in their existance at all, but Horace seems to have believed in the efficacy of prayer to some of the lesser deities--those gods that were worshipped in the peasant homes or on the hillsides and in isolated places far removed from the turmoil of the city. The following ode, addressed to Phydele, a country maiden, correctly expresses a thought that is often repeated in Horace's odes, and one that has a genuine ring:

"My rustic Phydele! at new moon
   If thou to heaven thy palms wilt raise,
And offer to thy gods a boon
   Of fruits, and spice, and swine--in praise,

Sirocco's blast thy fertile vine
   Shall never blight, thy growing corn
The mildew rust, nor weaklings pine
   In sickly breezes autumn-borne.

The victims now that find a home
   On snowy Algidus, among
His oaks and pines, or freely roam
   On Alba's pastures, all belong

To Pontiff's axe. No call hast thou
   For slaughters great, that might regale,
Who dost thy little gods endow
   With rosemary and myrtle frail.

O, if pure hands the altar touch,
   Thy homely cake and crackling salt
Will please the angry gods as much
   As would a costly gift exalt.

Horace apparently did not believe in the immortality of the soul, as many of his contemporaries did. In this he was following the Epicurean school of philosophy. He was also more or less a

fatalist. "All men," he said, "are subject to the whims of fate."

These thoughts are touched upon in the poem to Postumus:

"Alas! my Postumus, alas! how speed
The passing years: nor can devotion's deed
Stay wrinkled age one moment on its way,
Nor stay one moment death's appointed day;

Adown the wandering stream we all must go,
Adown Cocytus' waters, black and slow;
The ill-famed race of Danaus all must see,
And Sisyphus, from labors never free.

All must be left,--lands, home, beloved wife,--
All left behind when we have done with life;
One tree alone, of all thou holdest dear,
Shall follow thee,--the cypress, o'er thy bier!

Thy wiser heir will soon drain to their lees
The casks now kept beneath a hundred keys;
The proud old Caecuban will stain the floor,
More fit at pontiffs' solemn feasts to pour."

The last work of Horace, and one that was left incomplete, was "The Art of Poetry". This is a longer poem than his others. It begins with a history of poetry, tracing all the various types of epic, lyric, and dramatic poetry to their sources, and following out their development. In this poem are contained nearly all the rules of literary production that had been laid down by the Greeks and followed by the Romans. Through this poem of Horace these laws were handed down to the middle ages and to modern times; for instance, the three unities of time, place, and action, in the drama. This poem was remembered in the middle ages when Horace's odes and satires had been forgotten. Naturally the church, which was the fosterer of literature in the middle ages, cared little for Horace's odes, but was more interested in his satires, in which we find more of the moral reflection upon life. Then too, his satires incorporated interesting little stories, such as "The City Mouse and

the Country Mouse"; the fable of the horse which, being unable to defeat the stag in a contest, called in the help of man; the man got onto the back of the horse and drove off the stag, but refused to dismount when the fight was over, and other similar stories.

Horace was nearly forgotten during the first 500 years of the middle ages. It was only with the revival of learning in the 14th and 15th centuries that he began to be appreciated once more. But since that time, many writers in Europe and America have been deeply indebted to him. He has lived these 2000 years, and I think it may be said that there never has been a generation since his death that has not read his works, at least to some degree. During the centuries when odes and satires were forgotten, his "Ars Poetica" was read widely. In modern times, he has had many imitators and many translators. The translation of his works into a modern language has been a constant temptation for German, French, and British scholars, because his style is so tantalizing. In the Latin, his odes and other poems--in fact he wrote only poetry--read so smoothly and flow so gently, even in the intricate meters of Greek poetry, that the moderns are tempted to try to reproduce him, but their success has never been very great.

That the friendship between Horace and Maecenas was not merely one of mutual advantage, but deep and abiding, is shown throughout their long intimate association, but especially in the last days of their lives. Just before Maecenas passed away in the summer of B.C., after a lingering illness, his last words were uttered to the Emperor Augustus, and they expressed concern for his most intimate friend. "Take care of Horace as you would of me," he said.

They how the human affections of the great patron of Roman letters for the man of genius whose best work he had ade possible through his generosity and sympathy, and who returned bounty so nobly. T re s no doubt that the last wish of Maecenas would have been abundantly fulfilled by Augustus, but as the event proved, there w s little further occasion for the imperial patronage. Horace died suddenly on the 27th of November in the same year, and the affectionate vow not to linger long in life after his good genius left it, which the poet had recorded in one of his poems 17 years before, thus received a curious and touching fulfillment. Had he died of a broken heart? The lines were these:

"Why wilt thou kill me with thy boding fears?
Why, O Maecenas, why?
Before thee lies a train of happy years;
Yes, nor the gods nor I
Could brook that thou shouldst first be laid in dust
Who art my stay, my glory, and my trust!

Ah, if untimely Fate should snatch thee hence,
Thee, of my soul a part,
Why should I linger on, with deadened sense,
And ever-aching heart,
A worthless fragment of a fallen shrine?
No, no, one day shall see thy death and mine!

Think not, that I have sworn a bootless oath;
Yes, we shall go, shall go,
Hand linked in hand, whene'er thou leadest, both
The last sad road below!"

I will close this paper with a quotation from Duff's, "A Literary History of Rome":

"Without sustained inspiration, without profundity of thought, without impassioned song, he yet pierces to the universal heart....His secret lies in sanity rather than impetus. Kindly and shrewd observer of the manifold activities of life, he draws vignettes therefrom and passes judgments thereon which awaken undying interest. 'Non omnis moriar'--he remains fresh because he is human."

J. H. Wang
Jan. 14, 1933

HEm. 156
1/21/35

ADULT LEARNING IN A DEMOCRACY Paper #15.

Educationally it is a far removed situation when we extend learning facilities to adults throughout our country as against the time about a century ago when Indiana and many other states questioned the advisability of even extending those opportunities to the children, and then on a basis of only meager instruction in the three R's. Such a change reflects a totally different concept of the place and necessity for education, and it is with this changing concept and the import of the change that I propose to deal for a little while.

Such a change in thinking and practice has not come as a result of efforts on the part of educators only, but as a result of changed and changing social conditions that demand an entirely different philosophy of learning as opposed to former concepts. This old thinking has not been confined to the laity in any sense of the word; by illustration may I point out that Herbert Spencer, one of our great educators, said that it is just as absurd to think of government establishing schools as regulating the purity of the milk supply. This is in direct contrast to conclusions by our leaders and thinkers that education must and can assist in meeting the social and economic crisis.

So urgent are our insistent social problems and so interwoven have our interests become that only nation-wide study and plans can meet the situation. This is borne out by statements from the field of education and government. By way of illustration may I point out two.

William F. Russell has said: "If Americans love their liberty, if they hope to make the democratic experiment succeed, if they wish to avoid servitude in the future, it is imperative that the knowledge of the people begin as soon as possible to approximate the knowledge of the leaders; that the people come to know the problems which their leaders are attempting to solve sufficiently well to enable them to distingusih success from failure, to permit them to cooperate with a will rather than to yield obedience which must be blind and sullen because it is forced."

Harold L. Ickes, Secretary of the Interior, in a similar vein said: "If democracy is to mean more than the counting of noses or the victory in a conflict of ignorant clamors, darkness and noises of night, it must mean a society which thinks and reads and discusses, and whose balance of judgment, rather than blind loyalty, directs its ends."

This club has had many papers read at its sessions pointing out the changes in our socio-economic setup that demand a new outlook upon our problems, and we are advancing the use of adult learning as an important phase in the solution of many social problems, and to some degree, the economic ones.

Before dealing with suggestions for an adult education program, we need to analyse our present educational program for youth as present except for occasional modification and the recent effort of the Federal Government to meet the problem--to determine whether or not it is equal to the occasion. In doing this I do not mean to be unduly critical, or certainly not unfriendly, except to point out where the education of youth fails to meet the problem. This brief analysis involves only touching the general philosophy or aim of the education of youth necessary to carry us to the topic for discussion.

Education conceived only as a preparation for life locks the learning process within a vicious circle. Youth educated terms of adult ideas, and taught to think of learning as a which ends when real life begins, will make no better use of intelligence than the elders who prescribe the system. Only and rebellious moments occur when youth sees this fallacy clearly; but alas, the pressure of adult civilization is too great; in the end young people fit into the pattern, succumb to the tradition of their elders--, indeed, become elderly minded for their time. Education within such a circle becomes not universally a joyous enterprise, but rather something to be endured since it leads to a satisfying end. Humor but more of pathos, lies in the caricature of the college graduate standing in cap and gown, diploma in hand, shouting: "Educated, b'gosh." Henceforth, while devoting himself to life, he will think of education as a necessary annoyance for succeeding youth, and he, within a decade, will be out of touch with the world of intelligence, or what is worse, he will still be using the intellectual coins of his college days; he will find difficulty in reading serious books, will become inured to the jargon of his particular profession will effect derision for all highbrows; he will, in short, become a typical adult who holds the bag of education--the gift of learning having long since slipped by him.

Perhaps this picture is too black, but I am sure out of it we can draw certain symptoms and note how they apply to the great mass of adults. What will get at this problem and break the vicious circle is a problem for educators, obviously; extension of the facility of educational facilities cannot break the circle. Once the belief was current that if only education were free to all, intelligence would become the proper tool for managing the affairs of the world. That this is not axiomatic certainly goes without

--

...nd if we are to get at the problem that is apparent, we ...ince the quantitative method to a degree at least has failed, ... the problem from the qualitative point of view.

This point of view assumes at the outset that "education ... e," not a preparation for an unknown future living. When ... sumption is made, all static concepts of education which ... the learning process to the period of youth are abandoned ... is assumed to be a continuous process. This assumes a long ... f education during youth (which is and will always be ...ry and prerequisite), followed by a type of effective adult ...

...rhaps from my statements so far you might assume that adult ...on, that is, an organized type, was just discovered. Of ... such thing is true. Beginning back in the seventeenth ... in the New England town meeting, and before that in the ... f medieval Europe, we have always had it with us in one ... other; the Lyceum, the Chautaugua, the extension work of ...es, clubs, research, libraries, churches, Y. M. and Y. W. ... exhibits, etc., are forms of adult education constantly ...s. It has been estimated that about one-eighth of our ... addition to youth within the schools, are constantly en- ... some form of attempt to improve their education. Then ... should not overlook the fact that all of us are consciously ...sciously, voluntarily or involuntarily, victims, fortunately ...tunately, of the radio, the movies, newspapers, magazines, ...g, etc.

...cognizing, then, the impossibility of providing youth with ...e of facts" from which they may pull the proper ones when ... the problems of life as adults, we are faced with the ... of setting up a philosophy that will guide us in the

velopment of an adult learning program. Fortunarely we are getting away from the concept that adult education is only teaching reading, and writing to the illiterate; English to one who does not speak our language; or to improve vocationally some one for his job. But we are seeing it as a program for the enrichment of life-- better expressed by this quotation, whose author I do not know. Adult Education is for all those "who hold fast to the belief that the true purpose of education for young and for old, is the understanding and enjoyment of life, and that the uneducated man is not he who cannot read or write or count or spell, but he who walks unseeing and unhearing, uncompanioned and unhappy, through the busy streets and glorious open spaces of life's infinite pilgrimage", and "to dispel the melancholy belief that grown men and women have nothing left to learn, and to diffuse throughout all countries, and in every section of society, the sense of wonder and curiosity and the gift of mutual sympathy and companionship which add so much to the meaning of life."

Fortunately we are assured by rather recent studies in contrast to our thinking awhile ago that adults can learn and that many things can be learned on an adult level and out of adult experience much better than they can be learned in the course of formal school preparation. Thorndike's studies, with which you are all more or less familiar, are our best source of information on the ability of the adult learner. He has said in part: "We can assert with reasonable surety that the fact of inner growth (ability to learn) favors adults in comparison with children. Unless it is counterbalanced by factors acting in the opposite direction, inner growth gives the person from 40 to 45 as good an ability to learn as he had from 20 to 25, a better ability than he had from 15 to 20, and a better ability than he had from 5 to 15."

This might lead us to modify our formal school instruction if we are able to analyze the situation well enough to determine what can best be learned during youth, and what had best be left to be taught on adult levels. Of course our big difficulty is that compulsory attendance, which handles the problem at least until a certain age, is absent so far as adults are concerned, and very often those who need the instruction most will not get it on an adult level.

Briefly may we discuss the matter of an adult learning program and suggest the fields that undoubtedly should be touched where we are fortunate enough to have such a program. In the first place, we should make a definite effort to reach those who are illiterate. An altogether too large a percent is shown to be in this state by our census and survey examinations. That studies are being made in the correction of this situation is evident, but at the same time it is one of the most difficult to handle. An opportunity is being missed, I believe, while we are giving public relief to such a large number, in not requiring attendance in classes designed to eliminate illiteracy as far as possible.

Further, a program of adult learning should include a program of guidance, vocational instruction, rehabilitation, and readjustment. Such a vocational program in contrast to those set up a decade or two ago will probably not generally require as technical a type of instruction. This will be true because industry and business are doing more toward training their own people, and it is difficult for education to meet the varied business and industrial conditions except in a somewhat general way.

Perhaps even more important than the vocational phase of adult education work is that which is to deal with the use of leisure.

The program's greatest opportunity lies here--recreation, self-expression through hobbies, dramatics, music, craft, etc., are opportunities for which the people hunger, and which will undoubtedly be utilized by those given an opportunity.

The last classification that I would offer to cover the program, making four, is that which deals with the larger problems of socialization--working together as a common group--studying a local problem, studying parent and child problems; all of these and many others offer a fine opportunity for adult learning.

Is such a program a national, state, or local problem? Is it expenseve? How shall it be financed? Do we have teachers trained for the work? Do school administrators appreciate its import? Is it a part of the obligation of our regularly constituted schoolofficials? Will people take advantage of its opportunities? All of these and many others are questions that arise when the problem of adult learning is raised. These I leave with you. Some can be answered; some will have to wait, because our thinking on public education has for the most part, knowing that of course there are exceptional situations, ended with the high school, and at the most with our colleges and universities. The present program of the Federal government set up for both the educational and unemployment purposes has, however, given us some idea of its possibilities.

Harold E. Moore

Paper #16

# OUR DEBT TO THE DUTCH

By

Edwin H. Canine

Read before

the

Terre Haute Literary Club

Jan 28, 1935

~~February 4, 1935~~

## OUR DEBT TO THE DUTCH

As Americans we are so used to thinking as we please and in the main acting accordingly that we probably do not realize that our ancestors were not so free. At least we think we think for ourselves and occasionally some few of the braver give moderately conclusive evidence of action not prescribed by some industrial, labor, or political boss. Once in a decade some one stands up and proclaims a new deal as an antidote for a raw deal, and then, too frequently, when the millenium fails to appear over night we revert to a condition more hopeless than before.

Notwithstanding that some people regard us as mere Punch and Judy characters for whom their only business in life is to pull the strings and see us dance, we do have a political and religious life so utterly different from that of early peoples that we may well look back and see from whence came our liberties. True we may still hear rumblings of differences between fundamentalist and modernist, but we also hear protestant and jew protesting against treatment of their catholic brothers in Mexico. No less do protestants and catholics condemn German banishment of the jew, and all unite in wishing well to Cardinal Faulhaber, militant leader of the German catholics, and to several thousand protestant pastors who have dared to defy Reichsbishop Mueller.

Bishop Mueller had persuaded Hitler that it was necessary to bring the church as well as the state "under one master and one mind". Hitler and Mueller seemed to think that they had brought Catholic and ~~gentile~~ Protestant into one fold. After his consecration as Reichsbishop, Mueller announced "that now, at last, Germany had a United Evangelical Church". (Literary Digest-October 6, 1934, p. 18) Did he speak without the book? Time only can tell whether the present lull is to continue or whether it but presages more drastic measures.

This modern conflict serves to bring us back to the neighborhood of one of the greatest struggles for political and religious freedom that history records.

And, naturally enough, we find some of the same races involved. Whether it was 67 or twice that whom Hitler put to death for political reasons, it is only a mild reminder of what Alva did in the name of Philip and the church.

On a mere handbreadth of territory, much of it below sea level and protected by dikes, the founders of the Dutch Republic waged eighty years of war against ecclesiastical tyranny and universal empire. Though the empire of Charles V was erected on the grave of liberty, the persistent Dutchmen were able eventually to dictate terms of peace to this most powerful empire. Not only to Americans but to all who speak the English language this momentuous struggle has special significance.

Roughly we may divide the Netherlanders into two groups, those east and those west of the Rhine. On the west, in that region we now call Belgium, were the Gauls, of Celtic origin. With power in the hands of nobles, these Celtic people were agriculturists, with a sensuous, polytheistic religion, and living unchaste lives. Their neighbors on the east of the Scheldt and the Rhine were Germans mainly of the Frank, Frisian, and Saxon tribes. They were democratic in government and warriors by trade. They had a much purer religion, worshipping one god, in simple forms, without priest or caste. These German people were noted for their fidelity to family ties. Blok says "With the vices of uncivilized peoples,--rapacity,, the love of drink, fighting, and gambling,--the Germans possessed also their virtues--honesty, fidelity, chastity, hospitality, bravery". (Vol. I, p. 14) Of course, there was constant crossing and recrossing of the rivers and a natural mixture of the races, but even today the peoples of these regions are in many respects representative of their origin.

Then came the Romans, "converting the ancestors of the Dutch from half, or complete barbarians into men appreciating the advantages of civilization". (Blok 33) They built the first dikes, made roads, and constructed bridges. No

longer were they nomads; land was privately owned.

Blok and Motley disagree somewhat on the results of Roman occupation. Motley says the Dutch lost all sembalnce of democracy and came under clerical tyranny. Towns began and became wealthy through trade. Blok says "Dark is the fate of Western Europe, of the Netherlands especially, in the century of misfortune, in which ancient Rome finally ceased to be mistress of the West". (Blok-Vol I-39) But he speaks of the qualities of these German people in much the same terms as does Motley--"strong in war, firm in peace-------converted to the Catholic faith, free from heresy". (I-51) One has but to read the stories of Gregory and Alcuin to find how Christianity helped to fuse these races.

There would be no excuse for even this brief summarization if it did not give the key to much of the later life of the Dutch. Their habits of life, their love of civil liberty, and their tenacious hold on religious freedom were not suddenly developed. Such qualities were a part of these people from the beginning. Under Charlemagne and his successors counts and nobles became powerful and possessors of much land. Feudal estates were founded and these developed into hereditary possessions. These counts or nobles could administer justice, levy taxes, coin money, with consent of the estates, but without consulting the king.

About the 11th century the population was drifting into towns and cities and so Commerce soon came to outrank agriculture. Even the farmer came to pay his overlord in money rather than in produce. As in most European countries the Crusades, in which the Netherlanders did their share, gave great impetus to trade and the towns became even more important. Later when we read of the great conflict it seems that only towns and cities are engaged. But the country people did their part. Naturally there was strife among nobles, and the clergy had become so powerful, wealthy, and corrupt that much heresy had developed as early

as the 12th and 13th centuries. Neither the political nor the religious struggle was new to the time of Charles V or Phillip II of Spain.

Briefly the relation of Spain is this: Mary of Burgundy married Maximilian. She was thrown from a horse and killed when her son Philip was four years old. Maximilian ruled until elected emperor, when Philip I, succeeded. He married a daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain. A son, born in 1500, became the famous Emperor Charles V. Thus this house of Habsburg passes to almost universal monarchy. Its conflict with the Netherlands for a century or more is the t heme of this paper. This union of Spain and Netherlands was really of no benefi t to either. The people were different in every way. Hollanders possibly never had been very friendly to popes and bishops, nor to the doctrines of the catholic church. The doctrines of Wickliff had taken hold and when the Hollanders were sent to suppress the followers of Huss and Jerome they came back sympathizing with the heretics. By the time that Charles V was born, the reformation was a going concern. Erasmus, the quiet scholar, may have laid the egg of reformation but it took a Luther to hatch it. As early as 1521 Charles V had issued his edicts against the new religion. On July 1, 1523, two dissenting monks of Brussells were burned. According to Erasmus the city was by that act turned definitely toward Lutheranism. Two great forces were definitely opposed. The Netherlanders possessed of one master passion, "The love of liberty, the instinct of self government". (Motley I-91), against tyranny as embodied in the Spanish monarchs.

In 1540 the authorities at Ghent had refused to pay a tax to be used by Charles V in foreign wars. Soon Charles with 10,000 soldiers came from Spain and entered triumphantly into the rebelious city. His sister Mary, the regnant queen of the provinces, pleaded for mercy. So, with halters about their necks, the chief offenders were led forth and after much display of authority mixed with mock magnaminity, they were freed. But the financial penalities were increased.

The inquisition thus planted by Charles was never permitted to languish. The edicts issued by him were renewed by his son and Motley says that the estimates of those burned, strangled, beheaded, or buried alive range from 50,000 to 100,000. (I-121)

Then in 1555 came that strange event - an emperor abdicating in favor of his son. A description of that glamourous event might be exceedingly interesting but it is not necessary to our theme. It does introduce two opposing characters that were to play such dramatic parts in our story. The emperor came into the room leaning upon the arm of a young man in whom he seemed to place the greatest confidence, the Prince of Orange. The other was Philip II, the son of Charles, who was to "out Herod Herod" in every way. For many years to follow the history of Netherlands is the story of conflict between these two men and their allies.

To increase his power, Philip married the fanatical Mary, queen of England. Motley has this terrible summation of the character of the two: "To maintain the supremacy of the church seemed to both the main object of existence, to execute unbelievers the most sacred duty imposed by the Deity upon annointed princes, to convert their kingdoms into a hell the surest means of winning heaven for themselves". (I-137) The Bishop of Arras became Cardinal Granvelle and was the chief ally of Philip in the early years. He insisted on the re-enactment of the famous edicts of Charles V. Philip could then say he was only carrying out the policies of the former king. Without in the least wishing to awaken religious prejudice, I quote here from Motley some of the outstanding provisions. "No one shall print, write, copy, keep, conceal, sell, buy, or give in churches, streets or other places, any book or writing made by Martin Luthor, - - - - - -, Zwinglius, Calvin, or other heretics reprobated by the holy church, - - - - - - - nor in his house hold conventicles or illegal gatherings, or be present at any such at which the adherents of the above mentioned heretics teach, baptize, and form conspiracies against the holy church and the general welfare. - - - - - - - - Moreover we for-

bid all lay persons to converse or dispute concerning the holy scriptures, openly or secretly, especially upon any doubtful or difficult matters, or to read, teach, or expound the Scriptures, unless they have duly studied theology and been approved by some renowned university. -------- - - - or to preach secretly, or openly, or to entertain any of the opinions of the above mentioned heretics; - - - - on pain should any one be found to have contravened any of the points above mentioned, as perturbators of our state and the general quiet, to be punished in the following manner" - - - - - - - - - - - "That such perturbators of the general quiet are to be executed, to wit: the men with the sword and the women to be buried alive, if they do not persist in their errors; if they persist in them, then they are to be executed with fire; all their property in both cases being confiscated to the crown". (Vol. I, p. 261-262)

To inflict so long a quotation upon members of this club would be unpardonable did it not set forth so vividly the basis of one phase of the conflict. Very evidently the religious phase is to predominate at first, but we shall learn later that it was political oppression which brought the final conflict. To be even suspected of heresy was to be met with punishment by death and loss of property. All were urged to be informers, and were rewarded with one half the property of the executed heretic, All this from Philip who claimed to follow the path of clemency, and from Granvelle who said "that he had ever combatted the opinion that anything could be accomplished by terror, death, and violence". (Motley I, 265) One wonders if our Mexican friends or Hitler know their history. Let us hope they do not if knowing it should tend to increase their present attacks. At any rate this gives us some basis by which to judge and possibly to check our too quick condemnation.

One can easily believe that relations between the bigots of Spain and the citizens of Netherlands were not improved. But seemingly only the surface had been scratched. The Netherlanders objected vigorously to the appointment of four

new bishops to their provinces, but when this was followed by the quartering in their midst of 4000 Spanish soldiers they felt that a fatal blow had been struck at their ancient constitutions. These provided that no foreigner could hold office. Granvelle was Spanish and made appointments without consulting the estates or Orange. When ordered by Granvelle to notify these appointees Orange retorted that he was no lackey.

On leaving for Spain Philip had levied a considerable tax upon the provinces. To this the estates agreed, upon condition that all Spanish tropps would be removed. Philip blamed all his troubles upon Orange who had become the outstanding leader. He was of German origin, a prince of the House of Nassau, and had inherited from an uncle several estates in the Netherlands. He had been the confidant of Charles V, and early in the reign of Philip had learned from the king of France of the plot between the two kings to massacre all protestants. Because he gave no sign of his own convictions at that time he is said to have earned the title "William the Silent". He professed himself to be thoroughly loyal to Philip. He was a Catholic by birth and training though he seemingly had no special religious convictions in his earrly life. From the beginning, however, he plead for freedom of religious belief and political action for all people.

Here was a people ready to follow such a leader. For centuries they had been accustomed to comparative civil freedom. They had developed a great foreign trade, saving them from narrow thinking and bigotry. Commerce is said to have been the mother of their freedom in civil affairs, and led toward a struggle for freedom of conscience. In a world wide commerce ideas were as liberally exchanged as were goods. By such a people the edicts of king or emperor might be endured for a time, but not accepted. Persecution continued. Griffis says - "Fertilized by all this innocent blood, the soil of the Netherlands became as a watered garden, in which liberty, civil and religious, was to flourish perennially." (78). There were many victims but no converts. The reformation had entered the

Netherlands through French Hugenots, rather than from Germany. It was thus Calvanistic rather than Lutheran. Both had run their course or were at least held in abeyance in countries of their origin, so the Netherlands became the battle ground. Again quoting Griffis - "The great contest was accordingly transferred to the Netherlands to be fought out for the rest of the century, while the whole of Christendom was to look anxiously for the result". (80)

One hesitates to enumerate the atrocities of a Titelman, chief of the inquisitors for many years. We recall how we were stirred by tales of German atrocities and wonder if these statements were made for similar reasons. But Motley was writing 300 years after, not during the conflict. They seem to be the history of the Netherlands at this period. They are the causes out of which a republic was born and through which an ancient tyranny fell.

Granvelle assured Philip through interminable letters that it was all stirred up by the selfish, ambitious nobles, but the facts show that the real revolt was in the common people. The nobles may have played a part similar to that of the English Barons at Runnymede, but it was the humbler citizens who decided the fate of the Provinces. These people protested the infliction of the Spanish inquisition. Philip replied that there was no need to introduce the Spanish inquisition when that of the Netherlands was much more pitiless. Such was the machine for ferreting out a man's thoughts and burning him if these thoughts even seemed heretical.

If Granvelle could write often, Philip could write much. It is said that he would sit in a room and write an 18 page letter to explain to a man in the next room what a man of talent would have spoken in six words. Granvelle knew Philip was slow and never did today what he could postpone for many days; so Granvelle not only wrote to Philip but practicaly dictated the replies which Philip was to make. We may have some amateur brain trusters, just a Kerensky so to speak, but here was the real thing, a genuine dictator. Egmont, Horn, and

Orange were especial objects of attack. They were accused of stirring up opposition and of being ambitious to assume royal prerogatives. Was it any wonder that a man of Granvelle's type was bitterly opposed by many Catholics who hated the inquisition as much as did its victims.

The famous letter of these three nobles to Philip, dated March 11, 1563, finnally led to the retirement of Granvelle. The tyrants had gone too far. Orange wrote that he was willing to discharge the duties of a good Christian, whereas a year before he would have said a good Catholic. Many nobles signed a request to the regent, Margaret, and received a half promise of leniency, followed by the organization of the famous Order of the Beggars.

Finally Philip sent what he called the Moderation - a decree of 53 articles, which, in substance, substituted the halter for the fagot. By the exasperated Netherlanders this Moderation was dubbed the Murderation, yet they began to come out into the open for their meetings. This was soon followed by the outburst of image breaking, first in the splendid cathedral at Antwerp, and later in all parts of the provinces. It was done by the lower classes and condemned by protestant and catholic alike. No property was stolen, not a woman or child was harmed, but destruction was complete. In vain did Orange plead with Philip in one of his few great speeches. The king must know that "the Netherlands were free provinces, surrounded by free countries, determined to vindicate their ancient privileges". (455)

Orange proposed to allow full freedom of worship to the three groups, catholics, Calvinists, and Lutherans. But now the Calvinists had become as dogmatic as the earlier clergy. Orange used the Lutherans to mediate and really ended up a meeting in Antwerp with a hearty "God save the king", repeated even by the Calvinists. What was Philip's answer to this pacific gesture? The Duke of Alva! Who was he? The greatest general of his age. He was given 10,000 picked Spanish troops and told to subdue the Netherlands. He said - "I have

153

tamed men of iron in my day; shall I not easily crush these men of butter?" (Griffis, 256) He was to learn that sometimes butter and cheese can become strong enough to turn even picked troops and Spanish dukes. The Council of State, dear to the hearts of Netherlanders, was supplanted, in reality, though not formally, by the famous Council of Troubles. While it included numerous Netherlanders, only Alva and two Spaniards had votes and the two had votes only when they voted as did Alva. In three months 1800 people were put to death. There were two unpardonable crimes--to be rich, or to be a heretic. Alva had promised that soon a stream of gold a yard deep would flow from the Netherlands to Spain. To the Netherlanders the Council of Troubles was the Council of Blood, and as such it is known in history.

Up to the present it would seem that the religious question predominated. We are finding that even a republic needs money and much of it. Good financial administration is essential to the success of monarchy. Good financial administration at that time meant that colonies or provinces should largely support the home state. It was just as natural for Alva and Philip to favor new taxes as for the estates to oppose them. The existing plan at least left the purse strings in the hands of the assemblies. Proposed plans would transfer this power to the Spanish representatives of Philip. Alva found it quite embarrassing to ask Philip for funds after his rash promises, so he added the last straw, and proclaimed without sanction of estates or king the famous hundredth, twentieth and tenth penny taxes.

On all property 1% was to be collected immediately. On each transfer of property, 5% of the value went to the king; while a 10% sales tax was assessed upon every article of merchandise or personal property, to be paid as often as it should be sold. The first was temporary but the 5 and 10 were to be perpetual. Again let us hope that Paul's boys do not remember that part of their Dutch history. Like Alva they seem to know too much about how to levy and care very little about

the consequences. Even scholarly old Viglius, president of the Council and staunch supporter of Granvelle and Philip, protested. Again quoting Motley--"In questions relating to the world above, many may be seduced from their con - victions by interest, or forced into apostasy by violence. - - - - - but in affairs material and financial opposition to tyranny is apt to be unanimous". (II, 285) And in this case it was. The burden was on all alike and all were now ready to fight. If more were needed to stir up opposition, it was furnished by another scheme of the duke, though not originated by him. Blok puts it thus --"One kingdom, one capital, one church, one army, one national law, municipal spirit and individualism curbed in every particular; and one nation, with general submission to one will, had been the scheme". (III, 54) Before it is too late Huey, as well as Hitler would do well to read Dutch history from this point on. Blok submits this as a sample of bitterness set to rhyme--

"Oh Netherland, thou art in straits.
Death and life are at thy gates.
Serve Spanish Tyrants if you will
Or follow, you and all your mates,
The Prince of Orange Still!
Help him to be your guide and stay
Or aid the wolf to gain his prey.
But quit your neutralizing;
Abjure the despot's cruel sway
With all its tyranizing."
(III, 62)

It is not my purpose to narrate here the events of the actual warfare. There were victories for both sides. There were despairing moments most certainly for the Netherlanders. Alva was recalled, and was followed by others little less cruel. Town after town was besieged by the Spaniards and all of us recall how some of them were saved by cutting dikes and letting in the sea with the double purpose of carrying ships and supplies to the besieged, and the overwhelming of the enemy. The exploits of these Beggars of the Sea would make several papers. If my memory serves me right the Siege of Leyden, narrated in a book called <u>Ten Great Events in History</u> first caught my boyish fancy and started my

155

interest in these Dutch long before I knew that both my father and mother were descended from those sturdy defenders of freedom.

For many years the provinces waged a lone struggle but finally England was drawn into the struggle. Ships carrying gold from Spain to pay Alva's soldiers were driven by the Sea Beggars into an English port and kept there. An appeal to Elizabeth brought a promise of redress, but she took the gold. Alva naturally was furious but Elizabeth would treat only with a sovereign. Bans and seizure of property on both sides all but ruined Netherland commerce. This and other events led Philip to plan the death of Elizabeth, and the placing of Mary Queen of Scotts on the throne. Alva was made the unwilling agent to carry out this futile plan.

Later, long before Elizabeth realized it, her subjects saw that the Dutch cause was their own. Doubtless there had been individual English and Scottish adventurers in the Dutch army but in 1572, Dutch refugees in England bore the expense of the sending with the queen's blessing of 300 English soldiers. Their work was very effective and they were not plunderers. Soon Sir Humphrey Gilbert came with 1500 recruits. Quoting Griffis--"In this manner began the training on Dutch soil of those Englishmen who were to be the military advisers, leaders, and founders of American colonies, and who, catching from the Dutch their inextinguishable love of freedom, were thus prepared to lay the foundation of new commonwealths beyond the seas." (696-697) Here we find such names as Sir Walter Raleigh, Captain John Smith, Captain Miles Standish, Governor Thomas Dudley, Major John Mason, all early colonial military officers. From the Spaniards, then considered the best soldiers in the world, these men learned the military art. From the Dutch they learned how to use it under Cromwell in their own struggle against tyranny. Even in diplomacy they had their training for William Brewster went as page with the representative of Elizabeth who arranged the alliance between England and Netherlands(1584) We are all familiar with the attempts of the Pilgrims to find new homes in

Holland. Thus was American history linked very definitely with the Dutch struggle for civil and religious freedom.

But we are ahead of the story. Realizing that they were powerless as individual provinces, Holland, Zeeland, Zutphen, Utrecht, and the Frisian provinces finally agreed on a plan of union. The 26 articles recited their ancient privileges and present duties, both civil and religious, and provided a simple democratic government. Though this Union of Utrecht, so called because it was promulgated from that city, is regarded as the foundation stone of the Netherland Republic, the framers did not so intend it. They had not yet declared their independence of Spain, and no allusion to such action was made in the act of union. Such declaration came two years later, in 1581. Griffis says--"The establishment of a Republic, which lasted two centuries, which threw a girdle of rich dependencies entirely round the globe, and which attained so remarkable a height of commercial prosperity and political influence, was the result of the Utrecht Union, but it was not a premeditated result. A state, single towards the rest of the world, a unit in its external relations, while permitting internally a variety of soverignties and institutions - in many respects the prototype of our own much more extensive and powerful union - was destined to spring from the act thus signed by the envoys of five provinces." (588)

One would say that this union was much more like that under our Articles of Confederation than our Constitution. Faulty, like our own Articles, it did serve as a nucleus about which to organize opposition to Spain. When, on the 26th of July, 1581, at the Hague, these United Provinces finally declared their independence of Spain and renounced forever their allegiance to Philip, they had ready at least a form of government. And its fundamental principle was

that of freedom, civil and religious. It did not include all of the 17 provinces, for the 10 Walloon provinces elected still to follow Philip. In the main the people of these provinces were descendants of the Gallic tribes. This territory later became Belgium.

To the provinces of this union different leaders were chosen, Orange finally accepting almost kingly power in Holland and Zeeland. But he did so because of urgent pleas from the people, not by appointment of higher authorities. Indeed he was now proclaimed Spanish enemy No. 1,(though they may not then have known any real Dillengers) and a ban was placed upon his life. From that time on there were innumerable plots and attempts on his life. Finally Orange was killed in his own home by one who had plotted for seven years to accomplish this deed. It is said that he purchased the gun with which he killed the Prince from money that the latter had given him with which to buy shoes. Though the assassin was almost immediately killed, the reward was bestowed upon his parents, to whom Parma and Phillip allotted the estates and honors of Orange.

History has dealt rather generously with this outstanding character. Americans are rather apt to think of Orange as a combination of Washington and Lincoln. He was an aristocrat, a splendid general, and a born leader, as was Washington. With it all he had a passionate love for freedom, and sacrificed himself that even the most lowly might enjoy its blessings, as did Lincoln. To write a history of Netherlands is to give in detail the biography of William of Orange.

His death was a staggering though not a fatal blow to the new republic. New leaders appear, though they could never command the full loyalty accorded to the Prince. The son, Maurice, a lad of 17 years when Orange was killed, became a great soldier. But he was not a match for the able Duke of Parma who now represented Philip. The alliance with England brought an army under the Duke of Leicester and Sir Philip Sydney, but little was accomplished. Then came the Invincible Armada. Philip had decided that his plot to seize England must succeed. To the aid of the Armada was to come Parma with his trained Spanish

troops. Lord Howard commanded the English ships, assisted by Drake, Hawkins, Frobisher, names very familiar to every American child. We all know how the Invincible Armada was all but annihilated. Fewer of us recall that it was the Dutch mariners that prevented Parma from reaching England which many think would have assured Spanish victory. Thus again, in another one of the ten great events in history, these Dutch defenders had turned the tide in favor of freedom. Had the Spanish won we are told that our history might have been such as our southern neighbors have had and to some extent are still making.

Under Maurice and Barnveldt the struggle was continued for many years. In 1609, under pressure of the English and French ambassadors, a twelve years truce was signed. The Dutch got about all for which they asked but most of it was not mentioned in the articles signed, just a way of "saving the face" of the Spaniards. At the end of the truce in 1621, hostilities were resumed and continued in a desultory way until 1648. The Dutch struggle had simply became a part of the Thirty Years War, involving most of Europe, and was closed with the treaty of Westphalia. The original actors, Philip and Orange, had seen not only the beginning but the most important part of the 80 years contest between autocracy and freedom.

It is very difficult, indeed practically impossible, to separate the religious from the civil motives. Griffis, reflecting no doubt the views of Motley, thinks that without the religious ardor the civil conflict could not have been sustained. And yet we have seen that it was the infringement of ancient civil rights that brought the actual revolution. No sooner had the Calvanists won their point in the truce of 1609, than they became as dogmatic as had been their predecessors. Not yet had they learned to differentiate between the form and the substance of religion. To them religion was the doctrine of the reformed church, and this church was simply Calvinism. They were predestinarians and placed religion above the state, but with it all they were intensely democratic. Under the influence of Arminius their religious doctrines were eventually softened.

We have talked only of two phases of Dutch life. They were active in all lines and were intellectual leaders of Europe. It is said that the favorite way of celebrating a victory during the long struggle with the Spanish was to found a university. Groningen and Leyden are examples of several. Even in their centenial celebrations of victories they continued to broaden in some way their educational facilities. Their trade with all parts of the world and their educational zeal developed the greatest geographers of the period. Mercator made the famous map still called by his name. In history and philosophy we have Grotius, Descartes, and Spinoza. We know that they established colonies and maintained trade with the East Indies. No doubt it was in a search for a nearer route to these lands that led Hudson into his discovery of the river that bears his name. They taught others navigation.

In art the Flemings did their part. The names of Rembrandt and Rubens are familiar to all. Whether or not the Dutch could substantiate their claim that the printing press was invented at Haarlem, it is well known that Amsterdam and Rotterdam, in the days of the Republic, put forth more books than did all the rest of Europe. If my memory serves me well, these same Dutch diamond cutters of Amsterdam became the early bankers of Europe. Some may say they deserve no great credit for that.

In the preface to his Story of Holland, Rogers makes these statements:--"I hold it true that the revolt of the Netherlands and the success of Holland is the beginning of modern political science and of modern civilization. - - Holland was the solitary European state for a long time, in which a man's religious opinions were no bar to his exercise of all civil rights." "The debt which rational and just government owes to the seven provinces is incalculable. To the true lover of liberty, Holland is the Holy Land of modern Europe, and should be held sacred." Granting that these may be the exaggerated statements of an enthusiast, and realizing fully their many faults, we may safely conclude that we Americans owe no little

debt of gratitude to these Dutch who refused to be physically submerged by the sea or spiritually controlled by Spanish tyranny.

## Bibliography

Blok, Petrus Johannes, History of the People of Netherlands, Putnam's Sons, 1900. Vol. I and III.

Griffis, William Elliot, The Student's Motley - Rise of the Dutch Republic. Harpers, 1898.

Morris, Charles - Famous Days and Deeds in Holland and Belgium, Lippincott, 1915.

Motley, John Lathrop - Rise of the Dutch Republic, Vol. I, II, III. Harpers, 1855.

Rogers, James E. Thorold, The Story of Holland, Putnam's, 1888.

Dixie Laughs!
(The Sociology of Southern Humor).

Feb. 4, 1935

Paper #17.

By J. Marshall Taxay

[illegible] the many bubbles of illusion that have been pricked the Dixie [illegible] not the least. The old traditions and legends of Southern chivalry, genteelness and mellowed living have been thoroughly exploded.

[illegible] has been largely done by Southern writers. The novels of Faulkner, Thomas Wolfe, Erskine Caldwell and less known figures have done a workmanlike job. "Sanctuary" and "The Sun Also Rises" are an [illegible]ger in seeing Dixie as she really is. The wide interest elicited by [illegible]'s "Tobacco Road" has been rewarded by a new understanding of the [illegible]decadence below the Mason-Dixon line.

[illegible] curious that there has not been a painstaking examination of the [illegible] of the South. It awaits an able craftsman. Even a cursory analysis, however, will reveal how close the picture is to that ~~limned~~ framed by the novel-

[illegible]ritable Tennessee distiller sent a gift of whiskey for Christmas [illegible]rovident friend. The beneficiary returns the middle of January [illegible]nting that a little more of the gift would be useful.

"[illegible]'t you working overtime, Mose?" queries the benefactor. "If I remember rightly only a couple of weeks ago I sent you a whole keg".

"Well, Colonel," elucidates the petitioner, "you must remember that a keg of liquor don't last very long in a family that can't afford a cow".

[illegible] Kentucky mountains a jerk-water road fringes ~~through~~ the knobs. [illegible]ain labors asthmatically upgrade the engineer stops the locomoti- [illegible] a procession cross the track. A pack of hounds streaks by baying, [illegible]eback gallop at top speed. Shrill whoops and horn blasts cheer the [illegible]r the troupe is sucked into the deep timber a Yankee passenger [illegible] a native.

[illegible]iff's posse?"
[illegible], is the ~~hurgid~~ terse response.
[illegible] they're off to alynching?"

163

"'s 'tain't that".
"Then why this chase?" authorit
"Well", slowly drawls the ~~expert~~, "it's this away: Judge Grum's oldest Jim Jr., comes of age today. They're runnin' him down to put pants on."

Further illumination is shed on the same judgg himself in the full panoply of judicial dignity, discharging his duties on the bench. The case in point hear grew out of the death of a cow under a freight train. The plaintiff's attorney was a lineal descendant of no less than Demosthenes. In graphic, moving speech he painted the plethoric virtues of the lamented Susie. He pictured her sweetness and gentleness; her capacity as a mother. He shed tears over the great bereavement to her own family, a calf of tender years. He expostulated upon the cruelty of a public utility which in its heedlessness had at one fell swoop made mince of the mother and left an orphan of the progeny.

"And, finally, Your Honor" he thundered "if the train had been run as it should have ran, and if the bell had been rung as she should have been rung, and if the whistle had been blowed as she should have blew--both of which I've done neither--this here mother cow would not have been injured at the time she was killed"

The venerable John Marshall of those parts in a voice husky with ~~deep~~ emotion at last not time. "I've done heard enough. Plaintiff wins." He was about to enter judgment for the full sum of the damages when opposing attorney arose. He, too, claimed a right to be heard. Though the Court had already made up its mind, it saw the fairness of the young genetlemen being allowed to if he wished to make a speech.

The corporation lawyer dropped his ballast and skyrocketed to the oratosphere. His was a genuine golden tongue, and no devaluation there. He scaled the empyrean loftiness. Among the valid data and factitious he adduced was reference to the American eagle, the Bill of Rights, First and Second Corinthians, Nathan Hale's fidelity, the Bonny Flag Which Bears tu a Single Star. As verbal icing he rounded off by

...ly giving the Rebel Yell.

...dge Crum sank into his seat. He wiped his streaming eyes on his shirt-...w. Quivering with wracking sobs he cried: "Don't that beat all. Defen-...e".

...t pedagogy is a jurisprudence's close rival. An examination is being ...for the position of principal of a colored school in Mississippi. One ...the most promising applicants bore himself with the asurance that scho-...stic occasionally imparts. The questioner would select a word from the ...history and the candidate would render the proper definition. The word "...ardy".

...The candidate freezes stiff. His eyes roll in his head as he recoils ...in schock.

..."Which?" his softly asks.
...The word is repeated.
..."I believe you said 'jeopardy' didn't you, suh?" The little man vacillates for time
..."Certainly, 'jeopardy'. You know the word, don't you?"
..."Yes, yas, suh, fluently"
..."Since you are so familiar with it, what is your interpreation?"
...The candidate takes a deep breath. Gallnatly he closes his eyes and ...replies.
..."Well, suh," he confidently responds, " in reply to the question pro-...unded 'jeopardy' properly refers to any act committed by a jeopard."
...He was hired on the spot.

...culture, politics is bred in the bone of the natives. One of them ...with an inexplicable streak of ~~xxxxxxxx~~ enterprise leaves the Bluegrass ...district for California. Inevitably he drifted into politics. His habits ...genial and his tongue silver. His campaign was spirited . When the pri-...maries were in he was third of three candidates. He determined to ...leave he migrated. At a farewell dinner given by his friends he ...availed himself ofthis parting shot.

..."Gentlemen," he proclaimed, "I'm going to quit this cussed state. I'm ...going straight for Kentucky--the one place fit for gentlemen to live--...where niggers make your crop for you and the sheriff sells it".

...How the aspiring statesman spoke can be established from many sou-...rces. The Georgia community became interest in a project of importing

...groans into the neighborhood ~~and~~ to colonize them. At the courthouse ... was held to discuss details of the proposal. In the group was ... and highly respected colored citizen. After the meeting the ...de it his business to extend special greetings to the venerable

... you, Uncle Zeke", he beamed, "I was glad you were with us. I ... you approve the program we're launching?"

..., Hunnel, I wouldn't go so fur ez to say dat. To tell you de truth, ... already mo' w'ite folks in dis county than us niggers kin support"

...dness is , of course, an extreme rarity. The average dusky citi- ... his place. Even then he is occasionally handled with anything but ... A mob one night took a negro out of the county jail and, follow- ...scribed ritual, hanged him at the roadside. With the intent of ... the body they riddled him with bullets and then kindled a fire

...ight of the rising flames something was seen moving in a brush ... the scene of execution. An old colored man was dragged out. He ... his way home when he saw the lynchers coming and sought cover. ... poked in his face and men swore it would be his life if he da- ... what he had seen. The old man protested the whole thing was pu- ...fair of white folks. He denied any interest or concern in the mat-

... felt it urgent to impress the witness further. Casually cocki... ... a long pistol, he pointed his thumb over his shoulder toward ...-tree and shouted:

... know that balck devil yonder got what he deserved, don't you?

... furtively craned his neck about. He gazed for a moment upon ...d corpse. With devout fervor he replied:

... it looks to me he got off mighty easy".

... of Alabama a place is pointed out where lynchings were so ... Ez, before the rural-free-delivery-system, held the contract

166

...ing mail in the neighborhood. He was so regular that clocks were ... rounds.

... he was over two hours late in reaching the end of the line. As th... were about to organize a posse to search for him, Uncle Ez ambled in th...

"...held you back,Uncle Ez?" inquired the postmaster. "Did you happen to ... or did an accident happen to you?"

"...one, nor both", responded the bearer of tidings. "About ten this ..., jes' before I crossed the creek, I come to where some of the bo s had ... hangin' right that in the public road. Well, suh, my mare she ... and shied back, and I jes natchelly couldn't make her go past him ... finally I had to tear down a panel of rail fence and lead her thru ... the fence back up again and go through the woods down into the ... ford the creek and then tear another gap in the fence before I coul... in on the turnpike--and that was what kept me so late". He stop-... inate and then proceeded in a hurt tone:

"..., boys, it does look to me like there oughter be a law against lea... hangings in the public road".

... cases of suffering, illiteracy, poverty and degradation explain the ... of the retrogressing Southern whites as well as the black. The spiri... s have been afflicted as well. The colored parson is not always ... white colleague. Erskine Caldwell's recent study of a Southern ... is more than fiction. Too much, therefore, cannot be expected ... of his colored brethren.

... of a colored shrine in Louisiana was charged with embracing a ... ber of the parish. The evidence appeared conclusive. The ac... himself with cogency and eloquence. The word "pastor" he poin- ... "shepherd". He called attention to the stained glass depicting ... a shepherd carrying a lamb. He concluded that as a shepherd

167

followed Scripture in taking a member of his flock into his arms.
sons perceived the logical and theology of the overmastering ar-
. Accordingly they went into executive session and framed resolutions.
was exonerated, but a proviso was attached.
it finally resolved, ef in the future our beloved pastor should
stealin' over him to tek one of de lambs of de flock in his
shall tek a ram lamb".

~~tragedy of decay of a society is clear in the humor of Dixie. Its~~
~~prizes volumes of sociology.~~

here in Louisiana is invited to officiate over the remains of a
lightning. Leblon, a farm-hand, met a violent death. In the midst
bolt from the sky struck him and scarcely enough was left for

have an elaborate funeral. A colored minister, noted for his
was imported at considerbale expense to preach the sermon. He
his swing and amidst swaying and moaning he reached the cli-
tion:

"For our brother was swift and sudden. He didn't linger for
de bed of pain and affliction. He did not suffer and waste
away. De Lawd jest teched an electric button in de skies and sum-
moned brother".

The tragedy of social decay is obvious in Dixie laughs. Its humor sum-
prizes volumes of sociology.

168

Paper #19.

# ASTRONOMY? A CULTURAL STUDY.

a paper

read before

THE TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

by

Daniel L. Harmon.

February 16, 1935.

Astronomy, a Cultural Study.

If a man is a good honest mule driver his calling is as honorable and as worthy of commendation as is that of the statesman, the teacher, or the industrialist. It is not the occupation, for our world needs the lowly laborer as much as it needs the executive, but the method of performance and the ethical devotion to duty of the performer, that count in the pattern of life behind and above the mundane, humdrum appearance that affects our human senses. However, it would seem that the teamster could more perfectly discharge his tiresome task if he would put as much difference as possible between his position and that of the mule. In short, the man is not true to the supernatural endowments he has received from his Creator if he does not attempt, in some measure, to develop his mental capacity beyond that possible in the mind of the mule. What is to be the guiding principle of man when he says that civilization demands that he improve himself? What is the epitome of humanity? Why should nations spend millions on education if the purposes of that education are vague and confused? And I doubt if there be any of my hearers who has not confessed, at least to himself, that the entire structure of educational methods is of poor design if not at times of faulty architectural execution. Why should this be so? Education is merely a struggle to humanize the peoples of the world. It is the fruition of an inborn desire of our intellects to rise above the other animals that wander this earth, guided only by the urge to live and multiply. Man is a creature with ambition to know, to grow, and to gain something beyond mere physical pleasures. In the dim, prehistoric past when man first emerged to the light of day, he must have been very much like his neighbors who crawled through the slime of the swamps or thrashed through the jungles of antiquity. But the long, slow process of

learning to take advantage of his particular endowments of memory, reason, imagination, and spiritual aspirations, is gradually placing man in a plane of his own, above the other creatures.

Within the last generation Science has revolutionized our life. Machines have taken the place of men in industry and thereby not only provided the means of enjoying leisure but created that leisure to be enjoyed. The fact that the perversity of human nature has made of this revolution of industrial method a boomerang that, in its uncontrolled flight, has allegedly reacted to the misery of the less priveleged classes of society and the unethical aggrandizement of the more priveleged, should not be blamed upon the advancement of the scientific mind. But be that as it may, the primary purpose; that is, the building of mechanical giants and the conquering of the forces of nature; is not the only goal of human endeavor. The ultimate goal has ever been to provide man with the time and means to exercise his highest powers:- his imagination, his reason, his aesthetic emotions, and his spiritual aspirations:- the faculties that distinguish him from the lower animals. The excursions of the scientific mind into the nature of things has broken down the barriers of constrained intellect, has opened the frontiers of thought, has extended the mental horizon of earlier days, and led the human spirit into a veritable paradise wherein through the unlimited exercise of his mental gifts, man can further increase the gap that separates him from the ass and the ox, in short, can become truly cultured.

And it was in the field of Astronomy that man first began this trek toward the perfection that should in the future identify him as a creature made in the image and likeness of God. Long before the dawn of recorded history, the inevitable rising and setting of the sun, the periodic journey of the moon across the starry firmament, and the definite reappearance at nightfall of stars in an expected position,

must have done much to make the cave-dweller "THINK". At first these phenomena would have aroused in him feelings common to all animals, namely, curiosity and fear. But man soon realized the possibility of applying a practical value to these occurrences. Hunting certain animals was more profitable on a moonlight night than in the blazing sun. Ominous clouds in the vaulted ceiling drove him into his cell before the torrential reains might catch him unawares and remove a master of a subterranean dungeon. Hence man must have experienced an excusable feeling of superiority over the denizens of the air, field, and stream, a feeling of superiority in the stirrings of a strange inward desire to make himself even more superior. And therein we have the beginnings of what we have in mind when we use that word, culture, today. Through the fields of Astronomy, Philosophy, and Applied Science, then, as the centuries sped past, man would observe and think, then state and develop certain postulates. By continued thinking and innumerable repetitions he began to believe these postulates and in believing he naturally gave to himself a position of rank, not only among the lower animals, but also among his fellow men, and sometimes ,unfortunately, in respect to his God. And again then, when the much desired cultural attainments bid fair to consume the race they should benefit, Astronomy comes to the rescue and gives to the real thinkers a feeling of their actual insignificance in the universe of space, matter, and time. At the same time it would create anew the appreciation of the real dignity of the human intellect and its powers of reasoning, as the counterpart of the Divine, and therefore, worthy of freedom and advancement. As the science of measurement grew; and no race can advance until that race learns to measure and measure exactly; the limitless laboratory provided by nature in the universe beyond our tiny sphere, furnished man with the means to test all his philosophical plans. At the same time by the collecting of a vast amount of observational data, the order of magnitude

of which again taxed his undeveloped mental elasticity and through exercise developed that mental capacity to a degree unattainable in any other field of cultural endeavor, man was urged onward and upward. For who can, without considerable thought and a plan of intellectual progress, appreciate the magnitudes of length, mass, and time, met with in the exact science of Astronomy? In the vastness of this field of endeavor, tomes of knowledge untouched and unsuspected, remain to be opened and read when man has advanced further along that cultural road to wisdom. The beauties of the electron theory as presented today by the physical chemist to explain, with a tolerable degree of satisfaction, the mysteries of matter and energy, will receive its proof or refutation in years to come when means are found to test it in the laboratory of the sky. Even now we can explain the enormous density of the matter composing the twin star to Sirius on the basis of this theory. According to the electron theory the atom of any elemental substance is made up of a heavy, electrically positive neucleus and a relatively insignificant mass of negative electrons at definite distances from this neucleus. These electrons are traveling in spherical orbits with great velocities, and it is the size of the space which they sweep out and into which no other atom can penetrate that we think of as the volume of the atom. As stated above the mass of the atom exists in the heavy neucleus and hence if one could, by some means involving heat or pressure or perhaps both, remove the outer electrons, he could pack the remaining neuclei more closely and thereby greatly increase the mass per unit volume of the resulting aggregate of matter. That process has not been accomplished here on earth to date, but with the limitless tools of nature it could happen in the surrounding universe. And the theory is, that exactly the above mentioned process has operated in the twin of Sirius, thereby producing matter so dense that a pint of it weighs twenty six tons. And these few statements showing how many

phenomena need to be and can be explained, certainly proves the efficacy of Astronomy in widening the grasp of the human mind.

Since in its advanced stages Astronomy is more mathematical than mathematics, it must needs be most precise. Even in the kintergarten presentation Astronomy must impress the child with a sense of exactness and precision, for he can grasp, as did the cave man, the definiteness of recurrence of celestial phenomena. The high school mathematician can calculate from a few personal observations and his knowlegge of geometry, the approximate position of Venus three weeks from tonight. The boy scout, even the cub, can learn in a few minutes how to use the Big Dipper as a clock, on any night that it can be seen, and from it tell the time to within five minutes. And it is to the eternal edification of the advanced astronomer that he can calculate to a foot, the location on the surface of the earth, of the edge of the shadow cast by the moon during a total eclipse of the sun, and be so sure that observers travel thousands of miles and erect expensive apparatus where he indicates, in order to collect invaluable data during a few seconds of midday darkness. Hence the training of the mind in precision and exactness afforded by a study of Astronomy is indisputable.

As we gaze at the celestial sphere at any time, we are so limited by our physical make up that we see all heavenly bodies only as points of light projected against a two dimensional background. The brightness varies from star to star but even that can not be taken as a measure of the relative intrinsic intensity of energy emanation from the respective sources. Herein then, lies a field of human training both necessary and desirable, namely, the use of the reasoning power. This power is attributed to the mind of man alone and marks at certainly the possibility of his cultural ascension above his fellow creatures of the earth. It is only by the power of reason, the perfect application of logical thought, the creation by each individual

in his own mind of a mental picture of the three dimensional actuality of the universe, that the real arrangement of the heavenly bodies can be appreciated. And if there is any faculty of the human mind more worthy of development than this power of reasoning, it does not so appear to the author, as he views the disastrous after effects produced in the modern world by nothing more than the lack of application of logical common sense. Ninety nine percent of our misery, from the eviction of Adam and Eve to the turmoil of today, could have been avoided by recognizing and applying the law of cause and effect. If a study of Astronomy helps in the smallest way to develop this power it certainly is worth while.

One of the benefits most appreciated by the really humanized or cultured individual, is the ability of not being lonely when alone. The particular and immeasurable pleasure of contemplation, of leisurely introspecting, of reliving past events and happy memories,; is another of the attributes granted to man alone. And Astronomy supplies a training of the memory equal to that given in any course of study. Go where we please and gaze at night into the diamond studded dome above and we will recognize old friends, that is, if we have learned to know thoroughly those friends when we saw them back home. To know where to look in order to see Polaris is some satisfaction, but to realize that the light reaching us tonight from this constant lighthouse in our northern sky, left there almost a half century ago and has been travelling toward us ever since at a speed of 186,000 miles per second, adds a luster, a dignity to the North Star that will be recalled each time we gaze toward the land of the midnight sun. To recall the mythological explaination of the fact that the Great Bear has a long tail, different from that possessed by any that roam our forests, gives to this constellation a real interest. The story is that Arcas, the son of Callisto, the beautiful woman whom Juno because of jealousy, had transformed into a bear, was about to kill his mother, not recognizing

her in that form. To prevent the matricide, Jupiter grasped her by the tail and flung her into the sky. Of course, the bear being very heavy and the distance to the heavens being great, the tail was somewhat stretched in the process. Another thought to remember about Ursa Major is that, in all the independent civilizations that have existed in segragated parts of the world, the mythological figure and the constellation name assigned to this particular part of the celestial sphere have been in some way connected with a bear. And Orion as a mighty hunter, Aldebaran that flaming star along the zodiac as the eye of Taurus the bull, the story of the twins as recalled when we see Gemini, all these legends, as well as the dimensions, velocities, and directions of motion, tend to make one feel among old friends no matter from where one views the stars. And what is more striking is the feeling of loss when one has travelled northward or southward so that some of the familiar stars have dropped below the horizon. And all this satisfaction, this pleasant revelling in stored knowledge, is the result of a well trained memory, another advantage of a study of Astronomy.

The imagination too, can be trained and exercised through Astronomy. The fact that the pseudo science of astrology has gained such eminence from time to time among the ignorant shows the extent to which the imagination can be aroused through contemplation of the outer universe. With no basic facts to support it, with nothing but fear born of ignorance to prepare the gullible for the unscrupulous vender of professed prognostications, astrology has ever been a paying racket. This shows an undesirable exercise of the imagination, to be sure, but I have mentioned it to show the possibilities involved in a study of the stars. There are admittedly many more examples in life where the exercise of the imagination wisely directed has redounded to the credit of the individual and the advantage of the race. The debt we owe our poets is admitted by all. And what topic provides the theme for more poetic pleasures than the realm of

Astronomy. As one pictures the beauty of the exact functioning of the solar system, the sun and his far flung family of speeding planets, asteroids, and comets, governed by the law of universal gravitation discovered by the illustrious Newton, it is but a short step for the trained imagination to propound a picture of the planetary atom mentioned above, a picture as yet unseen by human eyes but invulnerable to date, to all the onslaughts of experimental testing. If the mind is to attempt to fathom the infinitely small there is no better training than to contemplate the infinitely large. The beauties of fiction reach a new climax in such works as the so called Phantascience of Eric Temple Bell, known by the pen name of John Taine, who tells a story of fanciful history based upon the accuracy of his mathematically trained mind. And surely facts are more strange than fiction when those facts are discovered (shall we say accidentally ?) while the imagination is playing freely among the mysteries of the Astronomical world.

And last but not least, we have the advantages offered by Astronomy to the development of a natural characteristic of humanity, namely, the desire for the supernatural. Man is a creature with spiritual aspirations. His desire for some greater law to follow, some greater Being to worship and depend upon, has been a powerful influence in all stages of cultural progress. Inevitably connected with the rise of all civilizations, in the past, has been some school of spiritual aspiration, And the neglect of this phase of national existence has just as inevitably introduced the downfall of those dynasties that are now destroyed. And when can man feel such a spirit of dependence upon a Supreme Being, such a need for revering a God, as when he meditates upon the vastness and exactness of the universe outside our earth? The stars could not follow such definite paths from aeon to aeon were there not some Supreme Governing Power behind it all. And that thought alone when once aroused in the mind of a human is sufficient

reward for any amount of study of Astronomy.

Now, we,as a people, exert ourselves at great expense through a vast educational system, to acquaint the oncoming generations with the political, economic, and military past of our city, state, nation, and world. We train, or strive to train, our successor in the processes employed in the affairs of humanity. We give him more or less of a plan of religious procedure. We carefully teach him his duties as a citizen. But more importantly, one would think from appearances, we attempt with a carefully chosen curriculum, a capsule diet of accepted serums, to make him self sustaining in a material world. And all this time we leave him blind to the great universe in which we live, ignorant of the wonderful realms outside the earth. It is important to know man's world but is it not also quite desirable to appreciate the universe, the world of God? And it is not limited to any one class to know this world. We can teach the kintergurten child to point his left hand toward the setting sun, his right to where it will rise tomorrow morning, and then watch him recognize the Big Dipper in the sky directly before him. Let him trace the line from the pointers to Polaris, the North Star. Then let him, at certain times of the year, extend the arc formed by the handle of the Dipper until he notes a bright star. The name of this star can be remembered from this method of discovery. It is Arcturus. Then remind the child that the light from this star started the Century of Progress Exposition in 1933 and you will have planted a thought in his mind that will require a lifetime of study to analyze. Ask him to look directly overhead at a certain time of the year, and the very bright, white star seen there is Vega. Drop toward the West from Vega and he next comes to a star, Deneb, that is ten thousand times as bright as our sun. Having found Deneb you will have to answer his question concerning the bright haze he sees, which is the Milky Way.

Also you can give him an early introduction to geometry by showing the perfect right triangle in the sky with Vega, Deneb, and Altair at its corners. Another design easily discovered is the large cross lying in the Milky Way with Deneb at the top. For a simple test of his vision ask him to see the visible twin to the star in the bend of the handle of the Big Dipper, Alcor twin of Mizar. And then you will have to discuss what is meant by a twin star. Ask him to find as many red stars as possible. If he includes Mars, you can arouse his imagination and win his everlasting admiration by explaining the planets as different from the stars. Take a Boy Scout troop out on a hike on a clear night and try to find time to talk about anything else when they once discover that you know something about Astronomy. Ask the college physics student why moonlight could be expected to have an effect upon a human being different from that produced by sunlight. He will tell you about polarization of light, that phenomenon that definitely established the necessity of an undulatory theory of radiation. And ask the cynic to contemplate the periodic return of Halley's comet after an absence of seventy five years and then ask him to try to prove his funtastic theories of an egocentric universe. In short, show me a desirable thesis that you would care to have developed and proven, in the most erudite field of human culture, and I dare say I can find in the science of Astronomy a method of convincing proof.

And now, in conclusion, Mr. Toastmaster, college president, teacher, [illegible]dworth clerk, preacher, lawyer, engineer, come with me and bring your college. We need the capacity to learn, a universal endowment of the human race. We need a library for study. We have it if we but get away from the glare of the city, in the countless stars that march triumphantly overhead. Each is a source of learning in all the fields of human endeavor, so profound as to eclipse the possibilities

of any book library available. We will need a telescope. You have it with you, your two eyes through which you always have received and will as long as you live, receive your greatest pleasures and cultural advancements. With such a course of study, you can cast off the shackles of custom and the inhibitions of the school room and allow your spirit to expand with joy, to absorb facts and to develop theories, to purge out through healthy mental exercise the petty jealousies that have dwarfed its stature, and then we shall be truly cultured and be able to return to our humdrum but necessary tasks as better neighbors and more sincere worshipers of the Author of it all.

Daniel L. Harmon.

St. Mary-of-the-Woods, Indiana.
February 18, 1935.

BLANK PAGE

Paper #21
3/11/35

# BIRD MIGRATION

W.E.Ouweneel

March 4, 1935

182



# BIRD MIGRATION

Bird migration is one of the common phenomena accepted as simple and taken for granted by mostpeople because of its infallibility, but which leaves its most thorough students awed with the scantiness of human knowledge.

Most of us carry the kindergarten version of bird migration which says that in spring the birds come north and in fall they go south. In general that is true but it falls far short of giving a true picture of migration even as it exists in North America. In Indiana some birds migrate east and a few north. In other parts of North America some birds migrate west also. A study of bird movements during migration is intrigueing in itself. A study of the origin and functioning of migratian leaves one wondering.

Migration is found in every family of birds except that to which the running birds, such as the ostrich, belong. Even the Penguin which cannot fly is a notable migrant. The movements of many individual birds are erratic. Bird movements are characterized by general group movements but it does not follow that all birds follow the general movement. Most birds are gregarious during migration. Birds of prey and European cuckoos are solitary during migration.

Except for a few birds which seem to follow an isothermal line during migration, birds arrive and depart with clocklike regularity. Many of our early arrivals such as the robin, meadow-lark, and the red-winged blackbird arrive with the first warm weather without such regard to the date. Most birds arrive and leave within certain definite periods regardless of the weather. Seed eaters appear first and leave last. Insect eaters arrive later and leave earlier. Males frequently arrive before females.

Distances that birds travel vary froma few miles for the birds who descend mountain slopes to 11,000 miles for the Arctic tern which summers 450 miles from the North Pole and ~~XXX~~ lives during our winter near the Antarctic continent. Some birds common to Indidna may spend the winter in the gulf states while birds from Canada may spend the winter here. Many birds travel greater distances. Yellow Warblers migrate to Brazil, nighthawks to Argentina. Occassionally individuals from the extreme north of the range of a given species ~~THE~~ may travel farther south than ~~ANY~~ other individuals of the same species that did not breed as far north. Birds which migrate according to the calender usually have definite destinations and routes. As a rule shore birds travel the greatest distances. Nineteen species of shore birds breed north of the Arctic circle. Every one of these winters in South America and six of these visit Patagonia.

Birds do not always take the shortest route in migrating. The Marbled Godwit breeds in North Dakota and Saskatchewan. Some of the species when leaving go east to the Atlantic coast and follow it to Central America. Others move to the Pacific and follow the Pacific coast to the same destination. The Connecticut Warbler breeds in Minnesota, Wisconsin, and Michigan. It winters in South America and enters the United States by way of Florida. From Florida it goes directly to its breeding grounds. In fall however it travels east to the Atlantic and then south along the coast. Coots in Wisconsin have been known to travel south by the same route.

Perhaps the most interesting migration in North America is that of the Golden Plover. It arrives at its breeding grounds north of the Arctic circle early in June. As soon as the young are able to care for themselves, the adults migrate to Labrador where they fatten on late summer fruit. They then ~~XXX~~pass to Nova Scotia and start from there on a 2400 mile non-stop flight to South America passing in a

direct line over the Bermuda Islands and some of the West Indies to the northern coast of South America. After a short stay they continue to Argentina. According to Rowan when the young plovers migrate several weeks later, they migrate south through Central Canada, and presumably through the central states, and arrive at the same destination as their parents. After six months in South America all return to North America by crossing the gulf to Texas and Louisiana. They then move slowly up the Mississippi valley and arrive at their breeding grounds again in June. The Pacific Golden Plover makes an equally marvelous flight from Alaska to Hawaii.

Penguins swim hundreds of miles northward from their Antarctic nesting grounds between breeding seasons. Adult European Cuckoos move southward several weeks before their young. Two species of albatross breed on a certain Hawaian island, disappear for part of the year and then return for the next breeding season. Petrels and shearwaters nest in the Antarctic , migrate to the Equator, spend most of the year out of sight of land, and return to their breeding ground when the time comes. Palm warblers wintering in the West Indies breed in central Canada. Individuals of the same species wintering in Louisiana breed in Labrador. The paths of the two groups cross in Georgia almost at right angles to each other. A common tern hatched in Maine was taken three years later in Africa. Two gulls marked in the eastern Baltic Sea were captured in American waters: one near Vera Cruz and the other in Barbados. Young herons in North America migrate northward after leaving their nests and then move early south in fall.

An interesting problem in bird migration is that of the Starling successfully in North America. The species was/introduced into this country in 1890 and liberated in New York city. Since then it has spread to the middle west. Evidence obtained at Columbus, Ohio, indicates that the Starlings have developed a northeast and southwest migration. It is interesting to note that the same direction is followed by many Starlings in Europe. The origin of the birds released in New York city is not known.

South America has almost no migratory land birds. Very few birds from the southern hemisphere migrate north of the equator. Exceptions are some ocean birds. The sooty shearwater nests in New Zealand and Australia and then comes north along the Asiatic side of the Pacific. It returns south along the American side. In the tropic birds are either sedentary or nomadic. Birds may be scarce in a given area when suddenly with the flowering of a certain tree or the ripening of fruit, they willl become numerous and then disappear as quickly as they came. This is also largely true in Australia.

Data on bird movements are obtained by means of bird-banding. In 1930 more than 1700 persons were licensed by the U.S.Biological Survey to trap birds and band them. In banding, a small aluminum band is placed around the leg of the bird. Each band has a distinctive serial number stamped upon it and the words: "Notify Biological Survey, Washington, D.C.". With the aid of recaptured birds, which usually average one or two per cent except game birds which may average ten or twenty per cent, movements of individual birds may be studied. These of course assume their greatest value when there are enough to indicate general movements.

As a result of bird-banding much interesting data has been obtained on the return of individuals to the place of their birth or previous breeding. At a thirty acre banding station on Lake Minnetonka near

Minneapolis extensive bird banding was carried out for eight years. Durin that time almost 5000 birds were banded. Of these almost one-eight were/recaptured on the same ground in subsequent years. A large number of birds were observed two and three years and a few four and five years. Some of these were birds that had been banded while in the nest.

From the short list of movements just described, it will be seen that migration is not uniform for species of for geographical areas. It almost seems as if ~~this~~ each species has its own route, destination and time and some even have other notable charcteristics.

Annual migration is not confined to birds. It is also found among fish, amphibia, reptiles, crustacea, and mammals. Some fresh water fish spawn in salt water and some salt water fish spawn infresh water. Turtles and sea snakes live in water but lay their eggs on land. All mammals except ~~the~~ whales come ashore to to give birth to their young. Seal and caribou migrate. The classic example of migration among animals other than birds are those of the salmon and eel. Migration must therefore be considered as being capable in all higher classes of animals. It is most noticeable in birds only because no natural physical obstacle, except water in some cases, can prevent them from flying in any direction and as far ~~as~~ as they wish.

The toll of migration is tremendous. Frequently thousands of birds are killed in storms during migration flights and their bodies are washed upon the shore or strewn over fields. Dr. T.S.Roberts estimated that after a sleet storm in Minnesota , 750,000 birds lay dead upon the ice of two lakes each about a mile across. Many migrants are killed because of the attraction of bright lights.

187

The advantages of migration are evident in most cases. By migrating south in the fall birds avoid the rigors of winter and the severe competition of live that they would meet were they to stay. Why they return north in the spring is not quite so evident although it is true that broods are larger and sometimes more numerous for a given species in the north than in the south. Also by going north the bird population is spread over more territory and the competition for food is not as severe.

Although migration has these advantages, they are not necessarily the explanation of migration unless one is willing to suppose that the bird is a thinking and intelligent animal. Anatomists say that the brain of a bird indicates that the bird possesses little intelligencce but may have a high degree of instinctive behavior. When a bird builds a nest, it is not repeating something it has learned as an individual but something the race has learned and the bird has acquired by heredity. When intelligence is called for, birds fail.

A study of the structure of birds of the ancestors leads one to believe that they must have been earth-bound and sluggish. Migration must therefore have been an acquired characteristic. The oldest known ancestors of the bird were the archeopteryx and the archeornis which lived about 150,000,000 years ago. They were so reptilian in structure that were it not for their feathers, one would not suspect them of being related to birds. The ichthyornis which lived about 100,000,000 years ago apparently was capable of a high degree of flight but had reptilian teeth. Many of our modern types of birds existed 35,000,000 years ago and fossils 2,000,000 years old cannot definitely distinguished from the structure of modern birds. During the 150,00,000 years during which the bird has been

developing, it has been subjected to seasonal changes, and changes in environment, and has been constantly fighting its battle for survival. The actual origin of migration goes back so far into history that we can only guess how it might have happened. It seems likely that there is no single cause for migration.

In order to have a basis for the phenomenon of migration, we may assume that the essential conditions of bird life have remained unchanged for the last twenty million years. We may assume that there was an annual change in seasons and in the length of the day and that the food and environment of the birds have remained practically the same.

The theories concerning migration are numerous. All of them fit a fact ot two. Most of them fail to fit many important facts.

One theory assumes that the original home of the bird is in the north, that it is driven from its home by winter and returns as soon as weather permits. This theory overlooks the fact that most birds migrate south before winter weather is evident, many adults as soon as their young can feed themselves and many young as soon as they can fly. well. If this theory were true, one would expect the intensity of migration to vary with the intensity of the weather, but with few exceptions migration follows the calender, sometimes in defiance of weather which is fatal to the bird. It is quite evident that some birds, especially those that are insectivorous, could not survive the winter for lack of food but they leave before food supply becomes a problem. With all the ill experiences that winter would bring to most birds, neither the modern bird nor any of its recent ancestors has waited for the hardships to manifest themselves.

Another theory is that the original home of the bird might have been in the south, that over-population forces a northward flow. If that were the case, one would expect to wi'ness a constant pressure northward, held back only by severe weath r with all birds struggling at all times at the southern edge of the cold areas in an attempt to push northward. Then the plover and tern would not fly from arctic to tropical zones, the yellow ~~ZZZ~~ warbler, swallow and bobolink would not fly from Indiana to Brazil.

The best explanation of the origin of migration that can be made is a good guess based on what we know of present day habits of birds. Migration of birds is developing visibly today. Within the last generation or two the bobolink has expanded westward as the result of irrigation as has appeared places where it was unkown before. The starling which was introduced in New York city has shown within the last forty-five years shown what birds will do when free to travel by spreading in approximate circles with New York city as a center. Let us imagine as best we can what the natural course of a bird like the starling will be. Conditions in New York city, we will assume, are ideal for the bird. Being unrestricted because of its powers of ~~flight~~ flight, the birds will constantly enter new territory. As each brood leaves its nest, the members will fly in all directions of the compass. Those that fly west and south, are not likely to encounter severe weather conditions. Those that fly north are ~~also~~ likely to feel the pinch of winter. Their food supply may disappear, their feeding time may be shortened so they cannot eat enough food to meet the increased heat requirements, the short winter days and the low sun may decrease the amount of ultra-violet radiation the bird ~~receives~~ receives so that the bird suffers vitamin D deficiency and the disorders that

follow. With these means winter would exert a selective action on the birds. Perhaps they die and thus are prevented from passing on their defenseless. Some of the birds in their helter-skelter flight would fly south and escape. The following year the same story would be repeated.

"ith thousands of generations going thru these experiences, migration seems to have developed to a racial custom. This explanation assumes that it is possible for a race to profit by the experiences of individuals thru inheritance. It assumes that a gradual mental mutation has taken place which has developed as it did only because to degelop otherwise would be fatal. How a bird flies north or south and not east or west cannot be guessed.

Although the origin of migration may be buried in the far-distant past, it would appear reasonable that something is discoverable concerning the [illegible] mechanism or accomplishment of migration in practice. With bird-banding as an effective tool and laboratory methods as guides, ornithologists are attacking the problem in a modern way.

In 1925 Dr. Alvin R. Cahn suggested that migration was due to annual changes in the gonads or sex organs which secret sex hormones that produce the physiological reaction which motivates the migration. Although this factor has some bearing on migration as it functions, it is not beleived that it has anything to do with the roigin of the movement.

The best piece of work reported on this subject is that of Professor William Rowan of the University of Alberta. In 1931 he published his book "The Riddle of Migration" which describes his theory and his proof as obtained by laboratory methods. His work is notable for the proof rather than the theory as it is based

upon Dr. Cahn's theory of sex hormones.

Professor Rowan reasons as follows: Failure of food cannot be the cause of migration because birds migrate early in the summer while the food supply is ample. Temperature is too ~~it~~ irregular to explain anything so precise as the migration schedule. Temperature does affect short movements during migration but ~~they~~ cannot be responsible for its inception. Barometric pressuure cannot be shown to have any relation to the time of migration. Ultra violet radiation although an important factor in the bird's environment cannot affect the bird strongly enough to be the stimulus of migration. He says that the one factor that is an unvarying function of the season is the length of the day. By a set of experiments and laboratory investigations he has accumulated data that indicate that the length of the day may be the indirect stimulus of migration. First he observed that the reproductive organs of birds exhibit a definite rythm of size and and condition which is synchronous with the season. During the winter they are small. During the northward journey they are enlarging and during the southward journey they are decreasing in size. Reproductive organs in birds as well as other animals are known to affect activities of other parts of their bodies.

Rowan used two outdoor aviaries. One of these was equipped with electric lights. Juncos were used in his experiments. Birds in the unlighted aviary were used as the controls and the birds in the lighted aviary were the subjects of the experiments. Throughout the winter with the weather below zero most of the time he was able to change the size of the gonads of the experimentals in the lighted aviary by varying the length of their artificial day. Assuming that the effect upon the ~~gonad~~ gonads was really due to the increased amount of exercise which the birds obtained, and not the light,

Rowan constructed a small aviary, dimly lighted, with a mechanism which forced the birds to exercise with just enough light to enable them to move safely and there also he varied the size of the gonads by the amount of exercise given the birds. In midwinter he released juncos whose gonads had been brought to their summer size by exercise and the birds showed no desire to migrate. In this connection he notes that the mallards which did not migrate and were caught in winter were found to have diseased gonads showing that they lacked the physiological stimulus to migrate.

Schildmacher reports that he was able to quiet migration restlessness by injecting small amounts of a female hormone but that larger amounts of it increased the restlessness.

The work of both Schildmacher and Rowan is criticized on the ground that it does not explain the migration of young birds.

In attempting the analyze or explain the workings of migration it must be kept in mind that facts of migration may be as varied as the selective factors which control animal life.

There is one other general phase of migration and that is How do birds find their way? In this connection it must be remembered that birds are not the only animals creditied with a "sense of direction". Many a dog and cat has it if we are to believe the stories we hear. Sea lions return to their breeding grounds from mid-ocean. The European eel crosses the Atlantic to the West Indies to breed and die.

Some have suggested that birds have a magnetic sense and utilize the earth's magnetic field. No organ is known by which such a sense might function and there are too many places on the earth where the characteristics of its magnetic field are the same.

The homing instinct of birds does not seem to be related to migration because the best homers are not migratory and the first migratory act a bird performs is a flight away from home.

Undoubtedly some birds make use of sight and memory on repeated migrations because of the large number of instances in which birds return to the same vicinity each year. On the other hand penguins migrate hundreds of miles each year by swimming in the unmarked ocean and do not fail to find their habitual breeding grounds.

Some say the sun is an aid in finding direction but much migration is performed at night.

It is often assumed that young birds find their way by accompanying their parents or older birds. But cowbirds leave before their young can go and the young join their parents in the south - not the birds that reared them or the birds ~~????~~ with which they migrated. Gulls and wading birds leave their young as soon as they are self-supporting. This is also true of the Golden Plover but to make the case even more ~~??????????~~ puzzling the young take a different route south than their parents.

How a bird finds its way is a mystery.

It may seem unusual for science to admit that it cannot explain such a common and well-known phenomenon as migration. If it does sound unusual, it is most likely because the reader or hearer is used to reading or hearing about things for which science has an explanation. It must be remembered however that when science leaves mathematics, physics, and chemistry and tries to explain animal behavior, that it can see only the results of hundreds of millions of years of evolution or, in other words, the creation of modern animal life and that it cannot set up processes or experiments and watch these results evolve. To

~~a very slight degree only can it control these results~~

a very slight degree only can it control ZZZZZ results. Really bird migration is no more wonderful that the mating instinnt, the fact that n given species of bird always builds the same peculiar kind of nest, that the parents know what kind of food to feed the young, that herons like fish, or that ducks take to water even though reared by a hen. Bird migration is just another one of the phenomena of life. It is most noticeable in birds only because they have the peculiar ability to use it to the greatest advantage.

In the preparation of this paper, material from the following sources has been used freely:

Thomson's "Problems in Migration"

Wetmore's "The Migration of Birds"

Howards "The Riddle of Migration"

Robert's "Birds of Minnesota"

Bulletins of the Biological Survey

and several lesser sources.

W.E.Ouweneel
March 4, 1935

Paper #23.

# POLITICIAN

by

Lewis R. Sutin

Terre Haute Literary Club

March 18, 1935

# POLITICIAN

It has been cleverly written by one of the editors of our humorous weeklys that a politician is the fellow who gives you the keys to the city after he has taken everything worth while having.

That pithy saying sums up the attitude of the American public toward the illegitimate offspring of a young mother born in the year 1776. It is extremely difficult to turn the pages of the post revolutionary days without walking through the beautiful byways of idealism and romance. We may associate those days with the powdered wig, the colonial home, the spinning wheel, the horse and carriage. We may trek thru the wintry snows with the country doctor, cuddle near the fireplace of a log cabin, struggle with the pioneer in his efforts to overcome the difficulties of early American life. But as we thumb the pages of the Declaration of Independence, Valley Forge, the constitutional conventions, and almost hear the heart throbs of a bewildered people, we see thru the thin veil of home, doctor and pioneer, the faces of Washington, Adams, Hamilton, Jefferson, Madison, Hancock. We center our attention around a large oak table in the center of a spacious drawing room. Washington sits at the head. He occupies a large, carved, high-backed chair, at the top of which appears a painting of the rising sun, emblematic of his country's future. He arises to call the meeting to order. With his tall figure drawn up to its full height, he exclaims in solemn tones, "It is too probable that no plan we propose will be adopted, but if to please the people we offer what we ourselves dissapprove, how can we afterward defend our work? Let us raise a standard to which the wise and honest can repair; the event is in the hand of God." Thus the politicians

began their labors. Thus democracy was born.

Virgin America shown bright, a satellite among the stars. In almost every other part of the world, government was synonimous with king, despot, emperor. Those politicians ruled who could tickle the vanity of princess or duke. Power and authority followed the smooth tongue, the clever wit, the dextrous manner. The object to be overcome by these characteristics was a product of false values, of untold riches, of pampered breeding. It represented a ruling class who believed themselves to be the direct descendants of the ruler of the universe, whose precepts and authority they had taken over to preserve and guard. Tallyrand and Metternich and Bismarck radiated in this atmosphere. They understood the frailties of those few whom they guided and they blossomed with the spring flowers and sucked the honey from the pollen year in and year out. The people in these countries lived, raised families, paid taxes and died. The cry for justice and mercy which pierced the heavens brought forth wars and massacres to still their voices. God was a funny sort of fellow. He was eternal and holy, yet he could not hear their screams due to the din and clamor of the sword and gun used by his descendants on earth at the instigation of political statesmen who whispered behind closed doors. Whenever internal strife threatened the country, the politicians gathered about the table and a new war was begun.

In the United States, the field of activity of the politician was greatly enlarged. Government was not a dressed up puppet who sat on a throne. It was composed of intelligent men of affairs. There was a time when it was the ambition of young college graduates to bear a hand in building up the nation. Jefferson was elected to the Virginia House of

of Burgesses at twenty-six and wrote the Declaration of Independence at thrity-three. Madison at 25 was elected a delegate to the revolutionary convention of 1776. Washington and Hamilton, young Buccaneers, together with Jefferson and Madison a decade later were moulding a new nation. Our government then was a young man's business. As the years passed and the population grew in rapid strides, and elections by people became more complicated and wealth became the aspiration of our people, human nature took a hand in deciding the by-products of democracy. We approached the biggest show on earth in the 20th Century--such lovely cultural tid bits as the 4 square gospel of La McPherson, Bishop Cannon and the Nobàe Experiment, the Belles Lettres of Brisbane; the bawdy blats of Huey Long; the rise of the school of music dysentery headed by Rudy Vallee and Bing Crosby; the literature of Gay Parisienne, Tempting Tales and Snappy Stories. I understand that a press release was issued by the United States office of Education, Department of the Interior to prospective disseminators of radio Kultur, "Present your specialty on the level of 13 year olds. Do not overrate the intelligence of your listeners". This same advice applies equally well to the cinema industry, to many newspapers.

With all of this, the politician was acquainted. He had his ear to the ground. He knew that government was made up of the people, and the people were composed of the rich and the poor, the wise and the ignorant--but mostly the poor and the ignorant, the people who associate profound sagacity with a flood of oratory, a string tie and a funeral mien. Any person 21 years of age or over became the object of the affections of every potential leader. It was early learned that votes brought power,

199

and that votes were obtained from friends, and friends were made by granting favors and help, and those who needed the help most were the poor. So the potential leaders lay down with the poor and politicians were born, ~~to~~ as a by-product of Democracy.

These politicians have become the blacksheep statesmen of the country. They are, of course, not lonesome in America. They find many friends in every business and profession which thrives. As I have had occasion to point out in a previous paper read in this club, today, we speak of the medical profession in terms of quacks and quackeries. The legal profession is best known by the name of shyster and ambulance chaser. Of the ministry, we say, "Primma Donna of the Pulpits", often referred to as Jazz Evangelists and Modern Gomorrahs. The mere mention of business and banking calls up every unethical practice known to modern codes. Even our institutions of learning have been shaken by virile attacks from the inside as well as the outside.

But the attacks upon the politician are of a different nature. When we attack a business or profession, it is usually upon the ground of an inherent dislike for certain elements which pollute it. In the case of the politician, we vent our dislike because of personal grievance--our favor was not granted, our particular tax was not imposed, or our particular legislation was not passed. On the other hand, there is the honest individual, brimful of pride, a firm believer in the finest principles of democracy, who seeks a government position for which he is qualified, but the power of appointment comes from a source far removed from his acquaintance. There are hundreds of applicants for the position, but those are eligible who are recommended by some intermediary. He calls upon him and

200

finds him a pleasant, good-hearted fellow, always courteous, always human, characteristics not always found amongst some of our more respectable citizens in other professions. You are asked to sit down and state your business. You do so. The answer which you receive is honest, and to the point. Either some attempt will be made immediately to obtain the desired result, or a negative answer will be given. If the desired result is obtained, the politician becomes a useful public servant; if not, he is public enemy number one.

It must be understood that the person to whom I refer to as politician, is not the ward heeler or the precinct committeeman. It is the responsible head of the political party in a certain community, a man who is kept in power by successful trips to the election booth; a man who is able to make contacts with big business and influential citizens, and at the same time, kiss the babies, shake sweaty hands with a smile and pass out the dimes. He may be guilty of many crimes, but he has never been guilty of the fatal blunder of being high brow or high hat. Because of the precariousness of his position, the realization comes that without a successful administration, he is stripped of his power. A journalist relates that in a French industrial center, where one must go indoors to buy anx apple, a French manufacturer was telling him of his visits to America in good times and in bad. "We French are perhaps, old-fashioned," he said, "but we long ago learned that the sun is not going to shine every day, and if a politician promises us to make the sun shine bright every day, we have the power under our system of government, to kick him out at the first drop of rain". Because of our plan of government, the eviction cannot take place every day, but hardly a year passes, but that the op-

portunity is present to clean house.

As a result, (he) the politician knows everthing about his district and the people who live in it, their problems, their needs. He is sincerely convinced that the district needs him. He scouts about the state seeking contracts for local industries, pulling w ires here, making trades there. He searches everywhere for jobs, both political and business. He is constantly in touch with the nation's leaders in quest for appointments for intelligent young men and women who might carry some influence in the community. He calls upon industries and business whom he has helped, to give jobs to laborers with large families to support. He constantly contributes to the poor. He demands an equal proportion of appointments in the state government in order that his district might be well represented. He fights for legislation which he believes will inure to the best interests of the business and professions in his district.

No doubt he has been a party to some shady deals in which he may benefit. It may not be according to the ethics taught in school or church or by the tax-payer's association, but compared with some of the dirty deals of business and finance, of unscrupulous professional men, the wrongful conduct of the politician appears quite harmless. At least, the politician passes the graft around a great deal better and to people more worthy of it. No special harm, certainly no direct harm to the poor of the city, or to the wealthy for that matter, will be done by the letting of a construction contract. But for every deal that may be fairly rotten, the politician has put thru a measure or two that far outbalanced it in community value.

But in all of this work, regardless of what its nature may be, look behind this politician, this man who is

villified in the press and in the club and in the schoolroom, and you will find those persons who are represented to be the outstanding citizens of the community. We condemn one man for unscrupulous conduct, and in the same breath praise another of the same caliber who might be of some assistance in this great national game of "grab it". As a result of over a 159 years of manipulation by opposing forces to obtain benefits at the hands of their representatives in government, there has evolved an individual who takes all of the bumps for those who seek to hide their indiscretions behind a mask of respectability.

The characteristics exercised by the politician in the normal routine of his duties is no different than the tactics employed by business men in securing profits, or bankers in the field of finance, or manufacturers in the procurement of contracts. They all play the game of politics in their respective fields, and raise the hue and cry of wolf-wolf, only when they have been beaten at their own craft and upon equal terms.

One of the most influential politicians in the country today is the American Chamber of Commerce which favors any legislation designed to concentrate wealth in the hands of a few. Any methods which money can utilize to secure those ends are used. Bribery, threats, telegrams, advertising campaigns, speakers, are called into play to overcome obstacles, and these tactics are looked upon with great admiration by the same people who would vituperate against a quiet, harmless individual who makes a suggestion to a public official whom he elected to office. The politician is not responsible for the fact that men cannot usually be elected to office without the assistance of an organized group, a group which takes more in-

terest in those who have been left by the wayside of human progress, than those who have every comfort and yet complain that politicians make them pay more taxes. Having succeeded in electing his candidate to the office, he feels that he has become the board of directors of the corporation, and his word should be respected and given due consideration in the conduct of the affairs of the business.

Come to think of it, why should the average man get excited about the conventional notion of clean government? To him it seems a remote theory, perhaps a hypocritical thing. Municipal house cleaning is insignificant when compared with the deep-rooted and legitimate racket of private landlordism which is responsible for the slum, the ugliness and the discomfort of the city. Why should he bother with a notice of municipal contracts when his banker juggles his money for the profit of directors. Why complain about priminal protection, when respectable gents are immune to prosecution. It is foolly to speak to the poor in terms of graft and corruption when they see it sparkle like two carat diamonds amongst the men for whom they work. After all, conduct is a relative term. It is good or bad according to whom the participants and the judges are. It depends upon one's sense of values. It permits human nature to take an actige interest. It is therefore improbable that the personal judgment will always be correct. Reformers often make grave errors.

Most of the attitudes we assume about public affairs are a result of rumor and biased propaganda. We are so incensed with a report of recent vice that government decay becomes a phobia. At taxpaying periods, we cry aloud for mercy

and succor, lest we sink in the mire of poverty and starvation. Every declaration of a public official is viewed with suspicion. Every demagogue gets an ear. Very few people realize that the source of most adverse opinion is a small smoke filled room where a few men with big black cigars and large jowls and paunches, work constantly to assume the reins when the adolescent minds of the public are moulded to suit their fancies.

We always see the dark side, perhaps because of environment, perhaps because of actual experience, but in the usual case because of rumor. In that case, we set up a scapegoat for all of our ills. In the field of government and political science, the scapegoat is the politician. In national politics, Farley has been recently termed the Trigger Man for the president. In smaller units, he becomes the hidden power behind big business. Oftimes, he takes the rap for a governor or a mayor. But he goes on and on. If he is displaced, another takes the helm. And time passes on. And progress is made.

There is a man who sits in his room in a comfortable chair in the evening. There may be a glow from the fireplace, or a lamp at his side. Sometimes he smokes a pipe, but during this quiet interlude, he reflects upon the hurly-burly life about him--the mad struggle for existence, the intense rapidity of daily routine, the machinations of science and invention. He wonders how the grass grows, what makes the leaves fall, how beautiful the bird sings. He dreams about the solemnity of the moon and the twinkling of the stars, and the universality of inanimate things--the rocks, the sea, the earth. Even government is an interesting phenomenon. And the politician?

End.

Walter O. Shines 205
Mar. 25, 1935

ARCHIMEDES - HIS LIFE AND CONTRIBUTIONS

Paper #24.

Almost three centuries before Christ, there lived at ...cuse, the once famous city of Sicily, one of the most ...ned scientists of antiquity. Archimedes possessed al- ... an equal knowledge of the sciences of astronomy, geometry, ...ostatics, mechanics, and optics.

There is considerable evidence to show that Archimedes ... the son of Phidias, the astronomer, and was of Greek descent, ...n about 287 B.C. and killed by the Romans following the ... and capture of Syracuse during the second Punic War in ... B.C. In one of his essays, still extant, Archimedes ...tions that his father, Phidias, had computed the diameter of ... sun. This would indicate that the father of Archimedes ... achieved considerable education and also had attained ...fficient wealth to send his son to the University of Alexandria ...r advanced education. That Archimedes was Greek is rather ...ll established by the fact that he lived on intimate terms with ...ng Hieron and his son Gelon, who were descendants of the ...iginal Corinthian settlers of Syracuse. Plutarch, in his ...ife of Marcellus, stated that Archimedes was probably a blood- ... lative of King Heron. Cicero, however, writing some ...ded and fifty years after the capture of Syracuse while he ... serving as the Roman governor of that city, stated that Archimedes was not of royal blood. Archimedes was killed ...ring the plundering of Syracuse which followed its capture, ... spite of the orders of Marcellus that his life was to be

. It is said that a soldier entered the study of
:ades while the latter was concentrated on a geometric
.. drawn in the sand on the floor, which was the usual
f drawing figures in classical times. Archimedes asked
oldier to get off the diagram and not to spoil it. The
:ier, feeling insulted at being ordered to move by the old
, killed him with his sword. Marcellus was greatly
:icted when he heard of the death of Archimedes and applied
.. lf to honoring the memory of the famous mathematician.
:arched for all the relatives, treated them with great
:.tion and granted them unusual priveleges. He caused
funeral of Archimedes to be celebrated in a most solemn
.. and erected a monument to him among the tombs of the
:ulshed of Syracuse on which was engraved, according to
viously expressed wish of Archimedes, the figure of a
.. inscribed in a cylinder. This inscription was in
.. moration of the proof that Archimedes had developed that
:lume of a sphere was equal to two-thirds that of the
:.. scribed right cylinder and its surface equal to four times
.. of the great circle. Cicero, later searching for
:.b, found it covered with rubbish and he upbraided the
:. of Syracuse for not showing greater respect for their
:.tinguished citizen. Archimedes, at his death in
.C. was reported to have attained the age of seventy-five
.., which enables one to fix the date of his birth as 287 B.C.

It is natural that history or legend should say more of

echanical inventions of Archimedes than of his theoretical
ific achievements, since the former have ever made a
r appeal to the popular mind. While in Egypt during
dies at the University of Alexandria where he came in
t with such successors of Euclid as Conon, Dositheus, and
thenes, Archimedes invented what has come to be known as
Archimedian screw. This mechanical device consisted of a
, open at both ends, enclosing a spiral in the form of a
screw which revolved on an axis. When one end of the
was submerged in the water and the axis tilted at the
angle, water flowing into it could be raised to a higher
. It was used in Egypt along the Nile River and was also
tly applied to remove water from the holds of ships.

At one time, Hiero, who was king of Syracuse, built a
so large that his men could not launch if off the slips.
aled to Archimedes for help and Archimedes overcame the
iculty by means of an apparatus of cogwheels worked by
of an endless screw. It is said that it was on this
ion, in acknowledging the compliments of Hiero, that
den made the well-known remark that had he but a fixed
t he could move the earth. Archimedes also demonstrated
ally ships could be moved by a series of pulleys.

Another story which probably has considerable truth to
that the king of Syracuse once had his goldsmiths make
crown. Later, he wished to know whether or not the gold-
had used the proper amount of gold in the metal. He put

problem into the hands of Archimedes for solution and
ling to tradition, Archimedes solved it by means of the
rences in the specific gravities of the various metals
it was supposed to have contained. It is told that the
came to Archimedes while he was taking a bath in one of the
lic baths; that he arose with much joy from the water and ran
shouting, "Eureka! I have it!", without remembering to put
's clothes. Archimedes later included this problem of the
in one of his publications.

Various machines devised by Archimedes were used with
effect against the Romans under the leadership of Marcellus
siege of Syracuse, thus delaying its capture for over
years. He contrived catapults so ingeniously constructed
to be equally serviceable at long or short ranges for dis-
ging showers of missels through holes made in the walls of
besieged city. He also devised long movable poles or
s by which heavy weights could be dropped on enemy ships
ching the walls and some with iron hooks which could be made
ten on the the ends of the boats and so tip them up at
n as to cause them to sink into the water. Marcellus is
to have derided his own engineers with their inability to
with the genius of Archimedes and this probably marks the
n of the Roman esteem for the great mathematician. Follow-
ture of Syracuse, Marcellus took many of these war
nts back to Rome where they were put on display.

The story that Archimedes set fire to many of the Roman

by means of a burning glass and concave mirrors was not
ned until several centuries after his death and is probably
rue. The mirror of Archimedes is said to have been made
form of a hexagon surrounded by rings of polygons. In
Buffon, a French scientist, managed by use of a single
rite mirror on the Archimedian model to set fire to wood at
tance of one hundred fifty feet and to melt lead at a distance
hundred forty feet. It is quite possible that Archimedes
ble to make the Romans very uncomfortable by the use of
irrors.

The tendency of Archimedes to preoccupation when in his
est studies is illustrated by other stories. It is told
he would forget all about his food and other necessities
concentrated on a problem; that he would draw geometrical
s in the ashes of the fire or, when anointing himself,
il on his body.

All of his practical machines and mechanical devices
nsidered by Archimedes to be merely the "diversions of
r at play". He attached little importance to them
ll not leave behind him any written work on such subjects.
garded an ignoble and sordid the business of mechanics and
y part of art which was directed to use and profit. It is
al that one contemplate what additional mechanical devices
Archimedes might have invented had he been vitally interested in
applications of his scientific knowledge and keen mind.

Fortunately, a great deal of the scientific works of A.[illegible]medes have been preserved. He wrote in the Doric dialect [illegible]any of his treatises were later translated into the Latin [illegible]ther languages. It would seem that a brief cataloging [illegible]mmary of his existing publications should be made in order [illegible] the wide scope and great amount of his researches be made [illegible]ent. Much of the credit for collecting this material [illegible] to Heiberg, a German mathematician. Heiberg has classified [illegible]orks of Archimedes as they exist today into ten groups.

Group I is composed of two books on the sphere and the [illegible]inder. All of these investigations are original with [illegible]imedes and began where Euclid left off. This group alone [illegible]ains sixty propositions rigorously proven and a larger [illegible]r of corollaries. Archimedes regarded this work as his [illegible]rpiece and sent the complete treatise to Dositheus at [illegible]xandria upon its completion.

The second group comprises his discoveries on the [illegible]ent of the Circle. This treatise contains three [illegible]ositions and in the last of the three, he demonstrates $\pi$ or the ratio of the circumference of a circle to its [illegible]er lies between 3 1/7 and 3 10/71.

The third group on Conoids and Spheroids contains [illegible] propositions on quadrics of revolution and are mostly [illegible]rned with the investigation of their volumes. This [illegible]ise was also sent to Dositheus at Alexandria.

The fourth group dealt with Spirals. This work [illegible]ists of twenty-eight propositions on the properties of the

now known as the Spiral of Archimedes. It was sent to
eus at Alexandria accompanied by a letter, from which it
s that Archimedes had previously sent a note to Conon,
his famous mathematician at Alexandria, telling him of his
stigations, but that Conon had died before Archimedes had
leted his proofs.

Book I on Plane Equilibriums comprises the fifth group.
his work, Archimedes gives the fundamental principles of
anics as established by the rigorous geometric proofs. He
ulates the seven basic postulates and developes fifteen
positions and a large number of corollaries devoted chiefly
finding the centers of gravity in various types of polygons.

Book II on Plane Equilibriums comprises the sixth group,
contains ten major propositions dealing with the specific
ity of various parabolic segments and involved the use of his
rtible Lemma functions.

The seventh group includes the essay usually given the
of Sand Reckoner, a treatise on the principles of notation.
imedes addressed this work to Gelon. The object of the essay
to show the possibility of extending the Greek notation so as
table one to represent conveniently numbers of any magnitude.
n it, Archimedes devised a scheme whereby he could easily
resent ~~number~~ the number of grains of sand that it would take
ill the entire universe, that is, a sphere with the earth as
enter and a radius equal to the distance to the sun. He
strated that he could represent a number as large as that

...would require 80,000 million million ciphers in our modern ...tion.

The eighth group deals with a series of investigations ... Quadrature of the Parabola. This work, which he also ... to Dositheus, contained twenty-four propositions and ...lished some very intricate properties and solutions for ...ng areas in connection with the conic sections.

Two Books on Floating Bodies make up the ninth group. ...ook I, Archimedes set up the fundamental principles of the ...ce of hydrostatics. It included nine propositions de- ... from two basic postulates. One of these propositions ... with the famous problem of the crown which was previously ...med. Book II investigated fully the conditions of ...ility of a right segment of a paraboloid of revolution ...ting in a fluid for different values of specific gravity ...ifferent ratios between the axis or height of the segment ... the principal parameter of the generating parabola. The ... book contained ten propositions. Among the ancients, ...des was the only one who attained a clear and correct ... on theoretical statics. He had acquired a firm possession ... idea of pressure, which lies at the root of mechanical ...ce. But his ideas slept nearly twenty centuries until the ...of Stevin and Galileo.

The tenth or final group listed by Heiberg was called ...thod. This treatise was communicated to Eratosthenes at ...ria and in it Archimedes explained his methods of analyses

...eans of which he was able to arrive at many of his con-
...lons and hence build up a direct synthetic proof for many
...is propositions. This work was only discovered at a
...ratively recent date by Heiberg. Prior to its discovery,
... of the later mathematicians had accused Archimedes of
...ring purposely withheld his methods of analyses in order to
...ffle them with nature of his discoveries.

While the foresaid ten groups of scientific works ...stitute the existing treatises of Archimedes, it must not ...concluded that he did no other writing. Numerous re...erences ... to be found in the writings of later mathematicians to ...ther works of this great genius which have since been lost.

One which might be of considerable interest was mentioned ... Pappus on Sphere-making. In this work, Pappus states that ...chimedes had described the construction of spheres to imitate ...ation of the sun, the moon, and planets. Cicero saw ...is contrivance and gave a description of it. He stated that ...epresented the periods of the moon and the apparent motion ... sun with such accuracy that it would even show the ...ipse of both.

...n conclusion, let me say that it was not the purpose of ... paper to explain in concise form the works or discoveries ... Archimedes, partly because he wrote on nearly all the mathe-...al subjects of his day, and partly because his brilliant ...n were all exceedingly technical. It is hoped, however, ... some notion has been gained of the remarkable achievements ... this grand old man of antiquity.

Sources of Information

. Hall, W.W.R. "The History of Mathematics"

. Majori, F. "History of Mathematics"

. Fink, Karl "A Brief History of Mathematics"

. Low, James "Short History of Greek Mathematics"

. Heath, Sir Thos. "A History of Greek Mathematics"

. Karpinski, L. " History of Mathematics"

. Sanford, V. "A Short History of Mathematics"

, Malam

Paper #25 1 2/5
Apr. 1, 1935

Shakesperian Philosophy in 1935

"To Be or Not To Be." Outside the Bible, these six words are the most famous in all the literature of the world. They were spoken by Hamlet in one of those memorable soliloquies, when Hamlet is thinking aloud. Those words reflect not only the thinking of Hamlet, but they reflect the thoughts of every thinking man and woman. To be or not to be--to live or not to live, to live and how to live, to think and to know how to think, to live richly and anxiously and abundantly, or to live dully on a physical and material plane of existence that is the all important question for 1935. The philosophers of the ages past and gone discussed the problem. One questioned with himself as to whether he was really alive, a good question to ask oneself often in 1935, and he came to the conclusion that he was alive because he said, "I think, therefore I am".

Another philosopher, who lived long before Shakespeare put those words in the mouth of Hamlet, defines those words thus: "To be is to be in relations". This philosopher was expressing almost 4000 years ago a principle which the brilliant Einstein recently expressed when he gave us the philosophy of relativity.

All literature must in a certain sense reflect the age in which it is produced. To live it must do more than that; it must reflect those fundamental philosophies of life which are current in all ages. History recites the influence which Shakesperian literature had upon Lincoln. Ben Johnson exclaimed, "Shakespeare was not of an age, but for all time".

Here is a man with limited opportunities in his childhood days. He comes in contact with country and town life as a child. As a man, he comes in contact with the teeming thousands that surge through the

streets of London. He sees royalty and appraises its philosophy of government. He also sees the backwash of that great white wave of misfits and malcontents. The home, as well as the religious, political, and economic life of his day, challenges his keenest interest and brilliant analysis. One of the striking characteristics of Shakesperian philosophy is found in his soliloquies. They are long and numerous. It is in those soliloquies that we see his real philosophy of life. It reminds one of Cicero's remarks to the profligate Cataline when the mighty Cicero was pleading in the Roman Senate against the corruption of political life in Rome. Very little thinking is done in the crowd. The thinking which makes for permanent progress is done in the hours of meditation.

Coming a little more specifically to our theme, we will notice his philosophy of economic life. From the economic standpoint, the Merchant of Venice stands supreme. It is the story of the pound of flesh and the choice of the desirable casket. The pound of flesh (or bond story) is the story of limited profits of which we hear so much today. Moreover, it is the story of the sacredness of contract entertained in that day as well as in these days. The law of the Twelve Tables of Ancient Rome gave the creditor the right to take payment in the flesh of the insolvent debtor, and in case there were several creditors, the flesh could be divided pro rata. If one got more than his share he forfeited all.

The conflict is a property conflict. Money is the real basis of action. As long as Antonio is solvent, all is well. As long as the 12,000,000 unemployed were employed, all was well. But all was not well. Antonio the spendthrift and Shylock the miser came to grips and each must pay the penalty. One the penalty of waste, the other the penalty of exploiting others. Each man has chosen, but has chosen

unwisely. A clear parallelism of these two extreme viewpoints permeates the thinking of the American people in the last few years.

However, out of strife and conflict Shakespeare tempers the thinking of his day. He has the parties appear in court, the seat of relative justice. In his plea, he entreats Shylock to relent and cease exploiting humanity. He says, "Take your pound of flesh from Antonio but not one drop of blood". To Antonio he says, "You must forfeit a pound of flesh to make good your integrity". The appeal of the judge to the two conflicting philosophies of life is thuching. The judge speaks of mercy in these words:

"It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven
Upon the place beneath: it is twice blessed.
It blesseth him that gives, and him that takes.
'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes
The throned monarch better than his crown.
It is above the sceptered sway."

From a political view point, Julius Caesar portrays a conflict between the worn-out Republic and the incoming one-man power. In a world where one-man power has gained the ascendency in 1935, well may we question Shakespeare's analysis of one-man power in his day.

He portrays the indifference of the people when Rome was a Republic. At first the people are enthusiastic in their new found freedom and in the opportunity to participate intelligently in government. But alas, five hundred years of self-government is expecting too much from the masses; hence, they invite Caesar to become King. He vigorously refuses the crown the first time, the second invitation he pushes aside gently, and on the third invitation he accepts, it and holds it until 1917. At that time it is lost for the time being in the death of Frances Joseph of Austria, the last of the Caesars, the last of the Hapsburgs. However, the crown is not lost; it has merely been transferred to other heads. Hitler of Germany, Mussolini of Italy, Stalin of Russia are wearing crowns made from the old pattern

which Shakespeare condemned over three hundred years ago. We have been advised of government of the people, by the people, and for the people, in the last century. In the present century, four American presidents, namely, Theodore Roosevelt, Woodrow Wilson, Herbert Hoover, and Franklin Roosevelt have all been pleading for the same principle which Shakespeare portrayed in his Julius Caesar, and careful observation would indicate that their utterances have been of little value to the masses. Brutus sought Caesar's crown, not because he loved Caesar less, but because he loved Rome more. The dictators of Europe are posing just as Brutus did claiming that their efforts are for their people. Can a man love another man so well that he is willing to kill him as Brutus killed Caesar? Are we to believe that the dictators are so much in love with their people that they are sacrificing themselves?

The Shakesperian philosophy of life finds expression in a beautiful religious concept of social and human needs as found in his Macbeth. Macbeth has been honored by King Duncan. He and Lady Macbeth invite the kingly Duncan to their home as their guest. Ambitious for the crown of Duncan, they murder their own guest under their own roof. The plan has been so carefully laid that they are exonerated of all blame by the public. However, they have to live with themselves. They cannot exonerate themselves from themselves. Conscience will not be stilled. It torments them by day and by night. Lady Macbeth walks about her home in her sleep, wringing her hands as if in distress. Local physicians are called in to diagnose the case. They seem not to be able to locate the trouble. Specialists are called in for consultation. After a most careful diagnosis, the specialist says, "Human hands cannot help her, she hath need of the Divine". Shakespeare felt the need of the guidance of some force or power outside of self.

Shakespearian philosophy for 1935 is at its best in his Hamlet. Human relations reaches its highest level. In the story of Hamlet, human emotions and intellectual control are in conflict. The two extremes are portrayed with consummate skill. Hamlet aspires to all that is noble, spurns all that is base, and bows down before Providence; it reaches the highest notes of exultation and reveals the greatest grief and despair; it sounds the deepest abyss of thought; it ascends to the highest heaven of imagination; it is full of proverbial philosophy and quotable common sense; it has strength and beauty, pathos and humor, wit and wisdom. It is a cross section of what one would expect today in the city of Terre Haute or any other community. Its applications are as timely today as they were in the days of Shakespeare. He saw the melting pot of his day with the same contents as are found in the melting pot of humanity today. Intellectually and morally too, Hamlet is much in advance of his age. He is casting his mind into the future to an era of purer, richer, and a brighter civilization. He conceives a mold of statesmanship, a style of public order, and a tone of economic and social control such as his time or most ages affords him no example. The coarse and brutal manners of his nation, as well as, that of other nations, infesting even the court, he both scorns and deplores; and this on grounds of taste, of policy, of honor and of right. The effects which such things have on national character and well-being are discussed by him with rare discernment and far reaching thought. His mind is penetrated and saturated with the best principles of morality, justice, and refinement.

Shakespeare's philosophy of life is probably best expressed in some of his pertinent statements. The actions of men do not center around the multiplicity of their utterances, but they center rather

around certain basic and fundamental concepts, whether it be in the days of Shakespeare or in the days of Plato, or even in our own day. A few of those guiding principles gleaned from some of his works are here given:

1. "What a piece of work is man! how noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form and moving how express and admirable! in action how like an angel! in apprehension how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals".

2. "There is nothing good or bad, but thinking makes it so."

3. "To be honest as far as this world goes, is to be one man pick'd out of ten thousand."

4. "One may smile and smile and be a villian."

5. "Something is rotten in the state of Denmark."

6. "Give every man thine ear, but few thy voice."

7. "Neither a borrower nor a lender be; For the loan of't loses both itself and friend."

8. "To thine own self be true, and it must follow, as the night the day, thou canst not then be false to any man."

9. "Foul deeds will rise, though all the earth o'erwhelm them, to mon's eyes."

10. "Conscience doth make cowards of us all."

11. "Give me that man that is not passion's slave, and I will wear him in my heart's core, ay, in my heart of hearts."

All the foregoing from Hamlet.

General Pershing returned home after the world war. He went to the little town of five hundred, the town of his nativity in Missouri. The people of the state of Missouri, wishing to honor this great man, arranged for a reception to honor him in the great city of St. Louis. The dignitaries of many states were there to do him honor.

The common man and his family came from every county of the state and from many other states in the Union to pay respect to the General. Governor Garner of Missouri made the address of welcome, and in that address, he presented General Pershing with a sword of gold, on one side of which were these words, "To the best disciplined man in the world". It was another way of saying, "Give me that man who is not passion's slave and I will wear him in my hearts core".

12. "I dare do all that may become a man, who dares do more is none". If men embodied these objectives and standards for their guidance, crime waves would cease, economic depressions would speedily vanish or perchance never occur, and political demogogery would be a thing of the past.

13. "They meet me in the days of success," is the pitiful excuse of the ages past as well as of the present generation.

Perhaps the foregoing excerpts are sufficient to indicate that Shakespeare was, in the words of the poet Shelley, a national prophet. He says that a true poet is one who comprises and unites in himself the task of a legislator and a prophet. It is he who, not only beholds intensely the present as it is, and discovers those laws according to which present things ought to be ordered, but he beholds the future in the present.

James Russell Lowell has expressed a similar thought in imperishable verse:

"To know the heart of all things was his duty
All things did speak to him to make him wise,
He gazed on all within him and without him,
He watched the flowing of Times steady tide,
And whispered to him, and he prophesied.
All his brethwmn cried with one accord
Behold the holy man! behold the seer!"

If Shakespeare had been a theologian, he would have been persecuted if not burned at the stake for his statements; had he been a politician,

he would have been banished for his discussions on politics and civil liberty. His was the task to bring a message, not only to his generation but to all ages; the message is a lesson of peace, gentleness, mercy, patience, justice, sincerity. It is the story of humanity with a portrayal of its failures on the one hand, and a sublime confidence of the possibilities of humanity on the other. In fact it may be said that he is one of the great humanitarians, pleading for a more abundant life. We have been hearing a great deal about living abundantly. However, careful observations indicate that it is mostly hearing only. There is not a great amount of abundant living. Man spends a great deal of time groveling in, and on the lower realms of the sordid, the painful, the slothful. We are merely trying to follow Shakesperian philosophy when we speak of the abundant life. He portrayed the sordid, the painful, the slothful, but he always leaves us appreciating the possibilities of the other life. He leads us from the depths of despair to the beautiful, the aesthetic, the sublime. His philosophy of abundant living, "to be, or not to be" means simply to increase the range and intensity of our relations. Fortunately, we are so constituted that we learn to love our routine. Unfortunately, our routine does not develop our potential capacities. How much are we alive apart from our regular occupation? How alert was Shakespeare to the things outside his occupation? To the extent to which one is not concerned with music, pictures and art, poetry and prose, sports, finance, unselfish friendship, politics, medicine, international affairs, to that extent one is dead. The myriad minded Shakespeare was discussing religion, government, family life, occupational life, economic problems, in fact, he is interested and in quest of truth concerning every phase of the surging and throbbing life of his times. The same is true for human beings in 1935. Every time one acquires a new accomplishment, one increases his power of

life. No one who is deeply interested in a large variety of subjects can remain unhappy. The real pessimist is the person who has lost interest.

It was Bacon who said that a man dies as often as he loses a friend. It is also true that we gain new friends and new life by new contacts. Where your thoughts are there will your life be also. As living objects give new life, so do ideas, which are also alive. If ones thoughts are confined only to one's business, only to one's physical well-being, only to the problems of one's community; then that life is too narrow. Only when one is vitally interested in what is going on in other lands, what is being written in the field of literature, art, agriculture, science and religion is one living in the midst of interesting people.

To be or not to be, to live intensely and richly, to live abundantly or to live merely on the existence level mentally and spiritually depends on self. "To thine own self be true and it must follow as the night the day, thou can'st not then be false to any man." The Shakesperian philosophy of life calls for a widening and intensifying of human relations in 1935. His dictum may be summarized thus, "While we live, let us live".

Paper #27

# Indiana, the Beautiful

Read before

The Terre Haute Literary Club

April 15, 1935

Guy Stantz

Note: After the paper was read motion pictures of characteristic beauty spots in Indiana were shown.

THE OUTDOOR SONG

By Mary Carolyn Davies

There's an eerie song that calls to you, and clings to
you and taunts you,
And you know that God is out beyond the hills some-
where, and wants you.
And you leave the fire hearth and home for camp-
smoke dim and graying,
For when the wild song calls you, there's no choice
but your obeying.

It's the song of the great outdoors; "Come out,
Where your hand can touch the sky!
Let ambition and hate and doubt
And black despair go by.
And then you'll know there's a God below,
As well as above in the blue.
There are stars about! Come out! Come out!"
The wild songs calls to you.

## Indiana, The Beautiful

When I was in high school, I was required to commit many passages of poetry. One of these passages was something as follows: "When thou art worn and hard beset with sorrows thou wouldst forget, go to the woods and hills--no tear dims the bright look which nature wears." I do not know whether this is quoted correctly or not, neither do I remember the name of the poem from which it is taken. It comes to me often when I am in the great outdoors. There is no joy like that of being in the woods. The woods have a power over the mind and a serenity of their own. "They are the woods of God. They open to one vistas of sunlight falling slantwise through tall trees silent as the cathedral and almost as musical. The winds blow up high but not here below. The ripple of the falling water is musical. The far distances come up near and ask you to come along. Weariness is not of the flesh alone. It is of the mind as well. They heal all the elements of a man, mind, soul, and body."

Indiana has as great a variety of outdoor attractions as any state in the Union. We have winding streams and rivers with wonderful bass fishing; beautiful lakes of clear, sparkling water alive with fish of all kinds; splendid highways leading through the rolling and hilly sections of southern Indiana, on down to the scenic Ohio River, which forms the boundary line between our own Hoosier State and the Bluegrass State of Kentucky. Any one who has travelled southern Indiana, either in Brown County or down along the Ohio, will tell you that there is nothing else like it in the world---and this is very largely true. If you have ever visited the lake region of north-eastern Indiana, the Sand Dunes along Lake Michigan, the wilds of the old Kankakee, or followed the meandering course of the Tippecanoe or Wabash rivers, you have had an unforgettable experience of real pleasure. If you have ever gained one of the vantage points in southern Indiana to gaze about, you have seen beauties not found elsewhere. You have seen wooded hills, lazy, winding streams, glimpses of cabins with the smoke curling upward, birds flying here and there: the whole making a picture that you will carry with you forever. As you reach the summit of one hill you see another and even larger one in the distance; and so, on and on, until you finally surmount the last hill and roll down to the Ohio.

We have twelve state parks, four historical memorials, five state forests, and an unlimited number of beautiful and unusual spots where the visitor may enjoy himself in complete comfort while experiencing the pleasure that comes with being in the open, under the heavens, and near unto nature. We have caves that are known the world over. We have rivers that have

been made famous in song, but we have places of great natural beauty that are practically unknown. It is our task to let the world know of the beauties of our own Hoosierland and of the pleasures that we enjoy. The beauties that surround us and the pleasures that we share may at times seem commonplace, but they are worth coming many miles to see, and the individuals seeing and sharing them with us will return better individuals by reason of this experience. Let us all gain a greater knowledge of Indiana, so that we may better appreciate how unusual are our own beauties and privileges.

Nearly two thousand years ago Pliny, in a letter to Gallus, wrote this: "Those works of art or nature which are usually the motives for our travels by land or sea are often neglected if they lie within our reach--whether it be that we are naturally less inquisitive concerning those things which are near us; or, perhaps, that we defer from time to time viewing what we have an opportunity of seeing when we please."

As Will Rogers says, "There is an awful lot of running around that is overestimated. You don't see much more where you are going than where you come from!"

The department of Conservation, with the cooperation of the citizenry of Indiana, has undertaken to preserve for our present enjoyment, and as a heritage to those who follow us, those rare bits of scenic loveliness which otherwise would be destroyed. Indiana is well supplied with beautiful and remarkable scenery. As this development progresses, it will be recognized as one of the nation's most scenic states.

Nearly two thousand years ago Pliny, in a letter to Gallus, wrote this: "Those works of art or nature which are usually the motives for our travels by land or sea are often neglected if they lie within our reach--whether it be that we are naturally less inquisitive concerning those things which are near us; or, perhaps, that we defer from time to time viewing what we have an opportunity of seeing when we please."

As Will Rogers says, "There is an awful lot of running around that is overestimated. You don't see much more where you are going than where you come from!"

The department of Conservation, with the cooperation of the citizenry of Indiana, has undertaken to preserve for our present enjoyment, and as a heritage to those who follow us, those rare bits of scenic loveliness which otherwise would be destroyed. Indiana is well supplied with beautiful and remarkable scenery. As this development progresses, it will be recognized as one of the nation's most scenic states.

ne of the chief attractions of the Indiana state parks is the variety of
which they offer the visitor. "hether the visitor seeks only a day in
on, with his meals cooked over a camp fire, or whether he seeks a longer
with the accommodations equal to the best, his desires are to be fulfilled
the state parks. Whether his visit is only for recreation, or whether he
to observe nature undisturbed by the advance of civilization, the state
offer this choice.

two of the parks have exactly the same scenery, soil and rock formation,
area. They differ in the tree, shrub and plant life, reflecting the
seasons of the year. The Indiana parks are widely known among nat-
for the varieties of plants and birds which they shelter and each year
ited by hundreds of these nature lovers.

For three miles along the southern shore of Lake Michigan stands the beach
Dunes State Park, while marching away from the lake are the shifting,
g dunes which are the playthings of the winds. Equally well known are
ed areas in which are found hundreds of rare plants and trees. This
park have become known as "The Playground of Chicago."

Along the curving shores of Lake James in the northeast corner of the state
gon state park, where the attractions of the lake are shared with the
landscape, captive deer, elk and buffalo. Above the lake is Potawatomi
here the visitor may lounge and relax, disturbed only by the odors of
food.

Lake Beach, newest of the state parks, is one of the finest bathing
in that section of the state and here, too, the visitor finds menus
tempt and satisfy.

ng the parks which have a historical appeal is The Mounds, where are
two of the strange mounds, surrounded by a high earthen wall, surviving
s of a forgotten people. Here are wooded areas and trails along a

river to engage the interest of the visitor.

Brown County State Park holds increasing appeal to the visitor who can rest on the porch of the Abe Martin Inn and let the eyes range over the hills that stretch into the distance. The more active visitor may prefer to wander over the trails and discover for himself new scenes before he is drawn back to the lodge for meals and to the cabins which bear the names of Abe Martin characters.

Rare experiences await the visitor to McCormick's Creek State Park, where a trail leads to the abandoned quarry from which came the foundation stones of the State House, through typical Indiana timber and along the banks of McCormick's Creek. Here the visitor finds comfortable hotel quarters and the kind of meals that fully satisfy.

The Shakamak State Park is widely known as the meeting place each year for hundreds of 4-H Club boys and girls from all parts of the state and as the outing place of other groups. Located in the park is a 55-acre artificial lake. Here, as in the wooded areas, an essential part of all state parks.

Turkey Run State Park with its gorges, its forest lands and its comfortable lodge and appetizing meals is known far and wide and brings thousands of visitors annually from Chicago and surrounding territory. There are canyons decorated with ferns and other plants to constantly surprise the visitor, and a large section of native timber preserved by the original owners.

Muscatatuck State Park, stretching along the beautiful Muscatatuck River, includes some of the finest scenery in the region, with a majestic rocky gorge and timbered slopes. The Musatatuck is also widely known for its excellent fishing.

Spring Mill State Park is one of the most unusual parks, combining a restored pioneer village, complete to the grist and sawmill, operated by water power, and the log cabins which housed the business of the community, with acres of virgin timber, a number of underground caverns and other attractions. Meals

...re served at the log tavern.

No state park has a greater historical appeal than does Lincoln Park, which ...sses the burial place of Nancy Hanks Lincoln, the site of the cabin in ... the Lincoln family lived during the boyhood years of Abraham Lincoln, and ... burial place of one of Lincoln's sisters. These shrines are visited annually ... thousands from all parts of the United States.

On a high bluff overlooking the winding Ohio River lies Clifty Falls State ... and the attractive inn where the visitor may enjoy himself while watching ... procession of river boats. The park contains two deep canyons, through ... flow Big Clifty and Little Clifty creeks over beautiful falls, rewarding ... efforts of the hiker.

No attempt has been made in the formation of Indiana's state park system to ...vide luxurious vacation resorts. The efforts have been directed toward the ...rision of accommodations which were comfortable and yet within the reach of ... average family desiring to spend its vacation in a setting such as is ...fered by the various parks. For the family or group preferring closer contact ...th nature, there are camping areas where they may pitch their tent under the ...s and yet find convenient supplies of pure water and fuel. For others who ...der absence of all care, there are the park inns where they will find clean, ...mfortable quarters and satisfying menus. In the extensions and improvements ...ich are being made, care is being exercised that the natural beauty and ...ldness is preserved.

In order that the public may be directed to the points of greatest interest in the parks, trails have been made. Nature guides have been placed in many of the parks.

The Nature Guide Service offers a simple, understandable interpretation of the major features of each park to the public, by means of field trips, bird hikes, lectures and literature. Each guide is trained in field experience and is able to interpret the natural wild life of Indiana. As a student of nature, he is able to make the nature trail interesting. He brings senses seldom used into prominence. Plants are recognized by odor and taste. Birds are learned by call note and song. Trees are remembered by the leaves and bark.

All the beautiful scenery in Indiana is not in the state parks. There are innumerable other places which are about as nature made them. It is a great pleasure to hunt them and explore them. No grander water falls and rapids can be found than those in Eel River at Cataract. They are not as large as Niagara or Yellowstone but all the other qualities are present. Our own Wabash River on whose banks stood the sycamores through which the "candle-light gleamed," and the "Beautiful Ohio" River cannot be surpassed. Climb with me the high, precipitons hills that overtop the river and look over the lowlands that intervene, in which the lazy river meanders, to the hills of Kentucky.

The caves of Indiana are some of the most noted and most visited in the United States. Wyandotte, the largest in Indiana and one of the largest in the world, is located in

Crawford county. Marango Cave, also in Crawford county, is small but contains many formations which rank among the most beautiful in the world. Donaldson's Cave in Spring Mill Park is very accessable and visited by hundreds of people each year. There are a multitude of smaller caverns, the most noted of which are Porter's, Mayfield, Coon, Patton, Shiloh, Dounchue, Hammer, and Clifty Caves. These caves are all located in the limestone situated in southern Indiana.

The wild flowers of Indiana delight our senses by their fragrance, delicate beauty, and variety of their coloring. No other state can boast of a larger number of varieties of flowers. Very early in the spring a race is run for the honor of being the first to bloom--the Spring Beauty, Hepatica, Adder's Tongue, Anemone, and Bloodroot striving for honors. Soon the quaint Dutchman's Breeches and Squirrel Corn enter the list--in the lowland the Blue Bells grow in showy clumps. Quite soon follow the Rue, Violets, waxy Trillirems, star-shaped Wire Pink, and Jewel Weed follow in succession. Among the shrubs and trees the Redbud, Dogwood, Wild plum, and Wild crab are the most prevelent and showy.

In midsummer there are but few flowers. But in later August the various varieties of Goldenrod appear. The Asters, Bell Flowers, and Wild Sunflowers are abundant.

There is probably nothing of more pure and delicate beauty than the snow clinging to the trees and covering the hillsides and streams, or the ice that forms on the trees and rocks about a waterfall, or the icicles that drape the overhanging rocks in cold weather making more beautiful formations than found in any cave.

The lakes of Northern Indiana are always attractive. Of all the delightful spots that have been set aside by nature for recreation and pleasure, none are more aluring. These placid bodies of water, neither too large or too small, spread their mirror-like surfaces from wooded shore to sandy beach. They invite us to dip our oars into their gentle sub-currents, to cast our bait into their darkest, most mysterious pools, or plunge into their cool, refreshing waters for an invigorating swim. There is no purer air in the world, and peace and quiet fill us with thankfullness. The days may be hot but the nights are always cool and a blanket or two before morning are good to cuddle under.

Let us further consider the Dunes. The dune region of northern Indiana has the best examples of dune formation in the world and many believe that they offer some of the finest natural scenery in the Middle West. It is a favorite outdoor classroom for geology, botany, and zoology classes. Here we see nature in various moods, cruel in destroying a graceful topography, kindly in providing scenic beauty of great splendor, powerful in the irresistible movement of gigantic piles of marching sand. The picturesque region of the active dunes is a wonderland of soul-gripping, awe-compelling sights. Here one may witness in a striking manner the last despairing efforts of dying vegetation to reproduce its kind. It is a strange experience to walk on the crest of a dune after it has invaded a forest and wander among the uppermost branches of great forest trees, or to see the cottonwood battling the advancing dune by sending out roots from its trunk, thereby enabling the tree to grow and mount higher and higher on the ever increas-

ing mound of sand. Along the shady paths of the old dunes are many flowers and ferns. These remarkable formations, the perfect bathing beach, and Lake Michigan itself are surely attractive enoughtto tempt the most-traveled nature lover.

Indiana is distinctive in another thing of beauty--the coloring of the leaves in October. Probably no other state surpasses it in this respect. There is no display of color in nature that comes remotely near to this. The colors in the Grand Canyons of Colorado or Yellowstone are a badly faded out picture in comparison.

I have read and heard people give descriptions of the wonderfully beautiful sunsets and sunrises as seen from the mountains, from the ocean, and various other places. I have seen the sun rise and set from the mountains and from the water. It does not seem to me to be any more beautiful than here in Indiana. There may be some deference in the appearance and arrangement of colors but no more beautiful.

Indiana cannot remain "The Beautiful" unless we continue to preserve the things in her that are beautiful. The call of the outdoors is a real call. No more desirable recreation can be found. Lakes and hills, skies of blue, dark, mysterious caverns, winding rivers, shifting sands, glorious sunsets, plunging waterfalls, winter's snow and ice, summer's birds and flowers, and autumn's leaves are nature's gifts to us in Indiana, the Beautiful.

HSH
4/22/35

Hickman.

Paper #28.

To give to those who came to hear these short paragraphs I hold only to one idea. My intent is for good, even though I disturb your nap.

I give as references in this paper, so as not to stop for reference quotations, as follows:-

Everett C. McKeage of California

James N. Mathes of Plain Talk (November)

Secretary Wallace

The Indiana Teacher Magazine

While the New Deal is as tardy as Hoover's just-around-the-corner prosperity, anyone conversant with American history cannot doubt that the American people, if pressed far enough with fantastic dreams will change the character of man into a revolt, not of the low class, or the high class, but the middle class, the class which appreciates education, the class that has striven for ages to save, and pray to one God.

## THE CHANGE OF CHARACTER OF MAN

his is a most interesting and important period of our birth, his period will go down in history as unique, since important interesting changes are being made on the governed that may either to prosperity or disaster.

we, as a nation in the past, guarded against the shadows of lordship. We looked only yesterday upon Russia's iron-hand of ...nistic attempts. The dictator of Germany has no parallel in ...inds, and we shudder at his actions.

...ith all our American Monroe teachings, the American government, ...used to guard against going into business, is now running every ...ness in America or telling how it should be run.

...he Supreme Court once declared for slavery ordering the ...lonist protector of a runaway slave to return him to his owner. ...ided against the income tax and a constitutional amendment was ...ssary. Now, we rejoice at having the power invested in one man ...n formally resided with the House of Congress.

...ur historical slogan -- "Millions for defense but not one cent ...ribute" -- compares favorably with what happened to the character ...n on the German demand, "Down with the Versailles Treaty", differ- ...ny in that the American Republic merged from a victory while ...ny's demand met with defeat. The intent of Alexander Hamilton ...urged Governor John Jay of New York in 1800 to adopt a semi- ...l line of conduct in order to thwart Thomas Jefferson's election ...presidency, seems quite in line with Von Papen's program of ...a, the same war-born changes in the character of man that made ...cessful grafter, the racketeer, and the bootlegger in America

in Europe. Whereas in 1800 democracy was in the ascendancy, German reaction was a local phase of a general movement against self-government, while in America the Ku-Klux-Klan was a subsequent forerunner of the successful grafter from which America has not fully recovered.

At present we are suffering from the effects of clever economic demagogues' experiments, born and controlled by the characteristic changes of man, as the people were persuaded that prosperity could be purchased. We are told America has outgrown our forefathers' conception of society; that our childhood instructions of truth and faith are not the reverence of yesterday; that the faith of yesterday has been translated as a slogan for the high-pressured-go-getter; that truth is questionable.

The Book of Laws is being changed under guise of retranslation relatively to fit the warped souls of society until it is a limping compromise between truth and God.

Henry VIII changed his part of the spoken truth for selfish relief, thus offering a lasting example of warping society to fit man's changed character.

Hardly a public speaker is heard that does not say the Lord is on the side of reaction, and this word is applied to society, religion, politics, war, and the home alike. The church and school have been converted in politics until the pathless road to right and education is dimmed.

In the old log schoolhouse, a group of boys and girls in their home-spun, reading in concert from Webster's wooden back spelling book camouflaged as a reading lesson whose words must be memorized,

defined, spelled and pronounced correctly was unknowingly absorbing a lesson in character education that stamped upon the memories of the future generation something that even time cannot efface.

In those early days there were but two grades; those who could read, and those who could not. Despite this crude classification, boys and girls grew, with usual exceptions, into men and women of reputable character.

While we may not wish for the return of Dobbins and the buck-board, the circuit rider, and the Blue mass pill doctor, yet it emphasises character education that life can be good, yet simple.

The sense of permanence is gone, and the luxuries of yesterday are the necessities of today. The old saying, "Like father like son", is a dimmed paraphrase in life, religion, or politics, as the youth of today does not meet life with courage to meet the difficulties that are sure to come. And you and I are to blame.

Modern youth has been subjected to an almost overwhelming avalanche of irreligious forces. Much of the best-seller fiction, both in books and magazines, questionable moving pictures, radio broadcasts, and a country dotted with skip note jazz music, have added their quota to an easy-going, jointless youth that laughs at his ancestors' religious convictions that God still governs the universe.

The tendencies of today, especially of the high school student, is to live only for the high moments, for thrills, the football spirit, no aim of life, ignoring the broad space of time between the thrills on which character depends.

The Book of Laws is not a sample of stability. Nations without a God, children that know not their parents, and moral crimes are social abbreviations. The cut of the bathing suit of now and yesterday is only past history.

The free love and obligatory hygiene, the nakedness, both on the bathing beaches and the nudist farms, have practically ruined an ancient calling, the gentleman, such as we are prone to name liberal.

We send our soldiers to war over questions that have no intrinsic value. We send clergymen with them to bless the saber that is made to kill, yet we repeat the Lord is on our side.

In days of our forefathers no one carried indemnity insurance or a first aid kit. Liability insurance was unheard of. No one went hungry and the potters-field was empty. Everybody had time to go to church once a week and practice seven days a week what they learned on Sunday. The children went to school five months in the year and learned more than they do now in nine. We lived on wholesome food, worked, loved and played. Today we live on hot-dogs at the side of an excited auto path. We have lost the word TOMORROW. Great grales of press agents carry us from day to day on the happy side of life with amusements on one page and blood curdling crimes of all classes on the other, and between the two our minds are hypnotized from the esthetic and useful side of life.

These mutual assassins say we print what the public wants. This I challenge, as this only illustrates the change of character of certain class of human driftwood. The press which uses an advertisement

to deceive the purchaser is a petty confidence buster and only tends to prove that the greed of gain is a false pleasure, and this social worth is an example for both the above classes, as he receives pleasure while he commits a crime.

I hear the so-called up-to-date business bug say this is not a crime. It is shrewd business. To this the answer is that only the criminal-minded individual resorts to the referred tactics, and at the same time are signing off on the long road to success.

Regarding the above, we pass on the streets daily examples of the once temporary prosperous (not merchandisers) but criminal falsifiers. These miserable-minded beings have a little stolen money hid away which serves to feed their physical body but which haunts their shrunken minds in the dark.

We are taught that truth and veracity were symbols of power. We were taught that it is better to be honest, if even poor, than to be rich and dishonest. We were taught right is might, and right will prevail. All this in the business world has been rewritten in the language of the high-pressure mouths of industry by six words which will forever be the stumbling block of our children. These English symbols are "Get yours while the getting is good".

These words have abused more minds in the human race for gain, than all the prayers of man can assuage.

There was a time when only the three R's were taught in school, to meditate in spelling B's and before the fireside the lesson of truth, honor, and charity, but now there is no time to study of

character; truth is only used for policy while honor is a Sunday issue, and charity is a lost art.

The character of man is changing either in not being able to meet man to man on the street or on the golf course without wanting to sell him something. The writer not being an eight cylinder salesman finds himself often in what I term a neo-social attitude, which is passive character. I meet my friend Bill on the street; we talk; we part. He has promised to pay me that $1.50 he owes me next Saturday. I know he never will, but I like him; the twinkle in his eye is appetizing, his taste in neckties I like, and I am satisfied with my philosophy, as I also realize my imperfections.

In this instance there seems to be a blend of similarity of character. He lies to me and I say nothing, while I think he is lying; yet he offers no offense and for this the world says I am liberal.

Not only does the press capitalize on the uncertainty of life, but the radio program is tempered to the equality of a twelve year old mind. Now can you say assuredly that we as a nation are wiser?

The assimulation of feminine and masculine life of men and women is wearing a consolidation from the point of conduct, occupation, and morals, the cause of which is the change of character of man.

The first blunder man made was the lowering of woman's rights to his equal. I say lowered as the vote for the so-called woman's rights was the first step of the single standard, the end of a moral law for woman and another for man.

Marriage will no doubt be monoganic, but not only by law, but because the domesticated companionship of one man and one woman is natural.

Next, man shifted his business and burdens to the woman, and he washes the dishes. She no longer considers marriage the most important thing in life. Do you in every day life witness the lack of courtesy to woman by man? The uncovered male head is as remote as a Yanky kneeling to a British king.

The change of the character of man has lowered the character of woman instead of equalizing the rights of woman. Man needs to be taught the history that leads to great possibilities, an agitation that will turn man to hope. This agitation must be essentially religious as all other movements are easily infected with political or financial objective. I say man because there is no specific feminine thinking on the side of peace. A few women have been appointed to office for political reasons. Terroristic methods have supplanted the native persuasive methods of yesterday in many walks of life pertaining to the welfare of man.

The capitalistic dollar is more sacred than the life of the flowers of our country.

The stage is set for the last act that marks the passing of a prostituted civilization. What are you going to do about it?

Written by- H.S.Hickman
Apr.22,1935.

R W Hmielich
11/29/33

245

Paper #29.

WHAT DO I WANT?

If you want to find a place where every conceivable subject is discussed go to County Court Houses, City Buildings and State Capitols. There is nothing that fails to come up for discussion in some form and for some reason or no reason at all. Ones fitness to discuss the questions as they arise apparently never enter into the problem. Each is ready to make his contribution.

Having visited during the past year more than seventy five percent of the places mentioned above in two States I found myself more and more interested in these discussions and the subjects discussed. The whole affair may be summed up by a simple statement. These people were trying to state in some form what they want. How they would like to see the township, county, state and nation governed. Of course largely as a matter affecting their own interests. Each had his plan and stated that plan many times in a very emphatic way.

Education, religion, marriage, divorce, communism, raising hogs, corn, children. All fell in line for a share of the wisdom expressed.

Here is a group that nas under consideration the Corn,Hog proposition. One man argues that he has a perfect right to kill his hogs even though some people do go hungry. Some section not heard from chirps in with the statement that these city folk should go hungry anyway(these are probably mostly Democrats). Then a part of this same group shout their denunciation of such a program. They even quote scripture to show that we will ultimately be punished because we have wasted our substance.(These are probably the Republicans that are left).

My mind begins to whirl about. It even makes one dizzy as he contemplates these discussions and what these people want. I said to myself, is it possible that the method of proceedure in the pursuit of peace and happiness for the Democrat farmer in no way applies to his Republican neighbor.

Then I leave these dirty filthy court houses where these simple minded folk congregate to tell others what they want and go to the gatherings at the State Capitol and the National Capitol. Do I find something different? No. Here men too are trying to write into law what they want. It is marvelous the change that cpmes over a man who has been transplanted from these Court Houses to the State or National groups. He now becomes authority. He can now be a menace because he has within his reach the power to put into execution his ideas right or wrong. He seems to be no better able to diagnose the desease or apply a remedy than the simple minded country folk. Each wants something. It seems however that that something has not been considered in light of all of the evidence which might be collected but as a mere expediency.

Apparently in our sober moments we do not want war. But let it be announced that someone is going to talk about the subject at a public gathering and the press and patriotic organizations condemn him and all who go with him.

When things are quiet we condemn the use of our boys as fodder for the cannon. Yet when they stage a demonstration against such a practice we brand them as a bunch of hoodlums incited by foreign agencies.

We deplore the enormous profits made by a few men in times of war scare and war. We talk about taking the profit out of the physical things that go into war. Do we do it ? Oh no. This will be a curb to ambitions and hamper the successful carrying on of the war. We apparantely forget again about the bright and happy boys who by the million are maimed, blinded and ruined for life. Yes, I must not forget that we do point with pride to the beautiful buildings that have been built to house them while they live encircled with the horrors of hell all because we do not want to curb selfishness, not ambition.

We apparantely want free speech. But just as soon as that free speech interferes with some pet scheme of someone it becomes radicalism. We do not want the light put on in case that shows up our own short comings. If a thing is safe and the people are safe no amount of idle talk will disturb the foundation of things We are afraid of free speech when things are questionable, In my humble judgement the courts of this country will have a tendency to move to lower levels so long as we curb what may be said about the decisions made. What makes the courts such sacred affairs?

I have given a number of incidents of what I heard people say they wanted or did not want. This list could be increased many fold. It will serve as a basis for a statement as to what I want. In giving these I have tried to keep in mind the other fellow. It is easy for selfishness to creep in. We may live under such diverse conditions that it is almost impossible to suggest anything that could be in any sense - universal. Please keep in mind that it was the conversations which I heard and the articles which I read that set me to wondering if I had a very definite idea as to what I do want. I have found myself arraying with myself on one or the other side of a question without any very definite reason for my choice.

In the first place I want better care to be taken of unborn children. Our country today is filled with bent and twisted human bodies all because of greed, selfishness and ignorance. Untold numbers of expectant mothers are forced to work in the home or work in the factory for the home when they should be free from hard toil and have the help and advice of trained nurses. The horses on the farm are released from heavy work, other animals receive special attention but human beings are not so fortunate. I read sometime ago of an industrial plant that employed women being praised because they gave expectant mothers a two weeks vacation before the birth of her child. Of course this is better than nothing. But I am told by physicians that all harm has been done long before this time. I want to see Motherhood glorified. We spend a lot of idle talk about birth

control. No nation goes into decay because of too many babies. The reverse is true. I spmetimes think when I hear the prattle of a childless woman about birth control that it is a pity that her mother did not know the art. I not only want children to be born right but I want them to have a chance to live and develop. I am not asking for equality from the standpoint of material things. With human nature as it now exists such a thing seems but a wild dream. But again limitation must be placed upon what anyone can gather about himself. Unduly large accumulation of a few must of necessity impoverish the many. We have been saying that any limitation curb ambition. It may be better to curb a few ambitions, I prefer however to call it greed, for the benefit of the few. In a country like ours with untold resources every child should be in the midst of plenty. I want every child to come into the rich heritage of the past. This he must get through the schools. The biggest business of any generation is the training of the next generation. If it is well done we move up a step. If it is poorly done chaos reigns.

I want teachers to build up right attitudes in children toward the whole of life. Knowledge has had too prominent a plave in the past. It is a man's spiritual and emotional activities that are the goal of living. Outside of the material things which we construct our course is guided by our emotional attitudes. Someone has said that all human endeavors are guided by a speck of intelligence upon a great sea of emotion. When people have once been properly trained to think and act for themselves I want them to have a chance to do things without interference at every turn. I want to be free to do as I please so long as I please to do the right thing. A great philosopher said that one is free who knows the right and wills to do it. We have the notion apparantely that man can be kept in the plain and narrow path by laws and officers to enforce these laws. This idea has so developed in this country until at this very time we have one boss for every seven persons . It does not need a philosopher to tell what will happen under such conditions. Individual initiative shrinks to a minimum. Decay sets in. It is easy at such times for a demagogue to get control of things. The days of such an order mark the beginning of the end.

I want a chance to express the best that is within me. I do not want to intrude upon the rights of anyone else. The great characters of the world have been produced through freedom to act. There are some things that may be done better by regimentation, but it is at the expense of the future man power of the nation. It is manhood with all of man's sterling qualities that is the goal.

What I want is not to be interpreted as meaning that cooperation has been left out. I want to be a part in every endeavor of society that makes it more easily for me and all others to attain the simple happiness that I seek. I do not want something for nothing. The world does not owe me a living. I do not want the wealth divided up. I want it so arranged that I may have a chance to acquire what I need. I want to be as independent as is humanly possible when I am one of a hundred and thirty million.

I want one thing which I believe we all do have in this country. I want to worship as I please. It is no concern of anyone what is my politics or my religion. I believe that one is indeed hard to suit who cannot find some sect that meets with his approval in this country. I hope such a condition will never change.

I want a type of security in the business and industrial world that will under favorable conditions insure a fair return for the energies which I put forth. If this were done much of the uncertainity in periods such as we are now passing through might be averted. So long as a few through political maneuvers can manipulate production and prices in such a way that the major portion of profits run into ever decreasing number of channels we may expect such conditions as now face us. There are just as many people to be fed, clothed, housed and entertained as in 1929 The upper channels have run dry. The major portion of cash is in the hands of a few. The promise to pay could no longer stand the strain. The crash came. We still had the people but they had nothing with which to buy. It was not so much a case of over production as a case of under consumption due to the lack of a wide distribution of funds.

I want to see the banking system of this country built to conserve the financial resources rather than a desecration of them. Our banking system today is a powerful political organization controlled by one concern. This concern busies itself with every treaty that is made to foreign countries. It finances wars if the returns are large enough. It dictates to all of our political organizations what may and what may not be done in the financial field. They reach almost every householder by dictating to every bank large and small what they may do. I doubt if any great financial undertaking moves very far before these people are consulted. Through various investigations there has been brought to light the shrewd way in which these people work. They have defied the administrationin any attempt to curb their activities, yet apparently little can be done.

I want more than a chance to make a living. I want to make this living as easily as possible so that I may live. I want a chance to enjoy the beautiful things in nature. I want the children in the school and home to be taught to appreciate the wonderful things which the Creator has prepared for them.

I want to be able to enjoy the business, profession or job through which I make my living. But I do not want to be forced to spend all of my time in this field thereby becoming a slave to it. I do not want to be forced to believe that I can if I so will get my share of enjoyment out of sheer hard work. I want a chance to enjoy the good things which have been given us by past generations, music, art. literature, great achievements. These things are all about me. Why should I be forced to devote all of time for bread, something to wear and a place to sleep.

Great pictures are now within reach of everyone. The worlds best literature can be had for the asking. The libraries bring it to your door. Why should I not be taught to get joy out of these things. With modern facilities of getting about why should I be deprived of viewing some of the marvelous accomplishments of my fellow beings.

I want a chance to create something. However small or how insignificant this creation may be I feel a genuine thrill that comes from having done something to make the world a little better This something may never be named but it goes with millions of others like it to lift my fellows a little higher. It is all this that I want over and above earning my daily bread.

I see my wants are endless. Of course they should be. There is not only life but eternity. When I look about me and see what God and man have given me I have the simple faith to believe that our journey through time and eternity is unbroken.

I would not leave you with the impression that most of the wants which I have mentioned I do not have and you do not possess. But the majority of the human beings in this marvelous country of ours do not have them. It is for them we plead. This plea would not be made if it appeared an impossible task. But it is not so. Every man, woman and child can have in abundance if he wishes. If he does not wish it then our course is clear. Teach him to wish for all that is good and wholesome.

P. V. Kinsella
April 29, 1935

2 50

3/16/35

Paper #30

Peary and the North Pole

---Dr. James F. Mackell

Everyone of middle age or over who keeps up on what is going on in the world will recall that some twenty-five years ago there was a bitter controversy going on in the scientific world with reference to the discovery of the North Pole. The principals in this controversy were Robert E. Peary and Dr. Frederick Cook, both of whom claimed priority in the discovery. It is also well established that Peary was finally accorded the honor and Cook's claims were thoroughly discredited. It is, moreover, a matter of record that Cook was subsequently convicted of fraud in another matter, and he spent several years in prison. Peary, on the other hand, was awarded congressional recognition by being promoted to the rank of Rear Admiral in the U. S. Navy. Furthermore he was awarded medals and degrees from scientific societies both at home and abroad, while in the minds of most of his fellow citizens he became the hero of the hour.

A quarter of a century has passed since that time and most of us have become accustomed to the acceptance of the fact that the discovery of the North Pole belongs to Admiral Peary. However from time to time there have appeared articles and even books in support of the theory that Peary did not discover the Pole and some of these articles attribute to Peary rank dishonesty in his claims.

The most persistent of these critics is an English clergyman, J. Gordon Hayes, who has steadfastly held to the thesis that Peary did not

discover the Pole, and he has even gone so far in one of his most recent books as to give more credence to Cook's claims than to those of Peary. Hayes claims to have ample support for his criticism among the members of a distinguished British scientific organization, and he has, at least, one clever supporter in this country in the person of the popular author of New Haven, Connecticut--Henshaw Ward.

As a matter of fact, many weeks after much of the material for this paper was assembled, there have appeared a new book by the clergyman and a number of articles in scientific publications. In addition to this a pertinent editorial appeared in the April 21st edition of the New York Times. Dr. Hugh S. Mitchell of the National Coast and Geodetic Survey Commission reviews the Hayes book and thoroughly discredits it. It thus appears that the subject chosen for this paper is timely at any rate.

Let us spend a little time in reviewing the life of Peary prior to his epoch-making dash and in this way we may be better fitted to give his claims their proper appraisal. We find that he was born in Cresson, Pennsylvania, on May 6, 1856 of French and British ancestry. His father died when he was three years old, after which the mother took her son to a little place near Portland, Maine which her husband had bought a few years before; there mother and son lived alone. At an early age Peary exhibited an interest in nature and when he graduated from the Portland High School in 1873, he stood second in a large class in scholastic ability. In the fall of 1873 he entered Bowdoin College not far from his home. Although only seventeen years of age, he was a six foot lad, lanky but not awkward. At Bowdoin he specialized in Mathematics, Engineering and the Natural Sciences and became a leader in his classes. He also won honors in athletic contests, but he

rebelled against military training. For this rebellion he was dismissed from the College, but subsequently readmitted. He was a popular student, but not one who craved popularity. He was reticent almost to a fault, and this kept him from being a hero of the ordinary type.

During all this time Peary's mother lived with him, even during his college days. She had a lasting influence upon his life, and we find him very lonely when, after graduation, he pulled away from her and opened an office, setting himself up as a country surveyor at Fryeburg on the Saco River. While thus engaged he soon made for himself the reputation of being a thorough student of every project which he attempted, however trifling that project might appear.

About a year after he had taken up this profession of engineering, he was offered a position as scientific instructor in the Massachusetts Institute of Technology at Boston, but for some peculiar reason he turned this rather lucrative offer down and accepted in preference an apparently trifling post as draftsman in the Coast and Geodetic Survey at Washington.

Peary soon realized that the work he was doing was more routine and he had no idea of remaining long at it, but he kept his eyes open; so when the opportunity came he jumped at the chance of becoming an assistant engineer in the United States Navy. He had the good fortune to become an assistance to Menochal, the well-known naval engineer of the time. Menocnal liked the young Peary and assigned him several important engineering tasks. One of these for which Peary became somewhat famous was connected with the Nicaraguan Canal Survey, a project in which this country was much interested. Peary spent two years at this business and distinguished himself in many particulars. The plan was finally abandoned by the government, and it is

fortunate for Peary that this happened, for it probably made his subsequent polar explorations possible. His work in the tropics fighting the elements, tropical diseases and parasites afforded excellent training for the more arduous tasks to come on the ice sheets of the lonely North.

It seems that the merest chance or good fortune intervened at this point in Peary's career, a circumstance which led him to a goal that was to make his name a household word the world over. Let him relate this incident in his own words:

"In the fall of 1885, I had completed my work on the maps and plans of the Government Nicaragua Interoceanic Ship-Canal Survey, from which I had returned the previous summer, and affairs had taken on an aspect which made it seem as if the project would inevitably be postponed indefinitely. Something was necessary to occupy my leisure from Navy Yard routine, and take the place of the subject to which I had devoted my surplus energy for the past six years. One evening, in one of my favorite haunts, an old bookstore in Washington, I came upon a fugitive paper on the Inland Ice of Greenland. A chord, which as a boy, had vibrated intensely in me at the reading of Kane's wonderful book, was touched again. I read all I could upon the subject, noted the conflicting experiences of Nordenskjold, Jensen, and the rest, and felt that I must see for myself what the truth was of this great mysterious interior."

Attempts to conquer the frozen north by English-speaking people began with navigators under Henry VIII in 1527. The avowed purpose of these explorations was to find a northerly route to the Orient. Nothing much came of these early explorations until in 1588 John Davis explored the western coast of Greenland and came to a point 1128 miles from the Pole. Other

navigators flying British, Russian, Dutch, Scandinavian and French flags kept at the business of exploration in attempts to open up the Northwest passage. In 1607 Henry Hudson tried the route around Asia and reached Spitzbergen, latitude 80° 23', a far north point which stood for a century and a half. In this manner Spitzbergen became the starting point for such polar explorers as Fiola, Abruzzi and others. In contrast to this advanced base Peary could use for his starting base a point at Etah in latitude 78°.

The British kept plugging away in an effort to find a passage and [illegible] find Parry in 1819 advancing toward the west to the 110th meridian. For this he received an award of 5000 pounds from parliament. By 1827 Parry led his government to see that the discovery of the North Pole held greater possibilities than a discovery of the long sought passage to Asia, and he induced parliament to back him in such an attempt, starting from a base at Spitzbergen. In this attempt he reached latitude 82° 45', 435 miles from the Pole. From this time on it became a race among many explorers of all nationalities, a race replete with stories of hardships and failure until finally Greeley, Lockwood, and Brainard, American explorers, reached a point at latitude 83° 24' beating the best British record by four miles. This was done in 1881.

Thus we find Peary in 1885 looking at the record and fired with a [illegible] to do the thing himself. He asked for a six months leave of absence in [illegible] and after much haggling his request was granted. He had to borrow money from his mother for his trip, but finally we find him getting sail as supercargo on the whaler Eagle in May of 1886. On June 6, 1886, he was deposited by the Eagle at a little Danish station on Disco Island. He knew nothing

of the language and had no equipment to speak of. After much effort he succeeded in getting together a few Eskimos, a boat, some supplies and the services of a young Dane, Christian Moignard, who went along out of a spirit of adventure and who proved to be a valuable companion for the young explorer on his maiden attempt to conquer the frozen North. They explored the great ice sheet of northern Greenland and covered a distance of some 120 miles over the ice. Finally they had to turn back to their boat for lack of provisions, but Peary was fired with a new zeal, a zeal to do the thing that no other man had done, to conquer the North and stand at the top of the world.

Upon his return to duties in the U. S. Navy, he wrote an account of his trip and it was published in an article in the Bulletin of the American Geographical Society. He kept urging his superiors in the Navy that it was all important that an American should be the one to reach the Pole, and he also felt certain in his own soul that he was the American to do the job.

During the time that young Peary was doing these things in the tropics and in the North, he was also busily engaged in the very important business of falling in love with and attempting to induce Josephine Diebitsch to marry him. Josephine was the daughter of Professor Diebitsch of the Smithsonian Institution of Washington. After much bantering Josephine finally gave in to his suit, and they were married in the summer of 1888. In the meantime he kept after support in an effort to cross Greenland, but met with failure until finally, to make matters worse, in 1889 Nansen, a Scandinavian rival, forestalled Peary by making a successful crossing. Peary was now left with the only alternative of attempting another crossing by a more northern route.

The story of his efforts to induce the government and private backers

to support his project makes delightful reading, but time will not permit a perusal of such an account. Suffice to say he finally succeeded in obtaining the needed backing and was successful in making the difficult crossing, reaching a point on the northeastern coast of Greenland, a point he called "Navy Cliff."

On his return to civilization Peary found himself a hero due to his feat, but he still had bridges to cross before he was properly equipped for further exploration on the ice. At last he secured backing and set out with his wife on the Falcon. On September 12, 1892 Marie Ahnighito, his "snow baby" was born, amid snow, ice and Eskimos. Soon after this troubles of all sorts began to happen to the expedition, and it resulted in failure. Later his wife and baby left on the trip back to civilization, leaving Peary and a few faithful companions to winter in the North.

Mrs. Peary, upon her return to the United States, succeeded in interesting a wealthy New Yorker in her husband's project and by means of lecture tours, etc. she secured valuable financial and moral backing from scientific societies.

While in Greenland on the ice sheet, Peary discovered and recovered for his country three huge meteorites, the largest one weighing about 100 tons. These were finally transported to New York, and it is to them that Peary owes a large part of his subsequent success in gaining assistance for his projects. He kept everlastingly after it, and secured further backing for his efforts. We will not have time to go into detail with reference to the many attempts which Peary made prior to his record-making one of 1909, but his attempts as well as those of his rivals will be summed up in a few paragraphs.

With the beginning of the century the attempt to reach the Pole had entered into a sort of international sport. It became a race to see which

nation would be the first to plant its flag on the "top of the world." It will be recalled that in 1882 Greeley reached a point some 450 miles from the Pole at latitude 83°24'. This record fell in 1895 when Nansen placed the flag of Norway at latitude 86°12' which cut the distance to about 200 miles. Six years later Cogni, an Italian, reached 86°34', twenty miles nearer the Pole. In 1905 Peary, on his second polar trip, reached 87°6', leaving but 150 miles to go.

All these men were very desirous of winning the race for their respective countries, but Peary wanted to win most of all. He was the most assiduous in his efforts. He had no hope of finding new land, but it simmered down to a situation where he found himself pitted against nature and the elements of the frozen North, and he was convinced that he could win if he just kept at it. He trained for the project just as an athlete trains for an athletic event. He reduced the whole business to a science. Peary tackled his problem in a very realistic manner. He used Eskimo methods which he studied in the most infinite detail. He employed Eskimo sledge drivers and used Eskimo clothing. He knew the Eskimo better than any white man had ever known him. He felt that in this method lay success and in this he was right.

Thanks to strong financial backing he was able to have a special ship built for him. This ship, "The Roosevelt," named after the famous Theodore, was so constructed as to enable it to withstand the arduous task of cutting through the ice of Smith Sound to the northern end of Ellesmere Island within a short distance of his principal land base. His equipment complete to the last detail included two hundred dogs, several Eskimo families, men, women and children. His plans called for Eskimo men to do the hard work of the marches while the women were to do the mending and

making of clothing for the entire group. The Eskimo children had the time of their lives in a grand lark. The first summer and autumn were spent in transporting several tons of material to Cape Columbia about ninety miles from the ship. Peary started out on his second attempt near the end of February of the following year, 1905. In this attempt he was forced to turn back because of open water in the great ice sheet, after having reached latitude 87°6'.

"The Roosevelt" was thoroughly overhauled and reconditioned for another attempt the following year, and in the summer of 1908, Peary again turned his eyes northward for a third and final trial. At Etah he took aboard 49 Eskimos and 246 dogs. He had with him on this trip, as well as on others, his personal colored assistant, Matthew Henson, Captain Bob Bartlett, his surgeon, Dr. Goodsell, his secretary, Ross Marion and two new men, Borup and MacMillan. Again they transported their supplies to Cape Columbia.

On the last day of February, 1909 the party of twenty-four men and 133 dogs started out with sledges on the journey over the ice. Peary was clever enough to start three relaying parties ahead of his own personal party. These relaying parties were to open the way for Peary and his party, and thus he planned to save his energy for the final dash. One by one the relaying parties started back to the base until at last at latitude 87°46', just 133 miles from the Pole, Bartlett turned back with the remaining relay party. Peary now began a series of dashes with five companions, four Eskimos and the negro, Henson.

According to Peary's record of these marches the party had extreme good luck in finding the surface of the ice exceedingly favorable for sledging. The party made the Pole in five marches, arriving at a point they thought was near the Pole on April 6. Astronomical observation indicated that the location

of their final camp was 89°57', certainly within a few miles of the Pole. On the 6th and 7th of April, during their thirty hours at the Pole, Peary reported that he made several short dashes in various directions so he felt sure that he had stood at the very top of the world at one of these times.

The dash back to the base camp was more or less uneventful, but he covered the 485 miles between the Pole and Cape Columbia in 16 days establishing a record for speed over such a route; but as has been pointed out by his many admirers the route was well laid out by the returning parties ahead of him, and therefore the return trip need not be considered phenomenal.

When Peary finally arrived back to civilization his happiness over his feat suffered a severe shock when he learned that Dr. Frederick Cook had already announced that he had been at the Pole the year before. Public opinion was divided with reference to their rival claims, and Cook had already received recognition in Europe; but it turned out later that Cook's claim was a grand hoax, one of the most stupendous of its kind ever perpetrated. His data when they were thoroughly analyzed by a committee of his own choosing left no doubt that Cook had never been far from his base and that his whole record was a fabrication and a clumsy one at that.

The Cook episode made things rather unpleasant for Peary in many ways, and it was not until after nearly every scientific body in the world had recognized his claims that Congress finally adopted a report in 1911, making Peary an Admiral in the U. S. Navy. During the World War Peary became interested in aviation and did much to further its cause as a department of the Navy. In the end he fell a victim of pernicious aenemia and died in 1920. He was buried at Arlington, honored by all his countrymen as one of the great heroes of the age.

Now as regards the present controversy over his final attainment of the Pole, it appears that his enemies, headed by the Reverend Hayes, point out that they base their doubts on three facts, namely: the alleged remarkable speed of Peary on his dash to the Pole and back to his base is unlikely if not impossible; Peary's observations at the Pole are not consistent; the Congressional record and Cook's book "My Attainment of the Pole."

In answer to these allegations we can do no better than to cite two authorities, men of the highest personal standing and men who are really capable of speaking with authority. These men are Professor William Herbert Hobbs, Director of the Greenland Expedition of the University of Michigan and Dr. Hugh C. Mitchell, Director of the U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey.

Professor Hobbs, in The Scientific Monthly of May, 1935, has this to say about the controversy:

"The noteworthy increase in the daily marches after Bartlett's departure has been often commented upon, and by hostile critics has been exaggerated so as to discredit Peary's narrative. To all such criticism, the facts give a complete and satisfactory answer.

First of all, the fundamental plan called for just such a dash from the most advanced base and Peary and the men, who from the start seemed likely to form the polar party on the basis of their superior qualities, had throughout been spared much of the gruelling work of the earlier stages so as to keep in condition. In the second place the condition of the sea ice improves steadily as the distance from the land increases, and after passing latitude 84° or 85° N. on Peary's course it takes on the less hummocky character of the ice east of Greenland, and is in fact spoken of as Atlantic ice, whereas the old hummocky ice south of that latitude is known as paleocrystic ice. For the last six days before the departure of Bartlett, the double group of sledge parties made average daily marches of about nineteen miles.

Quite as important as the change in the ice-surface was the change in the morale of both Eskimos and dogs once their faces were turned toward home, as is known to all who have experience with these people. Eskimos are very fearful of venturing far out on either sea ice or inland ice, and Bartlett, who pioneered throughout, has related how he would wait for the Eskimos to come up and sometimes go back and find them sitting idly on the sledges--soldiering." They felt safe if they were near Pearyarksuan (the Great Peary), whom they almost worshipped and whom they trusted beyond all precedent.

It is a mistake to assume, as many have done, that the men walked. Wherever the trail was good, and from the Pole it was clearly marked throughout, the men generally rode upon the sledges while the dogs for much of the time raced for home throughout long marches when the greatest difficulty was

to keep from falling asleep and dropping out on the trail. Where no trail is in sight dogs are driven with the whip, but over a marked trail, and especially one they know, they need no encouragement if in good condition. No attention was paid to day or night hours, as it was always light enough for travel, but the already built igloos along the trail were used for sleeping whenever necessary. There had been unexpected delays going poleward, and Peary was fearful that, because of the lateness of the season and the arrival of the spring tides, the big lead would be found wide open to bar the return passage. This fear was upon the Eskimos, and when after the "big lead" had been crossed and the firm ice of the glacial fringe reached, they went fairly mad with delight now that the strain was over. Dancing and shouting, Ootah cried as he collapsed upon his sledge, "The Devil is asleep or having trouble with his wife or we should never have come back so easily." Arrived at Cape Columbia, whence the expedition had started out over the sea ice, the party slept for two days to make up for that which had been lost on the homeward journey. (p. 395)

"The dash to the Pole and back from latitude 88° was made with the pick of the dogs and drivers of the entire Eskimo tribe, and Henson after eighteen years of experience was the equal of any Eskimo. Yet the average marches of the party over sea ice have been many times surpassed, not only by Peary but by many others. As one writer without knowledge of the matter has claimed in a sensational article that such speeds could not possibly be made, it may be well to institute some comparisons.

The average march of Peary northward to the point of Bartlett's departure reckons out as 12.8 miles, a figure which offers little basis for comparison with the average to the Pole after Bartlett's departure—26 miles—or with the average for the return--25.6 miles—for the reasons already given, and because the loads to latitude 88° were heavy, the trail was rough and

had to be pioneered and improved, snow huts had to be built, and the large and relatively unwieldy party was then only slowly being "shaken down."

That the average marches during the dash to the Pole and back, outstanding as they were, were not without parallels in both earlier and later work should be clear from the following examples.

Before setting out on the Polar expedition Captain Bartlett had sledged with heavy loads from Cape Sheridan to Cape Columbia, a distance of 90 miles, in five marches, an average of 18 miles. The return journey with the dogs homeward bound and drawing light sledges, was made in one march of 90 miles. On the return from the Pole after two days' sleep at Cape Columbia, Peary made the same distance in two marches of 45 miles each. MacMillan and Borup on the return from Cape Morris Jesup to the Roosevelt, a distance of from 250 to 300 miles as traveled, covered the distance in eight marches, an average of 31 to 34 miles; though, instead of eight, the outward journey had required eighteen marches. Matt Henson, traveling the full twenty-four hours, once covered 100 miles in a single march." (P. 395--396)

"Peary took infinite pains to furnish the proofs for his claim. On the route to the Pole a series of soundings was taken and one of these was within five miles of the Pole itself, where some thin ice suitable for cutting was fortunately found. Soundings, however, at best furnish a partial proof only if the sea bottom should later be found to be notably irregular. The only hope that they will be repeated lies in the Wilkins submarine expedition, for no explorer is likely again to repeat the hazardous journey across the sea ice.

Fortunately, however, the observations of the sun's altitude made by Peary at the Pole have as the result of a then unknown variation in the daily change rate of his standard chronometer supplied a convincing proof, as was pointed out by the distinguished computer of astronomical observations, Hugh C. Mitchell, to whom the polar observations of Peary after his return were

submitted by the Committee of the National Geographic Society. The nature of this proof will therefore be stated.

"Latitude is elsewhere obtained directly from the angular elevation of the sun measured against the horizon, either with a sextant or a theodolite or a transit. Near the Pole the sun, when above the horizon, is at so low an angle that the horizon can not be seen, and an "artificial horizon" must be substituted--a level reflecting surface, such as a bath of mercury. It is necessary to take the sun's angle at intervals throughout the twenty-four hours; and if this is done at the Pole itself, the angles should agree throughout. From the variations of such readings the distance from the Pole may be determined.

"Peary's observations, submitted to the committee of the Congress, were turned over to Hugh C. Mitchell and C. R. Duvall, the distinguished expert computers of astronomical observations of the U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. These technical experts, working independently of each other and employing different methods, obtained results which agreed within a second of angle for latitude. These give for the latitude of Peary's camp near the Pole, 89° 55' 23", and for the longitude 137° W. Hence the position of his camp (Camp Jesup) was 4.6 geographic mil s distant from the Pole. But this was not Peary's closest approach to the Pole, for on the morning of April 7 at 6:40 o'clock, Peary traveled in the direction of the sun, immediately after taking his observations, for a distance of 8 miles, and so, as computed by the experts, he passed within a distance of 1.6 miles of the Pole. Further, Peary made trips of a few miles each in several different directions and it may be came within a stone's throw of the exact position of the Pole; but the point is one which has only an academic interest.

"In his report Mitchell stated that from his professional experience he believed it would have been impossible for the data of these observations

to have been obtained other than under the circumstances claimed. In using these observations in connection with each other, they in a measure prove each other; and error could be detected had the observations not been made at the points set forth in the data. The nature of this proof is not difficult to understand.

"On the return from the Pole Peary's standard chronometer was sent to its makers for rating and comparison. When examinedd before the expedition started the previous year, the makers had found it to have a predicted daily rate of two tenths of a second losing. On the return, nowever, the check-up showed that it had really had a daily rate of two and two tenths of a second gaining. Peary had taken at the Pole in all thirteen single, or six and one half double altitudes of the sun, at two different stations in three different directions and at four different times. All except the first single altitude, taken on April 6, were under satisfactory conditions, and all at temperatures of -11° F. to -30° F., or above the freezing temperature of the mercury in the artificial horizon. At the time the observations were taken Peary supposed that his chronometer had been losing two tenths of a second daily, and as a conse quence of the actual rate of 2.2 seconds gaining, he observed the sun for noon ten minutes before it was on the meridian. Mr. Mitchell states that the observations all show that the sun was actually where it must have been, not at the instants Peary at the time supposed, but at those which the behavior of the chronometer as later revealed indicated."

Dr. Mitchell in the Book Review section of the New York Times, in reply to the clergyman, has this to say:

"The pages cited by Mr. Hayes are from the minority report, which was signed by Ernest W. Roberts, a member who "had to be shown," and contain quotations from the rather lengthy hearings on the bill, introduced into the report by Mr. Roberts for the very apparent purpose of justifying his demands for conclusive evidence. From such a document Mr. Hayes selects certain material and leads the uninformed reader to believe that the official story is different from the true one, told in Mr. Roberts's concluding sentence: "I am forced to the conclusion that Captain Peary was within a very short distance of the Pole; sufficiently near to warrant the claim that he reached the Pole."

"The majority report was short and to the point, as may be indicated by the single sentence from page 1 of the above document; "Robert E. Peary reached the North Pole on April 6, 1909." With both majority and minority strongly favoring the bill, it was passed, and Peary rewarded as proposed therein. With such evidence before him, it is difficult to understand why any student should stoop to lifting material from its context and make an effort to mislead his readers in such a foul way.

"Mr. Hayes next refers to Peary's book as furnishing complete evidence for discrediting him, and as in past attacks centres his fire on Peary's apparent speed over the ice in returning from the Pole. That such speed was not phenomenal has been demonstrated time and again; that ice conditions in the arctic are sometimes such as to make such speed possible is well known on the authority of a number of explorers. I should like to quote a statement made to me by Captain Bob Bartlett in reply to a question by me as to what the ice was like at the point where he turned back. "Why," Captain Bartlett

replied, "It was just like Pennsylvania Ave."

"Now let us look at the evidence furnished by Peary's astronomical observations, which Hayes compares with Dr. Cook's, saying of the latter's: "His astronomical observations were fuller than Peary's, Cook took longitude as well as latitude observations, and they do not form a bad series." Now, astronomical observations are essential for determining where one may be on this earth of ours; all maps depend for their proper placing on the globe on astronomical determinations of latitude and longitude. Once such a geographical position is determined, one may proceed by various surveying methods to construct the map and fill in its many details. But in the last analysis, the explorer and the engineer must depend upon astronomical observations of position to tell where he is or has been.

"So with Peary at the North Pole: The final evidence which tells where he pitched camp on April 6, 1909, must be the astronomical observations taken at Camp Morris Jesup on that and the following day. These observations were elevations of the sun taken in directions six hours apart, that is at right angles to one another, and together they determined the point on the globe where Camp Jesup stood. They could not be called latitude or longitude observations, strictly speaking, though those taken in the direction from which Peary had come were the more competent to determine the latitude component of the camp's position, while those taken in the direction of the Pole had greater weight in determining the longitude component. Together they determine a geographical position, the latitude and longitude of Camp Jesup and show that camp to have been about five miles from the North Pole. More than this, they show that when Peary took a light sledge and on the morning of April 7 made a traverse in the direction of the sun as it was when he observed it, he must have

passed within a couple of miles of the Pole.

"How good are these observations of Peary's at Camp Jesup, and how complete? Only a few of these observations are given in Peary's book, but all of them were used in the reports presented by experts to the Congressional Committee, and all of them have been published in a paper presented to the "X Congresso Internazionale di Geografia" which met in Rome in 1913. That paper, entitled "To Students of Arctic Exploration," contains not only a carefully made and complete analysis of Peary's astronomical observations near the Pole, but also a study made by scientists of the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey of the quality of observations obtainable with instruments and methods such as were used by Peary. The observations are good enough to give a very satisfactory determination of the geographical position of Camp Jseup, and a check on that determination. In overlooking the evidence which these observations afford, Mr. Hayes neglects the only evidence which can show conclusively where Peary was on April 6, 1909--evidence which has been before the public for more than two decades." (New York Times Book Review, April 21, 1935.)

It thus appears that this new agitation to discredit Peary is nothing more than the usual lifting of eyebrows which we have met so often in the case of such men as Columbus, Washington, Lincoln, and Jefferson. It seems that nothing endures quite so well as scandal and the public is always ready for a new bit. However, in the case of Peary there is no doubt that if any man deserved to reach the Pole, he was the man. He spent a quarter of a century in polar exploration and when compared with such a scoundrel as Cook it is indeed difficult to see how an intelligent public could be long in doubt.

The mere fact that the U. S. flag was carried to the Pole has no important significance commercially or otherwise. It is very important, however,

that the integrity of Peary, as well as that of others of our nationally famous men of the past must be protected. It is indeed fortunate in the case of Peary that he was careful to leave us a record which defies the imputations of his would-be defamers.

Paper #31.

COMPLETE MINUTES for the YEAR- - -1934-35.

Harry E. Elder, Secty-Treas.

October 1, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Canine, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Francis, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Kelly, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Mitchell, Moore, Ouwencel, Stantz, Shriner, Sutin, Vancleave, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 20

Minutes of the meeting of May 4, 1934 were read, corrected and approved.

The Club voted to permit Dr. Wiedemann to substitute "Some Observations of Soviet Russia Illustrated" for the one announced in the printed program.

The program announced for the next meeting was: "Some Observations of Soviet Russia Illustrated" by Dr. F. E. Wiedemann.

The meeting adjourned at 9:20 P. M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

October 8, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Canine, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsythe, Halberstadt, Hickman, Kelly, Lord, Mackell, Stantz, Vancleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: over 100.

Bills totaling $19.55 for printing were approved.

Dr. Frank Weidemann read his paper on "Some Observations of Soviet Russia Illustrated".

The program announced for the next meeting was: "That Man McGuffey" by J. B. Wisely.

The meeting adjourned at 9:20 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

October 15, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Canine, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Francis, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Markle, Moore, Ouwencel, VanCleave, Wang, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 22

The name of Ralph N. Tirey was submitted for membership by Fred Brengle - to be acted upon by the Club at the next meeting.

Mr. Wisely ready his paper, "That Man McGuffey".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Let Nature Take Its Course" by L. C. Halberstadt.

The meeting adjourned at 9:20 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

October 22, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Francis, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Mitchell, Moore, Ouwencel, Stanty, VanCleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 4

Ralph N. Tirey was unanimously elected as a member of the Club. The name of J. W. Jones was submitted for membership by Fred Brengle - to be voted upon at the next meeting.

Mr. Halberstadt read his paper, "Let Nature Take Its Course".

The program announced for the next meeting was "The Triumph of Mediocrity in Bus ness" by Dr. W. F. Mitchell.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Th"

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

October 29, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R.VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Mackell, Malan, Markle, Mitchell, Shriner, Taxay, VanCleave, Wade, Weng,Wisely.

Visitors present: 6

The name of J. W. Jones was balloted upon with the following results: Yes, 9; No, 4.

Dr. Mitchell read his paper "The Triumph of Mediocrity in Business."

The program announced for the next meeting was: "On Our Way" by A. R. Markle.

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

November 5, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Lord, Markle, Shriner, VanCleave, Wisely, Wiedemann, and Tirey.

Visitors present: 3

Mr. A. R. Markle read his paper, "On Our Way".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Stephen E. Foster" by George E. Frances.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

November 12, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with R. A. Acher presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Canine, Elder, Fair Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman. Kelly, Markle, Shriner, Sutin, Wade, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann, and Welborn.

Visitors present: 8

Rev. Servies read the paper, "Stephen E. Foster" which hadbeen prepared by Rev. George E. Francis.

The program announced for the next meeting was "Indeterminate Factors in Heredity" by H. E. Elder.

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

R. R. Isaacs
President

November 19, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Canine, Elder, Ewers, Fair Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Ouwencel, Sutin, Taxay, VanCleave, Weng, Wisely and Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 6

Mr. Harry E. Elder read his paper, "Indeterminate Factors in Heredity".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Modern Poetry" by L. R. Fair.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

November 26, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Canine, Elder, Fair, Forsyth, Francis, Halberstadt, Hickman, Lord, Markle, Moore, Stantz, Sutin, VanCleave, Wade, Wisely.

Visitors present: 3

Mr. L.R. Fair read his paper,"Modern Poetry".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Senescence" by D. H. Forsyth.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Warren C. Wade
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

December 3, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Moore, Shriner, VanCleave, Wleborn, Weng, Wisely.

Visitors present: 4

The membership committee presented the name of Wm. P. Allyn for membership.

Mr. D. H. Forsyth read his paper on "Senescence".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Crime inColonial Massachusetts" by F.E. Brengle.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

December 10, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with R.A.Acher presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Markle, Mitchell, Ouwencel, Shriner, Tirey, Wade, Welborn, and Weng.

Visitors present: 3

Wm. P.Allyn was unanimously elected to membership.

Mr. Fred E. Brengle read his paper on "Crime in Colonial Massachusetts".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Charles Lamb" by E. L. Welborn.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Harry E. Wade.
Secretary

R. R. VanClaase
President

December 17, 1934

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were : Acher, Allen, Allyn, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Mapkle, Stantz, Taxay, VanCleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely and Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 3

It was voted to send a Christmas Greeting to Professor Elwood P. Kemp.

Dr. E. L. Welborn read his paper on "Charles Lamb".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Hitler" by F. C. Wade.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Secretary

President

January 7, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with R. A. Acher presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Markle, Shriner, Wade, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 13

Mr. Wade read his paper on "Where Do We Go From Here?"

The program announced for the next meeting was "Horace, the Most Modern of Ancient Poets" by F. H. Weng.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Ernest E. Elder
Secretary

R. R. VanCleave
President

January 13, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Allyn, Canine, Elder, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon. Hickman, Markle, Ouwencel, Shriner, VanCleave, Welborn, Weng, Wiedemann, Tirey, Taxay and Acher.

Visitors present: 7

The name of Thomas O'Mara was submitted for membership.

It was moved, seconded and carried that Mr. Markle keep in touch with Colonel Dick Thompson papers with view of securing them eventually for the club.

Mr. Weng read his paper on "Horace, the Most Modern of Ancient Poets".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Adult Education" by Harold E. Moore.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Secretary

N. R. VanCleave

Freaident

January 21, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Markle, Mitchell, Moore, VanCleave, Welborn, Wisely andWiedemann.

Visitors present: 1

Thomas O'Mara was unanimously elected to membership in the club.

Mr. Moore readhis paper on "Adult Education".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Our Debt to the Dutch" by E. N. Canine.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Secretary

President

January 28, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Brengle, Canine, Elder, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Markle, VanCleave, Wisely, Wiedemann and Ouwencel.

Visitors present: 1

Mr. Canine read his paper, "Our Debt to the Dutch".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Fascism and Communism" by J. Marshall Taxay.

The meeting adjourned at 9:20 P.M.

Harry E. Elder.
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

February 4, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Allen, Allyn, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Malan, Markle, Moore, Ouwencel, Shriner, Taxay, VanCleave, Welborn, Wiedemann, Wade, Weng and Wisely.

Visitors present: 7

J. Marshall Taxay read his paper, "Dixie Laughs" or "The Sociology of Southern Humor".

The program announced for the next meeting was "The American Legion" by J. L. Lord.

The meeting adjourned at 8:45 P.M.

Orrin E. Elder.
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

February 11, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with C. Y. Kelly presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Brengle, Canine, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon Hickman, Kelly, Lord, Markle, Mitchell, Moore, Sutin andVanCleave.

Visitors present: 6

J. L. Lord read his paper on "The American Legion".

The program annoynced for the next meeting was "Astronomy, A Cultural Study" by D. L. Harmon.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Secretary

President

February 18, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Francis, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Shriner, Stantz, VanCleave, Wisely, and Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 7

The secretary was instructed by the Club to remind members who have been absent four or more consecutive times of the statement on absences in the Articles of Association.

Mr. Harmon readhis paper on "Astronomy, A Cultural Subject".

The program announced for the next meeting was "The Nature of A Nerve Current" by R. A. Acher.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P. M.

Secretary

President

February 25, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Kelly, Markle, Sutin, Taxay, VanCleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely and Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 5

Dr. R. A. Acher read his paper, "The Nature of a Nerve Current".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Bird Migration" by W. E. Ouwencel.

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 P.M.

Secretary

President

March 4, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with R. A.Acher presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Hickman, Markle, Ouwencel, Shriner, Stantz, Wisely and Wiedeman.

Visitors present: 10

W. E. Ouwencel read his paper on "Bird Migration".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Will Democracy Fail?" by O. T. Allen.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Secretary

President

March 11, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with J. B. Wisely presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Kelly, Levin, Mackell, Markle, Sutin, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 13

Dr. O. T. Allen read his paper, "Will Democracy Fail?"

The program announced for the next meeting was "Politician" by Lewis Sutin.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Secretary

President

March 18, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Levin, Lord, Markle, Mitchell, Ouwencel, Shriner, Stantz, Sutin, VanCleave, Wade, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors Present: 7

Mr. Louis Sutin read his paper, "Politician".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Archimedes: His Life and Contributions" by W. O. Shriner.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Secretary

President

March 25, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Kelley, Markle, Mitchell, Shriner, Stantz, Sutin, Taxay, VanCleave, Wade, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann, Allyn.

Visitors present: 7

Dr. W. O. Shriner read his paper, "Archimedes: His Life and Contributions".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Shakespeare's Philosophy in 1935" by C. T. Malan.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Secretary

President

April 1, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Lord, Mackell, Malan, Markle, Mitchell, Vancleave, Wade, Welborn, Wisely, Wiedemann andTirey.

Visitors present: 16

Dr. C. T. Malan read his paper on "Shakespeare's Philosophy in 1935"

The program announced for the next meeting was "Recovery by Experiment and Expenditure" by Mr. Levin.

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 P.M.

Karen E. Elder.
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

April 8, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. VanCleave presiding.

Members present were: Allen, Brengle, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Halberstadt, Kelly, Levin, Mitchell, Markle, Ouwencel, Stantz, Shriner, Vancleave, and Weng. Wade, Welborn.

Visitors present: 9

Motion by Halberstadt, seconded by Harmon, amended by Kelly authorizing the chair to engage Mr. Harrold D. Eide as speaker at our annual dinner May 20, 1935. Motion carried.

Mr. Levin read his paper "Recovery by Experiment and Expenditure".

The program announced for the next meeting was "Indiana, the Beautiful" by Mr. Stantz.

The meeting adjourned at 10:00 P.M.

Acting Secretary

President

April 15, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Halberstadt, Lord, Markle, Stantz, and Vancleave.

Visitors present: 6

Mr. Stantz read his paper, "Indiana, the Beautiful".

The program announced for the next meeting was "The Change of Character of Man" by Dr. Hickman.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Acting Secretary

President

April 22, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Markle, Vancleave, Wade, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 5

The President appointed Mr. Kelley, Mr. Weng, and Dr. Shriner as a committee to arrange for the annual dinner and Mr. Wisely, Dr.Wiedemann and Mr. Wade as a nominating committee.

Dr. Hickman read his paper, "The Change of Character of Man".

The Program announced for the next meeting, was "What Do I Want?" by Mr. Himelich.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Secretary

President

April 29, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with H. E. Moore presiding.

Members present were: Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Himelich, Lord, Markle, Moore, Ouwencel, Shriner, Wade, Welborn, Wisely and Tirey.

Visitors present: 6

The expenses of a new secretary's book and a Christmas card to Ellwood Kemp - 48 cents in all, were authorized by the club.

Mr. Himelich read his paper, "What Do I Want"?

The program announced for the next meeting was "Peary and the North Pole" by J. F. Mackell.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Geo. E. Elder.
Secretary

H. Rilan Clowes
President

May 6, 1935

Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson R. Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Mackell, Markle, Ouwencel, Shriner, Taxay, Vancleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann,

Visitors present: 5

Mr. J. F. Mackell read his paper, "Peary and the North Pole".

The program announced for the next meeting was: "Sunspots - the Theory of Their Origin", by J. E. Ewers.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Harry E. Ellers
Secretary

N. R. Vancleave
President

May 13, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P1M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with Nelson Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelley, Mackell, Markle, Stantz, Vancleave, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann,

Visitors present: 4

J. E. Ewers read his paper, "Sunspots - The Theory of Their Origin".

The Nominating Committee submitted the following report for the year 1935-36:

President -----W. E. Cuwencel

Vice President-----Harry E. Elder

Secretary-Treasurer-----D.L. Harmon

The report of the nominating committee was accepted and the secretary was instructed to cast the entire vote of the club for those nominated.

The Treasurer was ordered to notify all members who had not paid dues for the current year.

The following bills were approved and ordered paid:

To Chamber of Commerce .....$15.00

To Speaker for dinner meeting....$35.00

Speaker's dinner.....$ 1.00

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. VanCleave
President

May 20, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club held its annual Dinner meeting at the Y.W.C.A. at 6:30 P.M. with Nelson Vancleave presiding.

Members present were: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Kelley, Mackell, Markle, Moore, Ouwenoel, Shriner, Stantz, Taxay, Vancleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely and Wiedemann.

Visitors present: 29

The outstanding feature of the evening was an address, illustrated with pictures by H. D. Eide on his explorations in Spitzbergen.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Harry E. Elder
Secretary

N. R. Vancleave
President

# TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

# VOL 15

# 1935-36

# TERRE HAUTE

# LITERARY CLUB

# PAPERS

VOLUME XV.

1935- -1936.

Index- -Vol. XV- -1935-36


| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Aaron Burr,The Trial of- -F.C.Wade | Paper | #21 | |
| Acher,R.A.- -Human Nature from the Point of View of Psychoanalysis- | " | 14 | |
| American Nobel Prize Winners in Science- -J.F.Mackell- | " | 8 | |
| Brengle,F.E.- -Hamilton and Jefferson and Current Politics | " | 13 | |
| College Professor in Politics,The- -C.T.Malan- | " | 16 | |
| Constitution,the Supreme Law of the Land- -L.C.Halberstadt | " | 25 | |
| Education,(see Elder)- | " | 7 | |
| Education,(see Moore)- | " | 9 | |
| Elder,H.E.- -Larger Units of Organization- | " | 7 | |
| Eliot,(see Welborn)- | " | 23 | |
| Europe,(see Wiedemann) | " | 3 | |
| Franklin (see Harmon)- | " | 19 | |
| Forsyth,D.H.- -State Medicine- | " | 22 | |
| Glacier National Park- -Guy Stantz | " | 12 | |
| Halberstadt,L.C.- -The Problem of Inequality | " | 6 | |
| Halberstadt,L.C.- -The Constitution,the Supreme Law of the Land | " | 25 | |
| Hamilton (see Brengle) | " | 13 | |
| Harmon,D.L.- -Benjamin Franklin- | " | 19 | |
| Harmon,D.L.- -Minutes for 1935-36- | " | 27 | |
| Hickman,H.S.- -Roosevelt,The Fabianist | " | 5 | |
| Inequality (see Halberstadt) | " | 6 | |
| Jefferson (see Brengle)- | " | 13 | |
| Larger Units in Organization- -H.E.Elder | " | 7 | |
| Lord,J.L.- -Puppy Love | " | 17 | |
| Mackell,J.F.- -American Nobel Prize Winners in Science | " | 8 | |
| Malan,C.T.- -The College Professor in Politics | " | 16 | |
| Markle,A.R.- -The Public,Its Servants and Its Utilities- | " | 26 | |
| Medicine (see Forsyth) | " | 22 | |
| Minutes for 1935-36- -H.L.Harmon | " | 27 | |
| Moore,H.E.- -A Page from the History of Education in Indiana | " | 9 | |
| Nobel (see Mackell)- | " | 8 | |
| On Being a Public Deputy- -L.R.Sutin | " | 18 | |
| Politics (see Brengle) | " | 13 | |
| Politics (see Malan) | " | 16 | |
| Psychoanalysis (see Acher)- | " | 14 | |
| Public,Utilities (see Markle)- | " | 26 | |
| Puppy Love- -J.L.Lord- | " | 17 | |
| Roosevelt,The Fabianist- -H.S.Hickman- | " | 5 | |
| Stantz,Guy- -Glacier National Park | " | 12 | |
| Sutin,L.R.- -On Being a Public Deputy- | " | 18 | |
| Taxay,J.M.- -The Townsend Planaceah- | " | 20 | |
| Theses on the Door,The- -N.R.Van Cleave- | " | 2 | |
| Townsend Planaceah,The- -J.M.Taxay | " | 20 | |
| Utilities (see Markle) | " | 26 | |
| Van Cleave,N.R.- -The Theses on the Door | " | 2 | |
| Wade,F.C.- -The Trial of Aaron Burr- | " | 21 | |
| Welborn,E.L.- -Charles W.Eliot,The Enlarger of Common Life | " | 23 | |
| Wiedeman,F.E.- -As I Saw Europe in the Summer of 1935- | " | 3 | |
| | | | |
| *Bunyan,Paul- -W.E.Ouweneel | " | 1 | |
| #Ouweneel,W.E.- -Paul Bunyan- | " | 1 | |

Paper #1



Paul Bunyan

It is mid-winter in the pine woods of the north. The blanket of pure snow is pierced only by the evergreens whose color in the pale moonlight is deepened by contrast with the white drifts that cover their lower boughs. The cold dry wind whips the dust-like snow between the trees, out over the frozen lake and down the avenue of trees that shows where the river flows.

In a clearing above the frozen swamp that borders one of the lakes we may find a string of squatty cabins ans shelters and, if we go close may see a beam or two of light which has with difficulty escaped thru thick walls. The buildings are of uncertain height but the walls are banked at least half-way with dirt. Here and there the snow drifts have almost effaced the eaves of the low roofs. The black chimneys, stubby and hooded, are pouring steady streams of gray smoke which frequently are illuminated with rushes of sparks.

Entering one of the cabins we find in a central aisle a large heater with cordwood stacked behind it. The base of the heater is red-hot but an outline of frost marks the doorway thru which we entered. Two pendulous oil lamps cast a pattern of shadows and light over two parallel rows of bunks and their occupants. The air within seems stifling. It is heavy with a variety of odors - ~~sssssss~~ wool socks steaming on lines around the stove, wet leather of shoes stacked on cordwood, kerosene of the oil lamps, smoke from strong tobacco and well aged pipes, and the body odors of lumberjacks.

Most of the occupants are reclining in their bunks with heads propped up or with bearded chins laid in cupped hands watching a central figure whose stockinged feet dangle down from a lower bunk ~~XXXXX~~ while he leans forward to avoid the bunk above.

Pausing now and then to take a few puffs or gesticulating pipe in hand , he is telling his bunkmates how he helped Paul Bunyan log the mountain that stood on its head. Every man in the house has heard this tale before but no one knows what embellishments this bunkhouse bard is going to put on tonight. His story ???? runs somethin like this.

The season after Paul had cleared off several townships in the Smiling River country, he decided to log off the Dakota country. It had the most unique physical feature to be found in America - the mountain that stood on its head. Its peak was buried 80 in the ground and its slopes ran upward and outward to its summit which was a timbered plateau two miles high and twenty seven miles in circumference. In the center of the plateau was High Springs whose water formed Lofty River. The falls that the river made in its two mile drop to the plains below was named Niagara after Paul's moose hound, the name being later passed on to a small falls on the border.

Paul was hard pressed for a straw boss. With all these his book-keeping of one sort or another to found little time to direct the loggers. He had had Lars Larsen, John Johnson, Eric Ericson, Swan Swanson, and one Pat Murphy who had dared to try passing as ??? Murph Murphson. But each ones weakness eventually appeared and caused him to lose his job.

While still at ??? seems to how to direct the drive, Paul heard that the mightiest logger of Yorben was trampling thru the woods for his camp. It was rumored that he was ??? as tall as the tallest trees, which made him as tall as Paul himself. Paul hoped that the perfect foreman had come at last.

The Big Swede was Hels Nolsen. Much to the Swede's surpirse, Paul Bunyan immediately made him foreman and created for him the title of Bull of the Woods. His first job was that of logging the plains below the mountain that stood on its head. Confidant that he had at last found an able foreman Paul retreated to his ledgers. So rapidly did logging progress that it was necessary for him to spend all of his time on his accounts.

The Big Swede had come to Paul's camp not to work for him but to become his partner. The enthusiasm of his reception overcame him so much that he did not dare express his deepest desire. When he had demonstrated his ability as a logger, his resentment grew until it was reflected in the amount of work his men did. When the Big Swede had to log the slope of the mountain that stood on its head he was stumped and Paul Bunyan observed from his records that each tree required seventy two hours of labor. So Paul walked out to the mountain to see what methods his foreman was using.

The trees on the slope of the mountain were rooted upward and the tops of the trees pointed to the plain below. Here Bunyan saw his men dizzily crawling from tree to tree, trying to keep up their usual pace in the dirt and sawdust falling past them.

Paul retired to his office and pondered until at midnight he conceived his solution to the problem.

From an old chest he brought a double-barreled shotgun. An idea of the size of the gun may be obtained when one considers that its barrels were later used as the smoke stacks for Paul's first sawmill.

After breakfast when his men when his men had nearly gone back to their hazardous labor, Paul ordered Big Ole, the blacksmith, to cut thousands pieces of iron each two feet square. In two days he had his sacks loaded with these plates and then he waited for the Big Swede to confess that he could not log the mountain. But the Swede had at

ideas. he decided that it was useless to finish the job and one morning announced that he was going to lead the men to another part of the country. This show of insubordination brought from Paul an oath . In his fury he roared so that many of the men fell to the earth and all of them were dazed. Regaining his self-control he picked up his shot-gun and ordered his men to follow him to the mountain. The Big Swede followed at a distance. Paul halted the loggers within sight of the mountain and lifted his gun to his shoulders. Both barrels were fired with such force that many of the men were again thrown to the ground. Clouds of dust filled the air. When the dust settled, the loggers saw a new forest before them. The load of the two shells had cut off thousands of trees which had fallen with their tips driven into the plain.

The next morning the Big Swede & deserted camp. He headed for the summit of the mountain. Paul Bunyan followed him.Paul saw the Swede climb over the edge of the summit and with a running leap he reached the edge and drew himself over. The Swede met Paul and a fight for physical supremacy started at once. The loggers back in camp heard a terrific roar and their bunkhouses shook. Amid clouds of dust and claps of thunder the fight continued for twenty-four hours. Then there was a terrific crash and all was quiet. Out of the dust the loggers saw Paul Bunyan carrying the Big Swede on his shoulders. Back to camp and into his office Paul walked with the Big Swede. And the Big Swede made peace with his master.

But the fighting destroyed the mountain and what remains is called the Black Hills of Dakota.

This in short is the story we would hear. Actually it would be enriched with all of the digressions, coloring, lumberjack slang, and imaginings which ecrned for this-tall story artist the rights and privelèges of the bunkhouse bard.

Similarly we might hear tales of the Round River drive during which the loggers drove theff logs down a river which they later found to be circular, the Onion River drive when so many wild onions were encountered that the success of the drive was endangered until the Italian garlic crop was found to be short and was replaced by the wild onions Paul Bunyan's men dug, tales about trotting trees, or the rain that came up from China.

Although the Paul Bunyan myth resembles some heroic legends, it is really the fun vehicle of the lumberjack. It is not intended to be inspiring or impressive in a heroic way. It was created by thousands of minds during many long winter nights around many camp fires for the sole purpose of brightening the otherwise dull life of the woodsman. ~~before the days of pool rooms and radios.~~ The force which created it was the Yankee love for a tall story.

The personalities of Paul Bunyan and the characters associated with him are constructed upon the lumberjack's ideas of what some men are supposed to be and what they considered others actually to be. Thus Sourdough Sam was one kind of a cook and Hot Biscuit Slim was another. Sourdough Sam made everything out of sourdough except coffee. He declared it could be used for shaving soap, eye wash, poultices, hot grease, hair tonic, skin plaster, corn pads, arch supporters, pillow stuffing, kindling, and saw polish. He lost an arm and a leg when some of it exploded. Hot Biscuit Slim, his son, then took his place and he was everything that a cook should be.

With thousands of repititions of certain tales , with each narrator trying to surpass all other men in the telling of them, by the use of his 888 imagination and other folk lore, an almost endless collection of stories has evolved which is very likely the largest piece of 87 U.S. folk lore.

Most of the Bunyan stories are characterized by an enormous exaggeration of the sizesof the principle characters. Paul is described as being as tall as the tallest pine trees. Sometimes he is decribed as being 88888888888888888 so tall that the tallest pine trees come only to his knees. He is said to have been kind but, when necessary, severe. He was sympathetic and treated is men well. The classic Paul Bunyan is described as caring little for women. He had an ox which was born in the winter of blue snow and matched Paul's proportions. The distance between the tips of its horns was forty-seven axe handles. One farm kept it in food for one day. When Paul moved his camp he tied the ox to the buildings/ and they were moved tra n fashion ~~and they were moved promptly~~ to the new location. When necessary he would even tie the ox to the cellar and bring it along later. The Big Swede was the care taker of the ox who was named Babe. When Babe ran thru the woods, the Swede hung on to the rope and bounced along in quarter mile leaps. The most important person, next to Paul Bunyan himself, was Johnny Inkslinger, the camp clerk, doct r and dentist. He was as large as Paul Bunyan and was a perfect camp clerk. He used a barrel of ink a day in keeping his records and his pen was fed by a hose attached to a barrel that stood over his head. His pay checks were always ready on time and correct to the penny. His medicine kit consisted a ten-gallon carboy of alcohol and a ton of epsom salts.

Pure exaggeration of size is not the only device used in the stories. Many of them are constructed around purely humorous situations such as that of the shanty boy.

The year of the Two Winters had been a disastrous one for Paul. Winter had come again in the summer and the following months became increasingly cold. At Christmas Lake Michigan had fifty feet of ice and in February it was solid. Even Paul Bunyan had never had to cope with such conditions before and eventually the bunkhouse cranks went into action on the subject of certain working conditions. Paul heard 67 rumblings and drew aside the shanty boy to ask that he use his utmost efforts to keep the camp in good spirits by stories and songs. To lie was to violate the code of the bunkhouse bards apparently but after the shanty boy insisted he would have to lie to accomplish his purpose, Paul Bunyan permitted him to lie during the period of the emergency. So the shanty boy went to work combating the bunkhouse cranks. Each night he sent his mates to their bunks with their minds freed from thoughts of the days hardships. At first only two or three lies a week were necessary. He grew bolder with his success. He told them stories about jointed snakes, hop snakes, possums and coons and finally got around to fish. Then he remembered a story7 his grandfather had told about Jonah and the whale. The loggers had never heard of it before and became indignant. He felt that he was telling the gospel truth but could do nothing in self-defense. As the only way out of his predicament, he resorted to the camp rule that all complaints must be submitted to Paul Bunyan. Knowing Paul's hatred of liars, then men ~~xxxx~~ dreaded submitting this dispute to him but the shanty boy led the way. Neither Paul Bunyan nor Johnny Inkslinger could verify the story. Still the shanty boy insisted he was telling the truth even though he could not explain it. When confronted with a final demand for evidence, he vanquished the bunkhouse cranks by stating that

when he lied his neck swelled and that this time it had not.

The stories are filled with impossible situations that would provide spice for the dreariest camp night. Many a tale is told about the famous section thirty-seven on which was located a hill so high that it took three weeks to see to the top. One ~~TXYMS~~ time when Babe was hauling logs, it began to rain. His buckskin harness stretched but the ox went on to camp. There the Big Swede tied him and and when the sun came out and dried the harness, it shrunk and drew the load in. Then there was a river known as Old Contrary which flowed along a mile wide and a foot deep and then sud enly turned up on its side and flowed a mile deep and a foot wide. There was also/Auger River which flowed in the shape of a coil. One year Paul's men were bothered with mosquitoes so ~~yyz~~ he decided to bring in some bees to combat them. The two interbred however and produced an insect that harrassed man with both ends at the same time. The woods were filled with side-hill gougers that had two long legs on one side and two short legs on the other. Every time they left their holes they had to travel around the hill before they could return. The Hodag was a terrible monster whose picture reminds one of dinosaurs, dragons, and wart hogs.

The story of the black-duck dinner makes one wonder whether he is listening to a colored man's ~~888~~ or a lumberjacks description of kingdom come.

Except ~~88~~/Sunday in spring was a day of rest and surcease for the loggers. On this day they cleaned their cloths, made their bunks and shaved their faces. Hot Biscuit Slim originated the custom of big Sunday inners. Most of the men passed up Sunday breakfats in order to be fit for the dinner. After eating a glorious dinner they would dream drowsily most of the afternoon. In the evening they would eat the warmed left-overs and then retire to the bunkhouses for a comparatively quiet evening.

Under Hot Biscuit Slim's reign the dining hall became the highlight in the life of the camp. The kitchen contained steam-driven potato mashers, air-cooled egg beaters and enormous stew kettles in which the carcasses o animals floated like chips in a rain barrel. The kitchen was equipped with cranes, elevators, large flour bins and automatic dishwashing machinery. The dining halls were so large that four-horse teams hauled wagon loads of salt, ~~sugar~~ pepper, and sugar down the aisles when the shakers and bowls were to be filled. Conveyor belts darried clean dishes to the table and dirty ones to the kitchen.

The black duck dinner was in celebration of the completion of the onion river drive. All Saturday night the fires roared as the sauces and dressings were prepared and the cooking started. The black ducks were scalded, plucked and cleaned and at daylight the cranes were bringing them in by the hundreds. At half past eleven the hungriest began to collect at the dining room door. At twelve the line extended far up the Onion River valley. Then there was a rush for tables when Hot Biscuit Slim dressed in spotless white opened the doors. The soup disposed of, the men began to fill their plates which were an arm's length in diameter. The duck came as fried drum sticks, duck dumplings, duck fricasse', baked duckm stewed duck, and duck gravy. Then there was creamed cabbage, mashed potatoes, potato cakes, corn on the cob, baked beans, peas, and applesauce not to mention cornbread, hot biscuits and coffee. From the kitchen the cook and baker and their helpers watched for signs of unsatisfied appetites.

The baker, Cream Puff Fatty, had only one fear as the feast progressed. That was that the men would have no eye for his cream puffs after having their fill of duck. He almost despaired that they would be able to eat his prize pastry which he made as large as squashes. They not only survived the cream puffs but demonstrated

their appreciation of lemon pies, pumpkin pies, cherry pies, custard pies, and a half dozen other varities. Hot Biscuit Slim and Cream Puff Fatty congratulated themselves on the glory they had achieved.

At supper time Hot Biscuit Slim and Cream Puff Fatty waited at the door. For five minutes they beat the triangle. Then one solitary logger staggered to the door of the shanty, stared at them and retreated to his bunk. For five weeks the men lay in a blissful stupor and then Johnny Inkslinger brought them to their senses with doses of alcohol and epsom salts.

Another vision of the lumberjacks paradise is the Kingdom of Kansas. Try to imagine yourself a logger after a day's work, tired if not sore, with a frost-bitten nose, chapped wrists, aching and calloused hands and a stomach filled with the food that lumberjacks thrive on. There remains an hour or two before the lights are turned down during which one may engage in any diversion to be found within the four walls of the bunkhouse. It is safe to say that most of the men will light their pipes. Listen to this brief description of the Kingdom of Kansas and decide whether or not it would not banish from your mind the day's toil and trouble.

To escape Paul's wrath and with a deep sense of shame his men at one time deserted him. Their desertion took them to the Kingdom of Kansas which they first saw from the banks of the Rolling River. They reached it in such a state of exhaustion that they immediately dropped in the deep cigarette grass under the whiskey trees, at first unaware of the delicate odor of the blossoms of the beervines. The woods was filled with the warblings of the piano birds.

Rolling River refused to follow the easiest course and always followed a straight line across hill and dale. It was of course

unable to flow smoothly but surged over hilltops with the aid of the momentum 8888888888888 acquired falling downhill. Sometimes it would fail in its rushes and would fall back to try again. The river was known for its giddyfish and when the river suddenly parted over the crest of a hill, the giddyfish would be stranded high and dry. Half would gallop each way using their tails and ~~fins~~ fins and clumsy legs. Paul's men acquired a paralyzing fit of laughter which prevented them from moving on. The Kingdom of Kansas was ruled by King Bourbon. He happened along about this time to rescue the loggers from death by laughter or starvation by screening the river from them with his string of race horses. The king then welcomed them to the Kingdom of Kansas and told them that the only crimes punishable by death were dealing from the bottom of the deck, throwing a horse race, and shooting with loaded dice. They were then escorted to the capital which was Topeka.

Topeka was a city of amusements. There were eleven race tracks and each afternoon there were seven races on each track. There was an endless number of places where one could eat and drink and indulge in all sorts of games of chance or witness all sorts of races and contests. Life in the Kingdom of Kansas was like lying on a bed of roses. It was the lumberjacks idea of "the life o'Reilly". If imagining could make one happy, thinking of life in the Kingdom of Kansas would take one to the heights of bliss.

Typical of most folk-lore the origin of the Paul Bunyan myth is uncertain . It contains many ideas found in the folk-lore of Europe and the southern ~~United States~~ States. The development of the tales is synchronous with the development of a period in the history of North American lumbering. The tales started almost a century ago in southern Canada and New England. As the lumbering industry progressed across the United States, the legend grew and acquired

local references. Perhaps the oldest tale is that of the Blue Ox. Some say he was born during the winter of the blue snow, others say his coat was dyed during that winter. However the story has French-Canadian references found in few of the other tales. Other tales refer to physical features of Michigan, Wisconsin, the Dakotas, Utah and finally the Pacific Coast.

One student of Paul Bunyan, James Stevens believes that Paul Bunyan actually lived a hundred years ago. According to his report Paul Bunyan was one of the French-Canadians who unsuccessfully revolted against Great Britain in 1837. Perhaps with the leader he escaped to the United States. Apparently he was a large man of unusual strength. It seems likely that he was a local hero and that the Yankees, with their love of a good story and willingness to enlarge upon it with the slightest license, listened with a half-smile to what the Canadians reported as honest belief and then wove the pattern in a more entertaining way to suit themselves. The tales were then passed on by word of mouth and spontaneously developed to fill a dreary void in the life of the lumbercamps. Their growth was possible only in camps which had the isolation and solitude of lumbercamps of the last century. The legend has very likely reached its full growth because of the existence of good roads and radios, and the substitution of Yankees, Irishmen, and Scandinavians by Slavic help in the logging industry.

W. E. O'Neel
October 7, 1935

Paper #2.

# THE THESES ON THE DOOR

NELSON R. VANCLEAVE

Terre Haute Literary Club

1935

Oct. 14th.

Sometimes a traveller will change his direction after reading a sign board.Perhaps he has been satisfied with his course but after reading the sign carefully,he may decide to retrace his steps or to change his course entirely.Such a sign board was the ninety-five theses nailed to the door of the Castle church in Wittenberg in 1517. This religious sign board changed the direction of the religious trend of thought and brought about the transition from the middle ages to modern times in the field of religious theory and practice.

As great movements do not happen but are brought about,it is the purpose of this paper to take the reader behind the scenes and to investigate the events which culminated in the posting of the theses. And since this signboard was printed by human hand,we shall focus our attention upon one individual who brought about these events and started the world thinking and talking.

Great men need not that we praise them;the need is ours that we know them.They are our common heritage.Whether we be of their faith or another,whether our fathers fought with them or against them, whether we stand where they stood or have travelled far on ways they dreamed not of,we are the richer that they lived.Such a man is Martin Luther.Our praise new cannot affect himn,nor can our condemnation change him.His record is indelibly written in the history of the world.But if we may make his acquaintance and learn something of the work he did,we may appreciate more fully the part he played in the progress of the world.

This hero of ours was very human.He had a fiery temper,he was passionate,lovable,warm-hearted and generous.He had the frankness

and carelessness of genius.What he was he showed and what he thought he said,without concealment or diplomacy.

He came,as so many of the world's great men do,of peasant stock. He was proud of his peasant ancestry and boasted of it.His family was not of the lowest class.For generations his ancestors had owned their house and farm in the village of Mohra on the western side of the Thuringian hills.There are still Luthers in this tiny hamlet,changed,perhaps,as little as the place itself.

His father was Hans Luther and his mother was Margarethe Ziegler before her marriage.Their homes were in neighboring towns and the home they established was but a scant four score miles from the village of Mohra. There Martin was born on the night of the tenth of November,1483.He was babtized the next day and named in honor of the saint whose feast it was.The little village of Eisleben still points with reverent pride to the house of his birth and the house in which he died,for he returned to die in the town of his birth.

Little Luther grew up under the shadow of dark and wooded cliffs crowned by the castle of the counts of Mansfield and pierced by the shafts of mines.It was a thriving,busy place;a place of rude and arduous toil with fortunes often easily made and more often,easily lost.For Hans and Margarethe worldly success came slowly.The means of the growing family were scant enough.Often the mother found it necessary to carry home from the forest the fuel for the hearth.But,in time, industry,frugality and integrity triumphed and Hans became the owner of a comfortable house on the principal street and the proprietor of two furnaces.

Probably no one would have selected Hans and Margarethe Luther for the parents of one of history's greatest figures,and yet,the

honesty and sturdy commonsense which made the father a trusted friend of the Counts of Mansfield and a trusted counselor of the town, the vigor, courage and self-reliance which enabled him to win and keep success, the sanity and independence which marked his attitude toward religion, gather significance in the light of what came after. When he was critically ill a priest offered him consolation and asked him to make his peace with God by giving money to the clergy. Hans said, "I have children. I will leave my property to them, they need it more." He was pious and a loyal member of the church but he put the ordinary human obligations and responsibilities above all else and to them he was always faithful.

The mother looked always on the brighter side of life and met bitter experiences with a smile. She was imaginative and sensitive, the prey of conflicting emotions. On one occasion, she thought herself bewitched by an unfriendly neighbor and there was much ado to escape the curse.

Martin was not a pampered child. His parents took their parental responsibilities seriously and interpreted them vigorously. Both at home and in school, discipline was harsh and sympathy for childish fun was scant. The rule was that of the rod. His parents believed in work, not play. He once received fifteen whippings in a single day. He was a merry, mischievous, high-spirited boy.

The public school he attended was poor enough. The methods were crude and the instructors inefficient, they tried to make up for their short comings by domineering treatment of the pupils under their care. At the age of thirteen, he was sent away to Magleburg to attend

school.Great things were expected of him and his father looked forward to the time when he should hold the honorable and lucrative position of legal advisor to the counts of Mansfield.Hans held high hopes for his eldest son.Hans was no common miner and Martin was no common boy.The son's promise and the father's hopes went hand in hand.

This school was far superior to the one he had attended.The principal,Trebonius,was no common pedagogue.Upon entering the class room,he always removed his cap on account of the mayors,doctors and rulers of the future who occupied the benches.In this congenial atmosphere he developed rapidly.He used his social advantages so well and made such progress in his studies,that at seventeen,he entered the University of Erfurt,the greatest German University of the day, well enough prepared to take his bachelor's degree at the end of one year.

Erfurt boasted the presence of some of the greatest representatives of the new Humanism as well as those of Scholasticism.It was not a time of stagnation.Splendid days were those when the scholar was held in honor by all the world,stirring days they were too in university life.Young men came from all parts of the country and even from abroad.it was a current saying,"Who would study rightly, must go to Erfurt." And Luther,whose pride at being one of its graduates was life-long,declared with pardonable exaggeration that the other universities were no more than primary schools beside it.Into its stimulating atmosphere he brought an eagerness and thirst for knowledge which set him rapidly forward.He carried a sword according to common student custom and dressed as his fellows did.

Latin was the language of the classroom and it became a second mother tongue to him,but classical elegance in composition he never attained.He learned Greek and was particularly fond of history and biography.Logic absorbed a large part of the attention of both teachers and pupils.Luther became one of the most powerful and resourceful disputants of the day and always recognized with gratitude the value of the training he had received.

His general education finished,Luther took up at once,in accordance with his father's wishes,the study of the law.But he had little liking for it.The tiresome gathering of precedents irked him and he seemed to think ~~it~~ the lawyers chief aim was to defeat justice rather than to obtain it."Jurists",he declared,dispute and discuss terms and words.They alter the facts and fail to go to the bottom of them that the truth may be discovered."Without doubt,he would have distinguished himself had he continued with his study but it was not to his liking and he soon turned his back upon it.He did it in no ordinary way.

In the summer of 1505,to the consternation of everybody,and to the wrath of his father,he entered a monastery and became a monk.The immediate occasion was a terrific thunderstorm which overtook him and caused him to take this extraordinary step.In mortal fear of death he threw himself on the ground crying to the patron saint of miners,"Help, dear Saint Anna and I will become a monk." The vow he had so quickly made was swiftly put into execution.He sold his books,gave a farewell dinner to his friends and in spite of their pleas and protestations,entered the Augustinian Monastery in Erfurt on the morning of July 17th when he was only twenty-one years of age.This was the most momentuous event of his life,upon it hinged all that followed.The contrast was extreme between the university and the convent.Nothing was more unexpected than such an act on the part of this brilliant student.

Fired with enthusiasm,he passed within the convent doors to be lost to the world forever.His friends were stupefied.The happy,light hearted companion,with his frank good fellowship and his contagious merriment seemed entirely unfitted for a monastic career.But he was made for religion and thenceforth to the end of his days,his life was professionally and in reality a religious life.Religion controlled and dominated all his thought and activity.Though set apart by his monasti vow for fifteen years he never lost his touch with human interests.Devout and zealous monk as he was,he was always more a man than a monk.

To a young man of twenty-one who for four years had breathed the free air of a great university and gone his own independent way,the monastic life must have been peculiarly irksome.The convent was a training school for manners as well as for piety and virtue,and its regulations concerned the pettiest details of conduct.Not one moment of the day was left unprovided for and all one's duties and devotions were performed under the constant and exacting supervision of others.Humility and obedience were the chief virtues to be obtained. The neophyte must be divested of all pride and self confidence and learn to have no will of his own.The most unreasonable,burdensome, childish and foolish tasks were required to test the obedience and humility of the monks.The most menial employments were laid upon them.

It was doubtless,something of a trial to the young and brilliant master of arts to go through the familiar streets,clad in monastic garb,with a sack on his back,begging bread from house to house.But fro his lips were heard no complaints of the duties laid upon him nor of t the humiliations to which he was subjected.He performed his tasks without murmuring and submitted without protest to the chastening experiences of his new surroundings.

The solemn ceremony attending the taking of the three-fold vow of poverty,chastity and obedience produced upon him a profound effect.He was given a cell of his own,seven by nine,bare of ornaments or comforts,with a single small window looking out upon a graveyard. Daily confession was a part of his duty and this introspection was the worst possible thing for one of his disposition.His need was to be doing things and inactivity and inaction fretted him.He fasted for days at a time and spent night after night without sleep.

The University of Wittenberg was founded in 1502 and to this institution in1508 young Luther was sent to teach Logic and Ethics. Wittenberg was a small and mean town of some three thousand inhabitants,walled and strongly fortified.The country was flat and sandy very different from the Thuringian Hills.The people were cold,unfriendly and ignorant.It was on the very edge of civilization and a few miles north or east would have meant pure barbarism.It was here he made his home and it was here that the Reformation had its birth.

At first Luther taught Ethics,Logic and Philosophy but he soon turned his attention to questions of immediate practical concern.The moral conditions of university life left much to be desired.The citizens had not adjusted themselves to the new situation arising from the presence of hundreds of young and often unruly fellows in the quiet little village.Luther knew the conditions and spoke his mind about them in no uncertain terms.He denounced parents for the laxity of their discipline and called upon the university and civil authorities to take the matter in hand.He brought down upon himself the enmity of many but he brought about a great improvement and won the lasting gratitude of the better citizens.

He began to attack in no uncertain terms many prevalent superstitions, astrology, witchcraft, saint worship, religious pilgrimages, and the popular beliefs concerning lucky days, omens, signs and charms. He made merry sport of astrology. He said that it would be an art if its inborn folly did not prevent it. He did not condemn the practice of saint worship but he complained that it had degenerated into a mere scramble after temporal goods, while the true adoration of the saints was almost wholly forgotten. "We call upon them," he said, "only when we have a pain in our legs or our head or when our pockets are empty." He criticized the custom of making religious pilgrimages very sharply. He complained that it had resulted in the neglect of household duties and had brought demoralization into many homes and communities. "If you have a wife or servant," he remarked, "who claim they are driven by the spirit to go upon a pilgrimage, take a good oaken cross and sanctify them with a few lusty strokes on the back and you will see how the devil is punished by this finger of God." God can be served at home a thousand times better by giving the money the journey would cost to the poor, or to wife and children and bearing one's cross with patience.

He held the clergy responsible for the abuses and excesses he was denouncing.

Luther began his attack on Indulgences on October 13, 1516. Indulgences, in that day served too important a purpose to be lightly dispensed with, for upon them religion depended in no small measure for support. Without them the erection of many a church, monastery and hospital would have been impossible. Severely as it has been denounced by Protestants it is in reality based upon one of the commonest of human instincts--the attempt to make amends for

questionable conduct by religious practices.According to ancient and modern Catholic belief forgiveness for sins committed after babtism can be secured only through the sacrament of penance.This requires repentance,confession to a priest and the performance of acts involving labor and sacrifice on the part of the penitent.The custom had developed of substituting some other form of penace for that regularly prescribed by the church.Permission for this substitution was called an indulgence.The abuse of this privilege aroused the indignation of Luther.

In order to raise funds forthe rebuilding of St.Peters chursh at Rome,Pope Leo X proclaimed a socalled "plenary indulgence" phrased in very sweeping terms and offering purchasers all sorts of benefits including remission of sins,freedom from the necessity of penance and the release of their deceased friends from purgatory.A Dominican prior who had demonstrated his ability to go out and get the money,John Tetzel,by name,was one of the chief agents for the sale of these indulgences. He appealed to the emotions of his audience in the following manner, "Do you not hear your dead parents crying out,'Have mercy upon us,we are in sore pain and you can set us free for a mere pittance.We gave you all our property and you are so hard hearted and cruel that you leave us to roast in the flames when you could so easily release us'".

Religion was the most sacred of all affairs to Luther and he felt outraged at the whole sorry business.To sell Divine grace for gold and to attempt to purchase the divine favor of God was to befoul the holiest of all relationships,and,like the prophets of old,his pious soul waxed hot within him.

He decided to attack Tetzel and the cause he represented,but instead of attacking at once,he took careful counsel with himself.Here s

was a case where the ecclesiastical authorities he had always reveren ced were sanctioning a practice the demoralizing consequences of which were becoming clearer to him every day .To grapple with this problem would involve the highest dignitaries of the church he loved and hon- ored.He was striving to keep his faith and yet be true to his conscien ce.But there was only one course for Luther and that was to attack whatever the consequences might be.But even when his mind was made up he went about it in a peculiar way.Instead of thundering against ret- zel from the pulpit,he invited the thealogians of Wittenberg and the neighborhood to a disputation.It was a common custom to celebrate im- portant anniversaries of the Castle church by theological debates,and on October 31,1517,he posted a notice on the door announcing a dispu- tation and the theses he intended to defend.

There were ninety five theses and in them he set forth clearly and distinctly the questions at issue.He declared himself willing to yield completely if his theses should meet with defeat,but he was con fident of his ground and sure that he would prevail.

The theses cannot be condensed into one statement,nor does space permit that i list them all,but some of the outstanding state- ments were as follows:-

If remission of all penalties can be granted to any one,it is certain that it is granted to the most perfect,hence,the greater part of the people are deceived by this indiscriminate and high-sounding promise of release from penalties.

Preachers of indulgences are in error who say that,by the indul gences of the pope,a man is loosed and saved from all punishment.

The dying pay all penalties by death,and are already dead to canon laws,and are relieved from them.

Who knows whether all the souls in purgatory desire to be redeemed from it?

Those who believe that,through letters of pardon they are made sure of their own salvation,will eternally be damned along with their teachers.

By a work of charity,chsrity increases and man becomes better; while by means of pardons,he does not become better but only freer from punishment

The pope in granting pardons has more need that devout prayer should be made for him than that money be paid him.

Why does not the pope,whose riches are more ample than the wealth of the wealthiest,build the basilica of St.Peter with his own mbney,rather than with that of poor believers.

These theses meant the rejection ##,not only of indulgences, but the whole system accepted in the Catholic church since the second century.It was clear enough where Luther stood and how far he had travelled from the beliefs in which he had been born and bred. He was surprised to learn that a tremenduous chorus of approval arose from the nation at large.To his astonishment,the theses were translated into German and read by all the people.He gained a following and the people gained a leader.

As a result of the circulation of these statements,the sale of indulgences decreased in Germany and the amount of money collected fell far short of the amount expected.The Wittenberg monk was first threatened with condemnation for heresy and it was expected that he would be frightened and immediately recant but he refused to become frightened and he would not recant.Tetzel,in anger wrote a series of counter theses to justify his own position and to condemn the statements of Luther but the Wittenberg students publicly burned these in the pub-

lic market to show their sympathy for Luther.

Sentiment of the authorities against Luther developed to such an extent that,on the seventh of August,he received an imperative summons from the papal court to appear in Rome within sixty days to answer to the charge of Heresy.Here he was asked to recant and informed that it was the duty of a monk to submit without question to the authority of the pope.Luther attempted to defend his position but only convinced the authorities of his guilt.

A papal bull published on the 15th of May 1520 condemned forty one propositions,drawn from his writings,forbade the reading of his books and called upon christians every where to burn them,it also suspended Luther from the ministry and announced his definite excommunication if he did not repent and recant within sixty days after the publication of the bull in Germany.He did not recant and the pope took formal action against him,pronouncing him excommunicate and condemning him to all the spiritual and temporal penalties imposed upon heretics by the canons of the church.He was to be siezed,where-ever found,his books were ordered burned,it was forbidden to publish,sell,buy or read any of his writings;to support or follow him was to involve oneself in his guilt,and to befréend or hold communication with him openly or secretly was to commit the crime of lese-majesty.

Fortunately for Luther,the elector had arranged a hiding place for him in a large and imposing castle of the Wortburg just beyond the confines of Eisenach.His identity was concealed.His beard and hair were allowed to grow,he put on the costume of a knight and went by the name of Junker George.While in hiding here he translated the Bible into German.This was a very difficult piece of work.He translated the New Testament from the Greek and the Old Testament from the Hebrew.Be-

sides getting nearer to the original,he was thus able to avoid the deleterious influence of the Latin and produce a translation genuinely German in style and spirit.Thus the reformers enforced retirement bore rich fruit,had he done nothing else,this task would have won for him the lasting gratitud e of his native land.

After a year in hiding he was permitted to return to Wittenberg, March 6,1522.The elector did not ask him to return nor did he openly avow his cause.He could easily have stopped him by placing him under arrest,but this he did not do.If the prince's favor been withdrawn Luthers career would have speedily have come to an endbut in spite of papal bull and imperial ban,the bold monk went on his way until his death, February 18,1546.

On June 13th 1525 Luther married Catherine von Bora,the daughter of a nobleman .Luther had helped several nuns to escape from a cloister and felt responsible for their welfare.He found homes or husbands for them and made one of them his wife.He became very fond of her and cherished her warmly to the end of his life.To them six children were born, three boys and three girls.Four of the children survived their parents. One son studied law and spent his life on a minor government position, another son studied medicine and enjoyed a successful and honorable career as a physician.His daughter,Margaret,married a Wittenberg student of noble birth and both she,and the physician,Paul,have descendants still living.

For a time it looked as if the Reformation would sweep the entire country and a national German church be the result of Luther's labors,but the hostility of the emperor and of many princes of the realm made this impossible.Instead of one National church taking the place of the historic Catholic institution,there came into existence a number of separate an independent bodies,bound together by devotion to a great

leader and each subject to the local state government and controlled there-by.Different motives led different rulers to embrace the Reforma tion,some were honestly convinced of the truth of Luther's gospel,some considered the wishes of the people,others were impatient of ecclesiastical encroachments or clerical corruption,others hoped to be on the winning side or looked with covetous eyes upon the property of the church.At Luther's death the greater part of northern Germany was officially protestant.

Luther died of a stroke of apoplexy at the age of sixty three. He was buried in the Castle church at Wittenberg.His work was done,and although he died before reaching the full span of human days,he left his task complete.Longer life would have added nothing to his fame and but little to the fruits of his labor.

To estimate the work of such a man as Martin Luther is not easy. To a degree,he was a child of his age and its mouth piece;and yet,out of his own native genius and personal experience he gave the world what it lacked.The 16th century would have been altogether different had he not lived.

He was criticized,persecuted,excommunicated,misunderstood and charged with many faults.

He was accused of immoral conduct because he married,although he was a monk who had taken a vow to remain single,a lady who had been a nun also sworn to celibacy.He was accused of reviling the church of his fathers because he suggested changes which should be made in it. He has been charged with mendacity because he gave three different years as the year of his birth,but he believed himself right in each statement. Sometimes even a professor forgets things and Luther was a professor. He has been listed as a glutton and a drunkard because he drank wine and beer,but every body drank in Germany at the time in which he lived.

His obesity and gout were not caused by gluttony and tippling but from uric acid diathesis.The fact that he gave shelter to several escaped nuns has been meaningly referred to,but all authentic evidence shows the purity of Luther as being above reproach.

The great thing he did was to break the dominance of the Roman Catholic church in Western Europe.The authority of the Catholic church had to be destroyed before true liberty could come and to destroy it was no easy task.The world was not prepared to do without religion and the church and Luther would have failed in his task had he not offered the world something as satisfying to take the place of the institution he attacked.

The rise of Protestantism meant not merely the modification of doctrines,ceremonies and customs,but a revolution where a revolution is hardest to achieve-in the sphere of religion.It meant trusting ones self to new guides and staking ones eternal destiny on new and untried supports.Only a prophet,aglow with religious enthusiasm,strong in faith, eloquent in speech and endowed with a gift of leadership could lead the way in such a revolution.

Luther gave Protestantism a new conception of the relation of religion and life.Instead of finding its highest manifestation apart from the daily relationships and occupations of this world,it is <u>in</u> them,according to Luther,that religion best expresses itself.He did away with the dominance of the priest and of priestly ideals and this changed the whole tone of society.A new lay culture took the place of the clerical culture of the middle ages.

But,after all,the overmastering impression we have of Luther is not the extent of his influence and the reach of his vision but the greatness of his personality.He had faults as we have stated,faults of temper and of taste,but he was a man through and through- a man of heroic

mold,courageous,strong,frank,sincere and generous.He was deadly in earnest and yet he had a rare sense of humor which guarded him from the danger of taking trivial things too seriously.He posessed the ability to gain entrance to the hearts of man the wide world over. He died as he had lived,a mere preacher and professor of theology in a small and out-of-the-way town ,yet he dominated more than half the western world and the whole world is changed because he lived and worked and planned.To know his life and his work is well worth the effort.

##########################

Paper #3.

AS I SAW EUROPE IN THE SUMMER OF '35.
Read by Dr.Frank E. Wiedemann before the
Terre Haute Literary Club.
Oct. 21, 1935.

Unfortunately few people react the same to travel-for that matter few people react the same to drugs. Also few people react the same to emotions or to stimulations. Let that be as it may. Tonight I shall give you my reaction to the Europe we saw and felt this summer.

I am reminded of the four hunters in the big game country of British East Africa.

A few years ago,while in Niaroba,the center of the big game reserve of Africa; I overheard the remarks of these four hunters. One was a Frenchman-one a German-one an Englishman,and one an American.

After a strenuous hunting expedition of several months,they each agreed to write a book on their personal experiences.

The Frenchman wrote on "Psychology of the Elephants",the German on,"Scientific Elephantism",the Englishman on "Elephants in British East Africa,"and the American wrote on "Bigger and Better Elephants".

Each man saw the elephant from his viewpoint and each from that perspective was quite right. But when you endeavor to describe the elephant,as did the three blind men; you of necessity,got a monstrous reaction which is too bad for the elephant.

In my travel experiences,I have learned the wisdom of the old proverb that,"Men are born with two eyes and one tongue in order that they should see twice as much as they say."

This summer we visited independently Belgium,Holland,Germany, and Switzerland.

Of these four countries visited,we found Holland and Switzer-

land extremely costly as far as our American dollar is concerned. Hotels,foods,incidentals and commodities were painfully reached with our American inflated currency.

Holland and Switzerland are on a gold basis which accounts for our crippled dollar.

Germany,also,is on the gold standard but she has made wise provision for the traveler,by issuing the registered marks,which gives the visitor a currency equality. In other words,the registered mark makes our dollar worth four marks-otherwise our dollar is worth but 2.4 marks. We found traveling with the registered mark-extremely simple and very satisfactory.(Explain the "modis operandi of the registered mark).

We were impressed throughout Europe with the frugality and economy of her people; for example,bicycles are used very extensively by old and young,both for pleasure and business.

Automobiles are in the minority. Trains for both pleasure and freight are freely used,as transportation is very cheap,especially 3rd and 4th class. Municipal commodities are inexpensive,yet the standard of service is somewhat inferior to ours-and if used,a definite rate is charged.

Belgium,Holland,and Switzerland are undergoing a metamorphosis. Only in some of the smaller towns and villages,do you find the quaintness you hope to see; even here modernity is fast replacing the picturesque. Throughout these countries visited,we saw few beggars, saw only a few chewing gum and only a few women smoking; nevertheless we could sense s feeling of depression and a subnormal condition. Although in Germany,it was less apparent as the Germans have an optimistic psychology which lessens the real tension.

My first visit to Holland many years ago recalls many windmills and quaint canals but the first things Mrs. Wiedemann asked when

33

entering this preenchanted land was,"Where are the windmills and the old canals?" Unfortunately,they now are mostly in the memory. It is true there are a few,and I hope my pictures will corroborate that remark,but these few must be sought. Dikes also are there but,they,too, are difficult to find; as frequently the tram car,the bus or the bicycle,are using them for public highways. Canals,must remain,because of the low land,but their quaintness and picturesqueness is fast fading out.

The Holland "motif" has the ear mark of commerce, and the "jungle of the guinae" is more musical then the purr of the windmills.

In the rural districts can yet be found the wooden shoes,the medevial costumes,the dutch pipes but they are as scarce as the proverbial hen's teeth. In Vollendam are the old dutch fisherman with their fishing boats sailing out in the Zuider-Zee for their herring.

In Markam,an isolated island in the Zuider-Zee,are to be found the quaint folks of old Holland,retaining all of their quaintness of costumes as revealed by the old masters of the brush.

Here we found the typical dutch houses with their primitive furnishings-children arrayed in their colorful quaint costumes,wearing wooden shoes and fussy caps.

The Zuider-Zee will soon be a garden spot and no longer part of the North Sea as the dike is almost complete and then only pumps will complete the transformation.

Amsterdam,the largest city,then will be an inland city,and much of her attraction will be lost.

The personification of cleanliness as seen on the cans of the old dutch cleansers is somewhat of a mishomer-as Holland is not what she used to be in spotless cleanliness.

Van Loon would lead one to think,that one,with perfect im-

punity could eat off the steps,or the floor of these thrifty Hollanders.

But from my observation,sanitation would be a good subject to add to their school curriculm. I was sorry to be disillusioned as to the cleanliness and quaintness of Holland; but then I found enough of Old Holland,as my pictures will show,to reddem much of its picturesqueness.

When I speak of Switzerland,I perhaps am like the blind man holding the elephant's tail; nevertheless,although Switzerland is a charming and picturesque country,it has lost much of her charm in becoming very modernized in architecture and costumes. Her mountains, valleys, and lakes will always make her outstanding but were it not for her three master pieces of nature; namely: Yung-frau,Mont Blanc and Materhorn,she could scarcely entice me for another visit. Yet I would go one-half round the world to view again the evening glow of Yung-frau,as I saw her one evening as the sun was disappearing in the West and the plantit Mars served as a diamond setting, ~~creeping~~ over her ~~in the~~ Eastern horizon.

But for you who have never been to Switzerland and who are inspired by the bold strokes of nature rest assured the same inspirations can be gained,from the beauties of our own native land.

Many lakes of this country with interesting sail boats and with villages of peculiar charm pasted on the water edge occasionally still may be seen off the beaten paths. Lucern,located on a lake of the same name,still can boast of many quaint settings which retain their original picturesqueness.

The old bridge erected about the 12th century,facinated me, because of the many gruesome pictures,painted on the triangle supports

of the bridge,protraying the Dance of Death. It was here in Lucern I received my second thrill. The occasion was a musicfest calling all the musicians of wind instruments here for a celebration. In one group at the "Sport-platz" we saw and heard in perfect form there 6000 musicians play the national anthem of Lucern under the flying colors of Switzerland. This alone was worth a trip to Switzerland as I never before saw such an array of artists in so large a group lead by one leader,which in turn was relayed to the musicians through their respective leader.

Not far from Interloken we visited a school of wood carvings so characteristic of the Swiss-Switzerland is the land for cucoo clocks and musical boxes. Many of the clocks,however,are made in the black forest of Germany as we learned to our regrets after purchasing several at a much higher cost.

Of the four countries visited,we found Germany far excelling in her economy recovery. We were inpressed with her cooperative spirit among themselves,and were delighted with the kind consideration and courtesy they showed us.

In the rural and urban districts much activity was seen and we both remarked how contented and happy they all seemed. It is true some things I could not match up,as in a gig saw puzzle,but too there are things I am just as puzzled over,right here at home. Of the four countries visited,Germany seems to be the only one taking the initiative and of course in so doing,is running contrawise to some of our Americanism. For example,in my interview with some of the medical men of Germany relative to the question of sterilization,I was convinced that within a generation the entire world will be forced to establish a similar regime. Also the frowning on secret societies,religion and profane,at first upset my American psychology but ferreting it out a little farther,I felt it was done chiefly to weaken the politics found

in some of them. In one thing,however(quoting from an interview I had with the press after my return) I think the Hitler regime is making a great mistake,I refer to the attitude toward the Jews. The German people will not stand for the unjust persecution of a people who has added so much to our civilization and so much to Germany; anymore then the American people willstand for dictatorship. The Jews requires no defense; he is invincible. He has been instrumental in advancing civilization where it is today in her interlectual,artistic,literary and scientific attainments. No one but an egoist or fanatic can deny that fact. On the surface we could see no discrimination.

Talking to a Jewish antique merchant in Heidelburg about the economic donditions,he was so overcome with earnestness that he placed his arms around my neck,and with tears in his eyes,he said in German," Doctor,Sagen America das Deutchland ist nich so schlest",meaning that Germany is not so bad. Yet it is difficult to make a diagnosis from a few cases and from a limited experience,but I do believe the time is set that even a dictator must bend to the psychology of national and internationalism.

In order,however,that we get the ideal Utopia we must clean our own skirts of all malice and prejudice. play the game fair and square, and be guarded in the spread of unjust propaganda. People hate without reason and without knowing why. With my high esteem for the press in disseminating information; I am convinced that much unkind feeling and strained relationship are often produced between nations because of unwise and indiscreet comments and propaganda of the press by not stating the truth,the whole truth,and nothing but the truth. If you were to ask me if the citizens of these four countries visited wanted war I would emphatically say,No. It will be perpetrated only by propaganda and the war lords. and commercialism Germany afforded us the opportunity to satiate our better selves with things musical and artistic;

and on more than one occasion while enjoying the artistic rendition of one of Wagner's master pieces or Beethoven's symphonies would I sit in revery lamenting the unfortunate fact that discord between nations was fed by faggetts of prejudice and bigotry and that civilization was held in check by just such affrontry.

In summary I should say,Don't travel in Europe on our inflated dollar. If your itinerary takes you to Germany,use the registered mark. A good traveler is never prejudiced or bias. He never trys to reform his host. He doesn't form conclusions from flimsy contact he is magnanimous and lives up to the old Japanese proverb.

The things in which I was most interested aside from the medical and economic conditions were: 1st. the masterful presentation of Grand Opera in Munich.

2nd. The six thousand musicians in one group playing the anthem of Lucern.

3rd. The beauty and riot of color on Yung-frau.

4th. The open air presentation of Goethe's master piece "Gotz von Berlichingen" in the old castle of Heidelburg.

5th. The terrific storm in mid sea protraying the emotionalism of the elemants.

6th. My movie pictures giving a fairly good record of our trip in both colored and white and black.

Any one of these outstanding features amply repay one for the journey.

and on more than one occasion while enjoying the artistic rendition of one of Wagner's master pieces or Beethoven's symphonies would I sit in revery lamenting the unfortunate fact that discord between nations was fed by faggetts of prejudice and bigotry and that civilization was held in check by just such affrontry.

In summary I should say,Don't travel in Europe on our inflated dollar. If your itinerary takes you to Germany,use the registered mark. A good traveler is never prejudiced or bias. He never trys to reform his host. He doesn't form conclusions from flimsy contact ~~and~~ he is magnanimous ~~and lives up to~~ the old Japanese proverb. ~~-~~ Forgive & he does forget ambition breaks the ties of blood, and forgets the obligation of gratitude

The things in which I was most interested aside from the medical and economic conditions were: 1st. the masterful presentation of Grand Opera in Munich.

2nd. The six thousand musicians in one group playing the anthem of Lucern.

3rd. The beauty and riot of color on Yung-frau.

4th. The open air presentation of Goethe's master piece "Gotz von Berlichingen" in the old castle of Heidelburg.

5th. The terrific storm in mid sea protraying the emotionalism of the elements.

6th. My movie pictures giving a fairly good record of our trip in both colored and white and black.

Any one of these outstanding features amply repay one for the journey.

Paper #5

H.S. Hickman

# ROOSEVELT A FABIANIST

Nov. 4, 1935

Where is the United States bound? What is its destiny? Our country plainly faces a decision whether it will adopt a planned economy or will continue on the course of individualism, equal opportunity, liberty of initiative, and constitutional democracy.

Planned economy is presented to us as something new, inspired, a cure-all, a panacea, while history presents us three thousand years of human records showing very largely the unsuccessful attempts to make planned economy work.

Since men have learned what freedom means, how it might be attained, and how jealously it must be guarded, and that planned economy is necessarily dictated economy, the road is clear to Americans. This is true whether the dictator is an Oriental of three thousand years ago, a Roman emperor of fifteen hundred years ago, a Tudor king of four centuries ago, or a Mussolini, a Stalin, a Hitler, or a Roosevelt of today.

Whether you find it under the name of Fascism, Nazism, Communism, Socialism, or Fabianism as it appears to us today, it is essentially the same thing. In any of them there is no room for a mere individual, for personal effort, initiative, enterprise, originality, invention, or progress in which any of these elements enter into entrenched powers must come from the dictator, not from the individual. All roads into dictated economy come out at the same place. They represent lower living standards, national decay, and the sacrifice of liberty. This is equally true whether the dictator is an usurper by force or is elected under the form of popular government.

Our ancient record from the stories of Egypt during the time of Joseph as prime minister when he took control of the cattle and grain, just as our AAA has done, gathered all the money in the land and brought it into Pharoah's house, just as our Fabian brothers did by gathering the gold into the treasury and giving it to the Federal Banks. After taking the land, Pharoah made free distribution of seed, sending the people back to till the same land he had taken with the demand of one-fifth. I here give Pharoah the credit of being more liberal than our government, for our government is making it cost us one-third of the National income.

Finally a public works administration was set up under which the starving people reared the monumental piles, the wonders of the world, and yet we say planned economy is new.

The story of planned economy in China, with Confucius as the head, is equally illuminating. The Chinese were strong for price-fixing. An army of bureaucrats enforced all these decrees, a full cousin to our NRA, yet America adopts the discarded precepts of these ancient people who are not or cannot be American citizens; yet we say we are advancing.

Before leaving this point let us come down to some planned economy a thousand years nearer home, during which the Roman empire tried out the theory of economic dictatorship. Whether or not it was the cause of the fall of Rome, it certainly is a suggestive parallel between the futile efforts of the Roman rulers to control their economic establishment, and the economic dictatorship which various Occidental countries have lately attempted, among them our own country with the New Deal.

The Roman emperors commanded the armies, controlled the state revenues, and the Senate grimly surrendered their authority as our Congress has done, centralizing everything in the Emperor. The provinces became more and more dependent upon Rome, just as our states have increasingly leaned on Washington, but unfortunately for the Roman empire, it didn't have a Supreme Court.

During the years of Rome's decadence, industry and agriculture were organized under the administration like our NRA codes, and the central government distributed relief to the needy, just as Washington does today. The Emperor ordered half of the vineyards destroyed, just as we saw our cotton plowed under. This caused a shortage of wine, just as our birth-control of pigs made pork a luxury. These measures brought the small farmers of Rome to ruin under their burden of long standing mortgages, and the land fell into the hands of the capitalists who farmed them, as do now in many states in America, the larger insurance companies.

Emperor Nerva set up a federal farm loan system to provide cheap money for the farmers, but the money had to come through taxes on the rest of the people. They didn't call it a processing tax as they had no brain-trusters who might even have given it a degree. However, the system got so burdensome that agriculture went from bad to worse and was abandoned.

Augustus didn't believe in economic planning. He was against the spirit of nationalism that always develops under economic dictatorship and war. He wanted no conquests but he believed in

natural forces, and encouraged competition and that enterprise which would get the best results. He stuck to these simple ideas, and Rome dug out of the ruins that the Civil War had wrought into prosperity which leaves his name a connotation of the highest human satisfaction.

Leaving Rome and coming down another thousand years nearer our time, we find further illustration of our thesis in the Middle Ages. The rulers wanted the largest possible amount of precious metal, for they believed these were the only worth while forms of wealth. The governments granted all manner of special privileges, monopolies, rights, and exemptions to individuals, groups, corporations, and municipalities; laws were passed fixing wages, prohibiting luxury, standardizing prices. One Tudor king enacted that no one should have over two thousand sheep. He declared that the sheep business had fallen into too few hands and had forced the price of mutton up instead of down.

Monopoly in some form or other has always been the foundation of planned economies. Henry VIII granted endless monopolies; Queen Elizabeth required all ships entering certain ports to be licensed, so by refusing a license to any except a few she established a closed monopoly on ship traffic. So similar is this to our NIRA that it would seem that the Queen, though dead, has been a real inspiration to a part at least of our so-called New Deal. Henry VIII devaluated the British coin through the excuse that the French and Dutch moneys had been so reduced that English traders were at a great disadvantage and so we are again the followers of foreign minds of the 19th Century.

Now we come to King Edward VI. He enacted a measure prohibiting export of British coins. Is not this enactment exactly parallel with our so-called New Deal act prohibiting our gold exports? There seems nothing in our so-called New Deal less than 300 years old.

In the last three or four years we have heard much about the capitalistic regime nearing its close; that democracy has failed; and that some new form, whether derived from Italy, Germany, or Russia, or based on Marxian socialism, lay just around the corner. Most of us in America have regarded this discussion as academic. We have observed what is happening in Europe with wonderment, not suspecting that such things would happen here. Some of the students of the New Deal and of socialism insist that socialism is even now developing on a scale so great and so rapid as to warrant grave concern. They point out that the government has invaded so many fields of industry that private business and enterprises are rapidly becoming terrorized at the Frankenstein of governmental competition and control.

The English labor party is demanding nationalizing England's land, which strikes Americans as about the last word in radicalism. Yet, we in America have gone a long way in that direction, for the Federal Land Bank and other agencies have loaned some three billion dollars on farm mortgages or in advance to agricultural credit, at low interest, and for long terms. Little of this will ever be paid off. The farmers' interest becomes practically rent, but this is mild to the Bankhead Bill which creates the Farm Home Corporation to sell bonds to buy land for tenant farmers. Starting with a

billion dollar issue, the measure obviously contemplates more loans, more purchases in the future. Straightway a nationalization of communistic tendencies, as the amendments to the AAA, gives the Secretary of Agriculture sweeping powers over marketing farm products, power to fix prices, and determine to whom and in what quantities sales should be made.

The truth of the matter is, whether we like it or not, public attention must be focused on offending facts as long as they persist, and this is just as much true of Fabian socialist tactics as of any other destructive phenomena as I have mentioned. To be more specific, Fabianism is the mildest form of socialism of which there are various forms. Red Revolutionary Communism is the most extreme of all. They are, however, from the American point of view, all the same in that they all share the common objective of abolition of the rights of ownership, of private property in excess of purely personal things such as small houses, bicycles, clothes, and denying the right to conduct private enterprises and make a profit or suffer a loss. This means the Government, the State, or whatever you call it, governs not only in the political sense but also in the economic sense.

The difference is that the Communist wants to usher in by violence a Revolution, while the ordinary socialist wants to do it by political action, frankly in the name of socialism. But the Fabian, who so far as possible studiously avoids mention of socialism, wishes the purpose gained by propaganda through political action under a more gentler name, such as Social Order, Industrial Democracy, Brotherhood of Man, or the New Deal. I refer to the New Deal since

this expression originated in the socialist party of the late Senator LaFollette. In 1924, after the convention had adjourned, A.A.Berle Jr., Frederick C.Howe, and others now prominent as Brain-trusters, sent a telegram of congratulations to the Senator in which appears the phrase, "We believe that the time has come for a new deal".

Wherever in the world today there is serious dabbling in socialism, those countries end up in dictatorship, either Facist or Communist, and if we do not stick to our economic institutions, we will lose our political individualism. Socialism is a bundle of theories designed to give expression of massed altruism. Capitalism is a system worked out by long human experience for the expression of human nature as it is.

For this difference and reason this wave of subversive agitation and political action which now holds us in its grip is a most bewildering mixture of good and bad, and back of it all, stands revealed a startling purpose, the scrapping of the American political and industrial system for the substitution of an alien order.

History tells us, that as a rule, the Reds are not the ones that start revolutions. The French revolution and overthrow of the Czar was handled by the idealistic, aristocrats, the liberals, and the mild radicals. The Reds hung back until strong goverments were broken down; but when whispered disorganization prevalied, the Reds struck with decisive force. Such is the technique of revolution as against autocracies. Here in America the game is by indirect means, such as graduated discriminatory and confiscatory taxation. The aim is to confiscate or to destroy private wealth which paralyzes private industry.

George Soule, an authoritative socialist, in his book, "THE COMING EVOLUTION", says, "The critical periods of social revolution begin by reforms undertaken by the ruling powers themselves, and when the revolutionary crisis is at white heat, a small minority of revolutionaries can sometimes achieve the leadership of masses, as they did in Russia in the Fall of 1917.

The workers (Communists) platform for 1928 (American Labor Year Book, Vol.10,page 159, under the heading, Tarriff and Taxation ) recommended in part as follows:

(a) Abolition of all indirect taxes;
(b) Exemption from all kinds of taxation for all wage earners;
(c) Graduated income tax starting with incomes above $5,000, and increasing gradually so that all incomes over $25,000 per year are confiscated.

Harold J. Laski when asked what would be the next step in American socialism said, "The socialist sees the weapon of taxation is at his disposal for his end". Then under the sub-heading,"Taxation for Social Purposes", appears this language: "Pressure for high taxation on large incomes is vital".

Franz Longville, in summing up some of the accomplishments of the socialists in the United States, writes, "They have compelled all governments to obtain an increasing amount of their total revenue from progressive income and inheritance taxes".

History tells us that the Roman General Fabius never risked a battle unless he was in shape to win, but continually harrassed his enemy with guerrilla warfare. Our modern revolutionaries are no doubt impressed with his methods as they have adopted his strategy and name. Hence this creative genius of the so-called British Labor

Party with Bernard Shaw, H.G.Wells, Philip Snoden, and others, calling themselves the Fabian Society of Great Britian, should feel elated over the recognition in this country.

Richard H. Sanger, a Harvard graduate and communist, says: "I went to Russia and lived one year, from June 1933 until June 1934. I went there as an ardent exponent of communism, but I am ashamed to say because of the unbalanced way in which the business and schools had emphasized the virtues of economic planning, I worked as an immigrant to become a better communist. In Moscow, where I spent six months, they had courses of lecturers in English for the members of the staff of the Moscow Daily News to fit them for their future activities, how the revolution was progressing in other parts of the world, and what to do about it. All these lectures were delivered by the Communist party. Sanger, on his return, says that what the communists hope for us is a few short booms with long drawn out depressions, spreading discontent. Inflammable minorities are important. This has to do with the New Deal, for the real objective is to get the American people proletarian-minded by their wholesale impoverishment. The capitalistic economic bulwarks must be destroyed.

These were generally classified as the savings of the people (life insurance policies, bonds, both government and private). There was rejoicing in Moscow over our reckless spending of money and the increase of the national debt. All this is perfectly consistent from the viewpoint of the world's revolution enthusiasts.

According to J. Maynard Keynes in "Economic Consequences of Peace", page 235-236, Lenin declares, the best way to destroy the capitalist system is to debauch the currency by a continuous process of inflation. As inflation proceeds and the real value of currency fluctuates from month to month, all permanent relations between debtors and creditors, which form the foundation of capitalism, becomes so disordered as to be almost meaningless, and the process of wealth-getting degenerates into a gamble.

Has not our government depreciated our currency? Has not the national credit suffered? In addition, there are attacks of the NRA and AAA, the Banking Bill, the Holding Co.Bill, and other destructive measures. Is it any wonder Lenin hoped confidence had been destroyed?

Mr. Roosevelt made a good start with the Banking Holiday, but ever since the late spring of 1933, with the exception of a jester, has been going to the left. The share-the-wealth-tax proposal is a part and parcel of the program of alien-minded revolutionaries for the destruction of private wealth, an impoverishment to the level of hussia.

A. C. Townley, who has been a socialist organizer, is quoted as saying that if socialism could be sugar-coated with another name, he could not only make the farmers swallow the pill, but would make them pay for it. This prophsey assures us that men are not appointed to high office except as a reward for political favor.

The acquisition of socialistic principles in the New Deal comes from the leaders of socialism as follows:-

H. E. Gaston, one time publicity representative of the Non-Partisan League of LaFollette, was appointed assistant secretary to Henry Morgantheau, now secretary of the Treasury;

Sen. Burton K. Wheeler, who is an effective New Dealer, was vice-president on the ticket with the late Senator LaFollette. Others who were LaFollette's backers in 1924, and who are holding key positions in a so-called Democratic administration, are the following:- J. A. Franklin, Leo Wolman, Sidney Hillman, Ross Schneiderman, members of the Labor Advisory Board of the NRA; Fred C. Howe, special appointee in the Department of Labor; Frank P. Walsh, prominent in the present administration, was an elector of LaFollette in New York; Donald Richberg, who needs no sketch for a present day audience, A.A.Berl Jr., and Prof. Tugwell, were all LaFollette supporters.

Quoting from the National Grain Journal by Mr.Fred H. Clutton, Secretary of the Board of Trade in July 1934, as saying those who voted for President Roosevelt did not approve of Mr. Hoover's farm relief activities, and who consented to the Democratic platform thinking it the lesser of two evils, awaken to find the Roosevelt administration has tricked them and substituted the Socialist platform. To prove this Mr. Clutton read the Socialist platform as follows:- The 1932 Socialist platform proposed to transfer principle industries and natural resources, and public utilities of the country from private to public ownership. Called for a five billion dollar relief fund, and five billion public works, six hour day, five days a week; public employment agencies, unemployment insurance, old age pensions, workingmen's compensation, government aid to farmers, socialization

of credit and currency, creating federal market agency, an amendment to the constitution to make amendments less cumbersone, abolution of the power of the Supreme Court, -- so much for the Socialist platform.

Now, following the New Deal measures in similar order, you have redistribution of wealth, increase of government bureaucracy, threatening of destruction of private property. We have the FERA, with the billions for relief, the President's four billion eight hundred million for public works, the NRA, the six hour day, five days a week, the social security bill, providing for the unemployment insurance, and old age pensions.

"Soak the rich, share the wealth", is just what the Socialists have prescribed. Last, but not least, is the exact duplication of the chaffing of both Mr. Roosevelt and the Socialists at constitutional restraint, exercised by the Supreme Court. Mr. Roosevelt and his brain-trusters rendered lip service to our complete form of government as long as they had their way; but when the Supreme Court upset the NRA, Mr. Roosevelt, the president, who had said on oath, "I now swear to preserve, protect, and defend the Constitution", acted like the baby who had his toys taken from him, and sat down and sent a letter to the Ways and Means Committee who was considering the Bituminous Coal Bill, as follows:-

> "I hope your Committee will not permit doubts as to the constitutionality however reasonable to block the suggested legislation, as to this particular case the Attorney General has refused to give an opinion as to the constitutionality of the bill".

The kinship between Karl Mark, the founder of the international socialism, and Mr. Roosevelt is seen clearly when we compare some of the Marks proposals with Mr. Roosevelt's:

Marks (1): Abolution of land and application of all rents of all lands to public purpose.

Roosevelt: The New Deal, through its AAA program, the Bank Head Act which weakened the rights of the landowners by empowering the state to prescribe production quotas and fixed prices.

Marks (2): A heavy progressive or graduated income tax.

Roosevelt: Such a system is the foundation of the New Deal tax system.

Marks (3): Abolition of all rights of inheritance.

Roosevelt: In his June 19th message to Congress said foreshadows of this objective in urging the imposition of crushingly heavy inheritance and gift tax.

Marks (4): Centralization of credit in the hands of the state by means of a National Bank with state capital and an exclusive monopoly.

Roosevelt: Centralization of credit proposed in the Eccles Bill, and Secretary Morgantheau is supporting a program for central bank.

Marks (5): Centralization of means of communication and transport in the hands of the state.

Roosevelt: In a special message to Congress urged that all forms of transportation be brought under the control of the Federal Commission.

Marks (6): Extension of factories and instruments of production owned by the state. The bringing into cultivation of waste land, and the improvement of the soil generally in accordance with a common plant.

Mr. Hopkins, Mr. Roosevelt's baby, thought the FERA has subsidized the establishment of 7,650 state owned work-shops for the unemployed. Dr. Tugwell as head of the rural rehabituation service has been granted $100,000,000 and will receive $850,000,000 additional under the works relief budget to carry on a government program for the improvement of the soil generally, in accordance with a common plan.

Marks (7); Establishment of industrial armies, especially for agriculture.

Roosevelt: The CCC has established a state directed army of 600,000 men to carry out a social program of reforestation and general agricultural work.

Eighty-seven years ago Marks proclaimed that the foregoing program would bring about socialistic success. Strange as it may seem 70% of the Marks' program is in process of realization, and we can easily see why Abraham Chan, Editor of the SOCIALIST DAILY, declared at a mass meeting of the garment workers at Madison Square Garden in October 1933, that Roosevelt was qualified to become a full-fledged member of the Socialist Party. If Karl Marks were living today, Roosevelt would surely have another ardent supporter.

If the expression that we are trying to return to "the horse and buggy days" is true, the policies of the New Deal is a grandfather to the buggy, if not to the horse. All the socialism, class war, dictatorship, Karl Marks' policies, are all under cover of an assortment of Fabian, Socialism, an alien inspiration, abhorent to American traditions and spiritually inconsistent.

Mr. Roosevelt said at Sioux City, September 29, 1932: "I accuse the present administration of being the greatest spending administration in peacetime, in all our history; one that has piled bureau on bureau, commission on commission, and has failed to anticipate the dire needs of reduced earning power of the people"

Mr. Roosevelt said in Pittsburg, October 19, 1932: "I regard reduction in Federal spending as one of the most important issues of this campaign. In my opinion, it is the most direct and effective contribution that government can make to business".

Were these speeches made under the strain of a brainstorm? When we know the cost of government from Washington to Wilson, a total of 124 years, was only about $24,600,000,000, and the expenditures of Roosevelt from 1934-1935-1936 as estimated by Roosevelt will total $24,200,000,000 or more, what significance can be attached to Roosevelt's remarks?

The experiment of planned economy is also a pet of Mrs.Anna Eleanor Roosevelt in a scheme to furnish homes to stranded families in the hills of Reedsville, West Virginia, with taxpayers' money. In this wasteful failure Mrs. Roosevelt on September 29, 1933, purchased through the government, a farm of some 1,017 acres from a gentleman farmer for $46,000.00. A little later on 785 acres were added. A $5,000,000.00 appropriation was spent on this building project, and another added amount was handed over by Mr. Tugwell, Brain-truster. The houses were to be built for these people and paid for by them. When it was discovered that their incomes were from $600 to $1200 a year, it doomed an impossibility.

Mrs. Roosevelt set out to build houses in the Virginia hills 2000 feet above sea level, where there are thirty days of zero weather and several feet of snow each year -- houses out of wall-board and cedar lumber. The heating apparatus consisted of small stoves. After some fifty pasteboard houses had been built, Mrs. Roosevelt, to use her own language, said the houses were not good enough. While the $500,000 was a total loss, the experiment was justified in view of its value to succeeding projects, and financial matters were no concern of hers. Now better houses are under

construction costing from $5000 to $7000 with three acres of ground attached, while the same neighborhood farms of 86 acres with a six-room house can be purchased for $3500.00.

The kindergarten minds in the above project are to be pitied rather than censured, for the line between sanity and graft is indistinguishable, because our imagination forces us to conclude that it will take more than a brain-truster to explain how these tenants can pay from their incomes for a $5000 home.

Let us ask Mr. Roosevelt what he meant by saying he stood 100% for the Democratic platform while he has forced the socialist platform upon a country that has voted against it time after time?

Why did Mr. Roosevelt not keep his campaign promises? What did he mean when he said in Butte, Montana, September 19, 1932, "The way we do things and not just the way we say things is nearly always the measure of our sincerity"?

Will Roosevelt be held to account for these promises? America answers loudly in the affirmative! America will never recover from the effects of the so-called New Deal for the hold of the money-changers has a definite grip on our Executive which only blood shed will break.

Written by
K. L. Hickman

Paper #6

# THE PROBLEM OF INEQUALITY

L. C. Halberstadt

Nov. 11, 1935

In a report made in May 1926 the Federal Trade Commission estimated the wealth of the people of the United States as amounting to over 353 billion dollars for December 1922. Land wealth was estimated at 34.6% of this figure and improvement and all other wealth accounted for the other 65.4%. This same commission also estimated that the wealth of this country had increased about 78% during the period 1912 to 1922. Prices arose about 52 %. From this can be figured the real rate of increase which is about 17% which is slightly in excess of the percentage increase in the population.

This same commission also made a study of the distribution of wealth. To secure the data 43,512 probated estates located in 13 typical states were studied.

The following summary gives us an idea of the data secured.

I. - Estates under $500 - 5.4%

II. - " from $500 to $10,000 -- 12.7%

III. - " from $10,000 to $50,000 - 23.0%

IV. -- " over $50,000 - 58.9%

Roughly this means that the richest 1% of the people owns about 60% of the wealth of the country and that the poorest 80% owns about 6% of it. Prior to this study W. I. King and C. B. Spahr had made studies which revealed similar data. Hunter in 1904 pointed out that 1% of the population owns more wealth than do the other 99%.

In other words a very few people out of a population of 111,000,000 at that time owned 2/3 of 1% of the total private wealth.

The first type of inequality. that of ownership. has been noted. The picture is dark. Large groups of our people do not own their homes and have little beyond life's necessities. Above them we find another group, the lower middle classes, who may or may not own their homes but are more thrifty and are saving something for sickness and old age. A still smaller group of well-to-do people have something invested. and at the top of the pyramid are a much smaller group that are owners of great wealth. Such is the picture of the inequality of ownership.

Let us turn to a second type of inequality, that of income. According to government sources the nation's income in 1929 was 81.0 billions; 75.4 in 1930; 63.3 billions in 1931; and 49.0 billions in 1932.

It is estimated that wages declined about 60% in some industries, and salaries declined about 40% since the depression. Labor income declined more than property income, the former about 40% while the latter receded about 30%.

Another old study pictures the inequality of income as follows:

1% of the income - receivers get $8000 per annum.
5% " " " - " " incomes from $3200 to $8000.
10% " " " - " " " " $3200 to $2300.
20% " " " - " " " " $2300 to $1700.

A statement taken from a study entitled as "The Income in the United States" is, "In 1918, the year for which the best data are available, about 86% of persons gainfully employed had incomes of less than $2,000 per annum and about 14% had incomes exceeding that sum".

Many times of late I have heard people remark about a third type of inequality, that due to natural differences among human beings. Some are strong, others weak, some intelligent, others stupid. No two individuals are alike hence some think that inequalities are natural since nature inflicted upon us so many inequalities of personality and character.

Bye and Hewett in their "Applied Economics", p. 499, have an interesting picture.

> "A human being is the product of numberless forces acting upon him. Some operate before his birth, and their results are innate in his very being; others come from home, family, friends, teachers, and general surroundings. In both cases they come from outside himself. One individual is favored with good heredity, refined home influence, a splendid education. He succeeds. Another may be born of weak stock and reared in a home of low character, with no place to play in but the gutter and no playmates but the hoodlums of the slums. He is taken out of school as soon as the law permits. He fails. Can the one be said to deserve his success and the other his failure? Rather it must be confessed that each is simply the product of society. The wealth of the successful man was made possible

by parents, teachers, writers, and various other external influences; the poverty of the other was the result of influences of a more unfavorable nature. The rich man may be said, then, to owe something to society for his success, and society owes something to the poor man for his failure."

It is very difficult to refute such a picture. It would be easy for us to set back and say, "Nature has been unkind to some, nothing can be done". Yet if I read my history right, man has been attempting to do something and has had some success.

A solution to this problem of inequality is more or less becoming imperative because it tends to perpetuate itself. Dr. Engel, making a study of the spendings of people, long ago pointed out his famous law that poverty tends to maintain itself because it denies the poor the opportunities of education and leisure time to help them climb. Also he pointed out that wealth tends to perpetuate itself in spite of depressions by means of compound interest.

As we think about the three types of inequalities discussed above, we become more or less conscious of the causes of inequality. I shall list some; nature, social institutions, inheritance, monopolies, and chance.

Nature may be dismissed as alone not to blame. Social institutions, one of them as an example may be taken, that of property. Under property institutions various inequalities appear. Special privilege aids one, hinders another. Some have the advantage of superior profit making, others do not. Privileges account for much.

Inheritance is a very important cause of inequalities of income and ownership. Some are born rich, others are heirs to nothing at all. It is thought that 3 out of 5 of the children in this country are born in propertyless families. These children may inherit good bodies and minds but nothing with which to start life. Such because of the control of wealth "cannot go into life with the security of free men. They cannot within reasonable limits control their own destiny. They cannot realize themselves". So unrest and discontent follow. Back of all movements, such as the labor movement, reform movement, or the progressive movement, or a new deal, will be found this unrest and discontent.

An evil of which many people are becoming aware(of)is the ease with which large fortunes can save, leading to increase of capital equipment and inability of the masses to buy consumers goods which finally lead to depressions. If we can succeed in lessening such perhaps we can pave the way to lessen the violence of business fluctuations.

Monopolies create privileges, many of them due to genius and ability and are valuable to society. Yet special advantages are secured which lead to fortune building.

Chance, luck, circumstance cause unexpected turns in events. Some are made rich, others poor. Risks make and break men and fortunes.

This paper will close with a discussion of some of the considerations of this problem of inequality.

I think if one will study this problem of inequality the fact of inequality can not be denied. Is it necessary or justifiable? As long as we have private property we will have and need some inequality of wealth and income. The third type of inequality we will always have. Let us dismiss the last statement and turn to the first one. By giving incomes to people who can and will produce, production is possible. The variation is partly due to ability to serve each other. As long as nature rewards or refuses to reward us with ability to serve others is production possible. It is assumed in this analysis that business is busy with work that is socially beneficial. Also it is assumed that there are not sufficient consumption goods and services to serve all in the community adequately.

Some have pointed out the fact that unequal distribution also makes possible a saving for the purpose of contributing to the building of capital equipment so that consumers goods can be produced. Without it such extensive savings are more or less impossible, it is claimed. Scarcity is vital to economic value but too often we stretch this fact. The question of inequality is tied up with the question of freedom. Some freedom much be permitted to utilize the superior qualities of superior persons. If our social organization does not care for the superior persons, those of lesser ability will suffer. A good army may be defeated because of poor officers.

There is some justification for inequality which I have tried to point out above. However that does not justify a lopsided inequality.

A fortune tends to grow in snowball fashion although someone has said that "there are only three generations from shirt sleeves to shirt sleeves". What programs do we have for lessening inequality?

There are many. Some that have been suggested are biological sterilization of the unfit, reduce unemployment, improve schools, raise wages, better union organization, better and more efficient conduct of business.

One that has and is being used is free income. This means that the use of roads, streets, parks, libraries, schools be free. The more well-to-do people will largely pay for such services.

Another method being stressed today is that of the use of inheritance taxes. Many believe in this method. Income taxes are used. Such methods always raise the question of use of tax money which is a very important question today. Some have suggested using tax money to buy stocks and bonds in industrial organizations and use the income for governmental purposes.

One of the newer ideas has been that of a planned economy. The object of such is to lessen unforeseen chance and risk. The National Industrial Recovery Act had such an idea. I do not care to discuss this idea but I do wish to point out briefly some of the causes of risk. Changes in seasons, natural environment, population, productive technique habits, customs, value of money and credit, and individual enterprise are good examples.

The business man today is attempting to eliminate risk. Some cannot be eliminated. Some examples of attempts along this line are combination, speculation such as "buying long", or "selling short", hedging, insurance, and workmen's compensation.

Try as we will, we can never solve this problem of inequality. The best that we can do is to prevent a lopsided inequality. Our

# Program

✣

# The Terre Haute Literary Club

Chamber of Commerce

Monday Evening

7:30

ESTABLISHED JANUARY 3, 1881

1935-1936

KEEP FOR REFERENCE



# Program

## OCTOBER

7. W. E. Ouweneel. "Paul Bunyan"
F. E. Wiedemann, G. E. Francis

14. N. R. Van Cleave. "The Thesis on the Door"
J. L. Lord, F. H. Weng

21. Dr. Frank E. Wiedemann, "As I Saw Europe"
F. E. Brengle, H. E. Elder

28. L. R. Fair. "A Short Story, 'His First Case'."
R. A. Acher, F. C. Wade

## NOVEMBER

4. H. S. Hickman. "Roosevelt, the Sabianist"
Walter Shriner, E. L. Welborn

11. A. R. Markle "How Did We Get That Way?"
D. L. Harmon, L. R. Fair

18. Harry E. Elder.
"Larger Units of Organization in Rural Education."
R. A. Acher, W. T. Allyn

25. L. C. Halberstadt, "The Problem of Inequality"
D. H. Forsythe, H. S. Hickman

## DECEMBER

2. James Mackell. "Nobel Prizes in Science"
D. L. Harmon, F. C. Wade

9. Harold E. Moore. Subject to be Announced
L. R. Fair, Guy Stantz

16. Walter Shriner,
"Historical Development of the Commercial"
"Practice of Charging Interest"
W. F. Mitchell, F. E. Brengle

## JANUARY

6. F. H. Weng, "The Life of Michael Angelo"
C. T. Malan, A. R. Markle

13. Guy Stantz. "Glacier National Park"
W. T. Allyn, L. C. Halberstadt

20. Fred Brengle, "Hamilton-Jefferson and Current Politics"
H. E. Moore, C. T. Malan

27. Rudolph Acher,
"Human Nature as Revealed by Psycho Analysis."
Guy Stantz, J. M. Taxay

# Program

## FEBRUARY

3. J. Marshall Taxay. "Japan: Friend or Foe."
James Mackell, F. E. Wiedemann

10. E. L. Welborn. "Public Opinon."
R. M. Tirey, W. F. Mitchell

17. J. L. Lord. "Puppy Love."
N. R. Vancleave, J. E. Ewers

24. L. R. Sutin. "On Being a Public Deputy."
J. E. Ewers, R. W. Himelock

## MARCH

2. C. T. Malan.
"The College Professor in Politics."
H. S. Hickman, O. T. Allen

9. Daniel L. Harmon. "Benjamin Franklin."
L. C. Halberstadt, E. L. Welborn

16. Frank C. Wade. "The Trial of Aaron Burr."
C. Y. Kelly, L. R. Sutin

23. D. H. Forsythe. Subject to be announced later.
O. T. Allen, N. R. Vancleave

30. W. T. Allyn. "Animal Life in Indiana."
F. H. Weng, J. L. Lord

## APRIL

6. W. F. Mitchell, "Scraps of Paper."
A. N. Levin, C. Y. Kelly

13. Orris T. Allen. "That Labor Question."
C. Y. Kelly, A. R. Markle

20. J. E. Ewers. Subject to be announced later.
R. A. Acher, D. H. Forsythe

27. R. W. Himelock. "The Tragedy of Mastery."
N. R. Vancleave, Walter Shriner

## MAY

4. A Panel Discussion
Subject to be announced later.
Organizer—Harry Elder
George Frances, Thomas O'Mara, A. N. Levin

11. Chester Kelly. "The County Unit."
L. R. Sutin, R. M. Tirey
Election of Officers

18. Annual Dinner

## MEMBERS

Archer, Rudolph A.
Allyn, W. T.
Allen, Orris T.
Brengle, Fred E.
Bourne, Edwin N.
Elder, Harry E.
Ewers, J. E.
Fair, L. R.
Forsyth, D. H.
Francis, George E.
Halberstadt, L. C.
Harmon, D. L.
Hinrichs, R. W.
Hickman, H. S.
Kelly, Chester Y.
Levin, A. N.
Lord, J. L.
Mackell, James
Malan, C. T.
Markle, A. R.
Mitchell, Waldo
Moore, Harold E.
O'Mara, Thomas
Ouweneel, W. E.
Shriner, Walter
Stantz, Guy
Suttin, Lewis
Taxey, J. Marshall
Tirey, Ralph N.
VanCleave, N. R.
Wade, Frank C.
Welborn, E. L.
Weng, F. H.
Wisely, J. B.
Wiedemann, Frank

## HONOR ROLL

Ball, Spencer F.
Cooper, J. A.
Harvey, W. W.
Mack, Wm. P.
McBeth, W. A.
Peddle, Charles R.
Reynolds, Baskin E.
Richardson, Joseph P.
Seiler, Michael
Schell, Walker
Scovell, Josiah T.
Shortridge, Curtis G.
Thompson, Charles O.
Thompson, R. W.
Wiley, W. H.

## HONORARY MEMBERS

Allen, Lyman P.*
Cox, F. O.*
Crum, J. H.*
Peach, H. D.
Davis, S. B.
Ehrmann, Max
Fancher, Albert A.
Fuller, Chester*
Hathaway, A. S.
Haynes, F.*
Hess, L. N.
Long, Elwood W.
Morgan, A. E.
Nash, W. A.
Parsons, W. W.*
Reeves, L. J.
Reynolds, S. M.
Robinson, John C.*
Roll, Charles
Royse, C. A.
Statz, Wm.*
Schlicher, J. J.
Hollingsworth, J. H.
Holmes, J. A.*
Lee, M. G.
Leipsinger, E. W.
McNutt, Cyrus F.*
McTaggart, A.
Starbuck, J. E.
Tilley, J. M.
Tippy, W. M.
Townly, H. P.*
Wickersham, James A.

* Deceased.

## COMMITTEES

Executive Halberstadt, Forsythe, Shriner.
Membership Francis, VanCleave.
Attendance Elder, Weng, Moore.
Foundation Fund Wade, Wisley, Wiedemann.

## OFFICERS

President ..... W. E. Ouweneel
Vice President ..... Harry E. Elder
Secretary-Treasurer ..... D. L. Harmon
Historical Secretary ..... A. R. Markle

H. E. Elder

Paper # 7.

# LARGER UNITS OF ORGANIZATION

Mar. 18, 1933

## I. Rural and City Schools Compared

As one surveys the educational system of our nation, he is impressed by two contrasting sets of conditions. While there are many notable exceptions, the rural school as a whole is strikingly ineffective and uneconomical. Inexperienced, poorly prepared, and underpaid teachers, insecure in their positions because of the unshackled influence of politics and nepotism, hold forth for pitifully short terms in unhygienic and inadequately equipped buildings, typical of the last century.

Too frequently a county is split into hundreds of little districts with absolutely no unity except that imposed by the general school laws of the state. In many instances district boards and township turstees are so powerful and independent that county supervision exists only in name; what there is of it is clerical, statistical, and political rather than personal, helpful, and professional. Incoming trustees have the right - which they freely exercise - to discharge the teachers in their corporations to make places for relatives and friends who were loyal in the preceding elections. These appointments are made with no professional assistance from the county superintendent. (One trustee recently confessed that he had made the mistake of employing all of the new teachers for a township high school before securing the principal and that he was not sure that a schedule of classes could be made on the basis of the certificates held by the teachers with whom he had contracted.) Naturally, in such a disjointed, poorly planned, and unsupervised system, great inequalities of opportunity flourish in the same county on opposite sides of district or township lines. With no unity of administration and supervision there can be no specialization and no adaptations of the curriculum to the individual needs of the pupils. Each teacher is forced to be a generalist who presents all subjects in a mediocre or inferior manner.

On the other hand, city school administration has been synonymous with the best educational procedure for many years and has pioneered in the extension of educational advantages and opportunities. Under a single board of education there has been a unification without which substantial progress would have been impossible. Fundamentally, this unification and freedom from political domination are the two outstanding differences in rural and urban school administration. To these divergent practices must be attributed very largely the differences in results from the standpoints of efficiency and economy.

Through larger units of organization and administration cities have been able to establish better systems of grading and promotion, to provide for special instruction and supervision, to operate special-type schools, and to set up more adequate physical education and health programs. In contrast to the rural school is the high quality of training, leadership, and initiative which city schools have been able to bring to their service. Because many outstanding educators have been unwilling to consider political appointments as county or state superintendents, cities have maintained for nearly a hundred years almost a monopoly - together with the resulting accrued advantages - of the real leaders in educational administration. It seems that better teachers, better salaries, better bases for selection and tenure of teachers, better housing, better equipment, and better results have gone hand in hand with the adoption of the larger unit of organization and supervision.

## II. Efficiency and Economy Possible Through Rural School Reorganization

Because rural areas, organized on a small unit basis, have been backward and unprogressive, while urban centers, characterized by the larger unit, have been much more progressive educationally, one reasons that there must be

an intimate relation between the size of the school district and the quality and scope of its educational services, and concludes that rural education may be improved by adopting and adapting urban procedure. But more convincing than abstract reasoning are concrete examples of what has been achieved in isolated cases in rural regions.

About fifteen years ago the people of Indiana became interested in improving the educational status of the state and local communities. As a result the General Assembly in 1921 authorized a survey of the State's system of public schools. When the Survey Commission reported in 1923, it attributed the shortcomings of the schools chiefly to a lack of well-prepared and experienced teachers and to faulty local and state organization. The former of these defects was partially solved by revising the system of certification of teachers. Due to a lack of conviction, especially on the part of rural people, a bill, proposing to change from the township to the county for administrative purposes, failed to pass. Undaunted by this defeat, the State Superintendentof the Department of Education secured funds from the General Education Board to carry on a demonstration of the value of the county unit from the standpoint of rural supervision. This project, carried on from 1923 to 1925, is worthy of consideration by the Division of Rural Education.

Dr. Henry Lester Smith, recent now President of the National Education Association, devoted one-third of his time to the general direction of the demonstration. Four typical Indiana Counties were selected - Johnson and Lagrange in which to carry on the proposed experiment and Rush and Whitley for control purposes. Conditions in these counties were similar. While the elementary teachers were about the same age and had had approximately the same amount of training and experience, the control counties had a slight advantage in the training, maturity, and experience of their teachers. Two competent supervisors were employed for each demonstration county, and

throughout the two-year period major emphasis was placed upon the significance of supervision on a county-wide basis.

At the outset of the demonstration it was assumed that the best evidence of the value of supervision is its effect upon the pupils who are under its influence. To compare progress in the demonstration counties with that in the control counties, standard tests were uniformly administered to all pupils in grades three to eight, inclusive, in all four counties near the beginning and near the close of each of the school years, 1923-1924 and 1924-1925. At the end of the first year it was revealed that the average progress in the supervised counties had exceeded that of the unsupervised counties by 14.3%; during the second year this average reached 25.7%. The benefits derived in the demonstration counties were general - they were evident in different types of schools, in each of the several grades, and in each of the most important subject-matter fields.

Assuming that the pupils of the two favored counties progressed at the same rate throughout the two years as they did in the periods between the tests, they received, as a result of supervision, the equivalent of 64 extra days of instruction. In other words, the pupils of Johnson and Lagrange counties received in 320 days <u>with supervision</u> as much instruction as they would have received in 384 days <u>without supervision</u>. At the current daily cost of instruction <u>without supervision</u>, this additional instruction would have called for an expenditure of $100,000 whereas the total cost of supervision for the two years was only $26,000. Obviously, supervision, possible only in larger units, is an effective and economical way of improving rural education.

Granting that larger units are desirable, there are many who assume that initial costs of consolidation are prohibitive. That this assumption is based on fallacious reasoning could be proved beyond doubt by any of

66

numerous actual situations. Let us take another illustration from Indiana and consider typical building facilities in relation to the attendance area. In twenty given counties there are buildings with a capacity of approximately 132,000 pupils with only 109,000 enrolled - an excess of pupil capacity over enrollments of 20.5%. If the same ratio would hold throughout the state, there would be building capacity for about 150,000 more pupils than are enrolled. It may be safely stated that many buildings unfit for use could be abandoned and pupils could be transferred to nearby suitable buildings with excess capacity - at a saving to taxpayers and, at the same time, increased educational advantages to all pupils involved. As a specific example, Portland, Indiana, and the surrounding territory may be cited. A year ago the city had an elementary building capacity of 1200 pupils with only 733 enrolled - an excess capacity of 467 elementary school pupils. In the same township and three adjacent townships were 24 one-teacher schools with a combined enrollment of 639 elementary pupils. Almost all of these schools could be transported to Portland without additional building facilities and with considerably fewer than 24 additional teachers. In a similar manner a total enrollment of 249 in three nearby high schools could be cared for by Portland with only a slight increase in the present teaching staff. This is a splendid illustration of the difficulty of modification of the established order of things and of the need for a well-planned state program that seeks a solution of pressing problems as rapidly as the general public becomes sufficiently enlightened.

Many convincing examples of the financial implications of consolidation and the transportation of pupils could be given. Let one more suffice. In Frederick County, Maryland, 88 one-room schools and five two-room schools were closed during the period from 1914 to 1930. The actual annual consolidation costs in this county in 1930 - including transportation, bus insurance,

and the salaries of the additional teachers at the consolidation centers - amounted to $93,138.08. For the same year the total estimated annual cost of the 93 schools closed from 1914 to 1930 was $119,874.13, showing a net annual gain, through consolidation, of $26,736.17. Even when the cost of housing facilities made necessary by consolidation are included, there is an annual saving of $17,736.17 for the taxpayers of this county. This is another clear case of the best being the cheapest in the long run.

## III. The Application of Lessons Learned.

We have seen that our organization for rural education is inadequate educationally and economically, that the city school district - through its unity of effort - has been the pioneer in the extension of educational advantages, and that in isolated cases where city methods have been applied in rural areas the results have justified the change. Admitting these facts, our problem becomes one of the general improvement of rural education throughout the nation by making effective the principles of administration already validated by experience. Before this may be accomplished district and township organizations must be completely subordinated to county and state units and party politics must be eliminated from the management of schools.

To consummate these changes is not easy. The methods and prejudices of a century, as well as the innate selfishness of individuals and communties must be supplanted by state-wide and nation-wide dissemination of the indisputable pertinent facts. It is too much to expect that the smaller units will cooperate in the initiation of this movement and it can never come through politically elected county superintendents. The desired change must be superimposed from above - by the state. This means that the state must develop and follow a well-planned policy over a long period of time and apply the underlying principles of intelligent organization and administration which

have been evolved by our cities in the management of their schools. Minimum standards must be adopted and every school district in the state must be supplied - by the state, if necessary - with the leadership and financial support required to maintain these standards. Classification of schools, the length of term, the certification of teachers, sanitary standards, rates and forms of taxation, curriculums, minimum salaries, and attendance are among those problems which the state must solve for its people in the local communities. All this means that state departments of education must be more than statistical and political in nature - they must be continuously manned by the best leadership available and they must have the respect and confidence of educators both within and without their respective states.

As state departments are thus transformed from the realm of the political to the professional, similar transformations in the counties will be forthcoming. They will do as our cities did long ago - they will stop the election of their superintendents by popular vote or by politically-minded township trustees. The office of county superintendent will become one of genuine leadership and dignity. When this is done we shall be much farther on our way to providing the same quality of educational offerings to rural boys and girls as their city cousins have long enjoyed.

## IV. Encouraging Trends.

Leaders in rural education may be intelligently optimistic because of the notable advances which are being made on every front as evidenced by the following facts: (1). The average annual decrease in the number of one-room schools for the sixteen-year period ending in 1932 was 3,223. (2). With New Jersey in the lead with only one per cent, the percentage of all teachers in one-room schools decreased from 21.5% to 16.6% in the four years ending in 1931. (3). There was an increase of 87% in the number of childfen transported

to consolidated centers during these same years, although the increase in the cost of transportation was only 45%. (4). Economists are pointing now, as never before, to the unwarranted financial waste due to the multiplicity of outworn units of government and educators are emphasizing the potential efficiency of larger units of organization. (5). Public School revenue from state-wide sources is rapidly increasing throughout the nation. (6). Highways, financed and administered more and more as state units, furnish a splendid example of the elimination of the waste of funds through larger units of organization. (7). At leasttwelve states provide for the administration of all or a part of their public schools on a county-unit basis while in 33 states revenue is produced to some extent on the same basis.

Because public education is a dynamic institution, sensitive to changing conditions and varying social needs, these trends will continue until common practice approaches what experience has proved to be right. To hasten the achievement of this ideal is a task worthy of the best efforts of the National Education Association and of every real educator of our nation.

Dec 2, 1935

Paper #8

# AMERICAN NOBEL PRIZE WINNERS IN SCIENCE

JAMES F. MACKELL

# AMERICAN NOBEL PRIZE WINNERS IN SCIENCE

December 10 of each year is known as "Founder's Day" for the Nobel prizes and on that day the prize winners for the year are officially announced. It may be said however that the successful candidates are usually decided in November, and it therefore happens that the press carries advance information some two or three weeks ahead of the official announcement.

The prizes are awarded annually for achievement, one each in the fields of physics, chemistry, medical science, literature and peace. There are thus five awards each year, and the actual cash value of each prize amounts to approximately $40,000. These awards have been given out annually since 1901, and it is likely that they will be continued forever, unless some phenomenal economic disaster intervenes to jeopardize the capital fund.

Alfred Bernhard Nobel was born in Stockholm in 1833. The traditional family name was Nobilius, but the grandfather, Imanuel, who was an army surgeon, changed the name to Nobel. His son, Emanuel, the father of Alfred, was a teacher in the sciences in the schools of Stockholm and he transmitted to his sons the spirit of research and an interest in natural phenomena. Emanuel Nobel and his sons became interested in explosives and one of the sons was killed in an explosion resulting from experiments with nitroglycerine.

Alfred was not as active physically as the other brothers; since he suffered all his life from severe headaches. It is said that he spent day after day in his laboratory with his head wrapped in bandages in an effort

to allay the intense suffering which was ever his lot. When he was quite young, his father sent him to America to study under John Ericsson who designed the famous "Monitor" for the northern side during the Civil War.

It is said that young Nobel was very much impressed by Ericsson and he was especially affected by the vicissitude which visited the inventor during the time that he was struggling to succeed. It is likely that he decided there and then that if he ever had the opportunity, he would do something in a material way to encourage scientific research and to relieve to some extent the financial stress which young research workers usually have to undergo.

Alfred's father and the other brothers were at this time working with nitroglycerine in Sweden and Russia, and when he returned to them, he spent most of his time in an attempt to discover some other explosive which would be as potent, but less dangerous. By a mere accident in which some of the nitroglycerine escaped and was mixed with some of the sand used in packing he discovered a process of mixing the nitroglycerine with 25% infusorial earth, and the result was what we today call dynamite. He felt that he had discovered an explosive which would revolutionize blasting, and indeed, this discovery laid the foundation for the enormous fortune which he later amassed and with which he endowed the Nobel foundation.

Nobel established factories in France, Spain, England, the United States and Sweden. He lived for many years in Paris, but spent his later years in San Remo, Italy. During this time he invented many other forms of explosives, including smokeless powder. He received many tributes from scientific fraternities, but the average citizen held him in awe because of the deadly import of his inventions.

In spite of his successes and his enormous wealth, Nobel was a lonely individual and he never married. He was suspicious by nature and felt that most people were attracted to him because of his wealth. With one individual, however, he formed a lasting friendship in the person of Baroness Bertha Von Suttner. She was his private secretary for a short time, but the friendship lasted for many years after she had left his employ and married the Baron. It is from the memoirs of the Baroness Von Suttner that we get the first inkling of the motives which impelled Nobel to establish the Nobel foundation. She, herself, was a winner of the prize on peace soon after the establishment of the foundation.

It has been said by many commentators that Alfred Nobel was very much disturbed during his later years by the fact that his discoveries were being used very extensively in the business of war, and the idea came to him that he should do something to counteract the evils of war. The prize for peace and the prize for literature were thus included in his scheme along with the other prizes in the sciences.

On December 10, 1896, Alfred Nobel died suddenly while at work in his laboratory at San Remo. He had been warned some time before by his physician that his physical condition was precarious, but he insisted upon working until the last. During his last years he had been carefully planning the disposal of his fortune with the determination that it should be used for the encouragement of scientific research, the stimulation of good literature and the furtherance of world peace. His will startled the world by its originality and idealism. It seemed paradoxical that a man who had spent the greater part of his life in inventing

instruments of destruction should now leave his fortune to constructive and creative purposes.

It is interesting to note that Nobel because of his distrust of many lawyers acted in a large measure without legal counsel, and his will was first felt to be faulty. His older brother, Emanuel, however, who was the titular head of the family felt that the will should stand, so it was not contested in a legal way. After many complications and delays, the will was declared legally valid and provisions were made for its execution.

From the "Royal Code of Statutes of Sweden" we have the following extract of Nobel's will: "With the residue of my convertible estate I hereby direct my executors to proceed as follows: They shall convert my said residue of property into money, which they shall then invest in safe securities; the capital thus secured shall constitute a fund, the interest accruing from which shall be annually awarded in prizes to those persons who shall have contributed most materially to benefit mankind during the year immediately preceding. The said interest shall be divided into five equal amounts, to be apportioned as follows: one share to the person who shall have made the most important discovery or invention in the domain of Physics; one share to the person who shall have made the most important chemical discovery or improvement; one share to the person who shall have made the most important discovery in the domain of Physiology or Medicine; one share to the person who shall have produced in the field of Literature the most distinguished work of an idealistic tendency; and finally, one share to the person who shall have most or best promoted

the Fraternity of Nations and the Abolishment or Diminution of Standing Armies and the Formation and Increase of Peace Congresses."

In further details the will provides: "The prizes for Physics and Chemistry shall be awarded by the Swedish Academy of Science in Stockholm; the one for Physiology or Medicine by the Caroline Medical Institute in Stockholm; the one for Literature by the Academy in Stockholm (i.e. Svenska Akademien) and that for Peace by a Committee of five persons to be elected by the Norwegian Storthing. I declare it to be my express desire that in the awarding of prizes, no consideration whatever be paid to the nationality of the candidates, that is to say, that the most deserving be awarded the prize, whether of Scandinavian origin or not."

The will was so loosely drawn up that a great amount of work had to be done by the commission which was set up by Royal decree in order to put the provisions of the will into practical effect. However, after a period of five years subsequent to Nobel's death, the first prizes were awarded in 1901. These prizes have been awarded every year since that time; however, in a few instances it was felt by the commission that in certain fields no contribution during that year was outstanding, and in those cases no award was made, but the money was allowed to revert to the capital fund. This has happened very infrequently, however, since in all, subsequent to 1901 up to and including 1934 there have been 145 prizes awarded out of a possible 170. Literature leads the list with 32 awards, physics 31, chemistry 29, medicine 28, and peace 25. The awards for 1935 have not as yet been announced officially.

In a short paper such as this, it would be impossible to give a detailed account of the contributions of any of the Nobel Laureates,

however, a brief sketch of some of the outstanding contributions in the field of science will be given. Since most of the winners have contributed something to the field of science which makes their names a byword in the scientific circles, it might be worth while from a layman point of view to attempt a brief survey of these achievements.

It is a source of considerable pride to us, here in the Middle west, that the three prizes which have come to this country in physics, came to three men who did the work leading up to the award in a Mid-western university, the University of Chicago. In passing, it may be noted moreover that the only prize which has come to this country in literature was awarded to our middle western Sinclair Lewis.

The first prize in physics to come to the United States was awarded to Albert Michelson, late professor of physics in the University of Chicago. He was awarded the prize in 1907 for his outstanding work in the field of light. Michelson was one of the most painstaking workers who ever lived. He invented a dividing engine which was capable of ruling 36,000 lines to the inch, and with this engine, he ruled the finest diffraction gratings that have ever been made. He also invented an optical interferometer which bears his name and its use by Michelson and a colleague, Morely, in an attempt to detect the "ether" resulted in Einstein's famous "Theory of Relativity." One of Michelson's most outstanding achievements was his success in measuring the velocity of light. His results in this connection are of such accuracy and refinement that it is extremely unlikely that his value for the velocity of light will be modified for several years. In the field of physics, all over the world the name of Michelson is suggested whenever the subject of light is mentioned.

Another American laureate in physics is Professor Robert A. Millikan, formerly of the University of Chicago, but now head of the Norman Bridge Laboratory of Physics of the California Institute of Technology. Professor Millikan is well-known to every school man in the country and especially to us here in Indiana and the middle-west. He spent a great number of his formative years at the University of Chicago as a colleague of Professor Michelson, and it was at Chicago that he did the work which attracted the attention of the Nobel commission. He was awarded the prize in physics in 1923 for his unique method of measuring the charge on the electron. His famous oil-drop experiment is outstanding in its extreme simplicity and uniqueness. Like Michelson, Millikan is a very clever experimenter, and he is extremely successful in devising unique apparatus for the furtherance of his researches. Millikan's value for the charge on the electron still stands as the most accurate ever determined. He is equally well-known for his more recent researches on cosmic rays, and it is quite likely that if he had not won the prize on his electron researches, he would most likely have won one for his very outstanding work in the field of cosmic rays.

In 1927, the University of Chicago was again honored by having the Nobel prize awarded to another member of its physics staff in the person of Professor Arthur R. Compton, a relatively young man. Dr. Compton was awarded the prize jointly with C. T. R. Wilson of England for their work in modern physics. Dr. Compton's part in the enterprise consisted in obtaining the so-called scattering effect or Compton effect on radiant energy. Dr. Compton's contribution did a great deal toward establishing experimental evidence in support of the quantum theory of radiation as opposed to the classical wave theory. It is somewhat paradoxical that

two laureates from the same university should make two contributions to the field of light, either of which would seem to contradict the other. Professor Michelson's diffraction grating is used the world over for measuring the wave length of light, and now the Compton effect is one of the strongest pieces of evidence we have that there is no such thing as light waves, but light comes to us in quanta or in discrete particles. Since 1927 Dr. Compton has been engaged in cosmic ray research and here again he runs counter to another colleague, Dr. Millikan. These two American prize winners are now engaged in a friendly controversy as regards the origin of these rays, and both of them have plenty of evidence in support of their contentions, but of course, they both cannot be right, perhaps neither; but after all that is the way we progress in science as in every other field of human endeavor.

In the field of Chemistry, the Nobel prize has been awarded to three American chemists. The first one to be thus honored was Professor Theodore W. Richards of Harvard who was awarded the prize in chemistry in 1914 for his very outstanding work on the chemical elements. Dr. Richards proposed a new theory concerning the compressibility of the atoms which led to many interesting conclusions. One of these conclusions was that regarding the so-called "bound energy" of the atom and the outcome was the enunciation of a new heat law called the "Third Law of Thermodynamics".

Another application of the new theory of compressible atoms concerns the idea of the "asymmetric" or unsymmetrical carbon atom proposed by Van't Hoff which is one of the fundamental concepts in organic chemistry. The observed phenomena are exactly what one would expect if a com-

pressible carbon atom were unequally compressed on four different sides by the four different affinities inherent in four other dissimilar atoms.

It is interesting also to note that the Richards Thoery is entirely consistent with the more recent hypothesis due to Bohr to the effect that the atom, itself, is a complex affair consisting of a nucleus and several surrounding electrons. Much water has gone over the chemistry. dam since Richards enunciated his theory in 1914, but his contribution served as an entering wedge by means of which succeeding investigators have probed deeper and deeper into the realm of the sub-microscopic heart of matter, itself.

The second American chemist to be honored by the Nobel Foundation is Dr. Irving Langmuir of the General Electric Laboratories of Schenectady, New York. Dr. Langmuir was born in New York in 1881 and received his undergraduate training at Columbia University. He studied subsequently in Germany and did most of his post graduate work under Nernst, a German Nobel laureate in physics. When Langmuir returned to America in 1906, he first became an instructor in the Stevens Institute of Technology. In 1909, he became a member of the staff of the research laboratory of the General Electric Company of Schenectady, New York, where he is now the associate director. Since joining the General Electric Staff, Langmuir has been honored by one scientific society after another, and finally in 1931 he was awarded the Nobel prize in chemistry.

Dr. Langmuir has carried out researches in a field of physical chemistry of such a varied nature that it is difficult to state just what has been his most phenomenal contribution, but his work on surface phenomena is probably most outstanding. He established the fact that the

adsorbed film of substances is monatomic or monomolecular. This he demonstrated very clearly in the case of such gases as oxygen and hydrogen on metals such as platinum and tungsten. One of Langmuir's successes in the field of surface phenomena consisted in laying down a single atomic layer of oxygen on the surface of tungsten and then covering this layer with a similar layer of cesium. In all this work, he has been thoroughly successful in formulating the theoretical development, and there is scarcely any doubt that he is today one of the world's leading theoretical chemists. America had another great mathematical chemist several years ago in the person of Willard Gibbs, and there is no doubt that if Gibbs had lived during the time when the Nobel prizes were being given, he would certainly have been honored. Langmuir is a man of very much the same caliber as Gibbs, and indeed, most of his outstanding work is fashioned after the famous phase rule for which the name of Gibbs will long be remembered.

On Founder's Day last year, 1934, another American chemist, Dr. Harold C. Urey, was given the prize in chemistry for his very remarkable work in connection with heavy hydrogen or deuterium.

Dr. Urey was born in Walkerton, Indiana, in 1893. He worked on an Indiana farm in the summer and attended the Walkerton and Kendallville High School in the winter and graduated from high school in 1911. The family then moved to Montana where he taught school and attended the state university at Missoula. He graduated from college in 1917, and then went to Berkeley, California, where he came under the influence of G. N. Lewis, one of the leading chemists of the country. After finishing his work for the Ph. D. in physical chemistry under Lewis, he was awarded a fellowship in Copenhagen under the famous Niels Bohr. During the time

he was at Copenhagen, he became associated with Heisenberg, a brilliant young physicist who is also a Nobel laureate as is Bohr.

His training under Lewis at Berkeley and his experience in atomic physics under Bohr at Copenhagen gave him the fundamental background for his present work in the border-line field of physical chemistry. On returning from Copenhagen, he was elected to the chemistry staff of Johns Hopkins, and in 1929, he went to Columbia University where he is at present.

One of Dr. Urey's peculiar traits is that he seems to delight in doing the unorthodox thing in all his researches. He takes great delight in attempting problems which seem to point to negative results but which give promise of novelty. Early in 1931 he felt quite certain that there should be an isotope of hydrogen of mass two. This was indeed a conviction which most certainly seemed devoid of good common sense; because the spectrum of hydrogen had been most thoroughly studied by numerous investigators. By taking the most extraordinary precautions, Urey was favored by success and for the first time the isotope of hydrogen was actually revealed.

The heavy isotope of hydrogen is very important because it gives promise of completely revolutionizing the field of organic chemistry. Hydrogen is one of the most common elements in nature since it appears in water, as well as in all hydro-carbon compounds such as alcohol, ether, gasoline, coal, wood and all carbohydrates. The implications of this discovery are many and varied, but of course we are too near the source to see the results. It is, indeed, quite possible that in ten years this discovery of an Indiana boy may be considered one of the greatest of all time. From the standpoint of physics, his discovery is likely to lead to

82

other remarkable results; since this heavy hydrogen nucleus is now proposed as a projectile for bombarding atoms and thus bringing about the long sought transmutation of the elements as well as the production of neutrons. If and when we are thus able to transmute the elements at will, then indeed, will our great gold hoard in the hills of Kentucky become "just so much brass."

The first American medical worker to be recognized by the Nobel Commission was a young man who although not an American by birth or training did his work in the laboratories of the Rockefeller Foundation. Dr. Alexis Carrel who was awarded the prize in medicine in 1912 was born and educated in France. He came to this country to work in the University of Chicago in 1905 and shortly thereafter he became a member of the staff of the Rockefeller Institute under the direction of Dr. Simon Flexner. He became interested in transplantation of tissue, veins, and organs and was extremely successful in this respect. It became possible thereafter for surgeons to preserve healthy tissue, veins, and even organs from animals or persons killed by accident for an indefinite period to be used later when needed for transplantation in other bodies. During the year preceding the award, Dr. Carrel gave his attention to the preservation of life in cold storage. It had long been known that in cold-blooded animals, the heart might continue to beat long after the death of the animal, but it remained for Carrel to demonstrate that portions of the heart of warm-blooded animals could be kept alive for long periods if kept in cold storage. This discovery, of course, had many and varied implications which naturally attracted the attention of the scientific world, and the Nobel prize was a natural climax. Dr. Carrel was a comparatively young man when he received

the award and the $40,000 which he received was a great help in keeping his mind turned toward channels of pure scientific research; thus one of Nobel's aims was attained.

The second American scientist to receive the award in medicine was Dr. Karl Landsteiner who received the prize for 1930. Like Carrel, Landsteiner was European by birth and early training but American by adoption. His productive work, however, was done in America, and he is thus classified by the Commission as American.

Dr. Landsteiner's work for which he was awarded the prize began as early as 1900. At this time he succeeded in classifying the various human blood groups, and this pioneer work of his in the field of immunology is still the basis of all work in the field. Landsteiner has published over 150 papers, every one of which shows remarkable originality and versatility. In 1909, he was successful in transmitting poleomyelitis to monkeys; this being one of a series of experiments on diseases of the central nervous system now recognized as due to filterable agents. His latest contributions which came in 1929 have to do with certain serums which he was able to prepare and which came about due to his very thorough understanding of physics and chemistry. Dr. Landsteiner is a very thorough experimentalist and one who, though not spectacular in his productivity, is one whose influence will long be felt by his colleagues and indeed by all human kind.

The Nobel Medical Award in 1933 came to another American in the person of Dr. Thomas Hunt Morgan for his fundamental work in genetics. His work consisted primarily in a most exhaustive study of the common fruit fly; however Dr. Morgan has carried his research over many other fields and in

84

all his work he has played the part of an experimentalist of the first rank. His masterpiece of research on the analysis of Drosophila has carried his fame to the four corners of the earth, and it forms the basis of numerous studies in the field of heredity and genetics, the result of which will no doubt be far reaching.

Dr. Morgan is a scientist of world-wide reputation. He is at present director of the Biological Laboratories at the California Institute of Technology. He has served as president of the American Association for the Advancement of Science and was recently elected president of the International Congress of Genetics. He is the first native born American to be honored by the Nobel Commission for work in medical science.

America was a little late in getting started toward world recognition in medical science, but in the past few years, honors have been coming our way in abundance. In 1934, the Nobel prize in Medical Science was awarded to three American scientists, jointly in the persons of Drs. George Richards Minot, William Perry Murphy, and George Hoyt Whipple. These men were honored for their discoveries in the treatment of anemia. Their discoveries in the laboratory have led to the successful treatment of a disease which up to this time has been considered fatal to man.

Dr. Whipple, it was who suggested that pernicious anemia was a disease caused by the scarcity of material necessary for the construction of the stroma of the red blood cells. His pioneer work was with animals and he used extreme caution lest his conclusions might be too hastily applied to the problem of human anemia.

Dr. Minot and Dr. Morgan, working together, influenced by Whipple's work began treating patients with quantities of liver and liver extract.

F5

By carefully treating 45 patients, every one of them showed marked improvement and many of them were definitely cured. Thus a new method of treatment was effected which is destined to save the lives of thousands of people whose lot otherwise would be hopeless. The influence of the work of these three men will be felt in many fields of medicine in the future for their method of attack will likely lead to other discoveries in the treatment of diseases caused by a lack of some necessary element in the human mechanism.

Before leaving the American field of prize winners, it is fit that we mention a prize that came to two Canadians in 1922. Drs. F. G. Banting and J. J. R. McLeod of Canada were awarded the prize in medicine that year for their very notable contribution as regards insulin, the specific for diabetes. There is no doubt that the prize in this case was well merited for here again is another case in which we find thousands living today who would be hopelessly ill or indeed, dead were it not for this very remarkable specific remedy.

It would be manifestly impossible in a short paper to sketch in detail the many scientific contributions which have culminated in Nobel awards, but it is interesting to note how the awards have been distributed as regards nationality of the recipients. It will be remembered that it was the express purpose of Nobel that awards should be made without reference to nationality, and it appears that this wish has been carried out.

Up to and including 1934, there have been 88 prizes awarded in the sciences distributed as follows: Germany 28, England 13½, France 10½, United States 9½, Sweden 5½, Switzerland 3, Holland 5½, Denmark 4, Austria 3, Belgium 1, Italy 1, India 1, Russia 1, Spain ½, Canada 1.

From the foregoing figures, it appears that Germany is a well-recognized leader in the field of science with England, France, and America following in

86

succession. It appears also that America is gaining prominence since most of our prizes have come since the world war. Germany is slowing down somewhat, but she is still a leader in the field of science.

The capital sum of some five million dollars left by Alfred Nobel has already served a very worthy purpose, and in the years to come, it is destined to serve a still greater one. One can scarcely think of a more fitting memorial which any wealthy man might devise than the one which was hatched in the brain of this great manufacturer. If the net results of Nobel's genius were destructive in character while he was in active production, it is most certainly true that all the stigma which might be attached to such an accumulated fortune is being rapidly dissipated and Nobel is now thought of as one of the world's greatest benefactors. What a pity it is that he, himself, cannot come back for a short while to enjoy himself in the new role!

James F. Mackell
Dec. 2-1935

Paper #9.

# A PAGE FROM THE HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN INDIANA

## (The Seminaries and Academies)

Presented to the

TERRE HAUTE LITERARY CLUB

December 9, 1935

by

Harold E. Moore

# A PAGE FROM THE HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN INDIANA

## (The Seminaries and Academies)

## BIBLIOGRAPHY


Boone, Richard G. A HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN INDIANA

Wolfe, Thomas J. A HISTORY OF SULLIVAN COUNTY, INDIANA

Goodspeed Bros. & Co. Pub. HISTORY OF GREENE AND SULLIVAN COUNTIES, INDIANA

Smart, James H. SCHOOLS OF INDIANA

Woodburn, James A. HIGHER EDUCATION IN INDIANA

Thomas, John Hardin A Series of Articles in Vols. 10 and 11, INDIANA MAGAZINE OF HISTORY

Russell, Ronald B. EVOLUTION OF EDUCATION IN SULLIVAN COUNTY - An unpublished Master's Thesis at Indiana State Teachers College

Jamison, Olis G. THE DEVELOPMENT OF SECONDARY EDUCATION IN INDIANA PRIOR TO 1910 - An unpublished Doctor's Dissertation, Stanford University

Cotton, Fassett A. EDUCATION IN INDIANA

Morgan, Clarence - Material From an Unpublished Thesis, Indiana University, on the Ascension Seminary

Numerous Reports of the State Superintendent of Public Instruction were used.

Newspaper articles from the Sullivan, Indiana DEMOCRAT

When the makers of the Indiana Constitution in 1816 wrote, in complying with the spirit of the Ordinances of 1785 and 1787 and the Enabling Act, that "Knowledge and learning generally diffused through a community, being essential to the preservation of a free Government and spreading the opportunities and advantages of education through the various parts of the country being highly conducive to this end," and provided in Section 2 of the article dealing with education that "It shall be the duty of the General Assembly, as soon as circumstances will permit, to provide by law for a general system of education, ascending in a regular gradation from township schools to a State University, wherein tuition shall be gratis and equally open to all," they set for themselves and their posterity a task of such magnitude and difficulty of accomplishment that it has, after more than a century, become only partially fulfilled, if considered from the idealistic spirit of the whole article dealing with education.

Since the article has such a forward look, it deserves our attention for the moment because it has so much bearing on the further comments of this paper. The entire article is one of rare excellence, and suffers nothing in comparison with the later and more familiar paragraphs in the Constitution of 1851. Its provisions are worthy of the most critical

study. In the first place, it is noticeable that the basis of the free-schools idea was purely secular. "The preservation of a free Government" is made the sole ground for encouraging the diffusion of knowledge and learning, and spreading the opportunities and advantages of education through the State. Not only was the system to be a public one, but it was meant to be a State-controlled, centrally-administered organization. The sale of lands, the scope of the school, the provision of funds, the care of dependents, and the founding of libraries were recognized in the article as legitimate objects of the State's interest. The creation of a permanent fund, through the anticipated sales of congressional township lands, was provided for, and the principle of the State's obligation to the localities further confirmed.

As to the system, the plan was a generous one, comprising schools of every grade, from the township or neighborhood school through county seminaries, to and including the university; all articulated into a single enterprise, and was uniformly administered. It was, moreover, to be uniformly available. Greatly wanting as was the State's practice in subsequent years, Indiana was, in theory at least, saved from the blunder into which most other States fell at some time, in the establishment of "Pauper schools." Under the Constitution of 1816 the means and privileges of instruction were meant to be equally available to all. Further, it was intended that attendance upon the schools should be without charge. If it be remembered that this was the expression of a pioneer people fifty years before schools were

generally free in New England, much less in the West, in a country where life was a battle with the elements and luxuries were unknown, the greatness and liberality of the plan are emphasized. Other than free schools are the creation of other than free people only. But "all classes" with these early settlers meant or was made to include the defective and dependent classes as well. Homes, asylums, and schools for these were then almost unknown in all this land; but with wise forethought the care of them--more than that, their education--was made an interest of the State, and in time, under its provisions, such schools were established. Finally, let it be noted that the State's responsibility included not learning in the arts and sciences alone, but extended to intelligently directed industries, and the promotion of "humanity, honesty, and morality." It was the Ordinance of 1787, dominated by the educational theories of Thomas Jefferson, our first real proponent of free schools, translated into the democratic concept possible only by a free people in a new country with a bright hope for the future, who perhaps builded better than they knew.

Says Richard G. Boone in discussing this Constitutional provision, "Previous to Indiana, no State had, in its constitution, declared for a graduated system of schools extending from the district schools to the university equally open to all on the basis of gratuitous instruction." (Boone, p. 15.)

Leaving the general provision of the Constitution, may we concern ourselves with Section 3 of Article IX, dealing with education, which provided the constitutional basis for the es-

tablishment of the academies and seminaries under the first constitution. "Sec. 3. And, for the promotion of such salutary end, the money which shall be paid as an equivalent by persons exempt from militia duty, except in times of war, shall be exclusively and in equal proportion applied to the support of county seminaries; also, all fines assessed for any breach of the penal laws shall be applied to said seminaries in the counties wherein they shall be assessed."

Complying with the constitutional mandate, the second General Assembly meeting in 1818 passed what is known as the Seminary Law. In accordance with its provisions, the Governor of the State was empowered to appoint in each county a "trustee of seminary funds," whose duty it should be "to call at once upon, and receive from the county treasurer, and such other persons as have, or by law ought to have, funds in his or their hands belonging properly to the county for the use of a public seminary therein, and place to the credit of said seminary."

The money was for many years loaned to citizens of the county, but in 1831 it was provided by the Legislature that the trustee might, at his discretion, loan to the county commissioners instead, the term being limited to three years. The trustee was himself allowed a six-per-cent commission on all moneys handled. Fourteen years later, when the wealth of the state had greatly augmented and the labor of the office increased, though the seminary funds remained wholly inadequate, the fee allowance was reduced to three per cent.

It was further ordered, in the Act of 1818, that trustees

"should annually, within the first twelve days of the session of the General Assembly, transmit to the Speaker of the House of Representatives a certified list of all moneys by them received." Subsequently (1822) the report was made to the boards of county commissioners, in their respective counties, and thence forwarded to the House of Representatives; but neither under these laws, nor any other for the next thirty years, was information had, either official or unofficial, that discovered the actual condition of the seminaries or their funds. The State's legislators either had no authority, or, having it, failed to excerise it; the funds were loosely managed, the law concerning fines was evaded or ignored, few reports were made and fewer yet audited, so as to be trustworthy, and in 1842 the Governor was forced to admit that there was no satisfactory information of either the amount or the management of the seminary funds, both of which it was a part of their duty to know.

The next legislation of importance was "An act relative to county seminaries," approved January 31, 1824, and was designed to realize the provisions of the law of 1818. Funds had been accumulating for six years--at least, it was supposed to be so, and was true theoretically. But there were no seminaries.

It was provided that when the available funds should amount to $400 (later made $500) the commissioners in each county, or, after his appointment, the seminary trustee, should proceed to the erection of a building. The lot was sometimes donated by an individual citizen, public-spirited and far-seeing, or provided by the subscriptions of labor or materials

or money, or all of them. The state's contribution to education for many years was never more than a nucleus about which gathered generous, self-denying, public-spirited, individual effort.

The houses were generally substantial two-story structures, well built (many of them remaining to the present day), with three or four rooms, and, for the time and conditions, conveniently arranged. They were the educational centers of the county, about which gathered all enterprises, and from whose frequent meetings originated most movements looking to the general social, intellectual, and industrial advancement of the community. The building was held by legislative decree (Act of January 31, 1824, thereafter called the "General Law concerning county seminaries") to be a "common seminary of learning, and equally free and open to all the citizens of the county for the purposes of education." But here were held also, as sometimes indeed at the present day, the religious meetings of the neighborhood, public speaking on social and political questions, lyceums and debates, Sabbath schools, chance conventions, etc., and in not a few of the newer counties sessions of the court regularly.

Upon the completion of a building, and in the movement to open a school, a board of trustees was generally provided to succeed the one trustee of the seminary funds, and to have general direction of the school. The numbers varied from five in most counties to as many as fifteen. The law originally provided that the choice of the trustees should be by election of the householders, but that in case of failure to elect, the county commissioners should appoint. Usually, however, in the act of incorporation under the general law, members of the first board were named

by the legislature. They were frequently appointed by the circuit courts, and occasionally by the county officers. Boards once more were often self-perpetuating, though regularly vacancies were filled by the commissioners in most counties. The management, it will be seen, was very irregular and various, the policy being wholly dictated by local preference and convenience.

The financial condition of the seminaries was never such as either to command confidence or to assure prosperity. There was perhaps no instance in the state where such school was self-supporting, or meant to be. All were dependent upon tuition fees. That the seminary should be "equally free and open to all the citizens of the county" only meant, at best, uniformity of charges, not immunity from them. Neither individuals nor classes should be specially favored or discriminated against. Still, there were certain recognized sources of revenue, as enumerated in the Constitution, confirmed by the laws of 1818 and 1824, and supplemented in a trifling way by subsequent legislation; but they were both few and unprofitable, not to say uncertain. The supplemental act was in 1838 (See Revised Statutes, 1843, chap. XXXIV, pp. 593-594), and provided for the recovery of money lost in gaming contracts. In case the party losing did not within six months' time prosecute for the amount, it "should be lawful for any other person or persons to sue for and recover the same for the benefit of the family or next of kin;...and in case there shall be no such family or kindred, then for the benefit of the county seminary." The several contingencies left little for the schools. The aggregate proceeds from all available sources, it has already been suggested, were small, rarely sufficient even to erect a

house, much less to meet the tuition and incidental expenses of the school.

The "conscience money," as the exemption payments came to be called, was but one dollar for each annual failure to perform militia duty, and was never large, though in certain sections of the state very common. The state treasurer, Samuel Merrill, in his report to the legislature in 1825, mentioned returns of fines assessed by eight regiments as $332.50, of which sum but $7.00 had been paid. At the same time judgment was reported against the former treasurer for $1,150 of such funds; notwithstanding all of which, however, the total amount actually paid into the state treasury by the several regimental paymasters from 1825 to 1841 was but $634.65. Insignificant as the proceeds were, a special act of February 2, 1833, provided that they might be paid to the school commissioner of the county, and applied to the common schools, instead of into the seminary fund, if the individual making the payment so preferred. It is claimed that after 1840 most exemption monies were so diverted from the seminaries (which were sometimes regarded as "aristocratic institutions") to the township schools.

Fines assessed for breaches of the peace were sufficiently numerous then as now, and might have been made a fruitful source of revenue; but having once been assessed by the local authorities, they were either not paid to or claimed by seminaries, or they were remitted by the governor; and what might have been a source of wealth to the seminaries made, in fact, but insignificant contributions.

Of the third class of funds, it is enough to say it was a

provision chiefly on paper. Either suit was not pressed for lack of interested parties, or the money recovered went to the claimants as "next of kin." The county seminary's claim rested upon so many contingencies that nothing came of the provision. At no time does there appear official record of any funds derived from this source.

The annual exhibit of the state treasurer (1845), acting as Superintendent of Common Schools, showed the aggregate seminary funds in fifty-nine counties to be $40,687.87, and the value of buildings and grounds, $50,617.47; or an average seminary fund of $690 to each county, and an average investment of about $850 in buildings; or, assuming the same ratio to hold throughout the other twenty-nine counties in the state, a total seminary property of something less than $150,000. As early as 1825 the seminary fund in Dearborn County amounted to $700; in 1835 Monroe County reported $2000, and Morgan County a like amount, the latter showing an annual income in 1849 of $410.93. But these were exceptional instances. Of the twenty-two counties reporting to the legislature in 1825, eight accounted for less than $50 each, and but seven for more than $200.

Seeing all of which, it is not difficult to understand that the fees of students must have been the principal source of revenue. No schools were endowed, and none were free. The legislature of 1829 had enacted that, "after erecting sufficient buildings, and furnishing the same, the trustees, should, if thought necessary, appropriate such funds (as provided by the Constitution) to the payment of teachers and for necessary assistance, so as to reduce the price of tuition, and, if

practicable, make the same a free school." Some such vision of a state or public supported school may have been had by the legislators or by an occasional board of seminary trustees, but the ideal was illusive. Nowhere were schools free, even in the older East. It could scarcely be expected of the pioneer West, even in elementary education, much less among secondary schools, such as the county seminary was meant to be.

Speaking in general terms: A house having been provided, a teacher was sought for who would take charge of the school, receive and account for the public funds, collect tuition from students, assist or cooperate with the trustees in advertising the school, employ all needed assistance, and be satisfied in making what he could. The enterprise was not always a paying one; indeed, the profits were usually small--out of proportion to the efficient and, for the time, scholarly service and exemplary lives of many of the teachers, both principals and assistants, who managed the schools in the years just prior to and following 1850. Sometimes the principal was hired for the total tuition--the trustees, or their agent, making the collection. Occasionally a contract specified a fixed salary. In any case the pay was inconsiderable, although it is known that the Rev. Lucius Allen, principal of the Aurora Seminary, received $300 a year at a time when the principal of Indiana Seminary at Bloomington was thought to be sufficiently remunerated with $250.

The organization of the old seminary was a good example of the undifferentiated academy. It was emphatically a mixed school, of all grades, from the infant classes (frequently in

cluding children five, and even four years old) through the higher elementary and secondary forms, fitting for professional schools or classical studies in the State University. Pupils ranged from four to thirty years of age. In those sections of the state where the township schools flourished, the seminary was a high-grade classical and fitting school, and the younger pupils were excluded. For most counties, however, the seminary provided both elementary and secondary instruction.

The school year was thirty-six to forty weeks, variously divided, now into two terms--May to September, and November to March--and again into three or four terms, the latter perhaps being most common, each term consisting of ten weeks. The patronage of each school was, of course, chiefly in the immediate locality. It was a county institution; its constituents were specified, and their rights guaranteed. The privileges of the seminary being by law equally open to all within the county, they were also, by act of the trustees, made available, and usually on the same terms, to residents of other counties. Indeed, a few seminaries--as those at Salem, Logansport, Winchester, Muncie, Centreville, and New Castle, drew from territories comprising several counties, and even from adjoining states. In one year, under Mr. Ferris's principalship, six counties were represented in the Randolph County Seminary, and the states of Ohio, North Carolina, and Mississippi besides.

The seminaries of Washington, Clark, Dearborn, Knox, and others along the southern border drew students from Kentucky and other southern states. It is claimed that during Morrison's administration the Salem Seminary was more or less patronized by one third of the organized counties of the state.

The first county seminary was established in Union County, February 7, 1825. The object of the school was to serve the needs of advanced pupils and to prepare students for college. This first seminary was by special charter, but a general law was passed in 1831 which provided for a seminary in each county. The total exact number of county seminaries which were really established is difficult to determine. Many of them had a short existence, and no catalogues have been left to show what they accomplished. Boone reports that in all there were 53 county seminaries in Indiana between the years 1816-1850. In listing them he lists Vigo County as having established one in 1827, Sullivan County in the same year, Parke County in 1836, Clay in 1837; Vermillion County did not have one, according to this list.

Conditions in Indiana were more favorable toward the establishment of private schools than public ones, so more private and parochial institutions came into existence than public ones. Boone lists 73 private academies and seminaries established in Indiana between 1816-1850. These institutions have been classified by Thomas as follows: (a) non-sectarian, organized by individuals for either philanthropic or business reasons (b) sectarian, religious groups forming them were Presbyterians, Friends, Methodists, Baptists, Christians, United Brethren, Mennonites, and Catholics. Thomas adds that there are a large number that do not fall under either of these heads, nor were they public. He calls them unclassified, which indicates a lack of information about them.

The organization and offering of these institutions, both public and private, were simple when compared to the highly

organized systems of the present, and yet when one examines this history, he is impressed with their earnestness and rather advanced ideas, since they were much more liberal than were their sister institutions, the private schools of the east.

Generally speaking, these schools were secondary in nature, although some reached lower and a few above what we ordinarily consider secondary offerings. Very little effort was made to classify students, and one is impressed that students must have had a real desire to learn if they made progress under the difficulties that were apparent--in fact, one concludes that the definition of a college as "Mark Hopkins on one end of a log and a boy on the other," must have been applicable in almost a literal sense in many of these institutions.

The enrollment varied greatly, as might be expected, in different counties, and in the same county at various times and under different principals; the more prosperous, including those named and a few others, registering each term from one to two hundred. In Randolph County an interesting regulation is preserved to us in the by-laws adopted by the trustees (1842) to the effect that, in the event of over-crowding in the school, "each congressional township in the county should be entitled to scholars in proportion to the number of qualified voters in the township," the overplus being always taken from the younger members of the school. It need scarcely be said that such excess of pupils was rare.

The curriculum, along with many minor differences, was yet fairly uniform throughout the state, just as, and for the like reason in the same period, there were few and unimportant disagreements among college or university courses. Education generally was prescriptive and dogmatic. It has been mentioned that the seminary was

only imperfectly graded. Neither old catalogues, nor the fragmentary courses that remain, show any organized effort to classify students according to their attainments except in the rudest way. Subjects were rarely coordinated into "courses." Each studied what he chose. Nevertheless, in most schools there may be recognized a few fairly well-established classes or grades, the germ of the later systematic schooling.

One manual, prepared by Prof. E. P. Cole, for some years principal of the Randolph County Seminary, exhibits a somewhat more careful plan, that, while different in form, was typical in spirit of most others. It included (1) the "seminary class," in which were taught orthography, reading, writing, and the first lessons in arithmetic; (2) the "junior class," comprising, besides advanced work in the above, rhetoric, speaking, writing "in various hands," arithmetic "in a manner to insure practical utility," modern geography, history, and English grammar and composition, and (3) the "senior class" with ancient and modern geography, history, natural philosophy, chemistry, astronomy, geometry, algebra, mental and moral philosophy, Latin, and sometimes Greek (for a number of years prior to 1850 the Delaware County Seminary, under Mr. Ferris, maintained three classes of Greek along with four of Latin) and French.

The secondary work proper covered from three to four years, Latin and mathematics being continued throughout the course, and Greek and French for a shorter period. The amounts of history, literature, and science were really very small. Music appeared in almost every course, both vocal and instrumental, extra charges being made for it, however. Even drawing, painting, and shorthand

appeared in some of them. The texts used were standard, and, to present judgment, seem to have been well chosen. They included Olney's Geographies, and sometimes Mitchell's; Walker's and Webster's Dictionaries, Davies's algebra, Haile's History of the United States, Bronson's Elocution, Ray's Arithmetic, or Day and Thompson's, Parker's Aids to English Composition, and Smith's or Well's English Grammar. References for the subjects enumerated were few; with only an occasional library, there were no laboratories. The study of Nature at first hand had as yet, and particularly in Indiana, received but little tangible encouragement; schooling was centered in the mastery of books. The languages (especially the classics) and mathematics "formed" the course. Other branches were incidental. Rhetoric, composition, debates, declamation, the dictionary, were much exalted, but were, after all, regarded rather as the common and efficient means at hand toward a practical preparation for civic and general public duties. The man of influence, then as now, was the master of argument and rhetoric; then more than now through direct and personal contact. The seminary lyceum of a hundred years ago was a training ground of the citizen, and a school of state-craft. The schools of today may be better organized and more uniform, and more generally accessible, but from no school or system of schools has been taught a truer patriotism, more generous living, or safer habits than in some of these old seminaries.

This was the practical aspect of the course. In every other respect the training of the seminary was "liberal" both as to subject matter and method. Its aim was clearly disciplinary and humanistic; closely allied in scope and spirit with the old English and

early New England academies, after which it was broadly patterned, and the first American colleges. When complete in its organization and efficiently administered, it was a veritable college in the clearing. Too often it was only a pretense. Alongside of principals and teachers whose service would do honor to the people of any age as masters of learning and examples to youth were ignoramuses and mountebanks. Among the principals of the schools, however, were men of liberal culture and large influence.

The seminary of Washington County, for nine years under the principalship of John I Morrison, was perhaps one of the best and best known of these schools. It was opened at Salem in 1826 by Mr. Morrison, then a young man of twenty years, recently arrived from Franklin County, Pennsylvania; a large-hearted man of scholarly habits, possessed of mental balance and sound intentions; democratic enough to reach the majority, but withal so familiar with the peculiar and exclusive privileges that belong to a deep and persistent spiritual culture as to attract the few most ambitions youth.

Students came to Salem, not alone from Washington and adjoining counties, but from distant parts of the state and from neighboring states. The principal became known, and while the school was not the largest in the state, its reputation for thoroughness, for a far-seeing, practical preparation for business, and the intelligent fitting for higher studies, drew a superior class of mature, thoughtful, earnest students.

The extent of the wholesome influence of Morrison at Salem has never been told; perhaps can not be. Among his pupils here during the decade about 1830 were John S. Campbell, Barnabas C. Hobbs, James G. May, Z. B. Sturges, W. C. DePauw, Elijah Newland,

Thomas J. Rodman, and Nathan Kimball. These are only names from the better known. Many of his pupils became teachers--indeed, not a few entered with that purpose.

Every influence of the institution and the man was vitalizing and elevating. Mr. Morrison was personally an initial factor or a leading spirit in a series of social movements that made Salem for many years a kind of intellectual Mecca--a center of learning and civic discussion, and public enterprise and social improvement of the state, sharing this house with New Harmony.

His more capable students became at times his assistants, and later principals or assistants in other county or private seminaries and academies, or filled chairs in colleges. Campbell entered Wabash in 1844 fresh from the Washington County Seminary, graduated in 1848, becoming successively tutor, principal, and professor in the institution. Hobbs left Salem for Cincinnati College in 1837, and studied under McGuffey, Mitchel, and Mansfield, becoming later professor in the Earlham School and first president of the college, and Superintendent of Public Instruction. Sturges entered Hanover, and, upon graduating in 1842, opened a classical school in Charlestown, Clark County, which for a score of years represented the best standards of current humanistic culture.

Such are a few only of the many instances that might be cited of the far-reaching touch of the Salem School. In seminary and college, in public office and social life, in science and culture, wherever generous sentiment and philanthropic interest were needed, for fifty years might be found men who gratefully acknowledged their indebtedness for both learning and inspiration

to the Salem teacher--the Hoosier Arnold--John I. Morrison.

Many of the seminaries ended their existence with the coming of the new Constitution in 1851; especially was this true of the county ones, since a realignment of funds changed their setup. Others continued their existence until about Civil War times, after which began the development of the public high schools in Indiana. In fact, by 1870 there were in existence some 36 public high schools, Terre Haute having established one in 1863.

The seminaries, while they had been ineffectual in many ways, had served in this trying period, according to James H. Smart, one time state superintendent, "to fill the space between and furnish a preparatory course for the University." They were good in theory, but did not succeed in practice, the greatest problem being the lack of leadership. James Albert Woodburn in his HIGHER EDUCATION IN INDIANA, said, "The success which any seminary achieved depended almost entirely upon the principal who was placed at its head and who became its faculty and directing energy," and "In this day they served an excellent, we may say even, indispensable, purpose. They raised the educational standard of the state; they educated the teachers; they brought the advantages of education within the reach of a majority of the people and in demonstrating the great benefits there from which they made possible the movement for universal schools."

As a further contribution, many of the seminaries grew into the present colleges of today. Our state university, Hanover, Franklin, Wabash, several Catholic colleges, and other sectarian schools owe their origin to the seminaries.

If a personal observation is permissable, I should like to add

that it has been my privilege to have visited the modern schools in most of the communities listed as having had seminaries during the first half century of our statehood, and I believe that they are evidences to this day of the early existence of these educational institutions, extraordinary community pride and interest in education in many instances being noticeable. This reflects itself in the type of educational program provided in some communities as a somewhat more classical type of program than is usually apparent.

The period of academies and seminaries, of course, divides itself into two periods, the first, the one before 1851, or before the establishment of the second constitution, in which public state support was removed, and the second, all of these established after that date, which were either private or parochial. Jamison, in his study, lists 39 private institutions established after 1851; 20 where the type of control is not known, and one that was public, probably being supported by some community willing to tax itself for its support.

As an illustration of those which were established during the second period, may I take as an example our neighboring county of Sullivan, where several were established after 1851. Academies were established at New Lebanon in 1853; Merom in 1857; and the Sullivan Female Academy in 1856. The one which became the best known was the Ascension Seminary at Farmersburg, established there by William T. Crawford in the early '50's. The institution was a success from the start, attracting state-wide attention, to which students came from all parts of the state. Crawford's work attracted such wide attention that Hon. Murray Briggs, who was superintendent of instruction in the county and editor of the Sullivan DEMOCRAT asked all

teachers in the county to close their schools and go visit this one at Farmersburg. Almost at once the institution lost its original purpose to train on a secondary level, and became a teacher training institution, doing the first Normal work in the state of Indiana. Crawford had an outstanding personality, and undoubtedly great ability as a teacher, since he seemed to inspire those with whom he came in contact. I have personally talked to a number of his old students, and they are universal in reciting his praises. His school grew until it was necessary to provide suitable quarters, and just before the outbreak of the Civil War, a building was begun. This building still stands and is in use in Farmersburg, although it was moved from its original location when the public school was built. Soon after the outbreak of the War, Crawford raised a company of men and went off to the Front. His military service gave him the title of Captain, and "Cap" Crawford was an outstanding personality in Sullivan County for many years. He conducted his school at Farmersburg until 1872, when he moved to Sullivan with a number of his teachers to the new public school in Sullivan. The following catalog announcement of the school at Farmersburg illustrates its nature better than I can describe it, except that it does not carry with it the fire that was present in the personality of its principal.

ASCENSION SEMINARY

at

Farmersburg, Indiana

Fifteen miles south of Terre Haute, on the Evansville and Crawfordsville Rail Road.

CALENDAR

SPRING TERM will begin, Monday, March 29th, 1869. Close June 17th, 1869. Length of term, 12 weeks.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

FALL TERM will begin, Monday, August 16th, 1869. Close the 4th and 5th of November.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

WINTER TERM will begin, Monday, November 16th, 1869. Close March 5th and 6th, 1870.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

SPRING TERM will begin, Monday, March 16th, 1870. Close June 4th and 5th.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

CIRCULAR

Special attention of Parents and Guardians, is called to this Seminary of Learning.

The success of those who have been educated in this Institution will speak more for it than any circular we can distribute among you. Over eighty students have been thoroughly qualified for teaching in this Institution during the past three years. Many having commenced here with a limited education, have received FIRST CLASS CERTIFICATES; after attending two consecutive terms.

The DEMAND for teachers from this Institution, exceeds the supply, and at the highest wages per month.

Parents desiring their SONS AND DAUGHTERS to receive a THOROUGH practical education will do well to visit this Institution before sending elsewhere.

## MORALS OF THE PLACE

NO DRINKING Saloons or places of allurement, to entice the student from his books, are to be found here.

Lectures will be given each term, by the Principal Wm. T. Crawford, on the Theory and Practice of Teaching.

## MUSIC

ONE LESSON IN Vocal Music will be given each week, by Prof. D. M. Shoemaker.

Lectures on Physiology will be given each term, by Prof. G. W. Finney.

## PENMANSHIP

One night lesson in Penmanship will be given each week, by Prof. William T. Crawford.

## ACCOMMODATIONS

Boarding with private families--room and lights for studying, can be had at from $3.00 to $3.50 per week. Rooms for self Boarding at from $2.50 to $3.00 per month.

## TUITION

| | |
|---|---|
| SIXTY DAYS TERM . . . . . | $6.00 |
| Eighty Days Term . . . . . | 8.00 |

One half payable in advance and the remainder at the close of the term. No deductions will be made, only in cases of protracted sickness. Twenty-two lessons will be given on the Piano, Melodeon or Organ, for $10.00, to all wishing to receive instructions in this department.

## REGULATIONS

Young ladies or gentlemen expel themselves from this Institution by keeping company with the opposite sex, or becoming intoxicated.
Hours of recreation are from 7½ A. M. till 8½ A. M. From 12 A. M. till 1 P. M. From 4½ P. M. till 7 P. M.
Students who cannot comply with these regulations, are requested not to come. Those wishing to attend, please make their arrangements in due time, as these schools are always crowded.
Text books in the teachers Department, are those adopted by the Board of Education, for this State.
For further information, inquire of
Wm. T. Crawford, Principal

To fully evaluate the work of Crawford is difficult, but it can be safely said that his work certainly moved along to a conclusion the movement in Indiana to establish a Normal training institution, which came by law in 1865, and which opened its doors here in 1870. Crawford's friend and admirer, Murray Briggs, who was for 43 years editor of the Sullivan DEMOCRAT is credited by many as being responsible, along with some graduates of the Ascension Seminary, for the location of the Indiana State Normal School at Terre Haute. Murray Briggs was for many years a trustee of the Indiana State Normal School, demonstrating his interest in the training of teachers.

A further influence in Crawford's life has undoubtedly been in inspiring in the citizens in the little town of Farmersburg a lasting interest in education, and to go a step further, to probably influence large numbers of young people to enter the teaching profession. A much larger than normal percent of young people have entered the teaching profession from this community than from the average in our state.

The seminaries and academies of the last century have passed away, the public ones at their peak only enrolling however, something over 1100 students, but they furnished the only secondary education for many years for the new state, and educated its leaders in such a way as to have performed a useful service. Best of all, they planted the seeds that have shown the way to a system of public schools in Indiana, enrolling about three fourths million children, of which about 175,000 are of a secondary level, which to a large extent fulfills the charge of our first

and second Constitutions, to provide a school system that "ascends in regular gradation from township schools to a State University, wherein tuition shall be gratis, and equally open to all."

Paper #12.

# GLACIER NATIONAL PARK

Read by

Guy Stantz

to the

Literary Club

of

Terre Haute, Indiana

January 13, 1936

# GLACIER NATIONAL PARK

Last year I wrote a paper endeavoring to describe a few of the many interesting and beautiful natural features of Indiana. The people of Indiana should realize that they have a beautiful state. Our own United States is a beautiful country. Some time ago the Lake Louise region in Canada was discussed in this club and rated very highly in respect to natural beauty. The Canadian Pacific Railroad and the promoters of Canada admit that Lake Louise is the most beautiful scene in the world. During the past summer I had the privilege of visiting both the Lake Louise and Glacier Park regions. Lake Louise is beautiful, probably as beautiful as anything in Glacier Park but certainly not more beautiful. The mountains in Glacier Park and the Canadian Rockies are very similar. I drove between the mountain ranges on the west side of the continental divide from Yellowstone National Park to the Lake Louise Region. There are so many beautiful scenes of varied types that it is probably impossible to make a measuring stick which way be used to evaluate the comparative beauty of places. I believe that most of us can spend all the combined leisure time and money at our disposal and still have seen very little of the United states of America.

Glacier National Park is located in the northwestern corner of the state of Montana. Little was known of this region until near the close of the last century. After the Great Northern Railway was built along its southern border in 1691, a few people

became conscious of the natural wonder and beauty to be found there. About this time and later, George Bird Grinnell made many trips to this region. In 1901 he published an article in the Century Magazine calling attention to the exceptional granduer and beauty of this territory and made a plea that it be preserved in its natural state for the recreation of the generations to come and as a permanent sanctuary for wild life. On May 11, 1910, President Taft signed a bill creating Glacier National Park. Major W. R. Logan was appointed its first superintendent.

Glacier National Park contains 981,681 acres or 1,534 square miles of the finest mountain scenery in America. The Rocky Mountains of Glacier National Park reproduce the stiring profile of the Canadian Rockies farther north with a more profuse use of color. I have read and heard world travelers say that nowhere, save to some extent in the Swiss Alps, are there lakes of such variety and charm. Glacier National Park is the land of shining mountains, ancient glaciers, emerald lakes, huge forests, brilliant flowers, and singing streams. The United States Government describes it in thirty words as follows: "Rugged Mountain region of unsurpassed alpine character, 250 glacier-fed lakes of romantic beauty; 60 small glaciers; precipices thousands of feet deep; sensational scenery of marked individuality; fine trout fishing."

Come with me and I will show you some of the park. First of all let us look at the map of the park. You will note that a highway extends along the eastern, southern, and western sides of the

park. These are very good roads and were built in a way that the most interesting and typical parts may be seen. From the highway on the eastern border there are four roads leading off to the west into the park. Three of these roads are spurs, one goes along St. Mary's Lake, upward toward Going-to-the-Sun Mountain, over Logan Pass, then down the other side of the Continental divide along McDonald Creek, past McDonald Lake, joining the highway that borders the west side of the park.

In order to really visualize the park one should know a little of its topography. From the map you will note that there are two parallel mountain ranges. The eastern, or front range, extends from the Canadian boundary, through the park, and across the United States into Mexico. The Western, or Livingstone Range, rises at the head of Lake McDonald and extends northward through the park, across Canada to Alaska. Between these two ranges in the center of the park is a broad swell which carries the Continental divide from one range to the other. This is Flattop Mountain. Note that the Continental divide is crossed by the highways at Marias Pass on the south boundary and at Logan Pass on the Going-to-the-Sun Highway. Near the spur highway at Cutbank is Triple Divide Peak, so named because it parts its waters between the three oceans which surround North America, i.e., its drainage is through the Missouri-Mississippi system to the Gulf of Mexico (Atlantic), through the Saskatchewan system to Hudson Bay (Artic,), and through the Columbia system to the Pacific. Special features will be called to

your attention on some of the trips through the park.

The geology of Glacier National Park is especially interesting. It contains one of the greatest geological phenomena in the world which is known as the "Lewis Overthrust Fault." During the ages when the earth's crust was folding, instead of folding very much at this place it broke and a layer nearly 30,000 feet in thickness was thrust upward and northeastward from 15 to 30 miles. This made a greatly elevated region. The older rocks of the region were lifted on top of the younger rockes, ancient limestone rests on shale millions of years younger.

During the ages while this region was being uplifted and faulted, the streams were continually at w rk. The sand and rocks being carried by the water slowly wore the solid rock away. As time went on, the water cut farther and farther down and back into the mass until it was no longer a plateau but a region of deep valleys, ridges, and peaks. During this period the temperature was lowered, heavy snows fell, and large ice fields formed. I refer to the period known as the Glacial Age. These glaciers dug out the valleys in U-shape. Finnally the glaciers began to melt and today their surviving remnants cling to the highest peaks, and the valleys are occupied by lakes and streams.

We will now start on our journey. We are approaching the park from the east. It is a clear day. Approaching these mountains is a delightful experience. They become visible to us when about 60 miles away. Across the prairie the road swings westward, cutting

across the gently rolling hills which seem to be undulations of the spent waves of the great sea of mountains to the westward. The long line of Rockies is a blue dream along the western sky. The eternal snows glittering on their crests are scarcely distinguished from the clouds. The road runs fenceless across the open prairie, once the home of the Indian and the bullalo. The white-capped waves appear higher and higher as we approach the top of each undualtion only to sink lower and lower again behind the next row of hills as we go down the other side. Little by little the mountains grow nearer, the valleys deepen, the foreground becomes park-like, dotted with clumps of willows; rocky out-thrusts, break through the rounded slopes. The road crosses a hurrying little river and a smiling mountain valley, carpeted with grassy meadows and cradling a small lake, opens to the westward. In another moment we pass from prairie land to mountain land, although so wide here is the outer door of the range that we are hardly conscious of having entered in. The valley narrows rapidly until the road is a shelf cut near the base of a mountain along Swiftcurrent Creek. Here we come to the park entrance. The gatekeeper permits us to go on after we have paid two dollars for the privilege of driving our car while in the park. Seven or eight miles further on, we arrive at the Many Glacier Hotel. We did not stop there but drove on about a mile to the tourist cabin camp where we secured a cabin. The manager of the camp was born in Indiana near Mansfield. He serves as a professor in one of the Montana schools during the school year.

This center is called Many Glacier Region because there are many glaciers that can be seen and reached from this point.

Here Swiftcurrant valley widens. Swiftcurrent Lake, about one mile in diameter, fills the center of the valley, and is fed by two streams, one from the west, another from the southwest. Mount Grinnell divides the two tributary valleys with its almost vertical walls which rise from the southwestern shore of Swiftcurrent Lake. Many Glacier Hotel, the largest in the park, is located on the eastern shore of Swiftcurrent Lake. Ma y Glacier center is the hub of points of interest which is unsurpassed by any other center in the park. From it, branch many deep and interesting glacial valleys. Numerous peaks loom from every side, their uppermost slopes glistening with eternal snow and ice, and their feet banked on everyside with evergreen. Chains of lakes, rushing streams, and tumbling waterfalls fill in the valleys. The beauties of famed Lake Louise are repeated many times in this valley.

Let us take a hike up the valley that goes to the southwest of this center. Just before we start up the valley which apparently ends in a vertical wall, the guide points out a large area of ice and snow at the foot of this wall, which he tells us is Grinnell Glacier--our destination. This looks to be only two or three miles away, but we are informed that it is about eight or nine miles. In order to save time and strength a boat takes us across Swiftcurrent Lake. Arriving at the southwestern shore we leave the boat and cross a short portage, which is apparently a moraine. This leads to another beautiful lake named Josephine. Here another boat awaits us

to take us across. We hike up the gradual ascent through a magnificent forest to Grinnell Lake. Then appears that stupendous vista across the grey-green lake to the huge cliffs at its other end, over which tumbles a cascade from the Glacier overhanging on the cliffs above the lake. How near it seemed, and yet how far away, as we climb the switchbacks along the fact of Grinnell Mountain. But the hardships of the climb are forgotten when we reach our goal, Grinnell Glacier. Had ther been no glacier to see, the trip would have been worth our while. Looking back down the valley, a marvelous view was spread before us. The valley, including the three lakes and the hotel could be seen at one glance.

I wish to describe another hike that I took alone in this region. No one seemed to wish to go on this trip at the same time I did. I was told that the trail was easy to follow. Horses were available, but I chose to hike for three reasons, namely; hiking is cheaper, riding makes me so sore I am miserable for two or three days, and, finally, I like to hike. There is something about hiking that generates a feeling of well being. It may be the feel of the earth underfoot. It may be smell of the woods, the faint aroma of wild flowers, the pungent tang of the soil after rain or melting snow. It may be the physical joy of breathing deeply of revitalizing air, and the muscular tythm of walking. Perhaps it is the opportunity of studying the beauties of nature as in a slow moving picture, but whatever it is; I like to hike.

I got up early this moring and started up the valley leading westward of Swiftcurrent Lake. I wished to see Iceburg Lake which lay six miles up the valley. Shortly after leaving Swiftcurrent

Lake, the valley narrowed again to a canyon, bounded on the north by Mount Altyn and on the south by Mount Grinnell. As the stream in the canyon was very swift and had numerous cascades and falls it was necessary to have the trail above the walls of the canyon on the side of Mount Altyn. About two miles up the valley, the trail leading to Iceberg Lake left the main valley and followed a valley that led to the northwest. The divide between the two valleys was made by Mount Wilbur whose sides were almost perpindicular and rising to a height of about 9,000 feet. The first four miles were through virgin forests, chiefly lodgepole pine and spruce. There were many very large trees in the forest. But as I went higher and higher, the trees became smaller and smaller in size and fewer in number until at the end of the trail there were no trees, just a few trailing junipers which were only a few inches high. There were many flowers along the trail. In the lower altitudes, the mountain meadows were brilliant with multi-hued bloom. Among these were the bear grass, shooting star, bur forget-me-not, geraniums, paintbrush, gaillardias, mertensia, horsemint and arnica. The character and species changed several times on the way up. Near the top, only the forget-me-nots, blue alpine columbine, carpet pink and a few others grew. The highest flowers were the glacier lilies which sometimes melt their way through the snow. (The Glacier lily is similar to the tiger-tooth lily that grows in Indiana.)

This trip was very interesting in many ways. Through every opening in the trees was a new and different and beautiful view. Around every turn was discovered ever-changing landscapes. The

streams that crossed the trail were very interesting. One of them, Ptarmigan Creek, formed several waterfall as it came down the mountain side. One of the falls was 50 or 60 feet high. There were innumerable waterfalls in these lateral streams and in the main streams below. There was scarcely a moment in the whole trip when one could not hear water falls and manyy could be seen.

Anticipation ran high as I neared Iceberg Lake. I was not disapointed when I reached it. It nestles under the cliffs of Pinacle Wall and there juts into it a small glacier, from which ice cakes and small bergs break and float off into the lake. The lake lies in the cirque of an old glacier. The almost perpendicular sides of the cirque encircle about three-fourths of the area. The jagged top of this wall is the continental divide between the Pacific and Artic Oceans. To me this was a very impressive occasion. Here was I the only actor on the stage of this huge, age-old amphitheater. The only sounds were the faint roar of the small water falls, the occasional rumble of an avalanch high up in the distant peaks, or the crack and splash of a piece of ice as it feel into the lake. It is on occasions like this that one realizes, somewhat, the immensity of the universe and the smallness of oneself.

In Glacier National Park it seems that each valley ends in a cirque that was formed by a glacier during the glacier age. Usually the back side of the cirque is nearly perpendicular. This ridge or fin is the Continental divide. This wall is rather thin and so steep that it can be climbed in very few places. Near Ice-

berg Lake a tunnel has been cut through this wall to make it possible for hikers or riders to get to the other side of the divide.

Many days could be spent in Many Glacier Region. Many trips can be taken if one has the time and inclination. There are one-day trips to Cracker Lake, Morning Eagle Falls, Piegan Pass, and over Swiftcurrent Pass. Many longer trips are available. Guides may be secured for any of these trips. One may hike or ride. Chalets are built along most of the trails at the proper intervals where one may secure food and shelter. One of the most interesting long trips is north and west from Many Glacier Center, across the Canadian line into Waterton Lakes National Park. The Government of Canada and the Government of the United States have united these two contiguous National Park areas under the name of Waterton-Glacier International Peace Park. Waterton Lake itself lies half in Canada and half in the United States. It can be reached by auto-road on the Canadian side.

The limit to the length of this paper will not permit me to tell much about the remainder of the park. What is told concerning Many Glacier Region is typical of other regions. The other centers of importance are Two-Medicine, Cutbank, Red Eagle, St. Marys, Sun Camp, Lake McDonald, Belton, and Glacier Hotel. I will tell of one more trip briefly. This trip will be by auto over the Going-to-the-Sun Highway which connects the eastern and western boundaries of the park. We leave the eastern boundary highway at the foot of St. Marys Lake. The highway follows the northern shore of St. Marys Lake. St. Marys is a long narrow lake that

fills the valley, with peaks rising majestically a mile sheer over its waters on both sides. These peaks for the most part possess Indian names, such as: Going-to-theSun, Piegan, Little Chief, Mahtotopa, Red Eagle, and Curley Bear. The lake is about 10 miles long. After leaving the lake, the road begins to climb very rapidly along Reynolds Creek. This drive from St. Marys Lake to the divide at Logan Pass is probably the most scenic in the world. Mountain scenery that you have imagined is surpassed here. You have everything in mountain scenery, and it can be viewed from the car window. You have small lakes, large lakes, lakes at a distance, lakes close by, you are in deep canyons, you are on a narrow shelf on the side of a mountain precipice which is perpendicular hundreds of feet above and below you. You are at the foot of mountains, you climb to the top of a mountain, you go through tunnels, around hairpin curves and down the other side of the mountain. Mountain streams, with their tumbling falls and cascades are near you, far away, in front of you, above and below you, they can be seen, heard, and felt if one gets near enough. Dense forests gradually fade before your view as you glance up the mountain and change to snow and barren rock. Flowers give color to the landscape up to the very edge of the snow. Rock strata of various hues are exposed on the mountain sides. You drive in mid-summer between the banks of snow that have been shoveled off the road. At Logan Pass, where the highway crosses the continental divide, one perhaps gets the most spectuacular mountain view in the world. You are up among the mountain peaks, many of which can be seen from this point.

Some of them seem to be so close that you can touch them. In fact you can touch one of them and almost reach out the other hand and touch another at the same time. If you ever go to Glacier National Park, save Logan Pass to the last. After seeing Logan Pass any other place would be an anti-climax. But, of cours, you do have to get out of the park so we will go down the west slope. The highway follows McDonald Creek which flows into McDonald Lake, the largest in the park. Its shores are covered on all sides with dense forests of huge virgin cedar, hemlock, larch, fir, spruce, and white pine. The drive along McDonald Creek and Lake is really very beautiful and different, holding your interest even though you have just passed over Logan Pass.

Thus, we leave the Land of the Shining Mountains and Singing Streams and drive on to find other areas of interest.

BLANK PAGE

Fred E. Brengle

Jan. 20, 1936

Paper #13.

# Hamilton and Jefferson and Current Politics

Every presidential campaign since the election of Washington has been fought out, more or less, on the basis of Hamiltonian and Jeffersonian principles. Despite the fact that there is less being said now than last year about the two men the present campaign (1936) is no exception.

The leading fulminator against the Republican party as the child of Alexander Hamilton is Claude G. Bowers. Seemingly the worst thing he can say about the party of Lincoln, McKinley, and the rest of them is that it is Hamiltonian. He came back from Spain long enough some time last year to make his pet charge.

Until recent years the Republican party was proud to trace its lineage back to Hamilton and probably is yet, but is saying less about it. And strange to say, Jefferson shared about equally in G. O. P. platform statements. In 1856 the first Republican platform spoke "of restoring the action of the Federal Government to the principles of Washington and Jefferson." Hamilton was not mentioned. Never again from that time to this has the Republican party men-

tioned Jeffersonian principles by naming him; and the name of Hamilton is not to be found in any national Republican platform.

The Democrats, for the first time after 1856, mention Jefferson in name in 1896 by recommending the Jeffersonian maxim of "equal rights to all; special privileges to none." Again in the same platform they believe, "with Jefferson, in 'the support of the state governments in all their rights as the most competent administrations for our domestic concerns and the surest bulwarks against anti-Republican tendencies,' and in 'the preservation of the General Government in its whole constitutional vigor, as the sheet anchor of our peace at home and safety abroad.'" For the last time they mention Jefferson in 1924 by subscribing to his dictum that education was the problem of the states.

Both parties, in their platforms, make frequent appeals to Jeffersonian principles without naming him. The difference between the two seems to lie in this fact, that while the Republicans preach both Jeffersonian and Hamiltonian principles they function chiefly along Hamiltonian lines while the Democrats talk Jeffersonian and then ignore or violate him when they get in power.

Each party accuses the other of the many sins of which both are about equally guilty. Said the Democrats in 1908: "The Democratic party stands for Democracy; the Republican

party has drawn to itself all that is aristocratic and plutocratic," which, if not wholly false tends, at least, to engender a wholly false impression. Said the Republicans in 1908: "In experience, the difference between Democracy and Republicanism is that one means adversity, while the other means prosperity; one means low wages while the other means high; one means doubt and debt, the other means confidence and thrift," which is only a matter of relativity. Both the good and bad in the statement can be charged to both parties at different times.

For the first twelve years of our government under the Constitution it functioned chiefly but not wholly under the aegis of Hamiltonian principles - a strong central government in contrust with the states, a large army and navy, a central banking system, and the encouragement of manufacturing and commerce. All of which was a good thing. The government was put on a sound financial basis, it was started on the road to soundness and prosperity and was properly recognized at home and abroad.

Then Jefferson became President as a result of what has been erroneously called the political revolution of 1800. He checked the tendencies toward centralization and gave more recognition to the states, reduced the navy to a coast guard and the army to state militia, cut taxes and import duties, checked the spoils system, and reduced the number of Federal

officials and would have abolished the bank had it not been chartered for sixteen years. All of which was a good thing. Jefferson's program tended to establish a happy balance between the operation of Hamiltonian and Jeffersonian principles. But his election was not a revolution.

He retained the bank, his party later rechartering it and permitting it to establish branches, he did not liberalize the franchise, he had to increase the navy because of trouble with Tripoli, as a result of which taxes had to be boosted, and he purchased Louisiana, contrary to all his preconceived notions about the Constitution.

Hamilton liked the Constitution much less than Jefferson, believing that it did not provide for a sufficiently strong central government. Both willingly accepted it but disagreed over interpretation. Jefferson insisted on a strict or literal interpretation while Hamilton urged a loose and liberal interpretation. Out of this difference of opinion sprang the Federalist and Republican parties of their time, and, speaking very loosely, the Democratic and Republican parties of today. Although both parties, in recent years, have been in the habit of tracing their origin back to Jefferson, the Democrats can, logically, claim no earlier origin than Andrew Jackson, and the Republicans begin with Abraham Lincoln. Either that or both do go back to Jefferson which seems illogical, except that Jeffersonian principles have had such a widespread adoption

that neither party dares ignore them. It is much safer vote-getting move to mention Jefferson than Hamilton in speech and platform, not because of what Jefferson did but what he said and because of what Hamilton both said and did.

Hamilton believed the strongest element in human nature to be self-interest. On this premise he based his notion that the success of the government should be made an element- should play a part - in the success of the individual. He therefore proposed to ally men of wealth to the government by setting up a government that would interest itself in the welfare of their property. Such a government would pass protective tariff measures, establish a bank, and assume state debts by issuing United States bonds to the wealthy citizen creditors of the states. Assuming the premise to be true the only flaw in this is that so few people have property. Given a condition where all people wouldhave property and this would constitute the basis of an ideal state.

In actual practice Jefferson did not differ materially from Hamilton. He found the bank Federalist and proceeded to Republicanise it. As he remarked, "What is practical must often control what is pure theory." He promoted internal improvements at Federal expense, thought of as Hamiltonian, as a means of reaching his back-country constituency. What Hamilton had done Jefferson only partially undid, and then only temporarily. The Republican party of Jefferson and during his life time, in the exigency of the Napoleonic Wars, levied

higher tariffs and taxes, increased armies and navies, controlled commerce by embargoes, fought Great Britain in the interests of commerce and industry, and rechartered the United States Bank. By the irony of political fate, by 1812 the Republicans in power had become the party of loose construction and the Federalists out of power and having had all their thunder stolen by the Republicans, had become the party of strict construction. There is no finer demonstration in our political history of "the mutability of human affairs and the hollowness of political professions." The Republicans were exercising powers greater than those ever claimed by Hamilton.

Is Jeffersonian Democracy, after all, then, something of a legend? In answer this distinction might be drawn, that in theory, no, but in practice, yes.

It is said that he made three vital contributions to political thought, First, he had an unfailing faith in the common man and a confidence in majority rule. Yet he supported the idea and practice of property qualification for voting in Virginia. Although later he indorsed the principle of manhood suffrage, "he did not regard it as an essential element of Republican faith. Nor did he while President do anything to liberalize the franchise. Second, his theory of natural rights - life, liberty, and happiness - with their correlatives, the right of revolution and change

of fundamental laws. "A little revolution now and then is a good thing," he once said. Yet his election in 1800 was not a revolution. Third, he emphasized gradation in governmental units with emphasis on localism and laissez faire. Freedom of the press, of religion, of education and all other principles to be found in the Bill of Rights he maintained were vital to a Republic. The National Government should perform but a few simple tasks. "That government is best that governs least." He believed in private fortunes, measured chiefly in land, for he argued that public extravagance destroyed private fortunes. And there should be economy in public expense that labor might be lightly burdened.

To Elbridge Gerry he wrote, ". . . Our general government may be reduced to a very simple organization and a very inexpensive organization; a few plain duties to be performed by a few servants."

Hamilton believed in government by the rich and well-born. Said Jefferson, "The influence over government must be shared among all the people." Countered Hamilton, "The people are turbulent and changing, they seldom judge right or determine right." On another occasion he said, "Your people, sir, they are a great beast."

Experience would seem to indicate that both spoke truth with reservations. "All the people" is rather comprehensive

and the language of Hamilton is pretty strong. But the office seeker could quote the first with perfect safety while to even breathe the latter would mean political suicide. Republicans like and Democrats use and both profit by what Hamilton set up, but neither dares to say so out loud. They must both talk Jeffersonian as he spoke out of office for public consumption. The Democrats very frankly say they do not like what Hamilton did but have done little or nothing to upset it. The Republicans mouth Jeffersonianism and act Hamiltonian. This is not to say that one is wrong and the other is right. Due to the very human character of the make up of parties, both have been wrong and both have been right. Both have appealed to the highest and lowest in human nature. Both have acted selfishly and unselfishly, honorably and dishonorably, to the advantage of the general public and to its disadvantage.

On the surface the difference between Hamilton and Jefferson was Constitutional, but fundamentally it was a matter of economics. The Constitution was simply the instrument to which both appealed in their programs of solving economic problems. Under any other frame of government the problems would have been the same. It was the industrial-merchant-moneyed group which wanted governmental protection of its property, which entailed taxes, tariffs, an army and a navy, a bank and a strong central government, as against the planter-farmer-laborer group which opposed all these

things, which wanted to be let alone, free to import goods and demanded cheap money with which to pay its debts. The former preferred and obtained paternalistic aid which continued without check until the 1880's; the latter stood for laissez faire, but which has howled loud and long throughout the years for governmental aid.

Jefferson is always quoted as preferring agriculture to manufacturing. At one time he thought urbanization of the population would make men unfit for self-government. But in his first message to Congress he said; "Agriculture, manufacturing, commerce and navigation, the four pillars of our prosperity, are the most thriving when left to individual enterprise." How anti-new deal! How Republican! It sounds much like Hoover's anathematized rugged individualism and not at all in accord with NRA, AAA and the rest of the alphabetical innovations.

In 1800 population consisted largely of isolated, self-sustaining farmers. The transportation system was slow and difficult. Communication was largely dependent upon transportation, cheap western lands invited the easterner. As the surplus population of the east drained into the west wages rose, demand for manufactured goods increased--all were benefitted. The division of labor was simple. While the handicaps of that day have been largely remedied many of its benefactions are now lacking. The social set up has been reversed, a whole new set of problems created. All of which would seem to necessitate a new political measuring stick. but which should

start, when used, from certain fundamental principles, whatever they are.

We have traveled far in the 150 years since Hamilton and Jefferson. Society today is fundamentally mechanized and urbanized. It is highly complex as contrasted with the rural, agricultural and simple life of the time of Jefferson. Can we put new wine in the old bottles, or must the old bottles themselves be discarded? How much, if any of Jefferson's philosophy can be made applicable today? Since he discarded much of it himself in actual practice it would not seem to be especially difficult to conceive that it could not be used today, or that discarding it would be particularly damaging to the body politic. Perhaps our difficulties today lie in the fact that we have cut loose from too many historical moorings.

Jefferson was a strong believer in laissez faire. This principle is fast receding. One writer has said: "The major historical fact of our generation is that we shall not see the hand of laissez faire again, no matter to what port the New Deal takes us. The United States is entering upon a drastic reconstruction of its collective life, politically, economically and culturally."

One of Jefferson's principles was that the state's business was to protect the individual from aggressions of his neighbors, and beyond this, to leave him strictly alone. Hamilton would tax him, put him in the army, in the navy,

make him feel at all points the power of the Federal state. Today his enterprises are being taken over; his credit, his sales and buying prices are being managed for him. The duty of the state, said Jefferson, was to protect these rights in the individual, not to monopolize them. In short, the state existed for the individual. Today the individual seems to exist for the state. The recovery program of today, continuing a movement previously started, has been away from laissez faire. There has occurred, in the last three years, a feverish drive to put all industry under code organization and limitation, to organize labor, to organize and control agricultural production and prices and to enter actively into the utilities field.

President Roosevelt was much put out over the horse-and-buggy NRA decision by the Supreme Court and liked no more the AAA decision. But both were in the line of strict construction of the Constitution; both were a reversion to the political philosophy of Thomas Jefferson.

Harry Byrd, Democratic Senator from Virginia, alarmed at Federal invasion of state jurisdiction, said recently: "There is enough of Thomas Jefferson left in me to insist that no Federal official shall invade or ignore the Constitutional rights of the individual citizen."

Six distinct challenges are presented to the Constitution and to Jeffersonian principles by the New Deal. First, centralization of Federal power in the form of control over

production, marketing, securities and stocks, banking, prices, wages, labor disputes, home building, and crime. Second, delegated power to the President, trade associations, farm groups, labor, etc. Third, right of private property through laws prohibiting or limiting production and sale of certain farm products, pensions and the like. Fourth, government going into competition with private industry of which the TVA is the best example. Fifth, huge Federal spending which carries with it power to influence, coerce and bribe individuals and states. And sixth, taxation and inflation for revenue and distribution. The challenge has been met successfully so far as the most important parts of this program are concerned. Some of the rest of it is or will go before the Court for adjudication.

The Democrats favor regulation, to the full extent of Federal power (perhaps even being willing to stretch that power) of holding companies which sell securities beyond state boundaries and of companies doing an interstate business. This is Hamiltonian from the standpoint of the Constitution, in that it is a liberal extension of the commerce powers of Congress. And although it is in violation of Jefferson's principle of laissez faire it is Jeffersonian in its purpose to protect the public. The National Government, said Jefferson, should limit itself largely to foreign affairs, domestic affairs to be taken care of largely by the states. Yet Roosevelt has asked for and been granted larger powers than any peac time President - such powers as must cheer the heart of Hamiton, wherever he

is. The TVA compares with the internal improvements issue of the early 1800's, which Hamilton favored and Jefferson opposed, in theory, but favored in practice as a move in practical politics. And Government under Roosevelt is not the cheap and simpl thing that Jefferson said it should be. We used to think we had given adequate expression to government finance when we spoke of it in terms of box-car figures, but today nothing short of the term astronomical is adequately descriptive.

Roosevelt can, of course, with much merit, plead the depression as an emergency. But the point is, he is using Hamiltonian methods to cope with it. After all, Hamilton must have been pretty sound. The present administration has outdone all previous peacetime administrations, Jefferson's not excepted, in loose construction of the Constitution.

The President looked forward, when elected, to a program of loose construction and gave expression to it in his inaugural. "Our Constitution is so simple and practical," he said, "that it is possible always to meet extraordinary need by change in emphasis and arrangement without loss of essential form." But the Supreme Court seems to have proved that it is not so "simple and practical" as all that. To meet the situation Mr. Roosevelt can, consistent with Jeffersonianism, urge amendments to the Constitution for Jefferson played a leading part in securing the adoption of the first ten.

The present administration has stolen much from Hamilton,

no doubt in an honest effort to benefit the masses. But we have laws against robbery, and even the Democractic party will have to defend its act before the bar of public opinion next November. Having gone so far Hamiltonian there was nothing left for the Republicans to do but to go Jeffersonian. The Republicans, the so-called party of Hamilton, is today the advocate of the Jeffersonian principles of states rights, lower taxes, economy and less government. The Hamiltonians gave expression to these ideas at their "grass roots" convention in Springfield, Illinois, last year, the center of a great agricultural region so dear to the heart of Jefferson. The term "grass root" would have had meaning for Jefferson. At this conference the Republicans adopted the following creed:

"We believe in the Constitution of the United States. We believe that the Constitutional separation of the powers of government into legislative, executive and judicial should be maintained. We believe that the maintenance of the independent sovereignties of the Federal Government and the several states as guaranteed by the consitution is vital to the maintenance of our American system of government, and we affirm the wisdom of our forefathers who reserved to the states their power over matters of intra-state and local concern and delegated to the Federal Government certain power over specified matters of national concern."

The rest of it reads not unlike Jefferson's first inaugural - an expression of belief in a free press, individualism, economy in government, sound currency, withdrawal of

government from competition with private industry, aid for agriculture, enforcement of laws and so on.

The easy inference is, of course, that the present administration has violated all these principles. Odd, isn't it, to have the hide-bound Hamiltonians remind the Jeffersonians of their dereliction in the matter of the principles of their great founder, Republicans can be as Jeffersonian as any Democrat when it suits their purpose.

The Republicans further expressed their belief in "the maintenance of the vitality and free growth of American industry through the preservation of the competitive system. "We believe," they said, "in National recognition of the needs of agriculture...." Both Hamilton and Jefferson could have subscribed to these propositions.

Said Frank O. Lowden, at the conference: "The preservation of the basic principles of the constitution: this is the supreme issue of the hour." Even some Democrats, among them Judge Wm. R. Pattengal of Maine and Bainbrige Colby of New York, are demanding a restoration of Constitutional government according to Jeffersonian principles.

Bowers said, early in the summer of 1935, that the 1936 campaign would be fought out along the line that divides the Jeffersonian and Hamiltonian theories of government - that is, as he explained it, the Jeffersonian doctrine of equal rights for all and the Hamiltonian idea of special privileges for the few. These constitute the major premise

of each, respectively, as understood today. But no Republican preaches the Hamiltonian premise out loud. Hamilton was born, January 11, 1757. I have neither read nor heard of a single Hamilton birthday dinner. All, Democrats and Republicans alike, preach the major premise of Jefferson. Republicans follow Hamilton in many of his deductions from his major premise while Democrats have departed from most of Jefferson's deductions. Thus Republicans claim descendency from both Hamilton and Jefferson but the Democrats will have none of Hamilton - in theory.

There is good, of course, in both Jeffersonian and Hamiltonian principles. The present Democratic administration would have us believe that it is an exception - that it has a monopoly of and has been conducted wholly along the lines of Jeffersonian principles. Bowers, an authority on Hamilton and Jefferson, was called from Spain to establish this fact. But the Republicans have already begun to appeal to these principles and to claim Democratic violation of them. The Republican convention of 1936 is sure to resound with the murmur, if not the shout, against the centralization of power in a government of bureaus at the expense of the state and local governments. The huge borrowings, certainly to be a bitterly fought issue in the coming campaign, show a confidence in central authority worthy of Hamilton himself. There is usually more of Hamilton than of Jefferson in the vast appropriations for military and naval pupposes, more Hamilton than Jefferson in the Rooseveltian effort to center financial

authority in the National Government, in the spread of Roosevelt's control over industry and agriculture, in his domination of Congress and in the present tariff - all in theory at least. In power and practice, as I have said, the Jeffersonian Republicans did all these things, including domination of Congress. The Democrats have equaled or outdone the Republicans in this respect for which I need only cite Jefferson himself, and Wilson. In power they faced conditions, not theories, as Cleveland said.

Roosevelt's social program might be another story. Were Jefferson living today he might approve old age pensions, unemployment insurance, guarantee of bank deposits, public works, the CCC, the N.Y.A. and the like, but to do so he would have to substitute paternalism for his notion of laissez faire. Hamilton probably would approve of the whole centralizing program unless, like the Republicans of today, he opposed as a matter of political opportunism.

The Republican party of today, if and when it recovers control, will do no more to advance Jeffersonian principles, than Jefferson himself did after 1800. And what the Democratic party has been doing for the common man is not to be found in Jefferson's philosophy. Parties do not change things materially but are profoundly influenced by them. Both parties have adjusted themselves to new conditions. For example both have been much influenced by the programs of third or minor parties.

The general notion is that one party, the Federalist - Whig-Republican, has favored a broad and liberal construction of the Constitution, the growth of national power, the increase of governmental functions and the larger exercise of force and authority in restraint of disorders, while the anti-Federalist-Republican-Democratic party has held to strict construction, the rights of states, the larger degree of individual and social liberty without interference from government. But this is largely fiction. Neither party has been consistently loyal to the standards accredited to it. Theodore Roosevelt was loose constructionist, while Taft was strict- both Republicans. Lincoln was loyal to the states when he said he had no Constitutional right to interfere with their slaves. On the other hand Jackson was prepared to send United States troops into South Carolina to enforce Federal law. And the present Democratic administration has invaded the states no end, has had to be brought back to the Constitution by the Supreme Court and has set up a complex social-paternalistic state neither Republican nor Democratic.

By and large, taken through the years, there has not been much difference between Democratic and Republican administrations. Both have been conservative, with the Democrats probably having the edge on the Republicans in liberality, at least in platform declarations. As Theodore Roosevelt once said, albeit in the throes of a private grouch, "The old parties are husks with no real soul within

either, divided upon artificial lines, boss-ridden and privilege-controlled, each a jumble of incongruous elements, neither daring to speak out wisely and fearlessly what should be said upon the issues of the day." Probably a man in a grouch, like a child, is more apt to speak the truth. T.R. hated Jefferson and admired Hamilton.

The "Outs"have always opposed the program of the "Ins". And when the "Outs" get in they face facts and act accordingly. When an administration lives up to its platform pledges, that is something to talk about, to marvel over. But the "Outs" have always been able to accuse the "Ins" of violating campaign pledges. The "Ins" are always inclined toward loose construction, the "Outs" toward strict construction. The "Ins" are for a strong National government, the "Outs" for states rights and the individual. In other words the party out of power, be it Democratic or Republican, is invariably Jeffersonian, while the party in power is Hamiltonian. Or it might be more accurate to say that since the party in power is Hamiltonian the party outside appeals to the people on a basis of Jeffersonian principles. Jeffersonian principles have been used to win many a campaign but never to conduct an administration. To untangle the maze - the crossing and re-crossing of the two sets of principles - would be difficult for Hamilton and Jefferson should they return today.

President Roosevelt, of course, has given expressions to his views of Jefferson, his hero. In his book, Looking Forward,

he says that even Jefferson realized that the exercise of property rights must so interfere with the rights of the individual that the government, without whose assistance property rights could not exist, must intervene, not to destroy individualism but to protect it. The flaw in this, as I see it, is that it is based on an assumed separation of individuals and property. Undoubtedly one of the inalienable rights of an American citizen is that of property, if it is nothing more than the clothes on his back, which is about all too many people have, despite the fact that Jefferson limited such rights to life, liberty and happiness. Presumptively one could have neither life nor happiness without some property. And to protect individualism means to destroy it; the two ideas are antithetical.

Like Jefferson, the present administration has favored agriculture. The farmer has been given loans, paid for not producing, given mortgage moratoriums and the like. In fact the present administration is the first in our history to do anything for the farmer in a positively constructive way. And then, horror of horrors, the Supreme Court steps in and declares it all null and void and of no effect. I am wrong, again, shall I say, about constructive legislatim for the farmer. The biggest thing ever done for the farmer, in fact I think the most important law ever passed by Congress, was the Homestead Bill enacted in 1862 andsigned by Lincoln. Then to balance things up the Republicans chartered the Union Pacific Railroad in the same year, granting it millions of acres and loaning it millions of dollars and in 1863 passed the

National Banking Law. From that day to this the Republican party has been accused of being the party of Big Business, and with a large degree of justification.

Both parties must placate the farmer, not because he is so terribly bad off, but he has a lot of votes, and business must be served, not because it is so seriously threatened by foreign competition, but it has a lot of money.

The philosophies of Hamilton and Jefferson have echoed and reechoed down through the years. Onecan more easily extol what Hamilton did than what he said. His program was eminently successful, putting the infant government on a sound financial footing. The Federalists carried the Nation through a difficult period of organization and establishment. Carried forward by an imaginative leader they injected life and spirit into the new government. It was fairly firmly established when Jefferson took over in 1801. His appeal was from the properied interests to the people.

Both what Jefferson said and did can be properly praised. The point is that what he did does not chime with what he said. And being less consistent than Hamilton he made by far the better politician. Statesmanship is mother thing. As has been accurately stated the Federalist party was destroyed by the success of its principles in the hands of its opponents, the Jeffersonian Republicans. And just as the Democratic party is more or less divided today so Jeffersons party split while he was President, the quid faction led by old John Randolph, insisting that the party get back to its original principles.

"It is not by the consolidation or concentration of powers",

said Jefferson, "but by their distribution, that good government is effected. Were not this great country already divided into states, that dividion must be made, that each might do for itself what concerns itself directly, and what it can do much better than can distant authority....Were we directed from Washington when to sow, and when to reap, we should soon want bread." Was Jefferson sincere in this or was he, an "Out", simply fighting Hamilton who was in? The question is justifiable because it is said, on good authority, that he wrote the Kentucky resolutions, not because he believed in them but as a bit of political propaganda.

The issue today, in part, is one of governmental structure and the distribution of governmental powers. But more important probably is the problem of the very structure and operation of society itself, of which government is only the instrument. Those who talk of states rights, laissez faire, simple government and otherwise argue from Jeffersonian premises are much like the ostrich with his head in the sand. Today we have neither the aggrarian simplicity of Jefferson nor the industrial immaturity of Hamilton, but a highly socialized national state, compounded of paternalism, socialism and Fascism and built upon a highly mechanized society. We could not go back to first principles if we would.

Strange to say, the only Jeffersonian branch of the government still intact is the Supreme Court. Strictly construed the Constitution suited Jefferson, at least while he was out of office, much better than it did Hamilton. The Court bases its decisions on a strict construction of the Constitution. John Marshall's

liberal dicisions were hatefull to Jefferson even while he was in office. And so the leaders of his party today would circumvent the Court and to this extent act un-Jeffersonian, by amending the Cons titution. If the AAA, the NRA, the farm moratorium and the rest of the New Deal are the panaceas they are claimed to be, amendments will come in due time. And they can quote Jefferson in justification of their amendments, for he said, "We might as well require a man to wear still the coat which fitted him as a boy as civilized society to remain ever under the regimen of their ancestors." And the Republicans can't object, as good apostles of Washington, a Hamiltonian Federalist, who, although he wished the Constitution "had been more perfect," but favored it because "a constitutional door is opened for amendments hereafter."

There is both good and bad, or at least consistent and inconsistent, applicable and inapplicable aspects of Hamiltonian and Jeffersonian principles. The application by the state of one set to the exclusion of the other would not only be impracticable and damaging but impossible. A happy balance between the two would seem to be desirable, and by what might be termed a law of politics there has been something of a balance between them. Parties are sufficiently flexible to shift fairly easily from one set of principles to the other; when one party becomes too exclusively Hamilgonian the other can, with easy facility, go Jeffersonian. The danger lies in the fact that both sets of principles may be ignored and forgotten. Even the principles of Hamilton are preferable to those of Lenin, Marx, Mussolini or Hitler.

BLANK PAGE

Acher 151

Paper #14.

Jan. 27, 1936.

HUMAN NATURE FROM THE POINT OF VIEW OF PSYCHOANALYSIS

Throughout the ages the single most important problem of man has been an effort to understand himself. Philosophers, writers, statesmen, preachers, and teachers have struggled with this riddle from many angles, recognizing that upon the solution of this problem rested many, if not all, other questions pertaining to humanity and its welfare. Why do human beings act as they do? If we could only answer that perplexing question we would be happy on the road to the solution of many other questions pertaining to man. Little light had been shed upon this question until within the past Half century when scientific methods were adopted in the attack upon the problem. Since then considerable progress has been made and much data of a scientific and quasi-scientific nature has been collected and interpreted. Of these various endeavors the outstanding contribution has been made by that school of investigators known as psychoanalysts. For the first time in the study of many these investigators have dipped down into the so-called unconscious levels of man's psychic life and have brought to light aspects of human nature which had not heretofore been even suspected.

Up to the time of the psychoanalysts human behavior had

been regarded as due to either one of two factors: namely, conscious direction; or unconscious, mechanized, stereotyped patterns of response usually called reflexes, instincts, or habits. It seemed a contradiction to say that unconscious behavior could be intelligent and adjust the individual to new and more or less untried situations. That was the province of consciousness, and it seemed almost an insult to consciousness to assume that there was no sharp line of demarcation between the two. It is not strange that such a conclusion should have been maintained by these students of human behavior. Consciousness was the special instrumentality for the adjustment of the individual to novel situations according to these students, and all below consciousness was simply patterns of stereotyped responses. But the school of psychoanalysis, in studying the behavior of abnormal humans, soon discovered that much occurred below the level of consciousness which acted very much as consciousness would act but which the individual apparently knew nothing about. Investigations in physiology have thrown much light upon the adjusting apparatus of the human body with which consciousness has nothing to do. Our whole digestive and metabolic apparatus acts in ways that tend to confirm the idea that reason and intelligence are manifest in the process. We do not have to decide when to breathe or turn on the secretions of the digestive glands or supervise the building up of our tissues.

In addition the body keeps its temperature at 98- degrees winter or summer; it keeps the blood at a certain degree of liquidity regardless of the intake of water; it keeps the balance between acidity and alkalinity to a degree that excites the wonder and admiration of the physiologist; it maintains the same degree of salinity also regardless of the intake of salt and removes from the tissues whatever it needs for this purpose. Possibly the most remarkable instance of this wisdom of the body is found in the case of the pregnant mother, in which the welfare of the babe comes first and whatever it needs is taken from the mother's body regardless of the effect upon the mother. The babe comes first.

Now since the human organism does such a wonderful job in managing its internal affairs under such varying conditions, it does not seem unreasonable that it would also evolve methods of adjusting itself to the external world even below the level of consciousness. This is exactly what it has done as revealed by the investigations of psychoanalysis. However, these adjustments are adapted to primitive life as lived thousands of years ago when the struggle for survival was severe, primitive, and cruel. As civilization advanced, standards of conduct were deliberately set up by the conscious use of psychic life which went far beyond the modes of behavior which our primitive ancestors had evolved to meet their needs. This meant and still means that severe restrictions

and inhibitions were placed upon human nature and its biological equipment. In other words, civilization demands far more from human nature today than it can readily comply with, biologically considered. This gives rise to severe conflicts between the standards which consciousness has set up for man's behavior and human nature with its primitive equipment. Now when these two forces come into conflict the battle is often quite uneven, because the dice are loaded, figuratively speaking, in favor of behavior on the level of primitive life. The human cortex is no match for the lower and older brain centers. They have back of them the dynamic urge of ages past, but the cortex is much more recent in its origin and has back of it only such power as reason can muster.

Consciousness has set up the standard of monogamy; but primitive human nature, as it expresses itself through the unconscious drives, leans towards promiscuity and consciousness too often loses the battle.

Primitive human nature is strongly polarized towards pleasure and away from pain. This bias towards pleasure is naturally egocentric and self-centered. Consciousness, through the process of reasoning, points out that pleasure is sometimes best secured by acting for the welfare of the group. But so strongly is the primitive side of human nature - as expressed in the unconscious drives - adjusted to the egocentric modes of behavior, that the case must appear very

clear if these primitive drives are to be overcome in favor of conduct for the common good. This latter form of behavior always involves something of the nature of a trade. In other words, if I act for the common good, will I really enhance my satisfaction in life? The case must be very obvious to generate enough dynamic power to produce the desired response. If there is the slightest doubt, the self-centered type of behavior is most certain to triumph. This is most clearly illustrated in the modern industrial and economic struggle. It takes a rather high degree of cortical activity to realize that as a people our interests are inextricably interwoven and that we can not exist half slave and half free now any more than we could before the Civil War. Neither capital nor labor as a class seems to have enought cortical activity to see this with sufficient clearness to generate an urge to produce action, and so they fall back upon the egocentric type of life as expressed by the term "Rugged Individualism."

The same phenomenon also crops out in the field of crime. It did not take long for Dillinger to be convinced that the scales of justice were weighted against him in his first contact with the law, and it was the easiest thing in the world for him to surrender to his egocentric, self-centered, primitive impulses. They were ready to function and all they needed to be turned loose in all their fury was a little experience that seemed to show that acting for the good

of the group did not pay in terms of egocentric pleasure. Courts of justice have a long way to go before they catch ...ith the facts of human nature as we know them today. Unless society throught its legal machinery and its treatment of the individual generally makes it clear to the individual that it is a good trade to substitute action for the common welfare for conduct motivated by the egocentric primitive unconscious drives, we may expect these latter drives to dominate in many human beings and crime to continue--if not to increase. As the population increases numerically and people come into closer contact with each other, the sense of justice and injustice inevitably become more evident. Unless our captains of industry and our political leaders sense this situation and act accordingly, we are likely to face a situation that is not pleasant to contemplate. Whether we like it or not, human nature will assert itself under the sense of injustice--and not infrequently does so on the primitive level. This was realistically portrayed in the recent ..., "Tale of Two Cities".

One of the interesting aspects of primitive human nature and one not fully comprehended by modern thinking is that of Sadism, or getting pleasure by causing pain to others. At first thought this seems wholly abnormal and unnatural. The reason for this is that the urge is primitive, usually entirely unconscious, and in modern times manifests itself

in a disguised form usually under the cover of some justifi-
ble cause.

Biologically and evolutionally speaking it is not dif-
ficult to see how this phase of human nature developed. In
rimitive life the dangers from ferocious enemies both ani-
l and human, the precarious food supply and other exigen-
cies of that day, readily placed a premium upon cruelty as a
rms of existence. To kill, to fight relentlessly, to do
e other fellow before he did you--that was the game of life.
o levelop a mental capacity for the enjoyment of such a type
of life was inevitable under the circumstances. The cat that
plays with the mouse must get some satisfaction from this
type of behavior, though the mouse likely does not.

As we look back over the recorded history of man, we
e plenty of evidences of this primitive type of enjoyment.
t seems almost incredible to us of today that human beings
ld consider as a holiday enjoyment the killing and eating
human beings by wild beasts--as was the case in the arena
the ancient Romans. The gladiatorial combats were not
tly different. This does not mean that we have complete-
slourhed off this aspect of human nature today. It simply
s that we have other more or less disguised forms of giv-
pression to the same thing although in somewhat more
ined form. Christianity undoubtedly softened somewhat this
form of giving expression to the sadistic tendency in

...n. But it did not eliminate it. It merely caused it to find expression in the guise of holy purpose. How incongruous and wholly out of sympathy with the teaching of the lowly Nazarene is the spectacle of his supposed followers burning at the stake those dissenters whose convictions compelled them to disagree with them. Think of tying a human being, perhaps a neighbor, to a stake and then piling faggots about him and adding a little oil or other inflammable material and then setting fire to it and revelling in the travesty, all in the name of religion. What better illustration could one wish to illustrate the disguised expression of primitive human cruelty? Here we see consciousness clothing into the hands of primitive, cruel impulses by devising an apparent justification for its expression. This is a trick of consciousness, and it provides many avenues of expression for sadism in the name of some more worth purpose. "The Mutiny on the Bounty" is another fine illustration of this. Captain Bligh gave expression to all his perverse cruelty and sadistic tendencies in the name of discipline. Clearly it showed how our primitive tendencies will have their way and even use consciousness to justify their expression.

One of the cleverest creations of the human mind to enable to the full its sadistic tendencies is the idea of hell. Here humans could place their enemies and have the

supreme satisfaction of thrilling to their hearts' content
ov r the infinite and eternal suffering of those whom they
g rded as fit candidates for this place. It is said that
Cotton Mather and even the great Jonathan Edwards held their
victims over the burning brimstone with such vividness that
the congregation could fairly smell the frying flesh. The
less sadistic often fainted at the picture. All this was
done in the name of the religion that emphasized hope, faith,
and love, with love regarded as the greatest of the three.
Here again the unconscious drive of cruelty managed to have
its way--though disguised in virtuous attire. Evidently the
ancients were not entirely unconscious of the conflict be-
tween the conscious standards of behavior and the unconscious
drives of cruelty. For this aspect of human nature they in-
vented or created that classic term, Satan, Devil, Spirit of
Evil.

In a recent issue of Harpers Magazine is an article en-
titled "Men Like War" in which the author has sensed clearly
this dual nature of man. He says, "Man's primitivism vi-
brates to the call of militarism because it recognizes,
through no conscious mechanism, opportunities for murder,
sadism, violence. Man is a potential murderer. From 1930
to 1933 there were 44,740 homicides in the United States a-
lone. Man is far more immoral than he can imagine." He
says further that "Many soldiers recall with pleasure 'the

160



time I ripped that Hun open'". In this case the conscious stage of mental life could approve of the unconscious drive of cruelty. Both had the same objective; namely, the destruction of human life. In fact we as a people make heroes of those who od the best job under those circumstances. The more scalps they have to their credit, the greater their glory.

In civil life we have established standards, through the conscious phase of our personality, which do not permit of such excesses. But this does not mean that the unconscious, sadistic drives submit meekly to these standards.

Recently I attended a wrestling match at the Shrine Temple. Those of you who have witnessed these performances will have noticed the brutality of these fellows. There seems to be nothing too cruel in this game. It was interesting to observe the audience. If it appeared that the wrestlers were not as cruel as they might be, the audience booed them and insisted that they were not getting their money's worth. Both men and women were in the audience, and to my astonishment, the women seemed more savage than the men. Cries of "Break his leg," "Break his neck," "Kick him," were common even among the women. All this was, of course, in the name of sport. But the vicarious satisfaction which the audience enjoyed in the cruelty was unmistakable.

Our national sport of boxing or prize fighting illustrates the same thing. Usually the audience is disappointed

if there is not a knockout before the match is finished. It is not the riff-raff that attends these events. At the Lewis-[illegible] fight there were at least seven governors of states present. The vast sums collected at the entrance gate testifies to the popularity of these events.

Other similar events testify to the same thing. I recently heard a man who attended the auto races at Indianapolis some time ago deplore the fact that no one was killed in the race. It lacked the kick which he evidently expected to receive.

There is scarcely a human relationship where this sadistic tendency does not crop out at times. We are now facing a presidential election, and all the vituperation, mud slinging, and defamation of character by candidates and others actively engaged in the campaign will of course be done in the name of patriotism. But what an opportunity to give full and free expression to all the suppressed Sadistic tendencies in the personalities of these participants! But these will not be the only ones who will take advantage of the opportunity to thrill sadistically in the occasion. The millions listening in over the radio will not miss the chance to have a little sadistic experience as their party's speakers castigate the opposition. It will be thrilling indeed; and arguments, [illegible]ts, and even murders will take place in the disguise of patriotism. This does not, of course, imply that cool, careful, discriminating weighing of the merits of the case is

impossible. Let us hope that much of this will be done. But there will be a goodly sprinkling of the other type of behavior. The reactionaries or conservatives will see Moscow moving straight to Washington. The Progressives will proclaim eloquently that selfish greed and that alone actuates the conservatives. What joy this setting up of straw men will give to both sides! All their cruelty can then be given full expression in the name of high and holy citizenship. In this connection one wonders how much sadism there is in the branding of some of our finest American citizens as Reds by certain so-called patriotic associations as expressed in the book, "The Red Network." Harry Emerson Fosdick, Parks Cadman, Senator Borah, and a host of others of our outstanding citizens are branded as Reds by this book. What sadistic satisfaction these associations must get in defaming these fine, intelligent, patriotic, American citizens!

One might trace evidences of this primitive tendency into the home, the school, and even the church; but time forbids in a short paper.

As I pointed out in the beginning of this paper, we owe much of this insight into the nature of the human personality to the school of psychoanalysis. They have shown clearly that the human personality is made up of two very different factors: the conscious and the unconscious. They have also revealed the fact that the battle or conflict between these two phases of the human personality is likely to be rather

disastrous, because the unconscious drives, though primitive and egocentric, are not easily directed for the very reason that they are unconscious. Now what can be done to integrate, unify, and harmonize these two factors so that peace and calm will prevail and the individual will at the same time understand himself and be more reasonable and more agreeable to live with in all relations touching others? One of the challenges of adult human personality is to study his motives and to be on guard lest he be tricked into surrender to his primitive, egocentric, cruel, sadistic drives by having them appear in some disguised form or clothed in the attire of virtue. Dr. Frank Alexander of Chicago University would even go so far as to say that some physicians take up surgery because they are motivated by the sadistic urge along with other drives. It is at least conceivable that such a drive could actuate even a surgeon. It might not even interfere with his efficiency, unless he would operate for the sake of the operation instead of for the sake of the patient. It is a man's job to manage his life from the vantage point of the conscious level and know himself well enough to head off these unconscious primitive drives that are constantly on the lookout for expression even in disguised form. If we ever learn to live together in peace and harmony as a family, state, nation, or world, we will have to learn this fundamental lesson.

M.S. Law

64

# THE COLLEGE PROFESSOR IN POLITICS

Paper # 16

Feb. 10th 1936.

A Brain Trust seems novel to Americans. In England it is an accepted feature of every government and every party. Party programs are drafted by men who are experts in the field of government and who are equipped with a research staff. Every party in power has its brain trust. It would seem that if the United States Government had been equipped with a similar set up of distinguished authorities among the permanent officials, it would not have been necessary to bring in inexperienced men either from our Universities or from without. Many of the mistakes of the brain trust under the new dealers would have been avoided if the university men had been used permanently.

It has always been true and always will be true that the man of theory alone and the so called self-made man are failures. TheU University man has the theory and needs to be put to the task of laboring in the practical. The so called self-made man is so self sufficient that he becomes the impractical practical business man whose financial rating is not flattering. The real progress is the ~~progress~~ increase made by the man who thinks through that does not only solve temporary problems but the long time development.

By common consent the one man who has influenced thinking and progress in western civilization more than any other is Aristotle. Let us pause before him for a moment. He was tutor to the boy who became Alexander the Great and later was a teacher of rhetoric and allied subjects in Athens. He was , in short, a college professor of the Athenian era. There is not a record that the followers of Alexander, when that young man came to the throne of Macedonia, ever complained at the fine academic hand of Aristotle in the affairs of State. Alexander at once set forth upon his meteoric campaigns, and Aristotle, left behind, repaired to Athens and established his school.

One is tempted to say that had Alexander retained the counsel of Aristotle his end might have been neither so sudden nor tragic, nor would his empire have been left without a ruling hand to carry it on. But Alexander, realist to the core, had no place in his affairs of state for this man of learning.

Aristotle, meanwhile, not only taught his Peripatetic school in Athens but also studied and thought and wrote. He systematized the knowledge of the past. He "defined the limits and laid the foundations of the sciences of the western nations." In logic, metaphysics, politics, and ethics, he established foundations "of great and permanent significance for all time." In physics, astronomy, zoology, psychology, and even in history, his investigations and conclusions were of momentous importance for all later growth in these sciences. Where the philosophers and practical men of his age and before had disputed various concepts, his attitude was "Why argue? Why not investigate and discover the facts?" His method and his philosophy have influenced the western world for twenty-three centuries. However proud we are today of our political systems and our scientific achievements, we must remember that the spirit of this man can lay hands upon each and say "These in a large part are mine. I taught you the method. I gave you the start."

Yet this man who above all others has influenced our civilization was not a practical politician nor a "self-made" man of affairs. He had spent twenty years in school under Plato; he got much of his out of a book," and much more from dry, minute investigations.

The practical men of that ancient day ran well the immediate affairs of the time. They built cities, developed commerce and campaigned for votes. Theirs was not a task to be lightly scorned. But the tiny candles of light that have flickered from that age down,

into our own were not lighted by the practical men of daily affairs. They were lighted by the Platos and Aristotles ~~and in~~ cloistered halls of learning.

Practical men have nearly always stood in the way of progress. They have many times stood in their own light facing their own shadows. The reason is that they accept what they know as final rather than investigate to get the facts. How many businesses have called in an efficiency expert rather than ~~face~~ take the trouble of thinking and finding out the facts for themselves. The thinker on the other hand has been opposed by law, by the dungeon and by the rack. A few typical names among the college professors of the great host of contributors will help to clarify our thinking.

Copernicus--~~who~~ was born into a world which universally believed that the earth was fixed, immovable, and planted in the center of the universe about which the sun and stars moved in a daily orbit--~~but~~ He released the minds of men to see the universe as we know it today and ~~who~~ gave us the first glimpse of a nature ruled by law.

Immanuel Kant-- a modest, shrinking college professor, whose almost entire life was spent, in one small Prussian city--~~but who~~ blasted the bed-rock of ourworn theology, left a soil free for cultivation by creative thinkers, and forecast the discoveries of Darwin by three--quarters of a century.

Copernicus escaped chiefly because he died before the public at large learned of his discoveries. Galileo was dismissed from one position, warned to hold tongue, twice dragged before an inquisition, and was finally compelled to kneel with his hand on the gospel and renounce his great discoveries. Spinoza, great gentle soul though he was , was excommunicated from his church by its practical leaders. All members were "admonished that none hold converse with him by word of mouth, none hold communication with him by writing; that

~~no~~ no one do him any service, no one abide under the same roof with him, no one approach within four cubits length of him, and no one read any document dictated by him, or written by his hand." Pitylessly alone, he went forth into exile to die "while shadows were still falling toward the west." Kant was ordered by his king to hold his tongue and drop his pen on pain of "unpleasant consequences," and was rewarded by having dogs named for him in derision.

This was the type of men who broke the soil for our present civilization by liberating minds from the bondage of authority. They were men of learning, theorists, cloistered scholars, if you please. They were ridiculed and persecuted by the practical men of their day.

Michael Faraday, a college professor, in 1831 discovered how to induce electricity in a magnetic field. He thereby developed formulae for the inventions of Steinmetz and Edison. Today whether one travels on land or sea, under water or through the air, lifts a telephone receiver to talk with his neighbor, dials in music from Radio City or ~~the~~ listens to President's voice from the White House, solaces his leisure hours by a moving picture, or enjoys cracked ice made in his own refrigerator, he is indebted to the genius of Faraday, the scholar.

Samuel Morse, college professor, in 1844 invented and demonstrated the commercial use of the telegraph. For five years the practical men in Congress laughed at his foolish idea of sending a message through a solid wire; and a Congressman was defeated for re-election because he finally voted for granting Morse the money to build his experimental line. But Morse, undismayed by this ~~plebiscite~~ plebeian attitude, constructed his line and flashed along its forty miles of wire the now immortal message, "What

hath God wrought?"

Alexander Graham Bell, college professor, before 1875 probed into obscure research on the acoustics of speech and the application of electricity to acoustic instruments. But of this research came that indispensable instrument of this industrial age, the telephone.

Rudolph Hertz, college professor, in 1887 demonstrated the existence of electric waves in free space. Without this discovery wireless and radio would have been impossible.

Knowledge of sanitation, health, and direct protection of life itself in this age when the center of population has shifted from farm to city, has come in the main from scholars. Louis Pasteur, college professor, about 1865 rocked the popular beliefs of the ages by demonstrating that diseases were caused by invisible bacteria commonly known as germs. Having done this he developed Jenner's principle of vaccination, then used only for small-pox, into the specific science of innoculation. But for this one discovery, it has been estimated, one third of the people now in the western world would not be living. They or their immediate ancestors would have perished from contagious diseases.

William Konrad Roentge, college professor, in 1895, while experimenting with Crookes tubes and the like discovered an invisible ray of extremely short wave-length. Practical men doubtless would have passed it by as of no value, but not the scholar Roentgen. He called the musterious ray X, the symbol for the unknown, and proceeded to study its nature and its properties. It is still known as the X-ray and its use today in medical science is invaluable.

Pierre and Marie Curie, college professors, in 1898 isolated a new radio-active element of the uranium family known as

radium, possessing rays ten times more penetrating than X-rays. Radium today is believed indispensible to medical science.

It would be hard indeed to find any spot in our industrial system that has not had its beginning in the discoveries of scholars.

It seems strange that college professors have been so useful in the scientific world. Most of the comforts which the business man uses are the results of the professors investigation. College professors have not been allowed to participate in politics and economics. Is that the reason that politics and economics are fifty years behind science? Much of business is still done on a medieval basis. The college professors have been teaching for decades that the doctrine of laissez faire (Samuel Insull) was an outworn and dangerous practice. However, it took the crash of '73, of '93, of 1907 and last but not least the crash of 1929 to teach us that lesson. One need only to ask from whence came our modern economic thought if not from Adam Smith, professor of moral philosophy in the University of Glasgow, when he began to question the economic theories of the Mercantilists.

From whence did the framers of our own constitution get their concepts of government. It was the writings of Kant, Voltaire, Rousseau, Montesqieu, Burke and others who gave their philosophy of government upon which our democracy rests.

Where did Lord North, one of the outstanding statesmen of England, get his ideas on taxation. He says from the college professor who wrote in that memorable year 1776--"An Inquiry into Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations." William Pitt testifies to the same source of learning for his guidance in statesmanship.

With the rise of American insurance companies in the first

half of the 19th century, there came also the malpractices of ruinously low insurance premiums and lack of sufficient reserves. Even before this time insurance companies of Europe had been greatly indebted to such college professors as James Dodson of Oxford and Charles Babbage of Cambridge for their mathematical skill in correcting errors of the antequated Ulpian insurance table, dating from 364 A. D. which practical insurance men a thousand years later were still trying to use in their business. It was now to owe a still greater debt, for out of the mathematics department of Western Reserve University came another college professor who advocated a complete over-hauling of insurance systems and laws. Insurance companies attacked Elizur Wright as an impractical theorist who would wreck the entire insurance business. Even the English companies denounced him as a dangerous radical. But Elizur Wright persisted until he secured from the Massachusetts legislature in 1858 an act writing his theories into law. He was made insurance comissioner of that state and influenced its insurance policies for eighteen years. Fifteen years after the British insurance companies had so roundly denounced Wright for radicalism, his principles were written into the British Act of 1870, an act whose provisions are essentially those which have governed the insurance business in Great Britain ever since.

Even the system of railway regulation which is universally accepted today, owes much to a college professor. The early abuses of railway power assuredly needs no elaboration here. The railroad undercover policy could be summed up in Commodore Vanderbilt's classic dictum: "The public be dammed," but outwardly it was virtuously hiding behind the laissez faire subterfuge of "free competition is the public's best safeguard." Admittedly this law of free competition had never been smooth in

railroad practice, but it was left for professor Arthur Twining Hadley of Yale University, in his studies on railroad transportation published in 1885, to smash it for once and all. In that same year Hadley was called before the Senate Committee to advise in drafting the new Interstate Commerce Act. His expert knowledge of railroads influenced greatly our policy of railroad regulation. In 1910, long after becoming president of Yale, he was made chairman of the Railway Securities Commission. The Railway Evaluation Act of 1913 arose out of the report of his commission.

In 1920, J. M. Keynes of Cambridge, one of the greatest financial experts of Europe, wrote, "If I had influence at the United States Treasury, I would not lend one penny to a single one of the present Governments of Europe." His reasons were detailed and explicit; but he and other experts like him were without influence in the affairs of government and our Department of State in the decade after 1920 sanctioned loans of some ten billion dollars to foreign governments and industries. Holders of those securities today are, I suspect, convinced that for once at least a college professor was right.

In 1927 Foster and Catchings, in Business Without a Buyer, warned industry at large that, "There is not ground for confidence that our present prosperity will long continue, or even that gains will prove permanent." If ever experts were explicit, these men were, in pointing out that the people of the United States must consume what they produced or else its equivalent in products of other countries; and that labor must be paid enough to share fully in this consumption or else the sheer greed of exploiters would lead to common ruin. But the industrial managers of this prosperous land were too busy watching stock tickers to heed the warnings of mere theorists.

We were without the advice of economic and political experts when we took the plunge in 1929.

-----Yet there are still "practical" men who think we do not need such advice.

I would not want to trust our government to be run by college professors alone. It needs politicans with ears to the ground to sense the temper of the common man, it needs executives of high order. College professors would fail in either of these roles. But government like business needs the advice of experts, the judgment of men whose lives are lived in political and economic thought. Business under modern conditions is going to have to depend on getting intelligent government.

In England and France no class or profession is held in higher esteem than its government officials; in America most public officials are held in light esteem by most people. Let the business or professional man speak confidentially, and one realizes at one the lack of confidence and respect. The College student smiles with an air of cynicism when integrity and honesty are mentioned as virtues of public officials.

How is this attitude to be explained? Is it that American citizens have less respect for citizenship and government? I believe not. The answer is rather to be found in the lack of training and preparation of American officials for the task which they seek to perform. In England the most gifted boy in school is marked out for official life. When the Rhodes scholarship was established by Decil Rhodes for American students, Rhodes imagined that the granting of Oxford scholarships to the cream of American youth would be sufficient in itself to lead them to higher positions in political life, positions like United States Senator or Representative. The opposite has happened. The sup-

order drawing power of business and the profession has claimed their best efforts. It will always be thus in America until we establish a permanent and expert civil service system such as was established by Gladstone in 1870. Prior to that time England had the same kind of political clearance as we have had in the United States by Will Hays under Harding's administration, Brown under Hoover's administration and Farleyism at the present time.

Comment: The sources of jobs was well called the "Paymaster General instead of the Post-Master General". An independent Civil Service is fundamental from top to bottom. How many of you men are being paid out of the public purse to do something for which you are not trained. Is it more unreasonable to ask a public official to be trained for his task than it is the lawyer, the physician, the teacher, the preacher? The business and other man must serve long apprenticeships before they are entrusted with the responsibility of making decisions with other people's money. Not so in politics. The men who established this government were men trained in government. We have liberated and encouraged men of scientific mind to develop their talent to the end that they might serve the welfare of society.

Two fundamental principles obtained in the thinking of American citizenship, namely, Universal suffrage and Universal education. These are generally accepted as fundamental. A third one must be developed, namely, the responsibility of the government to the people. Lincoln's philosophy of government that no man without that man's consent is true, it does not has a right to govern another
follow that every man is good enough to govern another man with his consent. The requirements to hold office at the present time are those of age and residence. In most cities in the United

States a few men get together and organize a compact and obedient minority and dominate and control primaries and conventions, dictate nominations, capture elections and enjoy the spoils. Men of ability, education, and integrity are not wanted, they might not the play the game. The result is that the men best fitted to control municipal political life, refuse to run for office. They shun the political arena, and let public affairs take care of themselves.

We are spending on education 37 per cent of all municipal revenues, in fact more than all the other cities of the world combined and sending through our colleges more students than half the world, but in practice if not in theory we make education a disqualification for public office.

We talk glibly about democracy breaking down at the bottom among the ignorant, but it must be observed that all attempts at democracy in the past have broken down from the top and there is plenty of evidence to support the statement that we are not free of that danger in the United States.

In some cities the politicians and the gangsters could change positions without changing the conditions of crime and corruption. The murder rate has doubled per thousand since 1900. In some Court the question is not what a man has done, but how many votes can he command among the under world. A study of Mayors would make an interesting and intriguing peice of work. Put in book form it would at once become the best seller in the world. Some those leaders who always give addresses of welcome to every visiting group are in office, some in exile, some in the asylums, some in jail and others who have not yet been tried for some of their acts.

Our municipal taxes have risen to the point where they threaten to bleed industry and have long ago discouraged home

ownership which is one of the chief essentials of social security and peace. The result is that Tax Payers Associations have sprung up and rightly so. Occasionally some one speaks with cynicism of tax payers associations, but it must be remembered that those associations have sprung up because of waste and corruption in political life. The results have been that children have been improperly schooled and tens of thousands of teachers have not been paid. Had the tax payers association of Chicago been organized earlier to prevent the fraud, graft, and corruption which dominated the Republican Mayor, Hale Thompson, the tragic story of its thousand of unpaid teachers and its thousands of unschooled children could never have been told. Had the taxpayers association of New York city had the Democratic Mayor, Jimmy Walker sent into exile long before he was, it would have millions of dollars for its under schooled children.

Comment: Tax Payers Association.

In a larger sphere we see many men elected to congress for their political skill. They find themselves confronted with economic problems of which they have little information or understanding. The result is that lobbies fill congressional halls, and dictate one piece after another of local or class legislation. The right of all to be elected to office is a nice sounding platitude, and makes for dictatorship on the one hand, and the incompetency of the mediocre on the other. Democracy means, not the equal right of all to be elected to office, but ~~the equal right of all to be elected to office,~~ but the equal right and opportunity to all to make themselves fit for office. As it is at the present time democracy must draw its leaders from other fields. That means that those elected ~~overnight~~ overnight develop suddenly into states-

men able to think in terms of nations and centuries. It is illegal to pull teeth, to shave another, to practice medicine, law, or teach without a licence of training and fitness. Plato proposed similar safe-guards almost 4,000 years ago.

We demand of those who are to lead us in the gentle art of war that they be prepared for leadership. Two institutions, namely, West Point the United Military Academy and the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis demand men who are considerably above the average in education and intellegence. We should add a third United States Academy namely, a civil Academy where young men who have been recruited from all over the country in a most careful manner might be trained in the art and science of public administration. Maybe a college degree should be a requirement for entrance. In time a stream of trained administrators would be developed. Men to whom politics is not a racket but a profession. Slowly the ablest would come to the top like cream on milk. That type of Senators and Representatives would constitute bodies who would represent us both as producers and consumers and to adjust us to the complex and technical world in which we live. Political life would be rooted not in some third-rate hotel or beer joint, but in our colleges and Universities, where it properly belongs like medicine, law, teaching, commerce and other professions. It would mean the union of leadership and scholarship which are the onl, basic priniciples upon which democratic government can survive. There is some tendency in that direction as found in courses in five or six of our leading Universities.

One illustration of the College Professor in politics

will help to understand what may be done. Mr. Stone is now a member of the Supreme Court of the United States. President Coolidge, in 1925, appointed his college classmate, Harlan F. Stone who was then dean of the Columbia Law School, as attorney general to clean up the Department of Justice following the Harding regime with Hugh Dougherty as Attorney General.

Mr. Stone exposed not only the scandals of Dougherty but, he brought about such reforms among the police as were tapping, and the use to the third degree. He placed it on a non-political basis which example has been followed most fortunately by every subsequent Attorney Generals, Sargent, Mitchell, and Cummings the present Attorney General. Mr Stone demanded that that phrase of the police force used for investigation of crime should be college bred. When he entered office only 16 per cent were trained/ when he left 85 per cent had college degrees. Of course those detectives were called "boy detectives" and boy scout detectives in derision. It was those same college bred men who captured our most desparate armed criminals in recent years.

The proposal is one which will require many generations to develop; but the plan is feasable, judicious, and progressive, and will meet the need which will make democratic government possible.

Paper #17.

# PUPPY LOVE

A PAPER READ BEFORE THE TERRE HAUTE

LITERARY CLUB

FEBRUARY 17, 1936.

J.L.LORD

# PUPPY LOVE

Slowly down the wooded path they strolled. In early spring with life teeming all about them, - glad, joyous birds and blossoming flowers, - everywhere happiness. But not for them this happiness, for he with drooping head walked silently down the wooded way, heavy hearted, chagrined, beaten by a twist of fate. And she at his side knew not the trouble nor the cause for gloom. He was not happy. That she knew, and knowing this she also drooped her head and walking silently at his side bespoke his gloom. Somehow she felt herself the cause, - with feminine intuition she sensed it. Eagerly she watched him for a look of approbation. An hour of steady plodding through wood and open field and he had given her no look. He did not deign a look of scorn. Even that she felt would be better than this moody silence. Somehow she was to blame. Of this she felt sure, for as the onrushing swoop of the leaderless cavalcade had neared her she looked and seeing Dave stepped to his side for safety. Some riders had laughed aloud causing Dave's cheeks to flush in in anger and then to blanch. With a gentleman's forbearance he had handed the reins of his saddle horse to a friend and had said quietly to her, "Come, Sally".

Thus leaving the noisy, roving throng they walked at first rapidly and now for an hour this tortuous trail. Weary but unquestioning she stayed with him until at last he dropped more than sat on a mossy mound at the foot of a large tree. Sitting beside him she waited for a word. Straightly he looked at her, and with a courageous effort began, "Sally! Your father Dan ... " and over-

## PUPPY LOVE

Slowly down the wooded path they strolled. In early spring with life teeming all about them, - glad, joyous birds and blossoming flowers, - everywhere happiness. But not for them this happiness, for he with drooping head walked silently down the wooded way, heavy hearted, chagrined, beaten by a twist of fate. And she at his side knew not the trouble nor the cause for gloom, He was not happy. That she knew, And knowing this she also drooped her head and walking silently at his side bespoke his gloom. Somehow she felt herself the cause, - with feminine intuition she sensed it. Eagerly she watched him for a look of approbation. An hour of steady plodding through wood and open field and he had given her no look. He did not deign a look of scorn. Even that she felt would be better than this moody silence. Somehow she was to blame. Of this she felt sure, for as the onrushing swoop of the leaderless cavalcade had neared her she looked and seeing Dave stepped to his side for safety. Some riders had laughed aloud causing Dave's cheeks to flush in in anger and then to blanch. With a gentleman's forbearance he had handed the reins of his saddle horse to a friend and had said quietly to her, "Come, Sally".

Thus leaving the noisy, roving throng they walked at first rapidly and now for an hour this tortuous trail. Weary but unquestioning she stayed with him until at last he dropped more than sat on a mossy mound at the foot of a large tree. Sitting beside him she waited for a word. Straightly he looked at her, and with a courageous effort began, "Sally! Your father Dan ... " and over-

come again, unable to speak, lowered his head to his knees and cupped his hands about his face as if afraid of and hurt by all the beauty of the Spring about him. Quietly and sympathetically Sally snuggled her lithe little body close to him and reaching up kissed the only uncovered portion of his cheek she could find.

It may have been hours afterward for all Dave and Sally knew that Mac arrived. For Mac, the friend to whom Dave had handed the reins of his saddle horse, had finally worried because Dave had not returned. Mounting his own horse and leading Dave's he had searched for Dave, and had found him as we left him on the mossy mound at the base of the tree.

"Cheer up," he called, "They've all decided they were wrong."

"No, Mac," said Dave. "Leave my horse and take her. I'm through."

And thus Dave and Sally parted: parted for three long years,- three long years in which Dave heard nothing of Sally and Sally saw nothing of Dave.

- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

Mac, the boon friend of Dave and lover of thorobreds, took the little English Setter, Sally, back with him to the starting point and put her in his crate. He left her there as he followed the other heats of the all-age finals of this amateur field trial. He watched high-geared machines embodied in the pedigreed stock of pointers and setters out loose on the course and guided by their handlers sent far out in a burst of speed to the very horizon of the hills to search for the elusive little quail. He had seen Sally thus sent out. He had seen her reach the horizon, search the cover on the hillside and

in the valleys: he had seen her flash to a point while going at such a speed that only the most sensitive nose would have caught the scent: he had seen her back her coursing mate faultlessly: he had seen her stand steady to wing and shot: he had seen too so much of the heart and soul of her hunt that he had begun to fear for the one, two, three placement of his own entries in this trial. And then he had seen his friend, his sporting competitor, Dave, handling his single entry, coming down to the fag end of the heat, a sure place if not a sure win, grow sick at heart, hand him his horse and leave the course.

And why all this sickness at heart? Sally had <u>blinked</u> her birds! Other defects might be overlooked by the judges, by the handlers, by the breeders, and by the gallery. A potterer's gait, a low head, a poor location, poor backing, a tendency to charge at shot and wing, a lack of intensity on point, failure to find, lack of range, difficulty in handling, even an occasional giving tongue, - any or all these might be condoned but <u>blinking</u>, no, never. The Judges made a line through a name on the score card, the breeders looked askance, the trainers hoped for better luck with some other bright prospect, when the poorly informed part of the gallery unwittingly aided the ill-willed part of the gallery by riding their horde of horses pell-mell at the pointing dog so that he dropped his tail, left his point, and sought shelter at the side of his handler. This is blinking. This is the unforgivable; this is the unforgettable; this is the unredeemable; this is the sin par excellence in field trial experiences. Even though this Charge of the Light Brigade may have been engineered by some jealous competitor who, sensing some

winner other than his own, catches the field marshal off guard and rushes in ostensibly to see the dog on point carries with him the host of uninitiated until they are all virtually astride the pointing dog and thus confounding him 'til he seeks safety with his master. it is called blinking. Sally at the end of a dazzling heat had blinked! Dave had heard the guffaw, had seen the look askance, had noted the judges pencil their score cards. Dave had left with Sally and had been found by Mac. Mac now had Sally.

In Mad's kennels were several good dogs. These were regularly worked and sent to trials but Sally stayed at home. She grew fat and lazy. Idle hours they were for her and wondering hours they were for Mac. Somehow he couldn't bring himself to destroy her or to be rid of her. There was a bond, a feeling, and always a question. He kept her on through the spring, the summer, the fall. Dave had always babied her so. What if she were to run with the pack, so to speak, and now at her increasing age be made to stand on her own - even fight for her food? work with dogs that creeping in stole her point? ridden close to and round about while holding point? The challenge was there and Mac had sporting blood. He was willing to risk the expense of thorough training to get to laugh some day at the ones who had looked askance. His trainer was willing to make the try and so unknown to others Mac sent her South for her winter's training. She was soon in fine fettle but was entered in no meets. The program was being carried out. It included training in Canada in the summer on prairie chickens.

Gradually all shyness left her until Mac and the trainer felt that she was ready again. But would judges give her an even break.[7]

of this they were afraid. Mac was wise to prejudices. To offset such, he went to Dave's wife and from her secured Sally's registration papers. These he sent in to the F.D.S.B. to have the dog's name changed, hoping of course that no one who knew the dog would note the change. In this he evidently succeeded as no one wrote him and none came to twit him about the change.

Again minor field trials were entered and Great Kate was frequently the winner and regularly placed. At all the trials where Great Kate was entered Mac or the trainer saw to it that in the heat which she ran the field Marshal was up in front and on the job so that no wild stampede got too close.

Slowly and carefully she was brought through the minor field trials and up into the major trials. In these she frequently placed and sometimes won. The build-up was slow but carefully and surely done. In the Great Kate you saw no timid Sally shrink to her handler's protection at the onrush of an eager gallery's response to the call "Point", "Judges! Point!"

Great Kate was now in fast company where only good and fast dogs ran: where seldom was the dog made to stand under such riding as spelled her first doom, for here the penalty for a riding break was a request to leave the course. Anxiously Mac watched the results of the major meets having in mind The National and Dave. For Dave had left the sport and Mac.

Would Great Kate receive an invitation to The National to be held in March? Mac wondered, wished and received it.

- - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

Mac knew The National Field Trials as few knew them. He had followed as a spectator, had been entered as a contester, and so thoroughly respected was his knowledge and fairness that he had been asked on occasion to serve as a judge. Little wonder then that he fully appreciated and prized the invitation to enter Great Kate. The field would be made up of some twenty odd thorobreds who had proved their worth in many major meets and had been deemed so worthy in speed, range, nose, manners, etc., that they were considered the best and their owners had been asked to enter them.

Mac was happy but his happiness knew a limit. For Mac when he paused to think thought of Dave - Dave who had not been about in this his one time special sport for now three seasons. Dave, who had been hurt in heart when his Sally, stretched from a derby season into an all-age run, had seemed to blink, was missed by Mac. Mac knew from Dave's wife that Dave had not in all these years so much as torn the wrappers from the accumulating issues of The Field, official publication of the sport. This hurt Mac and Dave's wife and they knew it was hurting Dave even more. Many times they had talked it over. Many times each had almost broken past the dogged wall which had been thrown up but each had in the end honored Dave's silent request.

To the lumber marts of the Southland came an Englishman. And Dave in Tennessee knowing the value to his company of receiving the contract which this Englishman was empowered to make thought much of how to get it. In March this purchasing agent came to Dave. Three days of going over stock, and prices, and shipping facilities, and all the wearying details seemed about to fray the

almost shattered nerves of this Englisher who had now gone through some months of this business. Weary and restless in the midafternoon of the third day he pushed aside the folders of quotations and looking up at Dave said, "Hi say, old Topper, don't you Bally Americans 'ave hany fun. Hit seems you wear yourselves out with business hintensity. What say, can you spare a day for fun?"

Dave sensing a kill in business opportunity quickly grasped by pushing the papers aside. He laughed and asked, "What'll you have? I'm at your service, Sir."

"You know," the Briton said, "Down at the 'otel last night a man stopped hover who 'ad two dogs in a trailer. 'e said 'e was taking them to a field trial about sixty miles from 'ere. Hi told 'im that Hi hoften rode to 'ounds at 'ome. You know, the bally bloo' laughed h'and told me that Hi 'adna' seen nothing yet. Hand hall hin hall we 'ad quite 'ha merry hargument. Hi 'ave your figures hin mind. Think you that you could carry me over to see the merry chase?"

Unnoticed Dave winced, then smiled and answered, "Sure, I'll take you."

The two spent the rest of the afternoon looking for riding paraphenalia for the Englishman and in arranging the trip generally.

This was a business in which old Dave had no heart but must be merry.

Up early the next morning Dave called at the hotel for his guest, drove through the early spring morning to the field trial scene, warmed a little at an old friend's greeting, saw to it that a good saddle horse was secured for His Majesty, and too hurt to follow hired a man to go beside the Englishman. He stayed at headquarters

answering the ,"Well, well, Who's here? Old Dave himself back again at The National. Must have worked his way out of the depression!" He joked with them and almost wished he could be himself again. He ran into Mac but Mac had something to conceal and didn't tarry long. So he spent the days, - seeing to it that the Englishman was having a good time and that he himself stayed out of it as much as possible.

The drawings having been made the night before the trials began the Englishman rode out with his hired chaperon when the first brace was set down at eight in the morning. "Just two?" he queried. "Why we run hour 'ounds hin packs". But as the two dogs were unleashed and went whippet-like away, as the handlers mounted their steeds and following guided their dogs to right, to left, away; as the judges followed the handlers; as the marshal followed the judges holding in check the gallery, allowing only the owners to ride in front of him and behind the judges: all this appealed to his English love of formality.

Three hour heats they ran. Each dog had his opportunity to show his worth. To go strong hearted to the end or to start out merrily,only to fold up and pottering along, come wearily near his handler at the end. Heat after heat was run. The gallery changed somewhat in personnel. Some rode to see their own dogs run and left: others stayed to see two or three braces: while a few shifting in their saddles followed near the judges for all the heats. The Englishman missed not a heat. Keenly he followed learning much that many of the older followers who did not stick it out never knew. He might even have been accused of wearing himself out with too much sporting hintensity!

The last brace was up. Great Kate, the English setter, we know. Her bracemate was General W, a pointer. Here, the gallery knew, was a pair. Tensity displayed itself among them by their jockeying to be up front. General W was a small pointer dog unbeaten in many starts. Great Kate had come slowly but now seemed to be capable of leading the field. Pointer or setter preferred - the age old moot question up again to be 'finally' settled; and being settled would but wait another year to bob up again to be 'forever' settled, with probably a reversal of the first answer.

The judges score card in hand called, "Is Kate ready, Ray?" "Is the General ready, Tom?"

"Ready, sir," each handler called.

"All set, gentlemen. Cut them loose," they ordered.

With a "Hike, Kate" and a "Hike, Gen" each of the two handlers had sent his dog out.

Like a flash the two dogs were off. Kate with her long, easy stride and Gen with his shorter, quicker strides were each a match for the other. Each seemed to sense a worthy foe at its side. Out a hundred yards they veered apart. They had scarcely seen each other. They were looking for game. Out, out they went to birdy territory. Birds there were here,too, birds aplenty for dogs that had noses. Five minutes out and Tom called, "Point!" There stood the General head up, tail straightened, body stiffened,scarce breathing, as his sensitive nostrils pointed to a little clump of covering. The judges rode up. Tom dismounted and as he started in to flush the birds one of the judges called for him to wait. Kate swinging near was asked to back.

Ray swung her near the General and as she came ~~near~~ she, too, froze in her tracks. "Beautiful pointing and beautiful backing" - , rippled through the crowd. Again Tom went in to flush. As two birds rose Tom fired. The General stood staunch at wing and shot. Tom turning ordered his dog on. The crowd moved up but still Kate stood. Ray had been ready to move on but noting Kate rather doubtfully called, "Point! Judges, Point!" Mac squirmed in his seat but turned to the marshal who held up his hands to the gallery to stop. Half quizzical they watched as Ray went in to flush. Out came the birds, - a whole covey. Kate steady to wing and shot was cheered lustily as she was sent on. Here they sensed was bird work. Here was what they had come far and stayed long to see. This was to be no anti-climax. For looking they saw the two dogs racing out far and apart stop almost simultaneously on point evidently on singles which had just been flushed. The judges each went to a dog to report later to the other on the results of the point observed. The Britisher getting a chance to approach Mac because the marshal couldn't be in two places edged up to speak to this owner of so wonderful a dog and to be at a vantage point to see Kate at close range. There she stood head high, a fore-foot up, tail at an angle of forty-five degrees, nose fixed up wind, with the sun's rays painting her sides a creamy gold and the tan on her face and the black splotches of her sides making her a picture of beauty indeed. Her location was good, her staunchness at wing and shot perfection. "Gad", he said as they moved on.

Two hours of this: perfect working, perfect pointing, perfect backing, wide of range, swift of pace, judgment in searching territory, and superiority to all that had gone before but no difference here.

Then came the break. A cold drizzling rain came in to make its test. Fifteen minutes of this and the weeks were thoroly soaked. Where Kate merely shook her coat, the General began to shiver. His handler urged him on and he responded nobly but it was too much to expect that he continue as before. Nor did Kate have any luck though she reached out hunting diligently all the while. Not until within the last five minutes of the heat was there a point. Then was the faithful gallery really rewarded for Kate hurdling an upraised log stiffened in mid-air and turning her head to one side alighted rigidly on point. Even the cheer that went up before she was called upon to stand steady to wing and shot did not disturb her. "A blinker," scoffed Mac to himself, "A blinker, eh! Wait 'til I get back home to razz those birds who ruin good dogs by their bad manners!"

The rest of the heat did not matter. It was a mere formality until the judges ordered, "Take them up", and turned in the report to the club that Great Kate had won.

Dave was ready to go home. Playing solitaire in a side room had become a little burdensome. But the Englishman wanted to see it through. He wanted to attend the banquet and to see the presentation of the cup. To him it was a part of the formalities and was as vital a part of the show as the running. Mac, the conniver, was with him in this and had secured the tickets.

The banquet over, the speeches finished, the president arose calling for the handler, the dog and Mac. The handler took his check. Mac reaching for the proferred cup said, "Gentlemen, you are in error. The D.M.Smith on your program is not the Mac Smith you are trying to honor. It is Dave M.Smith, my old friend, who once

entrusted to my care an English setter which I named Great Kate but which I now return to him as his Sally."

That evening as Dave and the Englishman returned it mattered not to Dave that he had been told to have the contract ready to sign in the morning, that the best of Sally's first born was to reside in Merry England, or that 'you bloody Hamericans take your business too seriously and your sports too hemotionally': what did matter was that there happily again at his side sat Sally, cuddling her lithe little body up to him and anon and anon when he leaned toward her reaching up to kiss his cheek.

ON BEING A PUBLIC DEPUTY

Paper #18

The Hoosier Literary Club
February 24, 1936
Louis R. Austin

The political primary campaign of 1932 found me wallowing in its muck. The Democratic party seemed on the threshhold of a resounding victory. Little did the National Democratic Committee know of myself as a faithful son in Vigo County parading the political platforms, bellowing against entrenched wealth and picturing the plight of the honest poor. But the local central committee was offered my services. The candidates for prosecuting attorney showed great interest, but each demanded a statement of the direction in which I intended throwing my support. Neutrality was an unpopular theory of conduct. My choice lay between two machine candidates and a semi-independent. But since the independent candidates usually spend their money for advertisement purposes, I had to choose between the party machine in power or the one trying to gain power. Candidates for public office who scream through the medium of the radio and newspaper that they owe no allegiance to any political boss or party machine usually belong to that minority organization seeking to obtain the spoils in the hands of the majority. Any voter with a particle of knowledge of politics becomes gravely suspicious of such candidates. Such misleading information is a sample of what the citizenship may expect if that candidate is elected. A political war machine which is able to remain in power and win elections must produce favorable results, must in the great majority of instances be fair, reward the faithful adherents and produce candidates who have the confidence of a majority of the voters. The group looking in will promise anything and everything to everybody to win. I chose the former.

The machine candidate was nominated and elected. I worked hard and diligently in the field without promise of any

reward, I was shortly notifed of my appointment as a deputy to the prosecuting attorney. What a sensation! The prancing of a young colt is a mild idea of my behavior. Now, I was an important public official--one of the select members of my party, and justice would now flow like the Amazon. Surely, senators and governors would greet me with utmost respect and my fellow citizens would regard me as a worthy member of society. I had arrived. Between the date of my appointment and the day I was sworn to perform my duties, grave questions began to form. How far would my naive principles of honesty go? What would integrity and courage and fairness mean? Had the time come when I must bow in reverence to a crooked "Boss"? Would I accept bribes, violate the public confidence, and trade in the vices of the community? I had been taught that all politicians were public enemies and officeholders their lieutenants. What was there in my past life that the scandalmongers and whispering sheets could dust off and exhibit to the public for inspection? Had I been unprofessional? Did I ever commit a moral wrong? How about my religious faith--always a vulnerable spot? Was I equipped to serve the public? It was with some trepidation that I assumed my duties January 1, 1935.

The deputy assigned to the city court where misdemeanors are disposed of, was absent from the city for two months, so New Year's day found me employed by Vigo County to carry on the aged irreverent tradition in the administration of justice for drunkards, prostitutes, transients, vagrants, petty thieves, adulterers, suspects, mothers-in-laws, delinquent husbands, and a host of other malefactors who did not quite understand the rules and regulations and by-laws of society. City court is a clearing house for the petty offender, a merry-go-round for the habitual wrongdoer. It also operates more or less as a feeding ground for the fixer, the person who can say a word to the prosecutor or the judge. There are very few trials, no juries.

hispering in the ear has become an art. This emotional plea is sometimes flavored with the odor of alcoholic beverages mixed with a little garlic and halitosis. It must be low enough that others cannot hear, yet loud enough to reach the ear of the prosecutor or judge. The plea may be for a poor fellow with a large family on relief who took a few drinks too many. It does not matter that this is his fourth trip to the witness chair. After all, he is a friend of "Johnny's", and "Johnny" is a power in the first ward. The sentence is suspended or the case dismissed. I do not deprecate the result. The purpose behind a city court makes for such results, although the practice establishes a mode of conduct repugnant to the average citizen unacquainted with the problems at hand. An enlightened judge and prosecutor would, thru trial and error, reach the same results without a fixer but the tradition seems too ancient and reverent to break.

It is evident that to jail them all, would, of course, be sheer nonsense both from a social and economic point of view. City court cannever hope to be the reformer extraordinary. Reformation of human nature is a task which belongs in the realm of God and the psychologist. A mere jail sentence does not stop a drunkard from drinking, or a young man from beating hismother-in-law into a pulp, or an unemployed, poverty-stricken man from stealing coal or corn to warm and feed the bodies of his children. City court simply acts as a policeman with a club; the policeman being the sentence, and the suspension acting as the club. The occasional occupant of a cell in the jail knows that if he violates the court's order before the sentence suspension expires, he will receive his thirty days. The suspended sentence does seem to transform him into a model of virtue for a short period of time because the next time he says, "Guilty, ", his former sentence has just been lifted. It is evident that

to send him to jail or the penal farm is to tax the public without benefit to either.

City court is also a place of amusement. Some cities broadcast the proceedings. The courtroom provides ample space for the stove-pipe philosophers seeking shelter from wintry winds and summer employment. Here they find a substitute for the nickel show, unfortunately at the expense of members of their own class. One day a negro was arrested and held for vagrancy and investigation because he wore a new suit of underwear. When he proved the ownership of this luxury, he was released. Very often a middle aged woman appears with a pair of bulging, baggy, colored eyes, as beautiful as a portrait from the brush of our foremost artists.

"My son-in-law got drunk and hit me".

Two weeks later she pleads to have the case dismissed. The stock excuse of the drunkard is, "Listen, judge, I've gotta job, and if you'll give me another chance and treat me right, I promise I won't be back again". Several weeks later, he sheepishly appears before the court like achild confronted by his teacher after playing hookey from school. I have even seen some of them appear in court after a continuance to receive sentence in an intoxicated condition.

One proverbial offender appeared recently before the court charged with contempt of the court's order to provide for his wife. He had been jailed many times for intoxication, failure to provide, petty larceny. Apparently an over-grown boy, simple, red-haired, and as effective an actor as ever played John Barleycorn, he has the sympathy of his audience. His wife has lost the semblance of her sex. A small, shrivelled up-partially paralyzed, misfit, she seeks the protection of the courts that she might exist. Her wish, is, of course, granted. But her husband, probably driven to distraction, evidently overlooked making provision for her from his government re-

lief check. He is ordered to appear. He wears his overalls and sweater. His wife appears in her unfortunate condition, dirty, an old, worn-out buttonless coat, tied with safety pins, and stringy hair.

Judge: "Been kicking up your heels again, Alva?"
Alva: "Not so much, judge", accompanied with a forced laugh.
Judge: "Well, will you bring in your check next time you get it?"
Alva: "Anything you say, judge, is all right with me."
Judge: "All right, Alva."

Alva returns home to his wife.

The number of men who fail to provide for their families with what little they do have is appalling. Divorces are a significant cause. Their families mean nothing to them, no more than a group of stray curs roaming about the city. When they are asked to give their reason to feed their wives and children, the inevitable answer is, "Well, I gotta eat too." An analysis of the typical case finds the delinquent husband living promiscuously with another woman, and oftimes next down the street. Furthermore, a man can always literally beat his wife with impunity. The extent of the beating is immaterial, and it makes no difference that she is pregnant or sick. He knows that with a continuance or two and a few pleasantries toward his wife, she will consent to another chance. She appears at the prosecutor's office. "I want my man released and my case dismissed". No amount of argument to the contrary can change her decision. But the next occasion finds the police and the prosecutor only mildly interested in her woes.

A great many cases never get to the court room. Men are allowed by law to get drunk in their ownhomes, but the police oftimes respond to the terrified pleas of wives to jail their husbands over night. In the morning, the prosecutor must dismiss the case. If the police find them drunk in the streets and able to talk, they are driven home and left there unless the wife objects.

All of what I have thus far written about our city court system is no criticism, nor any demand for reformation. It is an essential part of our court system. Given social and economic conditions as we now have them, with civilization so far behind in its advancement, the city court, meets its responsibilities with as much efficienty as we may expect. Our quarrel is with humanity, religion, our fellow men. They have failed in their responsibilities.

After two months of this novel experience, I was transferred to the Circuit Court to assist in the prosecution of felonies, in which position I still find myself. Here, of course, the atmosphere changes. Dignity, decorum and rules of conduct prevail. Juries play an important part. Lawyers shout with extraordinary volume. Twelve people sit calmly by, probably annoyed with the vocalic din. Strangers to our proceedure would doubtless believe some of the trials a mild form of insanity. Before a man is tried, the prosecutor carefully sifts the evidence presented by the investigating officers. If the evidence is insufficient, no charges are preferred. In the great majority of cases, however, legal confessions are presented and trials are unnecessary. If the offender is a first timer, he relies on the mercy of the court. If not, he bargains for his plea of guilty or goes to trial.

On the one side sits the long arm of the law with its prosecutor and peace officers. On the other side, sits a lawyer and an alleged criminal. Flanked on all sides of the defendant are his wife and children and oftimes his parents. Tears and common clothes are necessary adjuncts to the defense appearance. Almost 100% of the defendants who appear for trial have been convicted of similar or other crimes in the past. They resort to a sympathetic jury or a technical break to set them free. Oftimes, they do not take the witness

stand on their own behalf. This strategy prevents the prosecutor from producing his past record to the jury. Neither can the prosecutor in his argument, comment on that fact to the jury. But in every case thus far tried, the jury has convicted where the defendant failed to testify on his own behalf.

Our experience has shown that in one type of case, the jury will not convict. On two occasions we presented a woman of ill-repute upon the alter of justice. Each presented the problem of moral turpitude. Men with automobiles and a little money made their acquaintance, indulged in illicit relations with them, and when the sun broke thru the clouds, found themselves materially the losers. Apparently, not disturbed by their own callous conduct, they insisted upon prosecution, even tho they did not come into court with clean hands. Technically guilty of criminal violations, a principle transcending the written word comes into play in defense of the woman--the principle of female integrity. The facts apparently revolt against the inner emotions of the average persons who instinctively sensed foul play, and the women were acquitted. Those decisions have made unwritten laws by which we now govern ourselves.

One of the criticisms leveled at my conduct as a servant of the people, has not been that of dishonesty, nor dominance by a political boss. Unusual as it may seem to the general public, my experience thus far has been free of those evils attributed to the political office-holder. In fact, I have a deep sense of respect for the efficiency and character of the great majority of my associates in the County Court house. But the quarrel which many people have with my conduct is sympathy for the less fortunate. The strong and rigid enforcement of the criminal laws has never appealed to me as a universal rule. Their strict observance has always created quite the contrary opinion. That justice should be tempered with mercy has been a cardinal principle

mybelief, but it has evinced such declarations as weak and soft. t I feel a deeper sense of responsibility to my community than the mere incarceration of a person whom I do not believe to be a vicious criminal. I see beyond the wretched creature who cringes before the strong arm of the law, a vista of grim battles with subsistence and society and life itself. Those who demand penal rewards have never been near a penitentiary. They cannot envisage the torture of mind nd body, nor the helplessness of those left behind. They have never left their homes and business even for a brief period to visit in the rowels and filth and poverty of those whom God has not provided with bountiful life. You are no doubt as much acquainted with the socio- ical problems involved as myself. A great number of our so called riminals do not understand what civic responsibility means. Their inds do not comprehend the seriousness of social control and regula- n. Stealing is to them no sin. They have taken things ever since they were able to reach. /Immorality is no offense. They accept it in the nature of things. A great many earn a few pennies for bread by wheeling a home made richety cart across vacant lands and empty prop- rties in search for junk and rags. If they see some valuable wire or tals which they can sell, they take it along, only to find themselves in jail. If they see any coal along the railroad tracks they fill their cart or basket and take it home, if they are not first arrested. automobile, which has become a necessity to the average person is a luxury of life. The boys and young men think nothing of tak- ing other persons automobile for a ride--only to find themselves in the penitentiary. The recent statute on Vehicle Taking has done much to our penal institutions with the youth of the country.

When a young man, arrested for stealing tires, but out on bail walked into the office with a very young wife and baby, it touched me. He had some work. His employer informed me his job was waiting. Deep beneath the watery eyes of the innocent wife, lay

prayer which only a divine being could have placed there. I asked the court for a suspended sentence, but because of other circumstances which I believed adequately explained, he refused. The boy jumped his bond, was later apprehended, and upon a plea of guilty was sentenced to five years in the penitentiary. But I can still see that prayer in the eyesof his wife, the helplessness of her position with a tiny baby, and I do not believe that her husband's problem was solved or society benefited. And my best bet is that the county wherever she lives is providing for her support.

The negro finds the softest spot in my administration of justice. Poor, uneducated, unprotected, and a victim of circumstances, of which the white people must accept the responsibility, he is prosecuted without feeling for the deep and sensitive emotions of that race. When a negro is arrested, he needs the protection of the law enforcement officials, not their intolerable abuse.

But as sympathetic as I feel toward the criminal of the [illegible]r less harmless type, so does the vicious criminal find me cold and emphatically severe. The user of deadly weapons, the drunken driver, the brute with instincts of the beast, have my heartiest endorsement for removal from society. They demonstrate that they are not prepared to live in a normal law-abiding community and sympathy for their suffering can find no place in the mind of a reasonable person. Nature has so mangled their perception of the orderly processes of life, that their removal does not strike the emotional chord. One feels that a [illegible] has been removed from an otherwise healthy body.

Not being the prosecuting attorney, however, my sentiments [illegible]ot the established rules of the office. In fact, I make no pre- [illegible] using my sentiments to influence the conduct of the affairs of [illegible]ffice. Altho, there are almost no limitations for individual [illegible]ve in the city court, in the circuit court, I conduct myself

nder the strict orders of the prosecuting attorney. The purpose for this explanation lies in the fact that tho you may utterly disagree with my points of view as a servant of the people, you may not be apprehensive of the criminal situation.

During the time that we are not actively engaged in the trial of criminal cases, We must appear in all of the courts of the county in one role or another. In the Justice of the Peace courts, we represent the State of Indiana in petty offenses similar to the city court. In the Superior courts, we must appear by law in all divorce cases where one of the parties is not represented by counsel. In the probate courts, we represent the alleged insane where interested persons seek to be appointed guardians. In the Circuit court we also appear in pauper hospitalization cases. The moments that we remain in the office are taken up mostly with people seeking information about civil, rather than criminal matters. In the great majority of cases, the most trivial of domestic or neighborly problems are presented. So many people believe that the prosecutor's office is the public depository for every ill, whether it be to arrest or embarass a neighbor or some member of their own family. A dog is killed, a fence is broken, a son misbehaves towards his parents, an elderly person is threatening or cursing the passersby, a roomer left and so did a blanket, some tools are missing, a brother is suspected.--"That old man slanders me ever day"--"How can I get relief job?"--The trustee don't feed my family"..."Ye better make him keep his chickens off my lane"..."He sold me a mule and it went plumb dead on me"..."Why, he's been drunk for four weeks right at home"..."They want to take my furniture back"..."I just loandd him my boots, and he sold 'em." "Well, I don't know, I didn't see him take it, but I gotta kinda idea that if you'd search his house, you'd find the stuff". It runs the whole gamut of statute books.

Oftimes the office becomes a court of domestic relations trying to solve the many perplexing problems which confront the family who must wash their linen in public. Oftimes, we must contend with people whom we know are suffering from dementia, who are extremely nervous or upset, who are sick, worried, despondent. We contact a fair cross-section of the other half, and as the days pass, all of the value of this experience will become clearer. Time will mature my philosophy of life by dipping into it now and then some of the lessons of the last year.

When one is so close to the object he seeks to observe, he sometimes becomes confused with the myriads of points to which his eyes are drawn. He sees the little things and misses the purpose behind the entire object. Especially is this true in all partisan activities whether it be politics, crime, economics, government or religion. One can only observe the whole by detaching himself, and, from a distance, take, what has popularly become called, "the long view". So I find myself in the preparation of this paper, a nose length from the subject I tried to discuss. I see all of the particular events which occur, but yet, I do not feel that I have that maturity of thought so essential to clear vision. That will come when my work as public servant ceases. When I justify the present system of city courts, it is the best my intelligence can do under the circumstances. When I defend ~~the~~ a more merciful attitude toward crime, in a crime-ridden country, on behalf of the weak and the poor and the defenceless, I do so because of an inhereht belief that the attitude is part and parcel of a divine purpose, and because of the practical belief that the better half only too often escape their just punishment. Ideas are molded habits of mind. I have toyed with only a few in this paper, and if and when life is kind enough to serve me with a fresh platter of new and matured thoughts on my present experiences, I shall be glad to continue my ideas on being a public deputy. (E.d)

Paper #19.

Benjamin Franklin.

a paper

read

before

The Terre Haute Literary Club,

March 2nd, 1936,

by

Daniel L. Harmon.

# BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

## Introductory.

Benjamin Franklin was a man of many parts. He not only was interested in many fields of human endeavor but was an expert in each and every field. I shall sketch in this paper, one or two points or stories dealing with each of his principal vocations, and then perhaps stress his influence in the field of science. To avoid the necessity of interrupting the thread of the story to give the source of each quotation, I shall append a bibliography which will give credit where credit is due. However since one retains a part of all that he has read and heard and molds those parts into his own unconscious thoughts, I beg forgiveness ere I start of any authority whom I may have unintentionally ignored.

## About The Man.

Benjamin is the first and perhaps the greatest of our self made men. Some of these characteristic Americans have risen to great heights in politics, some in business, some in science, and some in two or three different branches of human endeavor. But Franklin achieved not only wealth and the reputation of a diplomat and statesman but also made of himself an accomplished scholar and linguist, a world famed man of letters, a philosopher, a newspaper publisher and molder of public opinion, an educator, and an investigator and discoverer in the field of science. His father, Josiah Franklin, wanted Benjamin to enter the ministry. However his own limited financial status and the conscientious duty he felt to provide for the remainder of his large family made him change his plans for the precocious Ben. Two years of schooling was all the formal education the father could afford. Hence most of Benjamin's

mental training was acquired under his own rigid plans of self education. One incident will bring out the typw and extent of this self imposed mental discipline. During a written debate with a friend named Collins, Franklin's correspondence fell into his father's hands. Josiah pointed out to the boy how Collins excelled in the mastery of language and expression. A hint is sufficient for a genius. In his own writings Franklin tells how, about this time, he came into possession of the third volume of The Spectator. He read it and was thrilled by the elegant phraseology. Then he took paper and pen and jotted down the thoughts from a chapter at a time. He would lay these notes away for several days. Then he would attempt to elaborate these thoughts in his own words. He would compare his product with the original, note mistakes, and then repeat the process. This explains his wonderful mastery of the language in written prose.

Physically Franklin was a rather large man, about five feet ten inches tall and always stout tending toward corpulence in old age. His physique was inherited from a long line of blacksmith ancestors and developed in the rugged climate of Boston. His one great athletic attainment was swimming. Until past forty years of age he spent many hours in the water, practicing and excelling in all forms of swimming. He even wrote a set of instructions for fancy and trick swimming. He had a plan for allowing himself to be towed across the English Channel by means of a large kite but he never carried it out. While engaged in swimming and daily airings in the nude, his active mind evolved a theory of cause and effects, precautions and cure, for colds. These were never accepted by the physicians but they are worthy of study. Franklin's super strength enabled him to carry more print forms,ink,etc., than his fellow workmen. Even when in business for himself he made all his own ink,cut his own wood engravings, set type, and ran the heavy hand presses. He was never in a hurry and yet he was full of

ambition. He seems to have been without irritatibility and excitability. All his projects were planned, even to getting married. His anger when aroused, was deliberate, calculating, and judicious. Contentment seemed to have been an inherited trait. After he had ~~achie~~ achieved financial independence, in his early forties, this contentment and reposeful attitude toward everything caused him to lead a sedentary life. This brought on the gout and the stone, but his strong body enabled him to survive these attacks and live to the ripe old age of eighty four. He was born January 17, 1706 and died April 17, 1790.

About His Morals and Religion.

Franklin prepared for himself in his early twenties, a "Moral Code of Necessary Virtues". This included thirteen worthy virtues as follows: 1-Temperance, 2-Silence, 3-Order, 4-Resolution, 5-Frugality, 6-Industry, 7-Sincerity, 8-Justice, 9Moderation, 10-Cleanliness, 11-Tranquility, 12-Chastity, and 13-Humility. This code with comments thereon he carried with him the rest of his life. He went through a course of training on these virtues taking them one at a time and stressing each for a week. Thus he made four complete of disciplinary applications of them per year. He seems to have mastered most of them. One, namely Order, he never could master to his own satisfaction in his business endeavors. And the twelfth, Chastity, he admits violating often, but he excused this on the ground that he was only human limited by his Creator in his attributes and hence not to be blamed severely if he slipped. Under Sincerity he must have developed a kindred virtue, Frankness, for that was always one of his most marked characteristics. During his first residence in London one might say he led a really wicked life. He forgot entirely during this stay, his supposed fiancee,

Deborah Read. He took up all the philosophies and religions then prevalent in Europe. It was from this sampling of many sects and beleifs, combined with the hard Puritanical training in his father's house, that his final religious attitude was developed. And it was only after his definite decision to take an active part as a leader in Pennsylvania, after his return, and his appreciation that his days of violating the virtue of Chastity would have to end, that he returned to Debby Read, now a deserted wife, and "took her to wife" as the records describe his marriage.

It seems strange that one with a background of all religions from New England Puritanism to atheism and back to a rather abstract personal christianity, should have been consulted and his advice followed by many different established sects in later years. It is said that John Carroll was appointed Bishop of Baltimore at his suggestion to the Papal Nuncio at Paris. Carroll and Franklin had served together on a commission to Canada in an attempt to influence those colonists to join the Thirteen colonies against Great Britian. The very difficult situation of the Anglicans in America without a bishop to ordain new priests was placed before him for solution. It is not recorded that he solved this ticklish problem but he gave several suggestions. The Anglican Bishops in Englan had practically excommunicated the American ministers and hence refused to ordain new clergy to send to the colonies. Franklin's suggestions of a solution were as good as could be found even though he did not agree personally with the American Anglicans. So we see that Franklin's moral and religious life presents many contraries. And yet his own sum total of life seems to be quite satisfactory to most people.

About the Printer and Publisher.

Having learned the printing trade under his brother James in

Boston, Franklin wielded his greatest power through thesuse of this talent. When on the financial rocks, as he was often in his earlier years, he could always find employment at his trade. Once established he usually began publication of his own essays and short dissertations, often under a pen name, and invariably he gained a following through this means. This he tried first while apprenticed to his brother in Boston. He was an expert typesetter and composer and hence could finish his tasks in shorter time than the other printers. This gave him time for his own efforts. In James Franklin's paper, Benjamin ran a series of articles, as Mrs. Dogood, which gained a great following and created a furore in the hard shelled town of Boston. They were certainly more brilliant than any coxlumnist had produced up to that time. In fact they were so effective that the authorities forced James to disclose the real author and suppress him or cease publishing the newspaper. It was then that Benjamin's identity was learned. He was then a mere boy of sixteen. After running away from Boston and arriving in Philadelphia completely down and out, it was as a printer that he was again able to earn a livlihood. Having again won a place of distinction through his articles and pamphlets, he soon felt able to travel further. So with the approval of his friend the governor of Pennsylvania, he sailed for London. Here again he supported himself as well as his no account friend, upon his earnings as a printer. He was admitted through his first hand knowledge of current literature and thought gained in the print shop, to the clubs of the intellectuals. Here he picked up a vast store of information on all subjects, which later was to give him an insight into European court life so valuable when he represented America at the courts of England and France. Returning to America he immediately took employment with a publisher and later established his own shop in Philadelphia. From this point on his standing in the young nation was secure as was also his financial

independence. He never wrote a book. However his writings today compride some ten volumes made up of letters, essays, invectives, and sedate dissertations. The literary style is Franklin, never matched and certainly never surpassed. This ability he learned through a logical training made possible by his connection with the printing and publishing business.

About the Diplomat and Statesman.

As mentioned before Franklin represented America in the courts of Europe. We may state here and now that he was perhaps our only diplomat who could gain his points for the benefit of the United Colonies against the trained and unscrupulous statesman of Europe. O, for a Ben Franklin today! Having trained himself to speak and write all the leading foreign languages perfectly, and knowing the spirit of the European Capitals, he could give and take with the cleverest of the politicians and usually come through with a fair share of concessions for his nation. It was his seven years of strictly indoor life at the court in Paris that first broke his health. His diplomatic ability is shown also in the fact that he was always the organizer, leader, and ablest debater in one club or another wherever he resided for any length of time. His services to America as a state legislator, governor of Pennsylvania, postmaster general, member of the constitutional convention, etc., are all too well known to need further comment. Even after definitely retiring from public life, his advice was sought and followed on many issues until a few days before his death. In public life as a statesman, his most outstanding characteristic was Common Sense. To any grave problem he brought first his own vast fund of knowledge, then he studied all he could find on both sides of the question. After this he would set down in logical order the known facts, possible decisions, and probable results of each plan. After

careful study of this digested summary he would make up his mind as to the best solution, then spare no effort to logically present that conclusion to the world. Benjamin Franklin's comment on the way out of a depression is opportune and illustrative. He said; "Don't make the poor easy in poverty but drive them out of it. The streets of Lubberland are paved with penny rolls and the houses tiled with pancakes. What occasions much want and misery is the employment of men and women in works that produce neither the necessaries nor the conveniences of life." Again I say "O, for a Franklin!

About the Educator.

Franklin, as all real leaders must be, was a teacher. Through his many writings he attempted to develop the mental background inhis reading public against which he hoped to project the great character of the coming American Nation. But his educational ideas were directed in the formal field as well. It was Franklin who dreamed of and formulated the plan of universal education for the citizenry at the expense of the citizenry. In 1743 in his "Proposals Relating to the Education of the Youth of Pennsylvania", Franklin said: "As to their studies, it would beewell if they could be taught everything that is useful and everything that is ornamental. But art is long and their time is short. It is therefore proposed, that they learn those things that are likely to be most useful and most ornamental, regard being had to the several professions to which they are intended." And in the Publick Academy in the City of Philadelphia we find Natural Philosophy being taught as a cultural as well as a utilitarian subject. It can be traced through records that The University of Pennsylvania is the outgrowth of educational plans proposed by Franklin and therefore this great institution should be called Franklin University. His Junto, a club organized and led by him in Philadelphia, somewhat on

the order of our Literary Club, was started as a center of education for those chosen members who had the capabilities of acquiring a college education but had missed the opportunity. The Franklin Institute of today is a fitting tribute to him as an educator as it collects and spends huge sums of money in the furtherance of man's knowledge.

Other Achievements.

Let us consider in a few sentences some other accomplishments of this man before we look to his scientific ability and contributions. He was a musician, playing the harp, the guitar, the violin, and the cello, with no mean abblity. His nature, self disciplined along the lines of common sense and logic, could not but respond with pleasure to perfect harmony as exemplified in music. His business ability can be attested by the fact that he was able to retire at the age of forty three from the task of money-getting, with an assured income of approximately fifty thousand dollars per year. His personal ambition was indefatiguable. One instance in support of this is shown in the fact that he was elected to the Free Masons. This organization had no place for a common printer and particularly not for one who led the Junto, almost a rival organization. Benjamin saw the great advantage to be gained by being a member and also saw the tremendous social obstacles to be overcome to win an invitation. Hence he laid plans of procedure and carried them out with his habitual success. He printed articles in his journal to show the Masons what power he could wield as a friend or enemy. After a definite series of these items he laid the way open for them to invite him by publishing a witty and mysterious article inferring that he knew the complete secrets of that secretive order. The invitation came and he very seriously accepted. Again we detect here a strength of character. Instead of this election to Free Masonry pulling Franklin above the Junto and thereby

practically eliminating that organization of artisans, he rather brought the Junto up to the higher social plane with him.

About the Scientist.

And now we come to the real part of Franklin's biography as it interests this writer, namely the seven years he spent in scientific experimentation. Today we are dependent upon electricity to a degree never before felt toward any utility. The horse has been for centuries a great aid to man but at no time was that beast of burden absolutely necessary to the maintainance of an era of civilization. During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries the withdrawal of steam power would have meant only a temporary inconvenience to man. But today we would certainly have to change our entire plan of life if electricity were removed from among our commodities. The present advanced surgical technique, the sky-scraper elevator, the radio, all would cease without electricity. It seems strange that a nation hewn by the hand of man in modern times out of the wilds of a new world should find itself so utterly dependent upon that marvel of nature and engineering. And it seems stranger perhaps to realize that a native of this young nation should have done so much to bring to civilization the benefits of a phenomenonso little understood. Before the revolution Franklin carried the science beyond anything attained in the laboratories of Europe. Acolonial with home made apparatus went further than all the great minds of Europe with royal endowments at their disposal. Today we remember perhaps only the old misty school book legend about the kite but let us not forget that Franklin was the first man to turn a wheel with electricity and it is the turning of machinery that enables us to utilize that invisible energy today.

In 1746 Franklin revisited Boston, the place of his birth and from which he had run away twenty three years before. He was now forty

years old, married, the proprietor of a prosperous newspaper and publishing house, and a member of the legislature of Pennsylvania. He was welcomed with respect by family and friends. While in Boston he was entertained at the home of a Dr. Spence who had one of the novel tubes which were then the toys of the elite of Europe. A few weeks after Franklin's return to Philadelphia, a shipment of books arrived from England for the public library and in the shipment was included one of these tubes. Franklin took it and had an expert glass blower make him several duplicates. With his knowledge of French, Spanish, Italian, and Latin, Franklin then read all the information available on the subject of this mysterious toy. This tube, the gift of a Peter Collinson, a London merchant, ansamateur scientist, and a friend of Franklin, was made of glass, about two and a half feet long, and the diameter of a man's wrist. When rubbed with cloth or buckskin it generated electricity so that it would make a spark when brought near other objects. This spark could be used to light a candle, ignite the rum on an omelette, or explode a pinch of gunpowder. Franklin, always a lover of company and practical jokes, soon mastered all the known stunts and developed many original feats with the tube, to mystify his gatherings. But as his real scientific interest in the tube deepened his friends became a nuisance. In order to be rid of them he distributed some tubes among them so they could amuse themselves. Three of these tubes he gave to three friends with whom he collaborated in many interesting researches. These men were; Ebenezer Kinnersley, a brilliant school teacher out of employment; Thomas Hopkinson, a man of some means and the first president of the American Philosophical Society; and Philip Sing, a member of that society. All the scientists of Europe were engaged in feverish research with the tube at this time. The only really great contribution added to the science to date however had been the development of the Leyden Jar, a store house for the electricity.

This, an accidental discovery by three Germans at the University of Leyden, consisted of two metallic surfaces separated by glass. Now we call this a condenser and know that any two conductors separated by an insulator constitute a condenser. This was the first real discovery in the field of electricity since the phenomenon itself was observed three centuries before Christ. The next great discoveries were those of Franklin, and his three collaborators as he was always careful to record. Rubbing tubes was tiresome so he made a machine similar to a grindstone to accomplish the same purpose. This he did independent of a similar device which had been constructed in Europe. Due to the isolation of the Americans caused by slow mails and modes of travel, the group in Philadelphia made several minor discoveries which were simultaneously made in Europe. However in the long run this isolation helped the Americans for they were not restrained by mistaken ideas and futile attempts to duplicate the work of contemporaries. During the first year of research Franklin discovered and named the two opposite kinds of electricity, plus and minus. He also said friction did not create electricity but merely collected the electrical fire as he called it. He propounded a single fluid theory of electricity on which he explained that a body was positively charged when it possessed more than a normal share of the fluid, or electrical fire, and negatively charged when there was a scarcity. This is exactly like our present electron theory except that the plus and minus signs are reversed. Franklin established this by a careful experiment which is worthy of description. He had one of his three collaborators, whom he called "A", stand on a pad of wax which was a non conductor. A rubbed a tube thus collecting the electrical fire from himself into the glass. Being insulated from the earth, he could not replenish his lost charges, hence was surely negatively charged. B, also standing on wax, passed his knuckles near the tube held by A, thus drawing off the electrical fire and giving

to himself a positive charge. Then C, with a normal amount of the electrical fire, passed his hand near A, the negatively charged man. A slight charge passed from C to A. ThenC approached B, the positively charged man, and received a slight charge. Then B the positively charged, approached A, the negatively charged, and gave him a large spark, showing that the electricity passes from the positively charged to the negatively charged, something like water running down hill. This was a definite demonstration of current electricity or electtic charges in motion, the passing of charges from a body of greater to a body of lesser potential, with the amount of the current or spark determined by the difference in electrification. Two months after this experiment, Franklin discovered that the Leyden Jar possessed a plus charge on one coating and a negative charge on the other. Then he connected two vertical rods to the two coatings of the jar, electrified the jar, and then suspended a cork between the two uprights. The cork swung back and forth like a pendulum until it had carried the charges from one coating to the other and a test showed that the jar would not discharge with a spark as before. This experiment with a body in motion was the forerunner of the electric motor. Franklin wrote these results in a letter to Collinson, who read it before the Royal Society. This august body considered Watson as the foremost authority on electricity and as he had independently shown that the earth was a conductor of charges but had in no report mentioned that there were such a thing as positive and negative charges, the society was thrown into confusion and ridiculed Franklin's discoveries. Watson in self defense attempted to explain that he had meant the same thing in a previous report, but he was evidently only bluffing to save his face before the society. A great dispute arose over who had discovered positive and negative electricity first. Franklin took no part in this dispute, and it must be said to the everlasting credit of Watson that he soon gave up his bluff and became

one of Franklin's most whole hearted supporters. Franklin was the first to get an answer to the question, "where does the charge lie in the Leyden Jar?". He put it to test by constructing a jar that could be dismantled without losing any charge. He proved that the charge lies in the glass, a fact which can easily be proven today with our high potentials by the fact that a condenser when it breaks down under over charge, always ruptures the dielectric and not the plates. Franklin then tried making a battery as he called it out of window glass and sheets of lead. He did not succeed very well for some reason, so he went back to his big coated jars. Incidentally his use of the word battery here is not to be confused with the term as we use it today to refer to a source of Galvanic action. About this time to keep up the public pleasure in electricity, Franklin sent a current across the Schuylkill River by running a conductor into the water on one side and drawing a spark from a wire dipped into the opposite side. It seems strange that Watson who was the first to send current any distance through wires and Franklin who sent it across the river using the water as a conductor never thought to devise a code of sparks to transmit messages.

Another story is interesting at this point. During the summer of the second year of his experiments, Franklin prepared a party of pleasure for his friends, on the banks of the Schuylkill River. Going across the stream he sent an electric current across the water igniting a pan of brandy. Then he electrocuted a turkey and roasted it on a spit rotated by electricity, before a fire kindled by electric sparks. When the bird was ready and the feast spread, the healths of brother electricians across the sea were drunk in what Franklin called "electrified bumpers" as a salvo of muskets was discharged by a storage battery. In the playthings of the fantastic picnic of 1748, one can recognize the ancestors of many of our household appliances of today to say nothing

of the electric chair. This Summer Franklin decided to retire from business and spend the rest of his life at science. He moved to a large suburban home near the river. He was bothered so much by the curious here that he finally stretched a chain around his lot and sent a current of electricity through it occasionally when the crowd grew bothersome. He experimented with the effects of electricity on the flesh of fowls and reports that the meat "eats uncommonly well". It seems that turkeys were very hard to electrocute and while trying to get a heavy enough charge to kill one one day, he took the full charge of two six gallon Leyden Jars through his own body. As he regained consciousness he would not believe what had happened until he found that the jars were discharged. At another time he accidentally received a heavy shock which rendered him unconscious. It was probably due to his description of the effect of a terrific shock, that there was absolutely no pain or even knowledge of it until the effects began to wear off, that the use of the electric chair for executions was adopted. After his description of these effects and several tests he made by knocking down six men who volunteered for the shock, he was besieged by paralytics looking for a cureall for their infirmities. Franklin soon discouraged this practice by proving that there were no permanent beneficial effects.

Observing the effect of electricity on animate and inanimate objects led Franklin to compare it with lightning. The then prevalent theory about lightning was that it was a detonation in the upper regions of the atmosphere of mixtures of sulfurous and nitrous gases. After some contemplation Franklin wrote his friend Collinson a long detailed paper concerning his theory and outlining a project to test it in Europe where there were tall buildings. He said that the theory could be put to a test by placing long points on top of a tall building and then testing the point for leakage. He went further and suggested that metal points on buildings and ship masts would lead the electric current

into the earth or water and thereby prevent damage. And here we have the lightning rod. Collinson read the paper before the Society and it was voted down in derision. Collinson then offered the article to the Gentlemen's Magazine. This editor would not risk his reputation by publishing the article in his journal but did agree to print it as a pamphlet. When translated into French the theory soon gained attention on the continent. Editions in German, Italian, and Latin soon followed and Franklin became the talk of Christendom. Franklin was waiting the completion of the tall tower on Christ Church in Philadelphia, in order to put his theory to a test. Before this was finished however the theory was put to a test in France by order of Louis XV and it proved a sucesss. Franklin did not hear of this proof for some time and impatient in waiting for the church to be completed, he devised a scheme to prove his point. On a dark day with an electrical storm threatening, he repaired to a pasture, with his son William, and sent up a kite. This was made with a string of hemp which when wet would conduct electricity. In order not to lose the charge if any should come down the string Franklin insulated his hand from the hemp by means of a silk string which he maintained as an insulator by standing under a shed. A key attached to the hemp should show electrification of any charges were collected from the cloud by the kite. For some time nothing happened. Then after the kite was completely lost to view being enveloped in a thunderhead, suddenly the string began to bristle up like a cat's tail. Placing his experienced knuckles near the key Franklin drew off a tell tale spark and his theory was proven. When the news of this experiment reached Europe kites were flown every where. Do not try the experiment though for one of these careless imitators, Professor Richman of St. Petersburg was killed. Franklin's successful test reaching Europe on the heels of the French proof of his theory, placed the name of Benjamin Franklin along with those of Galileo and Newton

among the immortals. The Royal Society elected him to membership and published his letters. Yale and Harvard conferred degrees upon him and in1753, the Copley Medal was carried across the Atlantic to Franklin by the newly appointed governor of Pennsylvania.

The presentation of this medal took place at the governor's mansion amid much oratory and Madeira. The viceroy became overloaded with Madeira and grew confidential. He drew Franklin aside and gave him a long talk on politics. And there upon science lost a great man and politics gained a new leader for from then on Franklin now just forty seven, followed politics and statecraft exclusively.

Conclusions.

There is much more to be said about a man for whom more biographies have been written perhaps than for any other. I think however that I have covered the ground I expected to discuss at the be inning. Let us sum up Franklin in the words of a great living merican scientist, Robert Andrews Millikan. "A celebrated American statesman, philosopher, and scientist; born at Boston, printer and publisher by occupation; pursued scientific study as a diversion; first to prove that the two coats of a Leyden jar are oppositely charged; introduced the terms positive and negative electricity; proved lightning and frictional electricity identical; invented the lightning rod; and originated the one fluid theory of electricity."

# Bibliography

The True Benjamin Franklin by S.G.Fisher- -Lippincott, publisher.

Franklin, the Apostle of Modern Times by Bernard Fay- -Little, Brown, and Co.

Elements of Physics by Millikan and Gale- -Ginn and Co.

An article- -"B. Franklin,electrician" by Marquid James.

Paper #20

# THE TOWNSEND PLANACEA

By J. Marshall Taxay

(Read at the Terre Haute Literary Club, March 9th, 1936)

Be it said to the credit of the American press that it is alert to the menace of social quackery. The essence of the comments on the forthcoming congressional investigation of the planet-struck Townsend Plan can be summarized in the words of ~~the~~ a metropolitan daily:

"The millions who for months have been supporting the Townsend old-age pension movement should be the first to welcome the investigation ordered by the house Wednesday. If it is true, as alleged, that their small weekly contributions are going to line the pockets of a few leaders in the movement, the members of Townsend clubs should know it; if, on the other hand, their contributions are being employed properly and effectively to promote the cause in which they believe, they will be reassured. At the same time the movement will command a higher position in public opinion than it now occupies.

"For supporters of the Townsend movement as a whole it is to be said that they are a sincere group of men and women whose motives are above question. They are, in our judgment, misinformed as to the social and economic consequences of the program they are sponsoring, and are living in anticipation of a substantially higher standard of comfort than any pension system can provide for them.

"For millions of supporters of the movement and for the country the house will perform a genuine service in determining whether the charges made against certain leaders in the movement are false or true. And in putting the spotlight of publicity on all Townsend activities the investigation should show the way to more careful consideration of the social and economic implications of the proposed pension system.

"Without regard to what the investigation brings to light the house is entitled to credit for taking hold of what may easily prove a 'hot poker' for some of its members. Would that the congress were courageous enough to reach some other 'pokers' that doubtless would be cooled considerably by fearless investigation."

The mandate of scripture is much more emphatic:

"Thou shalt not follow a multitude to do wrong; neither shalt thou bear witness in a cause to turn aside after a multitude to pervert justice." (Exodus, 23: 2.) With thousands swept into movements by tantalizing appeals to yearnings which can never be fulfilled; with politicians jostling each other to get on what they think to be the band wagon, the Bible ordinance gains added validity.

Two years ago, Dr. F. E. Townsend, the founder of the movement, was a real estate dealer in California, with an office no bigger than a hall bedroom. His co-worker, R. L. Clements, was a small business man who had just gone through bankruptcy. Today both of them give abundant evidence of an extravagant personal prosperity.

The plan is basically unjust. It agitates the payment of a pension of $200 a month to all above the age of 60. The sum is to be spent within the month. The funds are to be raised by a sales tax which it disguises as a "transactions" tax.

There are in the United States 10½ million people above 60. It would be necessary to raise 24 billion a year for this small group, 8 per cent of our population. The total national income for 1934 was 54 billion. Forty per cent of it under the plan would be given to 8 percent of the population, to 10 million people. Sixty per cent of the national income would be left for 92 per cent of the population, to 118 million people.

To finance the pension would entail a tax of $195 for every man, woman and child in the United States. Each family would be

taxed over $800 annually.

There are 45 million gainfully employed in the United States. They each work about 2,400 hours a year. They would have to work 800 of those hours to provide for the tax; the other 1,600 hours for maintaining themselves and their 65 million dependents.

In 1929 at the height of the so-called prosperity, 6 million families in the United States had incomes under $1,000; 12 million under $1,500; 16 million under $2,000, and 19 million under $2,500. Last year the average income of the American family was under $600. Under the pension, 8 per cent of the population would luxuriate on an income over four times as high as that of the national average.

The plan is utterly impractical. It would raise the cost of government to $40 billion a year, almost 85 per cent of our total income. The $24 billion pension tax could not be taken out of the profits of industry. In 1929 the total income was $89 billion, of which less than 2 per cent constituted net income. It would thus have to come out either by reducing production costs, or by increasing prices.

Production costs cannot be reduced without cutting wages and decreasing the standard of living of the American worker. An increase of prices would be only alternative. The sharp advance in the cost of living would deliver a staggering blow to every consumer in the United States. The prodigious tax advance in prices of commocities would of necessity result in curtailed production. It would increase unemployment. It would permanently impoverish the fixed income group, the professional and salaried class. It would partially destroy savings, $100 billion of life insurance, equities and investments. It would paralyze production, trade and finance. It would invite a profligate inflation and a ruinous depreciation of the currency. It would usher in a social upheaval laden with disastrous

consequences.

The plan is fantastic. It fails to realize what a tax and income are. A tax is nothing else but the yielding up of certain goods and services, coal, shoes, haircuts, by one group to another in return for services rendered by public school teachers, policemen, firemen, government officials, and the like. The money itself is nothing but a symbol, a convenient expression for the transfer of those goods and services.

The plan is hopelessly confused when it speaks of increasing income through spending. Spending is only possible when preceded by production. Expenditure by idlers is not income. By dividing bread, shoes and coal we do not increase the bread, shoes and coal. Money is made not by taking away, but by producing.

The plan is being exploited by a predatory few. Frank Peterson, former publicity director for Dr. Townsend, has revealed that there is no rank and file control. He has shown that several insiders own the movement with its bloated profits running into millions. The Townsend Weekly, for example, is the private property of R. E. Clements himself. The Weekly nets a profit of thousands of dollars which go into the Clements pocket.

The 10¢ monthly dues to the national headquarters provide over $1 million a year for the organizers. The new National Legion of Honor of the Townsend movement is enrolling 50,000 at $1 a month, another $600,000 for the insders. In addition to that, $25 contributions are being solicited from those who are deluded by utterly impossible promises.

It is asserted that no one in the Washington office of the movement is bonded. No bonding company has been willing to accept the risk.

The trickery of the leadership is a scathing commentary on the delusions which it fosters. The McGroarty bill, sponsored by Representative John McGroarty of San Diego, the mouthpiece of Dr. Townsend, provides for a pension "not to exceed" $200 a month. This, of course, may mean payments as low as ten cents a month. While sponsoring such a deceptive bill the organizers continue to drive their dupes after a will-of-the-wisp by harping upon a $200 monthly pension. They make no mention of the wily weasel-words in the bill they are sponsoring in congress.

It is tragic to see hundreds of thousands victimized, spending their hard earned pennies upon fantastic and chimeric dreams wholly impossible of realization. One shudders to think of the cruel disillusionment in store for these thousands exploited by a few cunning, high pressure salesmen who are feathering their own nests at the expense of the credulous aged.

The church is profoundly concerned with this. It seeks to rouse the dormant intelligance of our countrymen to the hazards and pitfalls of pursuing a mirage. It aims to bring them to their senses; to guard against quacks and charlatans craftily peddling nostrums and panaceas for social ills that can yield only to slow, painstaking and expert treatment.

Above all, we in the church stress this ancient prophetic truth. Old age security is an inseparable part of the wider program of social security. There can be no security for any one group in American life unless there be security for every group.

We can bring this about only by maintaining peace and institutions that seek to realize it. We must remove the intolerable burden of taxation for armaments, $3,000,000 a day in the United States. These funds should be used instead for constructive social purposes.

We stress the ideal of democracy, the dwelling of the various elements in American in mutual good will and understanding, which result from enlargement of republican institutions. These alone can make possible a cooperative community. Only in a peaceful, democratic, free, American polity, can social security be achieved.

Primarily we are dedicated to the fulfillment of religion's ideals of justice: industrial justice, economic justice. Only by providing for every One in America a fair share of our treasures, only through a living wage which guanantees the continuance of the American standard of living, and seekding to raise it; only as by assuring an economic square deal for everyone in American society,--through these alone can social security be made a realty.

To make social security feasible was the ideal of the founders of the republic. These aims brought our democracy into being. Today it is imperative that we engrave again upon our hearts the challenging words of George Washington: "It will be worthy of a free, enlightened, and at no distant period, a great nation, to give to mankind the magnanimous, and too novel example, of a people always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence."

Paper #21

THE TRIAL OF AARON BURR
Mar 16, 1936.

The trial of Aaron Burr is perhaps the greatest and most sensational legal battle ever conducted within the United States, including New Jersey.

Aaron Burr born February 6, 1756, a child of an illustrious ancestory; endowed with a heritage of personal charm, and a gift of a brilliant intellect, his horoscope should have been drawn in a virile strength and heroic outline. His father, the Rev. Aaron Burr, first president and real founder of Princeton University was of German extraction, and could trace his heritage back to noble blood in the Fatherland. In the veins of his mother, Esther, the daughter of the Rev. Jonathan Edwards, the most noted divine of his age, and second president of Princeton, were traces of a current running back in a direct line to England's great ruler, Alfred the Great.

Before he was three years of age, Aaron Burr lost his father and shortly thereafter his mother, and his training was in the hands of his uncle, the Hon. Timothy Edwards. His father had left him a substantial inheritance and he was brought up and educated in keeping with his station. He was an exceptionally bright boy and was refused admission to Princeton University, at the age of thirteen, because of his youth, but later entered, and had a brilliant record in college.

He was urged to follow his father's footsteps in the ministry, but because of his skeptical inclination refused to do so and never at any time professed the religion of his illustrious ancestors. He was a man of medium size, slender, large well-shaped

head and had a most charming and magnetic personality. He left college to enter the army, where his ability as a soldier and leader was soon recognized and he rapidly advanced for merit, always volunteering to lead dangerous campaigns and usually accomplishing his objective. He underwent great hardships, which undermined his health and compelled him to resign from the army before the close of the war, yet, he had a splendid record, and was universally acknowledged to be one of the great men of the American Revolution.

After the close of the War, Burr entered the study of law, in which he made great progress, but never completed the regular course, being able to take the examination and, through personal influence, was admitted to practice law in the state of New York without having completed the regular requirements. He opened an office in the city of New York and rapidly became the most famous lawyer of the nation, sharing honors with Alexander Hamilton,only. Until the death of Hamilton, he and Burr were the two outstanding lawyers of New York, nearly always being employed on opposite sides in most of the legal battles in and around the city of New York. It is reported that Burr never lost a case, that he exhaustively investigated every case before he would accept employment, and, that many cases were settled by the opposition when it was learned that Burr had accepted the case. However, his habits and mode of life made such exacting demands upon his enormous income that he was always hard pressed for money.

He early entered politics wherein he was very successful, receiving many honors from his state and a tie vote for the

Presidency of the United States, and became Vice President. In this, as in all other positions, he distinguished himself as a leader and presided in the famous impeachment trial of Justice Chase, which gave him experience in the conduct of his own trial, which was to come later.

Aaron Burr was a born fighter, very aggresive, a man who could not submit to defeat, a man who had few peers, and Alexander Hamilton, who was the one man in his profession, who was able to materially interfere with his ambitions and plans. This naturally created an extremely bitter feeling between Hamilton and Burr, especially with Burr, which culminated in the famous duel in which Burr killed Hamilton.

Up to this time Aaron Burr ranked among the first, in war, in peace, and in the hearts of his country men, but, Alexander Hamilton was very much beloved by every one, and the circumstances of his death was a blow that no one could survive. It was and has since been universally known that Burr was the aggressor and wholly responsible for the duel and death of Hamilton and from that fatal shot to the date of his death, Burr's life was wrecked and every conceivable adversity, hardship and humiliation overtook him in his long, hectic life.

Aaron Burr was extremely popular with the ladies, was always mixed up in some compromising affair, and, it has been said that this at least was partially responsible for his hatred of Alexander Hamilton. Burr married a widow with two children and became the father of a daughter, Theodosia, the wife of the governor of Georgia. Theodosia devoted her life to her father but was lost on board a ship in her effort to visit

him after his return from his unwelcome visit to various countries in Europe. Her death was a great blow to Burr but he never quit fighting, lived to be an extremely old man, whos resources were exhausted and his financial career perhaps, was as disreputable as his personal life, and he died in poverty and want, taken in by a woman, who out of respect for his brilliant mind, and in the goodness of her heart, furnished him an asylum and tenderly cared for him to his death.

Aaron Burr was a man so constituted that he could not take defeat nor withstand adversity. Had he been chosen president, his name might have been among the honored, great men of our Nation. He was a man of great ability, but also of great ambition and capable of great hatred. After his duel with Hamilton, he found himself an outcast and a fugitive. The public was so embittered against him he was afraid to stand trial and he did the only thing there was left for him to do, flee to the West.

Just at this time, conditions in this country were extremely favorable and suggestive of most any wild scheme, and it is hard to conceive any other course open to Aaron Burr. With a record he thought second to none for patriotism and service to his country, he suddenly found himself, not only robbed of the Presidency, but a fugitive, a murderer, scorned in his country by the people whom he had so nobly served and who owed him much.

I am not defending nor excusing Aaron Burr, because I think he merely reaped the seed he sowed. There is not so very much between success and failure, between a great patriot

and a traitor. Many a person would have had an entirely different career, had the breaks gone the other way. Aaron Burr was such an individual.

After he fled west rumors soon reached the government of his activities, of his adverse criticism of the administration and the government. The United States was a new experiment in government and its predicted failure was not uncommon. There was a vast territory extending from our western frontier to the great Pacific, loosly held in the hands of tottering Spain, ar ideal haven for a brilliant, ambitious soldier of fortune, who suddenly, in middle life, had become a fugitive, an outcast, a man without a country.

The Misissippi River was the main thoroughfare from north and east to the South and west and naturally most of Burr's activities were along its course. He was reported to have conceived his idea in New York before he left and proceeded to put it into operation. The rumors were at first quite vague but finally the President was presented with affidavits and other evidence that convinced him beyond a doubt of Burr's guilt. The President then issued a proclamation outlining the activities of Burr,setting forth many of the rumors and much of the evidence, stated he had positive evidence of his guilt of treason and ordered his arrest. Burr learned of this when he was in Mississippi, immediately abandoned his plan and was preparing to flee the country, when he was apprehended and arrested by an Army officer. He was then ordered transported to Richmond, Virginia for trial.

This trip was accomplished mostly on horseback and it took

several weeks. Burr appeared to go willingly and made no resistance, until he reached South Carolina, where he knew he had many ffiends. In the village of Chesterton, when passing a tavern in front of which a number of men were standing, Burr suddenly threw himself from his horse and cried in a loud voice: "I am Aaron Burr, under military arrest, and claim the protection of the civil authorities." Nicholis Perkins, who was in command of the military escort, pistol in hand, ordered him to remount. "I will not," declared Burr defiantly. Perkins, a strong athletic man, threw down his pistol, caught Burr around the waist, placed him in the sadlle, and the party hurried on, leaving the astonished crowd in amazement.

The trip was finally completed and on March 26, 1807 Aaron Burr was delivered to the Federal authorities for trial in Richmond, Virginia, a city of six thousand people.

Court was convened on March 30th with Chief Justice Marshall, who had been designated as trial judge, sitting with District Judge, Cyris Griffin.

At the head of the prosecution stood George Hay, District Attorney for Virginia, a son-in law of Colonel James Monroe, and a zealous Jeffersonian. His ablest assistant was William Wirt, engaged at the personal request of the President. He was at this time thirty-five years of age, handsome, graceful, a brilliant orator, and a popular favorite. After him came Alexander MacRae, Lieutenant Governor of Virginia, possessed of a sharp tongue and unquestionable ability. Caesar A. Rodney, Attorney General, was also present at the beginning, but he was unequal to the situation and did not tarry long, leaving

Hay in command of the forces of the government.

The counsel for the defense was not less imposing; indeed it was observed from the earliest stages of the proceedings that the personnel of the prosecution was completely outclassed. First, there was Burr himself who superintended every movement of his staff. "Not a step was taken, not a point conceded without his express concurrence." Of his assistants, Edmund Randolph, of Virginia, stood highest in point of age, experience, and position. He had been Attorney General and Secretary of State under Washington, and Governor and Attorney General of his own state. Next in line was John Wickham, generally regarded as the ablest lawyer of Richmond. His talents were varied and resourceful; his eloquence, persuasive; his wit, keen. In presence, manner, and endowment, he possessed all the elements that went to make up the ideal barrister of that day. Then there was Luther Martin, of Maryland, described by Blennerhassett as "the whole rear-guard of Burr's forensic army," by Hugh Mercer as the "Thersites of the law," and by Jefferson as the "Federal Bulldog." He was ungrammatical in speech, coarse in manner, and a mighty drinker, but withal a powerful man with a great mind and big heart. He had a wonderful memory, towered head and shoulders above his fellows in legal learning, and had distinguished himself in the impeachment of Judge Chase, three years before. The youngest of Burr's lawyers was Benjamin Botts, though already eminent as an attorney. He was courageous and dashing, with a keen sense of the ludicrous, and a ready talent of turning all to account. Charles Lee, at one time Attorney General of the United States, also assisted

during the latter part of the trial. These with John Baker, better known as "Jack," a certain merry fellow with a crutch and plenty of horse-wit, whose name is mentioned a time or two in the reports, completed the list. Blennerhassett states in his journal that all these lawyers tendered their services gratuitously to Colonel Burr.

In the foreground sat the prisoner surrounded by his counsel, watching the scene with the unruffled mien of a spectator rather than with the intense interest of its central figure. Scrupulously attired in a neatfitting costume of black, with powdered hair and queue, he looked the very soul of dignity. Self-contained, dignified,--masterful. To all appearance, he was the most indifferent person in all that vast assembly. Of a truth, he was not unworthy all the attention he attracted--the third Vice-President, and ex-Senator, the most successful lawyer of his time, asoldier of acknowledged valor, a man of proven parts, now arraigned for the highest crime in the calendar of his country. It was truly a remarkable pair that confronted each other within the bar. "The Chief Justice," says Parton,"was in his fifty-second year--one year older than the prisoner--a tall, slender man, with a massive head, without one gray hair, with eyes the finest ever seen, except Burr's, large, black, and brilliant beyond description. It was often remarked during the trial that two such pair of eyes never looked into one another before."

On account of the general belief in the prisoner's guilt, great difficulty was had in securing a jury. Letters were dispatched to Tennessee soliciting testimony; agents were sent into

Mississippi to gather evidence; hand-bills were scattered broadcast, calling on all good citizens to come forward with whatever proof they might possess.

Burr was indicted by the grand jury on two counts, first, for a high misdemeanor, in setting on foot, within the United States, a military expedition against the dominion of Spain. Second, for treason, in assembling an armed force, with the design to seize the city of New Orleans, revolutionize the territory attached thereto, and to separate the Western from the Atlantic states.

The president was an able lawyer and had announced to the world that he knew the accused was guilty, he was, therefore, very much determined on conviction, and was known to be assisting the prosecution in every wasy possible. Burr, piloted his case, directed every move and often took the lead.

Every legal point that could possibly be raised was called and much time was required, in the preliminary hearing, in the hearing before the grand jury, as to bail, as to the competency of the evidence, and the conduct of the trial. Less talent than the great Jurist, John Marshall, would have had great difficulty in conducting the case.

Burr was committed to jail, after the grand jury indictment and an incident related between him and the jailer on the first evening gives some idea of the type of the prisoner.

"I hope, sir," said the jailer, "it would not be disagreeable to you if I should lock this door after dark."

"By no means, sir; I should prefer it to keep out the intruders."

"It is our custom, sir," continued he, "to extinguish all lights at nine o'clock; I hope, sir, you will have no objection to that."

"That , sir, I am sorry to say is impossible," replied Burr, "for I never go to bed till twelve, and always burn two candles."

"Very well, sir," said the jailer,"just as you please. I should have been glad if it had been otherwise; but, as you please,sir."

Great difficulty was experienced in securing a jury. The first panel of forty eight was exhausted with but four selected, three of whom had admitted their prejudice against the accused. Another panel of forty eight was exhausted with still four short of twelve good and true men, and, with almost every juror admitting his prejudice against the accused. Finally, Burr arose and requested the privilege of accepting some of the rejected jurors, and, to the consternation of the government, selected four of the most prejudiced members. At this point in the trial the defense moved for subpoena duces tecum for the President requesting him to come before the court with a certain letter from Wilkerson and the documents accompanying it; together with the order issued at his instance through the army and navy concerning Burr. After much discussion the court ruled that the defense was entitled to the subpoena and issued the same accompanied by an extensive brief outlining the necessity of the President honoring the subpoena. On service of the subpoena President Jefferson flatly refused to appear and, being a lawyer himself, answered the same in an able brief in which he took

the position that as chief executive, his official duties prevented him from honoring the subpoena, which was accepted by the chief justice as the acknowledgment of the authority of the court but as a sufficient excuse for the chief executive in not appearing_thus establishing a precedent of law,which has since been the law.

At last every thing was in readiness and the government called General Eaton as its first witness. This witness testified to several conversations with Burr during the years of 1805-06, reciting some loose talk on the part of Burr, about the administration and the government, but he could give nothing definite that would more than tend to show that Burr had some such ideas in mind. Chief Justice Marshall had ruled that the evidence must be confined to the acts that took place on Blennerhassett's Island, and that an overt act must be proved. General Eaton's testimony was not only weak and harmless but on Cross-examination, it was brought out, that after his great discovery of Burr's treason, he had mad a special trip to see the President, and not only failed to tell him about his discovery but had requested that Burr be appointed to a foreign embassy, either Paris, London or Madrid. He made a poor attempt to explain that his patriotic purpose in making such a request was to get rid of a bad citizen. He also admitted that he had for years been unsuccessfully prosecuting a personal claim against the United States, and that it had been allowed in the amount of about $10,000.00, just a few weeks after he had given his deposition, which was the basis of the indictment.

When this witness left the stand he was thoroughly discredited and the government's case greatly weakened.

He was followed by Commodore Thomas Truxton, who recited how Burr had told him in 1806 that, if the United States went to war with Spain, he would organize and lead an expedition against Spain. However, he admitted there was nothing said about taking up arms against the United States, but, that Burr had said, such expeditions as he was planning were common, had occurred in the Revolutionary War and that it would be a great help to the United States.

The third witness called was Peter Taylor, Blennerhassett's gardner, who told of many meetings and much talk at Blennerhassett's home, but he had never seen Colonel Burr there, and, under the ruling of the court, his testimony was very favorable to the accused.

Many other witnesses were called, but, when the government closed its case, it was evident to every one there was no evidence of an overt act, which, under the ruling of the court, was the essence of the case.

At the close of the government's evidence the defense promptly moved for an instructed verdict, and, in support of this motion, Benjamin Botts summed up the evidence as follows: "The first proposition which I shall endeavor to establish in support of our motion," (the latter broke in, "is, that the acts proved to have taken place on the island were not in themselves acts of war, and no intention could make them acts of war. A bare statement of the facts will prove this to be true.

"About thirty men went upon the island and remained for

two or three days. They had some arms with ammunition. They watched their property at the boats. They prepared provisions for descending the river; and at a place contiguous to the island they killed some squirrels. As notable a circumstance as any in this overt act is that they had what one of the witnesses calls a watchword. All but Blennerhassett and Tyler were confessedly ignorant of the plan. They got alarmed at the report of a mob and fled secretly in the night, after Tyler had declared his purpose not to resist the constituted authorities. It may be considered as proved, though only by one witness (Allbright) that they had six or seven guns, but his evidence is much to be suspected. As to their presenting guns at General Tupper, it ought not to be believed. If believed it was only an act of violence to a private individual, or at most it was but resistance to an officer. But Tupper was not in office. He was out of the State of Ohio; and the instant he left it his authority ended. It is conceded by the gentlemen, that violence to him, when thus without authority, could not be an act of a treasonable nature. Even if it had been in Ohio, it would have been war against Ohio only, if it were war at all, which is by no means admitted. The proposition on the other side is, that the acts which I have enumerated on Blennerhassett's island were overt acts of war. Those acts were intended first against the people of Wood County; or secondly, against New Orleans. First: It was, I will suppose, against Wood County. The boats, the oars, the provisions for a long journey, the after descent were circumstances calculated for overt acts of levying war against Wood County! because these

two or three days. They had some arms with ammunition. They watched their property at the boats. They prepared provisions for descending the river; and at a place contiguous to the island they killed some squirrels. As notable a circumstance as any in this overt act is that they had what one of the witnesses calls a watchword. All but Blennerhassett and Tyler were confessedly ignorant of the plan. They got alarmed at the report of a mob and fled secretly in the night, after Tyler had declared his purpose not to resist the constituted authorities. It may be considered as proved, though only by one witness (Allbright) that they had six or seven guns, but his evidence is much to be suspected. As to their presenting guns at General Tupper, it ought not to be believed. If believed it was only an act of violence to a private individual, or at most it was but resistance to an officer. But Tupper was not in office. He was out of the State of Ohio; and the instant he left it his authority ended. It is conceded by the gentlemen, that violence to him, when thus without authority, could not be an act of a treasonable nature. Even if it had been in Ohio, it would have been war against Ohio only, if it were war at all, which is by no means admitted. The proposition on the other side is, that the acts which I have enumerated on Blennerhassett's island were overt acts of war. Those acts were intended first against the people of Wood County; or secondly, against New Orleans. First: It was, I will suppose, against Wood County. The boats, the oars, the provisions for a long journey, the after descent were circumstances calculated for overt acts of levying war against Wood County! because these

boats, oars, provisions and the descent were proper acts of war, against the people of Wood County!"

"But, sir, the party was armed, and this shows that they were in expectation that the people of Wood County would attack them. I apprehend that the people of Wood County meditated War on the people of the island, not that the islanders meditated war against the militia of Wood. And accordingly we find that the people of the island fled silently in the night from those of Wood. And because they fled, it seems they were guilty of acts of war! But if the war were not against Wood County it was against New Orleans, which was only two thousand, two hundred miles distant."

It was the contention of the defense that no person could be convicted of treason who was not present when the act was committed, and, if any body was guilty of teason, it was Blennerhassett, and, at most, Burr was only an accessory before the fact, and could not be convicted until an overt act had been proved.

This provoked an outburst of oratory from William Wert, who was there at the personal request of the President: "Will any man say that Blennerhassett was the principal, and Burr but an accessory? Who will believe that Burr, the author and projector of the plot, who raised the forces, who enlisted the men and who procured the funds for carrying it into execution, was made a cat's paw of? Will any man believe that Burr, who is a soldier bold, ardent, restless and aspiring, the great actor whose brain conceived and whose hand brought the plot into operation, that he should sink down into an accessory,

and that Blennerhassett should be elevated into a principal? He would startle at the thought. Aaron Burr, the contriver of the whole conspiracy, to everybody concerned in it was as the sun to the planets which surround him. Did he not bind them in their respective orbits and give them their light, their heat, and their motion? Yet he is to be considered an accessory, and Blennerhassett is to be the principal!

Let us put the case between Burr and Blennerhassett. Let us compare the two men, and settle this question of precedence between them. It may save a good deal of troublesome ceremony hereafter.

Who Aaron Burr is we have seen in part already. I will add, that beginning his operations in New York, he associates with him men whose wealth is to supply the necessary funds. Possessed of the main-spring, his personal labor contrives all the machinery. Pervading the continent from New York to New Orleans, he draws into his plan, by every allurement which he can contrive, men of all ranks and descriptions. To youthful ardor he presents danger and glory; to ambition, rank and titles and honors; to avarice, the mines of Mexico. To each person whom he addresses he presents the object adapted to his tast. His recruiting officers are appointed. Men are engaged throughout the continent. Civil life is indeed quiet upon its surface, but in its bosom this man has contrived to deposit the materials which, with the slightest touch of his match, produce an explosion to shake the continent. All this his restless ambition has contrived; and in the autumn of 1806, he goes forth for the last time to apply this match. On this occasion he meets with Blennerhassett.

Who is Blennerhassett? A native of Ireland, a man of letters, who fled from the storms of his own country to find quiet in ours. His history shows that war is not the natural element of his mind. If it had been, he never would have exchanged Ireland for America. So far is an army from furnishing the society natural and proper to Mr. Blennerhassett's character, that on his arrival in America, he retired even from the population of the Atlantic States, and sought quiet and solitude in the bosom of our western forests. But he carried with him taste and science and wealth; and lo! the desert smiled. Possessing himself of a beautiful island in the Ohio, he rears upon it a palace, and decorates it with every romatic embellishment of fancy. A shrubbery that Shenstone might have envied, blooms around him. Music that might have charmed Calypso and her nymphs, is his. An extensive library spreads its treasures before him. A philosophical apparatus offers to him all the secrets and mysteries of nature. Peace, tranquility, and innocence shed their mingled delights around him. And to crown the enchantment of the scene, a wife who is said to be lovely even beyond her sex, and graced with every accomplishment that can render it irresistable, had blessed him with her love, and made him the father of several children. The evidence would convince you that this is but a faint picture of the real life. In the midst of all this peace, this innocent simplicity and this tranquility, this feast of mind, this pure banquet of the heart, the destroyer comes; he comes to change this paradise into a hell. Yet the flowers do not wither at his approach. No monitory shuddering through the bosom of their unfortunate pos-

sessor warns him of the ruin that is coming upon him. A stranger presents himself. Introduced to their civilities by the high rank which he had lately held in his country, he soon finds his way to their hearts, by the dignity and elegance of his demeanor, the light and beauty of his conversation, and the seductive and fascinating power of his address. The conquest was not difficult. Innocence is ever simple and credulous. Conscious of no design itself, it suspects none in others. It wears no guard before its breast. Every door and portal and avenue of the heart is thrown open,, and all who choose it enter. Such was the state of Eden when the serpent entered its bowers. The prisoner, in a more engaging form, winding himself into the open and unpracticed heart of the unfortunate Blennerhasset, found but little difficulty in changing the native character of that heart and the object of its affection. By degrees he infuses into it the poison of his own ambition. He breathes into it the fire of his own courage; a daring and desperate thirst for glory; an ardor panting for great enterprises, for all the storm and bustle and hurricane of life. In a short time the whole man is changed; and every object of his former delight is relinquished. No more he enjoys the tranquil scene; it has become flat and insipid to his taste. His books are abandoned. His retort and crucible are thrown aside. His shrubbery blooms and breathes its fragrance upon the air in vain; he likes it not. His ear no longer drinks the rich melody of music; it longs for the trumpet's clangor and the cannon's roar. Even the prattle of his babes, once so sweet, no longer affects him; and the angel smile of his wife, which hitherto

touched his bosom with ecstasy so unspeakable, is now unseen and unfelt. Greater objects have taken possession of his soul. His imagination has been dazzled by visions of diadems, of stars and garters and titles of nobility. He has been taught to burn with restless emulation at the names of great heroes and conquerors. His enchanted island is destined soon to relapse into a wildrness; and in a few months we find the beautiful and tender partner of his bosom whom he lately 'permitted not the winds of summer to visit too roughly,' shivering at midnight, on the winter banks of the Ohio, and mingling her tears with the torrents, that froze as they fell. Yet this unfortunate man, thus deluded from his interest and his happiness, thus seduced from the paths of innocence and peace, thus confounded in the toils that were deliberately spread for him and overwhelmed by the mastering spirit and genios of another—this man, thus ruined and undone and made to play a subordinate part in this grand drama of guilt and treason, this man is to be called the principal offender, while he by whom he was thus plunged in misery is comparatively innocent, a mere accessory! Is this reason? Is it law? Is it humanity? Sir, neither the human heart nor the human understanding will bear a perversion so monstrous and so absurd! So shocking to the soul! so revolting to reason! Let Aaron Burr, then, not shrink from the high destination which he has courted, and having already ruined Blennerhassett in fortune, character and happiness forever, let him not attempt to finish the tragedy by thrusting that ill-fated man between himself and punishment."

Chief Justice Marshall reviewed the evidence in carefully

prepared instructions that took nearly three hours to deliver, and closed by saying: "The present indictment charges the prisoner with levying war against the United States, and alleges an overt act of levying war. That overt act must be proved, according to the mandates of the Constitution and the the act of Congress, by two witnesses. It is not proved by a single witness." * * *"The jury have now heard the opinion of the court on the law of the case. They will apply that law to the facts, and will find a verdict of guilty or not guilty as their own consciences may direct." This is a fair illustration of a Federal courts instruction on the law.

The jury retired and promptly returned with the following verdict: "We of the jury say that Aaron Burr is not proved to be guilty under this indictment by any evidence submitted to us. We therefore find him not guilty."

No sooner had the foreman ceased reading than Burr was on his feet objecting to the verdict as unusual and irregular, and demanding that it be rendered in the regular form. The Chief Justice observed that the verdict was in effect the same as a verdict of acquittal; that if the jury wished it, it might stand on the bill as it was, but that an entry should be made on the record of "not guilty." He thanked the jury for their patient attention during the long trial, and then discharged them.

Thus came to an end the famous trial of Aaron Burr. The next day he was released from jail and in a few days was placed on trial on the misdemeanor count, but when the court excluded most of the District Attorney's testimony, he moved

that the jury be discharged. To this the defense objected and insisted upon a verdict, and, when the court sustained the contention of the defense, the jury retired and promptly brought in a verdict of not guilty.

It is reported that two stenographers were required in reporting this case and that the proceedings, printed in 1808, took more than eleven hundred closely-printed octave pages.

It is my opinion the correct verdict was reached in this case. I have no doubt Aaron Burr had such treason in his mind and would not have hesitated in an attempt to carry it out, but, his plans had not developed to that extent, and it failed before it was started.

Frank C. Wade

March 16, 1936.

Paper #22. - 46
March 25 - '36

# STATE MEDICINE

In a rather recent magazine editorial, Dr. Robert M. Hutchings, President of the University of Chicago, made the following statement -- "We have faced and are facing some of the most difficult problems our country has seen. Unless we are prepared for the tyranny of dictatorship, we must realize that the way to deal with them is through more deliberation, more discoussion, more democracy."

As you know, The National University Extension Association sponsors debating among students in the United States. A nation-wide referendum of debaters and debate coaches choosethe subject of State Medicine, as the question they most wished to discuss.
These two thoughts gave me the idea of presenting this subject for your consideration.

The various forms of social insurance are largely efforts to meet the uncertainities created by industrialism. In this they differ fundamentally from other and earlier forms of insurance -- fire, death, ship-wreck, wind, hail and other exceptional catastrophies, which were beyond the immediate control of man. They have existed through all forms of and are little affected by political or social organizations.

But social insurance is directed against uncertainties for which modern society is largely responsible. Whatever the difference -- unemployment, old age, invalidity, accident and sickness insurance --are all essentially insurance against poverty, to which the particular incidence is but a contributory cause.

The uncertainities and individual suffering which results from their occurrence are created by the special social organization in which they appear and are influenced by various phenomena such as industrial cycles.
Social Insurance is usually confined to those social classes whose incomes are so low as to leave them continuously on the brink of destruction and sudden misfortune pushes them over the verge. Since they are not able to accumulate a reserve against such emergencies, protection is sought in social insurance.

Because poverty is to-day largely due to social causes, there is a general recognition of a social duty to reldeve it. Social as distinguished from individual responsibility is peculiar to industrial nations.
Therefore, Social Insurance is purely a phenomenon of industrial society. Poverty, however is not peculiar to the age of industrialism.

In the age of feudalsim which preceded, the relief of poverty so far as it was given, was a problem of personal relations -- protection by the state, the clan, the church and the guild. Industrialism destroyed these personal relations. The worker was bound to his employer by a wage contract, which provided for pay only while working and which could be terminated at any time.

Industrialism introduced a number of new uncertainties peculiar to itself. It caused great shifts of population. It introduced cyclic swings in production with alternate periods of surplus and shortage, over-work and unemployment. Mechanical progress and inventions destroyed and created occupations, displaced thousands and gave employment to other thousands. These uncertainities and resulting calamities were as uncontrollable by the individual as were earthquakes, fires or shipwrecks, while the sufferers no longer had the personal sources of relief that existed under feudalism. A vast amount of poverty was thereby created, though there was perhaps less than existed in previous social stages. This poverty however was concentrated in certain social classes and was far more dramatic than the poverty of feudalism.

"The struggle against the evils of poverty caused by industrialism takes on two forms. One seeks to alter the social organization so as to increase the insufficient incomes." This was the intent and purpose of the NRA, but you know the outcome of that. The other, supported by those who believe alterations impossible or that they might bring worse conditions, accepts the fact of insufficient incomes as inevitable and directs its energies toward alleviation. To them belongs most of the credit of the so-called humanatarian legislation enacted during the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. They have been the active supporters of social insurance. They have aimed primarily to supplement and manage the expenditure of insufficient incomes rather than to increase them to a point of sufficiency. They would relieve poverty by substituting social responsibility for personal responsibility. Sickness Insurance is proposed as a method of distributing the economic burden of sickness.

It was as a natural result of these factors that Germany in 1883 became the first country to adopt compulsory insurance as a method of meeting the poverty caused by sickness. It was a political movement to secure the allegiance of the masses to the crown. Austria, with much the same stage of development, followed in 1887. Other countries showed few signs of following the example during the nineteenth century. But the first decade of the present century saw a remarkably rapid expansion of sickness insurance among European States.

Many of the early features of sickness insurance have set their stamp on all subsequent evolution. A significant fact is that it was in its origin only most incidentally insurance against sickness, but was directed primarily against the unemployment caused by sickness. It was not designed, therefore, to cover minor sickness. At this time sickness was the principle cause of unemployment. At any rate,"able-bodied idle" was a term of reproach.

The only purpose emphasized in the early years of insurance was the financial assistance given while the wage-earner was incapacitated. The entire organization was formed to fulfill this purpose. There was little said about the necessity or value of medical care, which later came to be the principal argument for adopting sickness insurance.

The early type of organization was carried down and incorporated into all systems of sickness insurance. They were in no way suited to the purpose of conducting such vast schemes of financial administration and medical care as were created by Sickness Insurance Legislation. The lay-managers and their subordinates were interested chiefly in "how much will it cost." Only Doctors are prepared by education, training and experience to judge the amount and kind of treatment necessary and the extent of the disability. Experience has taught that systems have been successful and satisfactory largely in the proportion which the medical men have participated and co-operated.

No system of sickness insurance is supported entirely by the contributions of its beneficaries. This is true even if employers contributions are included. The consequence is that in most countries the contributions from taxation are a large percentage of insurance income. The care of the indigent and of those who do not pay, comes out of the tax-payer's pockets.

The organization of sickness insurance in a democracy always has important political results. Although it is always urged in the interests of under-paid workers, these have never been responsible or even highly favorable to its enactment. Instead, laborers have demanded that wages be sufficiently high to enable the recipients to pay their own medical expenses. In no country have unions led a demand for Sickness Insurance. In nearly every country the first attempts to collect sickness insurance contributions from employees have met with resistance. It was true in Germany a half century ago and in France in 1931. The political parties of labor have never made sickness insurance one of their urgent planks. No system owes its introduction primarily to any social or labor party.

The story of the introduction into Germany is typical. Bismark introduced the law as a weapon against the Social Democrats. For years this party fought all forms of Social Insurance. Then the Social Democrats captured the insurance societies and made them a part of their political machine with which to capture votes. The latest development has been the seizure of these institutions by the Nazis, who are now using them to crush out Social Democracy.

One speaker says the motives for the introduction of sickness insurance into the countries of Central Europe, into Germany and later into Austria, were always political. Of Austria, he says, "The societies are the pillars of the political parties. They have been so anxious to give benefits to the insured that they are to-day in a miserable financial condition."
Great Britian repeats the story. The law was enacted by Lloyd George as a political measure and the societies at once became political forces, antagonistic to many of the best features of insurance.

Sickness Insurance has been introduced everywhere with very little consultation with and often largely against the wishes of the workers, who were to become the patients, and the physicians, who were to give the medical service.

One of the most striking conclusions derived from a historical study of Sickness Insurance systems is that they are highly experimental in character. This is true of the oldest as well as of the youngest systems. After half a century of existence, those of Germany and Austria are still changing with great rapidity. These changes are due chiefly to constant dissatisfaction with details. There are 3,000 sections in the German laws on Sickness Insurance and this is only the beginning. New rulings and modifications in the settlement of disputes are being made almost daily. A failure to recognize the wide diversity of time and place in the workings of Sickness Insurance is largely responsible for contradictory reports and opinions on the subject.

Sickness Insurance grew out of the fraternal system, where members visited the sick and made reports. The same plan did not work so well with great financial institutions with millions of members and with paid visitors and paid supervising physicians. The important elements of mutual confidence, personal acquaintance and individual responsibility, had been almost entirely removed.

Voluntary membership in the newer institutions is the rule, but this soon becomes compulsory. After the member has made his regular payments for some time, he begins to feel that the system owes him something and he starts out deliberately to get something back. Why not try since there is no danger and it costs nothing even if it iscarried to the highest tribunal.

"Present-day Germany has been compared to a great home for cripples, where each individual is trying to get as much as possible out of the gigantic pension cup, which is kept filled by ever higher contributions. Every seventh German is to-day a social pensioner. Administrative employees have increased until they practically equal the total number of physicians required to give the medical service. The same ratio seems to exist also in countries other than Germany.

Officials and employees seek to increase the membership, prestige and wealth of the society, which in turn has a tendency to bring similar advantages to them, but not necessarily to the members. Great increase in quantity usually means decrease in quality. This constant expansion is sometimes thought to indicate universal approval of the legislation and principles of sickness insurance, but closer examination raises great doubt as to the correctness of this conclusion.

At first, most systems covered only industrial workers with a medical service confined to home and office visits by a general practitioner only. Then commercial, agricultural, domestic and other workers were included and the service was extended to their families. Presently specialists,laboratory, hospital and every form of medical care and service was provided.

There is usually a maximum income limit for membership, which is frequently raised in the course of years. In Austria for example, the limit has been entirely removed for government employees. This has led to complaint by physicians that many wealthy families now receive medical service from the insurance system. It is perhaps similar to our congress getting free barberservice.

It should not be assumed that there has been an identical development in all systems. Some of the later ones were more inclusive from the beginning. The British system, which was one of those as to coverage but not as to service, has made few extensions since its establishment.

Continental Europe was accustomed to voluntary insurance in connection with unions, plants or mutual industrial systems. England had almost every form of voluntary system known. There was wide extension of contract practice. These various schemes in competition had forced payment to physicians down to an almost unbearable level. When the compulsory scheme was proposed, a large section of English physicians were ready to accept almost any change as their predictment could scarcely be worse.

Without compulsion, voluntary insurance fails to distribute the cost of sickness in fairness to large classes of the population. The young and healthy will not join and the aged and sickly, if accepted, will raise the cost to a prohibitive point and, if rejected, removes protection from those most in need of it. One of the basic reasons for compulsion is that the insurance company controlls the expenditure of part of the money paid out for wages. People do not willingly turn over to others the control of their incomes.

The costs of medical care are steadily increasing. In part, this is due to rapid improvements in diagnosis and treatments, but in a larger measure under insurance, it is due to the increasing demand for more service, once that service has already been paid for. This has led to increased demands for prescriptions, (over-drugging) x-ray pictures, and all manner and kinds of treatments. They ask for advertised remedies and the doctorwho does not humor them is quite liable to loose their favor. If he does accede to their wishes, he may be censored or suspended or even dismissed from the service.

There is a growing conviction that the patient should in some small way, share some of the cost of the treatment. An emergency decree in Germany in 1930 required the payment of 12 cents for the first consultation in any case. "Sickness" fell off about 50 percent in a number of German cities. In the same country in 1923 during the inflation period, requests for disability payments fell off 50 percent, because money was so valueless that it was not worth being sick to get it. This also goes to show the character of the sickness with which the insurance doctor has to contend.

The most common measure of sickness under insurance is the number of days for which the carrier pays disability. The first conclusion from a study of these statistics would justify the belief that insurance is a sort of deadly infection, the introduction of which causes a constantly increasing amount of sickness.

The establishment of Socialized Medicine in any country always brings important changes in the medical profession. Doctors must make preparations for and take post-graduate work in subjects pertaining to insurance ~~work~~, such as keeping records, keeping down costs in prescribing and detecting malingerers. Few seem to have time or ambition for further scientific study as do men in regular practice.

Economically, the first effect in many countries was to increase some-what the earnings of physicians whose practice was confined largely to the low-income classes. Many patients who previously paid little or nothing, now had something paid for them through insurance. Later, in most systems, the income was again reduced, in some localities as much as 30 to 50 percent. In Austria for example, 40 percent of the population is insured. As the system became more inclusive, private practice decreased until most doctors had to do some insurance work in order to make ends meet. In England, where they have the panel system, and doctors were already in a very bad way, the incomes have remained constantly a little higher than previously. He receives about two dollars a person per year and it would be necessary to have about one thousand on his panel to have an annual income of two thousand dollars. In most countries it would be necessary to lower the standard of work in order to do enough to hold up the income and chiefly because of the red tape of keeping records, making reports and other minor details.

Since insurance administrators are interested in cash considerations, quantity rather than quality of medical service is stressed. This encourages haste and slip-shod methods of diagnosis and treatment. The Germans have a saying that "insurance service is always second class."

However, the most severe criticism is based on the atmosphere of suspicion and antagonism, which destroys the very foundation of good service. The patient is frequently suspicious that the doctor is not qualified, or is not sufficiently interested or, because of the expense, is not permitted to take x-rays or use other expensive treatments which might be indicated in his case.

There is no proof that insurance in any country has reduced the cost of medical care. The cost of administration added to the increase in demand for medical services under insurance, seems to have greatly increased the costs. It happens very frequently that the insured is dissatisfied with his treatment and goes to a private physician at his own expense, thus doubling the cost of medical care.

During and immediately following the World War, therewas extensive agitation for State Medicine. At that time ten states appointed commissions to investigate the subject. No action followed. The reason perhaps lies in the fact that the advocates were drawn almost entirely from the ranks of the philantrophists and social workers, who obviously, represent but a small voting force.

The last ten years have changed the picture. Extensive new forms of medical practice have developed. Clinics have multiplied and hospitals and labratories have extended their services. School health care, infant welfare, public health departments and other forms of medical service, have shown remarkable growth. Even more significant is the steady growth of workman's compensation insurance, now operative in 44 States.

Recent renewal of interest in the subject is associated with the report of the committee on the cost of medical care. Friends of State Medicine say that there are those in the low-income classes, who do not have adequate medical care because they cannot afford it.
Dr. Morris Fishbein, editor of the Journal of the American Medical Association, was representing 100,000 American physicians when he said, "If there is truly any lack of good medical service for those who require it, the medical profession stands ready now, as it has in the past, to supply that service."
It has been said that the rich and the poor get the best of medical service, while the great middle classes suffer, because unable to pay the costs of modern medical service.
"Those who make this statement, not being doctors, may fail to appreciate the essentials of good medical care. They confuse the accessories with the necessities. By the recent broad expansion of medical facilities andthe willingness of physicians everywhere to give of themselves to those in need, anyone with even a reasonable amount of intelligence can get medical help for himself and family when it is needed."

It is not claimed, however by the medical profession that the present method of furnishing this class with medical care is perfect. It may be possible to develope plans which will make it available to many who find it difficult or impossible to pay for all medical services out of the present income.
The profession is not convinced of the efficacy of sickness insurance as a panacea.

European experience furnishes much guidance as to what should be avoided in sickness insurance and some of the details desirable in the technique of operation, but it supplies no guidance as to whether it will work successfully in our country. Those most capable of judging say it would be a failure. Once Sickness Insurance gets a foot-hold it seems that it can never be exterminated, no matter what its evils. Experience teaches that there are a number ofreasons which led societies to press for every additional extension. Every extension of scope adds to their political and financial power.

Other countries have made investigation and have endorsed the principles of sickness insurance,but no legislation has followed. All favor the separation of cash and service benefits and the exclusion of the lay insurance carriers.

Many are of the opinion that a better co-ordination of the extensive medical facilities now existing in our country will eventually make insurance unnecessary, while others think this broad expansion forecasts the coming of some plan of insurance in the near future.

In closing, please permit me again to quote Dr. Fishbein, " The figures published last week by the largest industrial insurance group in this country show the highest rate of health for American workers ever achieved anywhere in the world. With a medical profession such as we have now, with the standard of living such as is now available for the vast majority of the American people, with a government ready to assume responsibilty for the care of the indigent sick, the determination of the kind of medical service they want should be left to the people of the country and to the medical profession, the only groupqualified by training, by experience and by law to say how medicine shall be practiced."

W. W. Graybeal

E.L. Welborn - Mar. 30, 1936. Paper #29.

# Charles W. Eliot, Enlarger of the Common Life.

The biography of Dr. Eliot, President of Harvard University for forty years, conteins many elements of interest for the general reader. His optimism in the face of almost superhuman obstacles should be helpful and inspiring to any one who considers him. His searching analyses of educational and public problems chart the pathway of progress for our democratic institutions.

The ninety-two years of life and achievement of this man yield such a large mass of material that it becomes necessary to limit our treatment to a relatively small number of topics. In considering what might be most interesting to a group of this kind, I decided to emphasize the personality and character of Dr. Eliot. As a preliminary, I shall present a brief chronology that will make what follows more intelligible.

## Chronology

| | |
|---|---|
| 1834 | Birth in Boston on March 20. |
| 1849 | Passed from Boston Latin School into Harvard College. |
| 1853 | Graduated, third in rank in his class. |
| 1854 | Appointed tutor in mathematics in Harvard. |
| 1857 | The Eliot family fortune lost. |
| 1858 | First marriage. |
| 1861 | Placed in charge of Chemical Laboratory of Lawrence Scientific School, a branch of Harvard. |
| 1863 | Resigned from Harvard because of unsatisfactory conditions. |
| 1863-65 | Travel and study in Europe, accompanied by his family. |
| 1865 | Became Professor of Chemistry in the new Massachusetts Instutute of Technology. |
| 1867-68 | Winter in Europe for benefit of wife's health and secondarily on an educational mission. |
| 1869 | Elected President of Harvard on March 12. The next day his wife died. These events occurred before his thirty-fifth birthday. |
| 1877 | Second marriage. |
| 1909 | Resignation as President of Harvard took effect. |
| 1911-12 | World tour in behalf of Carnegie Endowment for International Peace. |
| 1926 | Death occurred on August 22. |

Eliot was born fighter and reformer. Indeed, the conservative element in Harvard almost kept him out of the presidency on this account. His administration has been called "a rapid march into

unexplored country". As a matter of fact, at the time Eliot took over, Harvard was just a small liberal arts college of the classical type, with a few professional appendages. Eliot had a vision of a much greater Harvard- a true university. When he was in Europe he wrote: "The Puritans thought they must have trained ministers for the church,and they supported Harvard College- when the American people are convinced that they require more competent chemists, engineers, artists, architects than they now have, they will somehow establish the institutions to train them." Not that Eliot was much of a scientist himself. According to so vivid a writer as H. L. Mencken, Eliot was not well enough versed in chemistry to analyze a sample of gin. But he was an administrator par excellence and he pushed his reforms of Harvard almost single handed. He did not become popular until about the twenty-fifth year of his presidency. At one time he said he had become so accustomed to hostile audiences that he felt uncomfortable when he felt that his audience was with him. Since the Harvard presidency was his greatest work, it can not be passed by without some indication of what was accomplished. The matter can be well summarized by giving Dr. Eliot's own brief statement of what he regarded as his most important accomplishments. In a letter to Edward Everett Hale he said: "I regard the following items as the best fruits of my forty years' work:

1. The reorganization and ample endowment of the Medical School.
2. The re-making of the Law School.
3. The re-building of the Divinity School on a scientific basis, with a faculty containing members of several denominations.
4. The establishment of religious services on a voluntary basis under a board of preachers representing several denominations.
5. The requiring of a previous degree for admission to all the

professional schools except the Dental School.

6. The administration of the University as a unified group of departments.

7. The perfecting of the elective system.

8. The increase of the endowment and of the number of students.

9. The remarkable rise in the scholarly quality of the men appointed to teach in the University."

The foregoing statement by Dr. Eliot may be amplified briefly. As I understand the matter medical and legal education were in a very low state in 1870 and Harvard set the pattern and led to way toward modern ~~practice~~ standards. The elective system must not be understood to mean freedom to choose what one pleases. To Dr. Eliot it meant adapting the college curriculum to the needs of the individual student. Dr. Eliot expressed his satisfaction in the growth of Harvard. The extent of this growth is indicated by the following facts. The number of teachers and officers increased from 64 to more than 700. The number of students from 1050 to 3880. The endowment and annual expenditures each increased approximately tenfold.

Another phase of Dr. Eliot's work included writing and speaking to audiences outside of the University. He believed that it was necessary for a university president to be a student of the social and economic trends of the nation. As the years passed he gained an ever increasing recognition as a public leader. His commanding figure, wonderful voice, and mastery of clear forceful expression made him a great orator. Early in his presidency he overcame such a renowned orator as Wendell Phillips in public debate. Dean Briggs regarded him as the finest speaker he ever heard. A bibliography of Eliot's works includes 16 books and 130 articles and published addresses.

He has been called an "incontinent lover of reforms". For example a list of the Leagues, Committees, and Associations to which he lent his name includes more than 200 items. After his retirement he gave a great deal of time to these causes. The record shows that scarcely a month went by that one or two pronouncements on important issues were not made. The five problems, aside from education, to which he gave most attention were; civil service reform, municipal government, conservation, including social hygiene and recreation grounds, the conflict between capital and labor, and world peace.

Belief in democracy appears to be the pole-star which controlled his thinking upon varied issues. Many times he expressed the hope that he might not "outlive his faith in democracy". On his ninetieth birthday he advised Harvard students to commit to memory Pasteur's definition of democracy- "that form of government which leaves every citizen free to do his best for the public welfare". As a university president he practiced the theory of democracy. He regarded himself as a constitutional ruler. Opponents of his policies had the guaranteed right of opposition, and changes were not made until the majority of the group concerned were convinced and voted for the proposed measure. His view on the freedom of teaching is expressed in the following passage:

"An atmosphere of intellectual freedom is the native air of literature and science. This university aspires to serve the nation by training men to intellectual honesty and independence of mind. The corporation demands of all its teachers that they be grave, reverent and high minded, but leaves them, like their pupils, free." In an essay on "What is an American?" he said, "The characteristic American believes first in justice as the foundation of civilized

government and society, and next in freedom for the individual, so far as that freedom is possible without interference with the equal rights of others." In a series of lectures given in 1910 he explored very fully the problems arising from "The Conflict between Individualism and Collectivism in a Democracy". Even though he had great faith in private enterprise and great corporations, he recognized the inevitability of the government assuming greater and greater control over the lives of citizens. It would not be possible to review these lectures in detail, but, in view of the present importance of the question of state vs. federal power, I shall quote some sentences dealing with competition between states. It might be well in listening to these sentences to consider that Mr. Eliot was an independent in politics and that he voted for 13 out of 15 of the candidates who were elected president of the United States during 60 years. He said: "Under the fixed Constitution of the United States labor problems must be solved by legislation in the several states. Since all the important questions concerning labor, corporations, and interstate transportation are new since the Constitution was written, they have to be dealt with so far as possible by the several states. Under the differing laws of different states, the conditions of production in many industries were not the same in one state as in another, or in others. Fair competition in an industry carried on in the several states was therefore embarrassed." Next he gave several illustrations of difficulties encountered, which may be omitted. Continuing he said, "The demand for uniform legislation means an effort to get round the rigidity of the Constitution of the U. S. ------ Sound collective action against monopoly and in favor of rational competition will be almost impossible through state legislation, unless the doctrine

of uniform state legislation comes to prevail." These sentences written by Dr. Eliot in 1910 indicate that the present debate on the Constitution originated long before the present administration.

The preliminaries suggested at the beginning have been extended somewhat beyond expectations. Some of these matters are, of course, more than preliminaries. At any rate, I now come to a brief portrayal of the personal side of Dr. Eliot.

We note first his supreme force of character and courage. Few men have occasion to face greater obstacles. He had a swollen liver-colored birthmark which covered the right side of his face down to his mouth. As a boy he was hooted off Boston Common because of this blemish. So far as we know, however, he simply went about his business and didn't mind, as he said. That is what his sturdy parents taught him to do. Before he was thirty-five, he saw the family fortune, carrying with it the hope of complete independence, wiped out, lost a Harvard professorship which had been the goal of his ambition, and lost two children and then his wife, for whom he had a deep affection. Some years later, his son, Charles William, Jr., a promising landscape architect and father of four children, died at the age of 35. In a letter to a friend he said that no death that ever occurred in his family or in his circle of friends had been "such a heavy loss and calamity". In these troubles as well as others he carried on bravely.

Mention has already been made of the struggle to bring about reforms in Harvard. On his ninetieth birthday he said: "I confess to ------- a readiness for combat..----- I never stopped in any attempts of mine because I encountered opposition. I was just regardless of risks and opposition". On another occasion he said that when a good cause has been defeated, the only question that its advocates need ask

is, "When do we fight again?" He had remarkable self-control. He said that after a strenuous contest lasting until late in the evening he could go to sleep almost immediately after getting into bed. Often he listened to bitter attacks upon himself with absolute composure, but he told that on one such occasion he afterwards found that the arm of the chair on which his arm had rested had been broken by his grip. Throughout his struggles his natural optimism was a great asset. He always looked for "solid grounds for satisfaction or hope."

As one might expect, he was a very serious man. On one occasion he mentioned his "wonted solemnity", and to one of his cousins he wrote, "You are an acid, because you make a cheerful effervescence when brought into contact with mental material as hard and cold as marble; I am an alkali distinguished by the property of giving many people the blues." Nevertheless there was an occasional outcropping of dry humor. In conferring an honorary degree upon President Taft, he used a series of adjectives, one of which was robust. There was suppressed laughter on the platform. One time he mentioned that a young man asked him if he would advise him to study for the ministry. Mr. Eliot went on to say that he said "No", whereupon the young man went into the ministry without studying.

He bore no grudges against his enemies, and it is hard to conceive of any man being more just in his dealings. An assistant professor, who at the time Eliot was elected president urged his rejection and who the next year criticized his policies severely, was later promoted to a full professorship, because Eliot was convinced that he was a good teacher. At the death of this man, who had no family, Eliot had the funeral services conducted in his own house.

Eliot may be regarded as a great utilitarian. His interest was

primarily in what is useful and helpful to mankind. His motto, which he quoted often was a sentence by Edward Everett Hale: "Look up and not down; look out and not in; look forward and not back, and lend a hand." The concept of what is useful seems to have dominated much of his thinking about education. His interest in science was due primarily to the fact that he realized its importance for modern civilization. On one occasion, the meeting of a club, to which Eliot belonged, the speaker read one of Chaucer's Canterbury Tales. Eliot criticised the speaker on the ground that he could not see any value in it. At one time he said to his son that he did not seem to get interested in Heaven but he wanted to know what is to happen to the World Court.

The production of the famous five-foot shelf of books is an admirable example of Dr. Eliot's practical usefulness. He was a strong believer in the value and importance of the reading habit, and he had a theory that a five-foot shelf of properly selected books was sufficient to give any one a liberal education. The Collier publishing house made him a proposition which he accepted. With the assistance of Dr. Neilson, he spent a year in making the selection of books. Great interest was aroused by the plan and 1700 columns of unsolicited newspaper comment appeared before the books came out. The popular demand for these books exceeded all expectations, and the total sales during fifteen years have been 350,000 sets or 17,500,000 volumes.

He carried his philosophy into his daily life, but his manner of doing so was often misunderstood. He was cold and distant in manner. One of his early students said he was cold as an icecicle, but at the same time Eliot showed his interest in the students by working for a reform of the examination system, getting the dormitory equipped for gas light, etc. His bluntness of speech must have been

withering, As a guest of Matthew Arnold he went on a round of routine school inspection in London. Afterwards he told Arnold that his methods of inspection would not be tolerated even in the backwoods of America. Then Eliot added, "He seemed a good deal surprised." To Albert Stickney, Eliot wrote, "So far as hurting the College goes I think you may safely publish whatever you wish. If you ask me whether I think your contribution is a valuable one, I shall have to say no." To Professor Briggs, who later became famous and also a great admirer of Eliot, the latter wrote concerning Briggs's first appointment, "This appointment is for one year. Mr. Croswell and Mr. J. B. Wheeler are abroad; and the College will employ either of those persons in preference to you." The warm heart beneath the cold exterior was often shown. On more than one occasion he took sick families into his own home, and on one occasion, he with his family vacated in order that a student ill with smallpox might not have to be taken to a pesthouse.

He was addicted to offering advice on small personal problems. Once in course of an interview with a student Eliot learned that he cooked food in his room. The President praised him and mentioned that he himself did so in his college days. Then he proceeded to give the boy minute directions for preparing veal loaf in such a manner that it would be palatable when cold. Once when Dean Briggs was about to start on a long journey, Eliot explained to him an effective manner of ventilating a Pullman berth by using a pencil to keep the window slightly raised.

President Eliot was very simple and unaffected in his mode of life. Many incidents are told to illustrate this. There is the picture of him carrying a large watermelon from the grocery across the campus or Yard as it is called, to his home. A student who

saw this said later that it knocked all the nonsense out of him. Another story seems to throw much light on the man. It seems that a gentleman, who had been a large donor to Harvard, in company with his wife, called on the Eliots at their summer home. Though Mrs. Eliot was out, Mr. Eliot asked them to stay for supper, and they accepted. Since Mr. Eliot did the ordering he was aware that they were to have liver and doughnuts. The cook sent in a query as to whether she should prepare anything else, and Mr. Eliot answered that it would be unnecessary. So at supper the liver was passed, and when the lady declined, Mr. Eliot smilingly told her there was nothing else. Thereupon she took liver. The same series of events happened regarding the doughnuts. The husband tried to make amends for his wife by praising the doughnuts and wishing his wife could make as good ones. She said she might if she had the recipe. Thereupon literal-minded Mr. Eliot called in the cook and had her write out the recipe for the lady.

Mr. Eliot was noted for his thirst for information. He asked people all sorts of questions. He would ask instructors such questions as "What doctor do you call in? Do you have enough fresh air in you lecture room to keep your students awake? How many servants do you find necessary?" When he was in Europe he sought information everywhere. On one occasion he passed a house under construction. He climbed to the second story in order to question the carpenters. On an occasion when he had four members of a neighboring family who were ill, together with their nurse, in his home, Mr. Eliot asked the nurse if she would prefer beer with her meals. When she declined, Mr. Eliot asked earnestly whether it was a conscientious objection or her liver. It seems that it was her liver. When one of the servants inspected a new portrait of Mr.

Eliot, he said it was just like him, except that he wasn't asking any questions.

Though this paper is very inadequate, it must be ended. The phrase, enlarger of the common life, is the characterization by Miss or Mrs. Crothers, a friend and neighbor of the Eliot family. I hope the fittingness of this designation has been shown.

The best single work on Dr. Eliot is the two-volume biography by the eminent novelist, Henry James. One page after the title page of Mr. James's work four quotations are given. These seem to be peculiarly applicable to Mr. Eliot and make a fitting ending for this sketch.

Quotations

Man is born to be a citizen, said Aristotle.

I think I see place and duties for noblemen in every society; but it is not to drink wine and ride in a fine coach, but to guide and adorn life for the multitude by forethought, by elegant studies, by perserverance, by self-devotion, and remembrance of the humble old friend - by making his life secretly beautiful. - Emerson

They helped every one his neighbor; and every one said to his brother, Be of good courage. - Isaiah.

The presence of highly cultivated and vigorous minds is the most powerful aid to popular education. A class of strong thinkers is the palladium of democracy. They are the natural enemies of ostentation and aggressive wealth. The vastest aggregate of average intelligence cannot supply their place. - Francis Parkman.

Paper #25.

L. C. Halberstadt - April 20th 1936 - 17th paper for the year

THE CONSTITUTION AS THE SUPREME LAW OF THE UNITED STATES

Article VI, Section 2 of the Federal Constitution reads as follows: -- "This Constitution, and the laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof; and all treaties made or which shall be made under the authority of the United States shall be the supreme law of the land, and the judges in every state shall be bound thereby, anything in the Constitution or laws of any state to the contrary not withstanding".

Perhaps, you may recall that one of the four most important questions facing the delegates that made our Constitution was this problem of making or devising some means to enforce the Constitution, the laws, and to prevent conflicts between state and federal governments. The Continental Congress and the Congress under the Articles of Confederation had the power to make laws but had no effective means of enforcing them. The inevitable result, of course, was a breakdown of government as witnessed during the days of the Confederation. This question of giving a federal government power to use coercion against a state or law to prevent breakdown in enforcement was a vital question. It is a vital question today. It is well to recall some of the arguments used at that time as they are pertinent today. The League of Nations Issue in Europe is a fine example. But I am more concerning with the question of the power of our courts, especially the Supreme Court in enforcement of law and our Constitution.

Prior to the adoption of our Constitution the state had the most power in government. They were more or less independent. Of course they would want to reject or oppose any Constitution that sought to lessen that independence. Finally they hit upon the device of declaring the Constitution, Acts of Congress, and treaties to be the law of the land and of giving to the Courts the task of disregarding any state laws which conflicted with them.

Again I want to impress this idea which I have quoted from the Constitution of the United States, that our courts can annul an act of a legislative body. No other governments gave its courts such power and today it is not exercised by European courts. Thus, today it is the first duty of a judge to decide whether the law by which it is being tried is a valid law. If not, it is unconstitutional.

One of the main differences between the English system of government and our present system is this point. The courts of England do not declare laws unconstitutional. This power is in the hands of Parliament, the legislative power. Hence the legislative power in the English system is all powerful. In this country the real power is in our courts, but of course back of the courts are the people. In other words, in England sovereignty is in the hands of the legislative body; in this country it is in the hands of the people.

The fact that our constitution is today the supreme law of the land is due to two primary reasons.

(1) It is so stated in the Constitution.

(2) The work of the Supreme Court in upholding this idea in their decisions. I have called your attention to the first idea. Briefly I wish to review the second.

Between 1801 and 1835 the powers of the Supreme Court of the United States were enlarged by a series of great decisions which under John Marshall have crystallized this constitutional theory and given it permanence. In 1803, in the famous Marbury vs. Madison case the Court declared a law of Congress void. In 1810, in the Fletcher vs. Peck case the National Constitution forbade a state to violate a contract made with a private person. In 1819, the Dartmouth College vs. Woodword decision was that a contract cannot be impaired by law. In 1809, in the U. S. vs. Judge Peters case the Court asserted the supremacy of national courts over state authorities. In 1816, in the Martin vs. Hunter's Lessee the Court accepted an appeal from the decision of the State Court of Virginia as the National Constitution was involved. Also in 1821, the Cohens vs. Virginia decision was that if the interpretation of the National Constitution was involved there may be a transfer from a state to a national court. In the cases of McCulloch vs. Maryland (1819) and Osborn vs. the Bank of the U. S. (1828) the doctrine of implied power was broadly affirmed.

Such decisions largely formed by Marshall based upon a consistent theory have made the Supreme Court what it is today and have also made the Constitution the law of the land. As Webster stated in his reply to Hayne, "It is, sir, the people's Constitution, the people's government, made for the people, made by the people, and answerable to the people. The people of the United States have declared that this Constitution shall be the supreme law."

Therefore it should be plain today that the Constitution does not rest upon consent of a majority of the nation, of a party in power, of a Congress in power, or of a president that happens to be

serving a term of office. Such changes in this Supreme Law of the land must come from an act of ratification as set forth by state Legislatures or State Conventions for that purpose.

Our history has also affirmed the true basis of our Constitution. The Confederation failed because there was no supreme law. Individuals and States could not be compelled to perform their duties. This has not been true under the Federal Government. Experience has educated the American people to the point where they have accepted this permanent federal union. In the Federalist is this statement, "A nation without a national government is an awful spectacle".

Today we are hearing attacks made upon the Supreme Court and upon the Constitution. To weaken the court is to weaken the supreme law of the land. It is a step backward, toward anarachy. Of course many are not serious in their statements, but a few are.

There are 3 plans which I wish to mention briefly to weaken our Supreme Court.

1st--The Borah plan. Senator Borah in 1923 launched a movement to curtail the power of the Supreme Court by requiring at least seven judges of the nine to vote together on questions of constitutionality.

2nd--The LaFollatte Plan. This plan would give to Congress the power by a 2/3 vote to override any so called "Judicial Veto".

3rd--The third plan would be to give to the court or require the court to give an advisary opinion. Washington one time asked the court for an opinion or to give judicial advice. The court wisely refused. To my mind this is a political function, not a judicial function. This opinion is a result of a study of the International

Courts of Justice's decisions and opinions. Judge Bassett Moore has stated. "Yet in the practice of the International Court we find that the rules "assimilate the process as far as possible to a judicial proceeding". In reading the advisory opinions of this court I am impressed by the fact that they come as near being cases as could be under the circumstances. The procedure differs only slightly.

Fachiri in his book on the Permanent Court of International Justice points out a vital distinction between the sanction behind advisory opinions and that of Judgments. The court must depend in a majority of cases upon its high character, its respect, and upon its moral sanctions to carry into effect its decisions. I think that advisory opinions would tend to lower this ~~this~~ respect, weaken its character and the power of a moral sanction.

I wish to close this paper with a brief review of some arguments why we should not disturb the present set up of our Supreme Court.

European history is largely a history of war, civil in nature. Yet this continent is about the size of the U. S. The only methods devised to prevent war or to settle disputes have been diplomatic means, balance of power, and war. Experience has proved the weakness of diplomatic methods in solution of vital disputes. The balance of power method has been some better, especially with England at the balance wheel, but this method has not always been successful; so Europe has resorted to war and war has failed to settle many of these important disputes. Here in the United States, with a variety of customs and differences, there have been almost countless numbers of disputes concerning boundaries, commerce, etc. The Supreme Court and the Constitution has made it possible for a solution of these vital questions. Besides it has made possible the largest Customs Union in existence. Most disputes have their origin in commerce, boundaries,

and nationality.

So are we far wrong when we maintain that our present plan has worked and is working very well today. We have had only one civil war in about 160 years of existence. Webster said in 1830 that the test of expediency concerned the welfare of all the states and that all are better off with union than disunion. The people have conferred the right to settle disputes in our Supreme Court. Their guide is the supreme law of the land. This was to bring about "safety at home, national, social, and personal happiness". Hence to him and to every true American, "Liberty and Union, now and forever, one and inseparable", was a rallying cry. We should be proud of such a creation which is perhaps the greatest achievement of modern times.

Our Constitution, which is the supreme law of the land, has created a system of checks and balances which maintains a balance of the Legislative, Executive, and Judicial departments. There is always danger where one department gains too much power at the expense of the other departments. Past history seems to reveal that most dangers of encroachment are from the legislative and executive departments. In fact, man in his way upward has been trying very hard to work out rules and regulations made by all which will bind those in power who make the decisions. Our Constitution is the finest example of such rules and regulations made to control and temper the umpire decision. It is not intended in this paper to point out all of these checks and balances. The purpase is only to make us appreciative of their existance and to state that in the writer's opinion they are working very well and have been one of the main reasons for preventing trouble for the American people.

Our Constitution created a dual government. The states of the United States have their realms of power. Most local governments and problems are handled very satisfactory by such government. It is again in keeping of the idea that this government is a people's government. To weaken our supreme law of the land in a dual system is to invite state trouble and give countless numbers of disputed questions, which under our present system are being solved, a chance to cause war and suffering. That again is the trouble with Europe. Federal government or dual government during the last 150 years generally prevent and solve such disputes. Canada, South America, Union of South Africa, and others are examples. We should be very careful of weakening a structure which has held back the troubled waters all these years.

"Nationality means a certain spiritual unity found among a group of people usually arising from a greater or lesser degree of racial unity, a community of language, art, religion, economic interests, and ethical ideals." This thing appeared after the fall of Rome. It came into being after the settling down of the peoples in the fifth and sixth centuries. After their wanderings were over, the "national culture" unit came into existance and nations appeared. Some of our best authorities state that such a thing as nationality prior to 1789 was in an undeveloped state. Its greatest growth has come since that time. In this so called national state were being developed certain legal and political institutions which rendered a vast service. In England it was the judges of the crown. And so it spread. The doctrine of divine rights was worked over by these lawyers into an absolute sovereignty of the state. Such states

began to show signs of permanence and stability compared with the older types which had existed. A secure and satisfied nationalism is always a stable factor in international relations as it means an orderly home. But what has this to do with the Supreme Law of the land? Washington, Lincoln, and about all of our great men realized that Union meant oneness, nationality. This issue was in our revolution, our Declaration of Independence, and written into our Constitution. Our Declaration was a more or less proclamation of nationality, our Constitution a prophecy, a forecast of what had to come with the flowering of this sentiment in this country. This spirit is found in the writings of our hisotrians, our poets and essayists. Lincoln became its father and made it an actuality. It is a great achievement. Now what are some of its benefits to-day, freedom of intercourse between communities, unhampered frontiers and custom barriers, use of the highway by all, freedom of movement from place to place, equal trade, and etc.

Now can we afford in any way whatsoever to weaken our Supreme Law of the land. Serious attempts to do are signs of a loss of nationalism, a lack of unity and of oneness, which if not prevented can only result in a dark age for all.

In this paper I have called again to your attention one of the major problems facing the makers of our Constitution. I have quoted to you from our Constitution their solution, Together we have reviewed some strong factors which have added strength to their solution. Briefly I have reviewed such arguments as the balance of power, nationalism, and the power of the dual form of government for such arrangements. There are others that may be mentioned. ~~You now know how I stand on this question.~~ What are your ideas?

5/20/36 L. C. Halberstadt

Paper #26.

# THE PUBLIC, ITS SERVANTS AND ITS UTILITIES

A. R. MARKLE

May 4th 1936

The public is defined as the body politic, the whole body of the people, but we as a rule seldom look on ourselves as a part or the whole of it.

Due to ever increasing birth and death, it is constantly changing inimakeup and in America at least due to the free expression of our thoughts, it is changing constantly in its ideas, its character and its purposes.

As a self governing body it harks back to that day at Runnymede when the barons first convinced the king that he was no longer the body politic, that others had taken over the reins of government. On that far off day the people as ruler of themselves gave birth to a new philosophy.

If we follow back our genealogy to that generation and allow for the geometrical progression of our ancestors, each of us had something like two million forebears on earth, something of a public in itself, while if we consider the mounting progeny of those barons to the twenty fourth generation, each of them with a possible million or so of descendants, they created that day a public of their own.

So each of us may well concern ourselves with the idea that he is himself the public, equally with all other men responsible for the care and welfare of all other men. A link in the chain which binds together all men, weak and strong, it may be well if we take thought as to the strength of our own arms lest we prove the weak link that may destroy our liberty, won for us from old King John.

May, not only do they promise, they solemnly swear that they "will faithfully perform the duties of the office and uphold the Constitution", promising earlier in many cases, in advance of their election, to follow out faithfully the platform of the party which nominates them.

Yet have we not all seen "crooked" prosecutors, corrupt judges, dishonest congressmen, even a chief executive who has not fulfilled his pre-election promises, who has violated the Constitution, prostituted the civil service and in every way defied his masters who delegated to him certain powers for their well being and under well laid down rules.

Let he who still believes that a public office is a public trust, that a public officer is a public servant, try to argue with a traffic officer, try holding his ground when ordered, not asked, to "move on, you".

Certain inalienable rights we must surrender when they clash with those of others just as inalienable, certain privileges given up for the well being of our neighbors, these are usually set out in detail in laws or ordinances but far more rights and privileges are taken violently from us by those said to be "in authority".

Democracy must surrender in a republic, having delegated power to our representative, we can not readily assert again those rights and by the time another election arrives, we have forgotten our grievances in another later acquisition.

No system of government was ever devised that did not become topheavy with bureaucracy, freely given rights become burdensome powers, meek submission creates dictators and we who fail to defend our rights become the weak link in the

chain that ties us together in mutual forbearance and liberty.

Amid the thunders that preceded the eruption that became a revolution, among the cries for "liberty or death" a still small voice spoke the words that reached across the sea, "no taxation without representation" and ever since the question of taxes has been to the front in political economics.

The father loves his child, willingly contributes to its support and sustenance, the churchman loves his church and more or less willingly contributes to its growth and well being, the citizen who loves his country should likewise support its life and contribute to its support andin the main he does pay to the limit of his ability for what he receives. Where he complains is the point at which he realizes that he is the victim of waste, of theft, of extortion and greed, where he sees the servants grown masters, fixing the terms of their office, holding out for more pay and less work than was written in the bond, diverting their efforts touproot and destroy the things they are employed to cherish and protect and himself helpless to protect his rights from the usurper.

When a congressman, or woman for that matter, either representative or senator sidesteps his sworn duties, delegates powers to another though he be the president, who under the Constitution which he swore to defend, has no right to legislate through commissions or bureaus, is it to be wondered that he resents the tax which he must pay to support any of them?

Yet how can he fix the responsibility, put the blame where it belongs, rectify the condition that injures him and his rights when he has for a certain definite period delegated

any and all powers to represent him to a faithless servant?

Citizenship involves certain and definite duties on the part of the citizen just as a holder of stock in a corporation has certain duties to perform. Unable to properly perform thoseduties he delegates them to directors elected by himself and others interested and those interested choose with great care those to whom they entrust their property.

These directors elect an executive with a very small body of other officers to whom are given power and from whom is demanded responsibility. We the shareholders of the city or county elect to office those to whom we would under no circumstances trust our property or our lives if we took a second sober thought, with supreme confidence in the holy fetish of party.

So confident are we that theparty can do no wrong and that it is eminantly fitted to perform the duties to which its candidates are elected, that we no longer use our judgement but choose blindly the candidate for Coroner, Auditor, Recorder, Treasurer, Assessor, Sheriff, Comptroller, Mayor, Judge or Prosecutor in the naive belief that a Republican performs the duties of the office in a different way from a Democrat, Well, perhaps he does at that. But which is better and what has his party affiliation to do with it?

And these above named are not by any means all of our servants. What of the police and firemen, teachers and garbage collectors, constables and justices, the spreader of gravel and digger of ditches that also live from the results of our tax money, hundreds of the latter classes listed for payment by Vigo County last week.

The mistress who prates so glibly of the "servant problem" is usually concerned with one or two servants in her household of five or six persons but a far larger proportionate problem confronts the citizenry where it is estimated that one man in every four is in some way living out of taxes.

There is no lack of employment there.

Vigo County had about 40,000 gainfully employed men in 1930 and paid in city, and county state taxes somewhere near $4,000,000.00, an average of $100.00 from each man. In addition to this the state collected around $60.00 from each of its million gainfully employed workers. And spent it all, by the way.

Last year the state collected about twelve million dollars through the grossincome tax and paid its teachers close to three million of it. Your guess is as good as mine as to where the rest of it went. Certainly someone knows.

But enough of the servant problem. Let us turn to another kind of service for which we pay quite as richly.

Heat, light, power, fuel, transportation and communication are a part of those needs supplied us largely by others because in the complex civilation we have built around us, it is no longer possible for us to serve ourselves as in the pioneer days it was necessary for us to do.

The pendulum of time swings back and forth relentlessly and some of theoldtraditions are built up only to fall as it swings remorsefully back in its path.

Because in the earliest forms of public transportation that followed the stage coach, it was impossible or impractical to lay two or more tracks along a certain rpute for the

use of the steam locomotive, or the horse car and its successor the trolley car; two lines of water or gas pipe, two telephone systems of competing electric companies, they became "natural monopolies" and they in time becoming unnaturally greedy and undependable, we in the good American way, passed a law about it.

Laws being of little help without someone to execute them we soon had Railroad Commissions, a whole set of them and as a result an Interstate Commission, then Public Service Commissions and following them Communications Commissions and to control the ever present desire for profit on the part of the electric companies, there came into being the T V A.

The trolley came and went, succeeded by the gasoline vehicle, the theory of a natural monoply falls with it for there is always room on the street for another bus. Will the radio ~~xxxxxxxxxxx~~ supplant or supercede the telephone as that has driven out the telegraph and the wireless transmission of electricity replace the existing electric systems?

Built by the money of the consumer which replaces that advanced by the promoter, controlled so little by the Commissions supposed to regulate them, are not the utilities the rightful properties of the public which builds, maintains and operates them, though temporarily at least in the hands of trustees to operate more efficiently that the consumers can?

Andupon what meat do they feed that they have grown so great, wherein lies their greatness and where is their weakness? Are they a boon to mankind or a mennce to society?

To take the Electric Light and Power Utility alone because of the outstanding attacks made upon it recently by the Federal Government through the Tennessee Valley Authority

we have an investment of approximately nineteen billion dollars which has been contributed mainly by the consumers and which is supposed to and quite generally does earn seven percent net, or about ten dollars a head from each and every human being in America.

This is no infant industry but quite a lusty youngster being over and above the age of fifty years and still going strong.

When I say invested, I mean that stocks and bonds have been issued and sold to the public for that amount, not that the men who control the industry have that money of their own tied up in it.

The money has come from banks, insurance companies, widows and orphans estates and in the vast majority of cases has been placed there by others than the real owners of the money. The latter own the bank deposits that are so invested, the insurance reserves and the trust funds handled by the administrators of the estates and have on very good advice placed the money in their hands where it would supposedly earn a fair return and increase the principal.

That many of these investments are sound and do pay a return is true, but there are many of the other kind as well. Some bonds as is the case with a local utility, continue to pay interest long after the property has disappeared, the money coming from another class of consumers who are paying a return on non-existent property in addition to the one which serves them.

The Paris interurban line between Sandford and Paris was built from the proceeds of bonds issued by the Terre Haute & Western Railroad, the bonds being guaranteed as to principal

and interest by the Terre Haute Traction and Light Company, now known as the Terre Haute Electric Company, which owns the local railway and lighting system as well as a defunct steam heating system that once operated in the business district. As absolutely no money is received from either the railroad or heating system, the payments are made from revenue derived from the operation of the light and power system.

Not only that but a refinement in utility matters provides for a lease which runs to the year 2906, originally to the Terre Haute, Indianapolis & Eastern Traction Company and taken over by the Public Service Company under the terms of which the lessee pays the interest on the bonds, five per cent on the common and six per cent on the cumulative preferred stock.

Roughly three million dollars was covered by the stock issue and today the plant after additions and extensions for thirty years is listed for a smaller sum for taxation.

Yet the Public Service must earn a return on its own stock and bonds, pay on those of the Terre Haute Electric Company and amortize the cost of its own property. Fortunately it pays the common stock dividends to itself as it owns the entire issue.

The origin of this utility is in the far distant past when about 1886 ~~when~~ the Terre Haute Light and Power Company was organized and built a plant on the right of way of the old Vandalia Railroad at Sixth and one half street. Originally built as a plant to light the streets of Terre Haute and later becoming a light and power plant by the installation of a Direct Current system, for which its location was eminently unfitted, it failed to secure a renewal of its city contract in 1893

and finally gave up the ghost about 1899 and a receiver was appointed.

Meantime, the old horse railway built from the Union Depot to Main and First Streets, as the display on the sides of theold cars announced, had grown and prospered until its extension to Maple Avenue on the north and Osborne on the south had attracted the eye of the ever ready promotor and as a result it was electrified in 1890 and became the Terre Haute Electric Railway Company, with local officers and owners except for the introduction of Russel B. Harrison, son of an ex-president who was imported to put new life into the old line.

So successful was he that it soon bore as many marks of the needle as any dope addict. New generators, new power house, new cars,(who remembers the "double decker" that became a social habit) and in due time successful bidder for the city lighting contract the main standby of the old Company. "New Lamps for old."

Harrison's rise was meteoric, but alas, meteors only seem to rise, they always fall and with him went the prosperity that the books at least had shown. Politics entered the fight and the tax collector tied up the system, a receiver took hold and the end was in sight.

Then came another promoter or a set of them in the way of Stone and Webster, whose specialty was rejuvenating defunct or dormant utilities, bringing them to a state where they could stand alone and then carefully getting out from under.

The Terre Haute Electric Company, organized with a Capital Stock of one million dollars had as its incorporators, William R. McKeen, Demas Deming, John G. McHutt, John E. Lamb and John T. Beasley, each of whom owned presumably, though it may have been only a loan, one share ofcommon stock, one

hundred and five other shares being owned by a gentleman from New England named Guy E. Tripp. The local gentlemen formed the first board of directors, Mr. Tripp being in the background for the time being.

The next day the Company bought of another New Englander, shall we say "Yankee", the property he had bought of Joshua Jump, the receiver for $503,275.00 by issuing to him common stock for $500.000.00. Thisis the only instance known, I believe, where anyone connected with Stone and Webster lost any money in a trade. As Mr. Weed, the aforenamed Yankee had also bought of thereceiver all of the assets of the Electric Light, Power and Steam Heating properties which he sold to the Electric Company ten days later for $489,000.00 in common stock, perhaps he did not lose anything after all.

Through these deals the Electric Company held the properties and Mr. Weed owned $989,000.00 of their stock.

The same day, July 3, 1899, the Electric Company authorized the issue of $1,500,000.00 five percent bonds with the Boston Safe Deposit & Trust Company as Trustee.

November 27, 1899, Mr. C. G. M. Miller of Boston, Mass. build agreed to an electric railway from the eastern terminus of the railway system at Highland Lawn to the western terminus of the Brazil system with four open and four closed cars and to remodel the old power plant, install new boilers, generators, extend the heating system 500 feet west in the alley between Main and Cherry, provide meters for the customers being served at flat rates, replace old motors, city lighting arc lamps, ceiling fans, furnish eleven new cars and two snow plows, one with motors and one without and tomfurnish the carbarns on east Main street. Note that we still had a "Main Street".

The work so loosely specified was to be done to the satisfattion of Stone and Webster, Electrical Engineers, of Boston and their certificate approving the work was all that was necessary. Mr. Tripp as majority stockholder, knew that the firm would not misrepresent the value of the work.

A year and a half later the Company bought the property of the Brazil Rapid Transit Company and the Brazil Electric Light Company for $135,000.00 in cash, the assumption of notes of those companies for $170,000.00 and the assumption of a contract for $195,000.00 made by the Rapid Transit Company with this same C. G. M. Miller. The holders of the notes and Mr. Miller for $170,000.00 agreed to accept bonds of the Electric Company amounting to $400,000.00 in full for their claims.

In 1903 the property was to be leased to the Terre Haute Electric Traction Company but the latter was soon after made over into the Terre Haute Traction and Light Company which on June 20, 1904 agreed to buy the properties of the Electric Co. giving two shares of their stock for each one of the Electric Co., assuming the mortgages, all other obligations and debts.

The Traction Company at the time owned a street railway system in Clinton, an interurban line to that city, a site for a power house in Terre Haute,, a railway system in West Terre Haute with a line connecting to Terre Haute, together with cars, sub stations and equipment. It also had issued $2,500,000.00 in bonds, of which it would exchange one and a half million for corresponding bonds of the Electric Co. $600.000.00 to exchange for their own old bonds and $400,000.00 to equip the new power house and fill other needs.

The Stock of the Traction Company was to be $1,000.000.00

in 6% cumulative preferred and $2,000,000.00 in common.

The Traction Company then was a little over a year old, having been organized May 29, 1903 with Gardner F. Wells, Samuel C. McKeen, Bertis McCormick, Edward J. Davis, David F. Roach, Allen H. Donham, Finley A. McNutt, Morris M. Nash, Ray G. Jenckes and Ernest G. Alden owning one share each and Buena V. Marshall ninety shares, a total of $10,000.00 in stock being there represented.

October 1, they made a contract with the Columbia Improvement Company (owned by Stone and Webster)reducing an oral agreement between the parties to writing, to build a line between Terre Haute and West Terre Haute and between Terre Haute and Clinton, the Traction Company to pay $10,000.00 in cash, a half million dollars in its notes endorsed by the Electric Co., and to be secured by bonds of the Traction Company.

Finally on August 20, 1904, to complete the story of its acquisition, Stone and Webster were appointed General Managers of the system which on May 24, had been authorized to borrow $5,000,000. 00 of the United States Trust Company of Terre Haute and the State Street Trust Company of Boston.

The same day the Traction Company bought the Electric Company and on March 2, 1907 the by now heavily burdened Company was leased to the T. H. I. & E. T. Co. which finally gave up in 1931 through a receiver and a sale to the Public Service Company. The later acquisition and building into the Insull Empire would make several chapters of a long story.

The foregoing makes only an example of the methods that have been commonly employed to build up a utility into a service

essential to the life of a community.

Whatever the methods, whatever the results, the situation exists and willingly or not we must face it.

Paying more than we should for the service, what are we to do to obtain our rights without wrecking the holders of its securities, its stockholders and wasting the equipment and service now ours.

The Federal Government insists on wrecking it through a misguided theory that it can serve the people at a lower cost than the utility and bases its claims on the lower cost of energy to be derived from water power instead of steam.

That fallacy has been thoroughly exploded long ago, the difference in cost to generate being a small fraction of a mill at the best and anyone knows that government operation of the distributing and transmission system can not by any possibility be cheaper of more efficient that private operation.

False entries in book keeping, deceptive allocation of costs of construction and operation, the use of the peoples money, increased revenue from taxation, all these are relied upon to make a favorable showing but despite all this the truth sometimes slips by the censor and shines too brightly to allow the falsity to prevail.

First the TVA as the Federal organiam tion is known, has been given unlimited power of condemnation of private property, unlimited access to all patent rights that the private utility must pay for heavily, Unlimited funds are provided at a low or no rate of interest, millions of dollars that wereexpended for construction have been omitted as charges by the Government in setting up the TVA, no taxes are to be paid by TVA though

many utilities pay more money for taxes than for transmission, distribution and depreciation. If they paid no taxes they would save more than their fuel bill, thus beating the water power dost completely.

Energy is produced in a modern plant for less than one quarter of a cent per kwh but depreciation, interest and amortization of the plant will require another cent and a quarter per kwh for a steady customer and there are steam plants in operation using steam exclusively that retail energy at a little over a cent per kwh.

True, they are exceptions and possible only because of almost ideal conditions as to load and use, but have we by chance gotten the horse behind the cart and does not the low rate bring about great loads used for long hours and consequently desirable conditions for the utility?

For nearly fifty years the electric utilities failed to observe the cardinal principal of business, the acquirement of volume at low price rather than a minimum of business at a high price.

Five years ago the writer used less than fifty kwh in an average month at the lowest possible rate of eight cents. now he averages two hundred a month at an average cost of but three and a half cents. And he encountered considerable opposition to the idea of reduced rates at that. Yet the increased cost to the utility has been under one dollar and the increased revenue three.

A mutual benefit, the still further reduction of a cent or two would produce in a little time, still greater increase in net revenue to the utility.

The public is far from perfectm Utopia is still below the horizon, it still calls for sacrifice and service that it in many cases pays for but illy. The servants are also far from perfect, they serve unwillingly and grudgingly, in many cases against their self interest, in many cases are unfaithful to their trust and should be torn outroot and branch. Elected by a careless public, controlled by careful beneficiaries of their slipshod work, after all they owe the public no more than the public owes them. Representative government still represents those who see that work for which the servant is employed is performed and we have ourselves to blame when we elect one whom we would not trust privately to a position where he must be trusted publicly.

But the utility, we have no choice there in its election, it is there, often after the manner that we can take it or leave it, and while we take it we still prove that we can't take it.

Paper # 27

Complete Minutes

for the year

1935- -1936

October 7, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literary Club held the first meeting of the season at 7:30 PM., in the Chamber of Commerce Building, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Lord, Mackell, Mitchell, Ouweneel, Shriner, Van Cleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: seven.

Minutes of the meetings of May 13 and May 20 were read and approved.

Upon the motion of Mr. Halberstadt Mr. Wisely and Mr. Canine were granted the privilege of voluntary attendance during the current year.

A correction was made to the printed program. The name of Mr. Brengle, which had been omitted by the printer, was added to the Membership Committee.

Two bills totalling $12.90 for the Program Committee were presented and approved.

The Financial Report of the retiring Secretary Treasurer was read. The chair appointed Drs. Hickman and Forsyth to audit this report.

Dr. Wiedemann brought up the question of the Fall Banquet. This will be considered by the Program Committee for next year.

The President read a paper entitled "Paull Bunyan".

The paper announced for the next meeting was "The Theses on the Door" by Nelson R. Van Cleave.

The meeting adjourned at 8:45 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

October 14, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM. in the Chamber of Commerce Building. Vice President Elder presided in the absence of the President.

Members present were: Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Markle, Van Cleave, Weng, and Wade.

Visitors present: ten.

Minutes of the October 7th meeting were read and approved.

Mr. Markle asked for the privilege of voluntary attendance during the current year.

The Secretary read the 1934-35 Financial Report brought up to date and approved by the auditing committee.

Nelson R. Van Cleave read his paper entitled "The Theses on the Door".

The paper announced for the next meeting was "As I Saw Europe" by Dr. Wiedemann. This paper is to be illustrated by slides and moving pictures.

The leeting adjourned at 8:45 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel

President

October 21, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM., in the Chamber of Commerce Building. Vice President Elder presided in the absence of the President.

Members present were: Acher, Allyn, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Lord, Mackell, Mitchell, Moore, Shriner, Sutin, Van Cleave, Welborn, Weng, and Wiedemann.

Visitors present:

The minutes of the October 14th., meeting were read and approved.

Due to the large number of visitors present the regular order of business was set aside and the scheduled paper was presented.

Dr. Wiedemann read his paper "As I Saw Europe" and illustrated it with several reels of plain and colored moving pictures.

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 PM.

Daniel K. Harmon
Secretary

W.E. Ourrence!
President

October 28, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met in the Chamber of Commerce Building at 7:30 PM, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Elder, Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Ouweneel, Van Cleave, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: Five.

The minutes of the October 21st meeting were read and approved.

The secretary read a letter from Mr. Wisely. The club instructed the secretary to acknowledge this letter.

The resignation of Mr. Canine was presented by the secretary. The secretary was instructed to write Mr. Canine offering him an honorary membership if he is eligible.

A bill for the printing of the notification cards was presented by the secretary. This bill for $19.00 was approved and ordered paid.

Due to an enforced absence of Mr. Markle during the month of November, a change of program was arranged, with Mr. Halberstadt advancing his reading date from November 25th to November 11th, the date vacated by Mr. Markle.

L. R. Fair read his paper entitled "A Short Story, 'His First Case'".

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

November 4, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:40 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building, with Mr. Ouweneel presiding.

Members present were: Ewers, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Ouweneel, Shriner, Wiedeman.

The minutes of the October 28th meeting were read, corrected, and approved.

Dr. H. S. Hickman read his paper entitled; "Roosevelt, The Fabianist."

The paper announced for the next meeting was "The Problem of Inequality", by L. C. Halberstadt.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

November 11, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met in the Chamber of Commerce Building at 7:30 PM, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Ewers, Fair, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Mackell, Ouweneel, Van Cleave, Wade, Welborn, Wiedemann.

Visitors; five.

The minutes of the November 4th meeting were read and approved.

A letter from Mr. Canine was read and his eligibility for honorary membership discussed. The secretary was instructed to write Mr. Canine pointing out the By-Law on honorary membership and offering him a year leave of absence.

The secretary was instructed to prepare for the membership committee, a list of those members who have failed to comply with the attendance regulation as stated in Article III of the By-Laws.

L. C. Halberstadt read his paper entitled; "The Problem of Inequality".

The paper announced for the next meeting was "Larger Units of Organization in Rural Education", by Harry E. Elder.

The meeting adjourned at 9:25 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

November 18, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met in the Chamber of Commerce Building at 7:30 PM, with Mr. Weng in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Allyn, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Lord, Mackell, Moore, Wade, Welborn, Weng.

Visitors: ten.

The minutes of the November 11th meeting were read and apprbved.

Due to the scheduled appearance of a national lecturer on November 25th, it was moved by Dr. Hickman and seconded by Mr. Elder that the regular meeting of our club for that date be omitted. The motion carried and the secretary was instructed to inform the membership of this action by mail.

Mr. Harry E? Elder read his paper entitled; "Larger Units of Organization in Rural Education."

The paper announced for the December 2nd meeting was "American Winners of Nobel Prizes in Science", by Dr. James F. Mackell.

The Meeting adjourned at 9:40 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ourreneel
President

December 2, 1935.

The Terre Haute Literayy Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Chamber of Commer Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Elder, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Mackell, Mitchell, Moore, Ouweneel, Shriner, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: four.

The minutes of the November 18th meeting were read and approved.

Dr. J. F. Mackell read his paper entitled, "American Winners of the Nobel Prizes in Science".

The paper announced for the next meeting was "A Page from the History of Education in Indiana" by Harold E. Moore.

The meeting adjourned at 9:10 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

December 9, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:40 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Fair, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Himelich, Kelly, Lord Moore, Ouweneel, Stantz, Tirey, Van Cleave, Wiedemann.

Visitors: One.

The Minutes of the December 2nd., meeting were read and approved.

Harold E. Moore read his paper entitled, "A Page from the History of Education in Indiana."

The Paper announced for the next meeting was, "The Taking of Interest as a Commercial Practice," by Walter O. Shriner.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 PM.

Daniel L. Hasson
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

December 16, 1935

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present were: Acher, Brengle, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Mackell, Ouweneel, Shriner, Van Cleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng.

Visitor: One.

The minutes of the December 9th meeting were read and approved.

A letter from the secretary of the Chamber of Commerce announcing a change of meeting place for the third Monday of each month after January 1st, was read.

Mr. Brengle made a report of the action of the Membership Committee on the matter of absentee members. A letter, drawn up by this committee, was read to the club for approval. The secretary was instructed to send a copy of this letter to each member who has been absent for four consecutive meetings.

Walter O. Shriner read his paper entitled, "The Taking of Interest as a Commercial Practice."

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "The Life of Michael Angelo" by Frederick H. Weng.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

January 6, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:35 PM, in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Levin, Lord, Mackell, Markle, Ouweneel, Shriner, Stantz, Sutin, Van Cleave, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Four.

The minutes of the December 16th meeting were read and approved.

Replies were noted from Mr. Sutin and Mr. Levin to the letter from the Membership Committee.

Mr. Van Cleave reported that he has a prospective candidate to propose for membership as soon as a vacancy occurs.

Mr. Frederick H. Weng read his paper entitled, "The Life of Michael Angelo."

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "Glacier National Park" by Guy Stantz.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

January 13, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Allyn, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Moore, Ouweneel, Shriner, Stantz, Wade, Welborn.

Visitors: Seven.

The minutes of the January 6th meeting were read and approved.

A memorandum from the Chamber of Commerce concerning the January 20th meeting arrangements was noted.

A motion by Mr. Moore, "That the secretary be authorized to prepare all unbound papers of recent years for binding preparatory to placing them in the depository", was passed.

Mr. Guy Stantz read his paper entitled, "Glacier National Park." Mr. Stantz showed several reels of moving pictures to illustrate his paper.

The paper announced for the next meeting was "Hamilton-Jefferson and Current Politics".

The meeting adjourned at 9:10 P.M.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

January 20, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Traffic Room of the Chamber of Commerce Building, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Brengle, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Mackell, Moore, Ouweneel, Sutin, Tirey, Wade, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Nine.

The minutes of the January 13th meeting were read and approved.

It was moved by Mr. Weng and seconded by Dr. Hickman; "That the secretary write in behalf of the Membership Committee, asking an expression from those members who have not replied to the letter sent out by the Committee concerning non-attendance." Carried.

Mr. Fred E. Brengle read his paper entitled: "Hamilton-Jefferson and Current Politics."

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "Some Aspects of Human Nature as Revealed by Pshcho-Analysis."

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President.

January 27, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Ouweneel, Shriner, Sutin, Wade, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Seven.

The minutes of the January 20th meeting were read and approved.

Dr. R. A. Acher read his paper entitled: "Some Aspects of Human Nature as revealed by Psycho-Analysis."

The paper announced for the next meeting was "Japan, Foe or Friend" by Rabbi J. M. Taxay.

The Meeting adjourned at 9:45 PM.

Daniel K. Harmon
Secretary

W. E. Ouweneel
President.

February 3, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Allyn, Elder Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Ouweneel, Van Cleave, Wade, Welborn.

Visitors: Two.

The minutes of the January 27th meeting were read and approved.

A letter from the Salvation Army was read by the president. A motion by Dr. Hickman, seconded by Mr. Van Cleave, "That this letter be placed on file" was carried.

Dr. W. P. Allyn read his paper entitled, "Animal Life in Indiana". This paper originally scheduled for March 30th, was illustrated by lantern slides and moving pictures.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President.

February 10, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allyn, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Kelly, Mackell, Ouweneel, Wade.

Visitors: Three.

The minutes of the February 3rd meeting were read and approved.

Since Mr. O'Mara and Rev. Francis have attended no meetings during the current year and have failed to reply to any of the letters sent out by the secretary and by the membership committee, it was moved by Mr. Wade and seconded by Mr. Van Cleave, "That the seats of these two members be declared vacant." The motion carried and the secretary was instructed to inform the two parties concerned of this action.

Due to physical inability Dr. Malan was unable to be present to read his paper entitled,"The College Professor in Politics". The paper was read by Dr. Brengle.

The paper announced for the next meeting was "Puppy Love" by Professor J. L. Lord.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel

President.

February 17, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Traffic Room of the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel presiding.

Members present: Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Ouweneel, Sutin, Van Cleave.

Visitors: One.

The minutes of the February 10th meeting were read and approved.

Professor J. L. Lord read his paper entitled: "Puppy Love."

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "On Being a Public Deputy", by Lewis R. Sutin.

The Meeting adjourned at 9:00 PM.

David L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President

February 24, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Allyn, Brengle, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Levin, Ouweneel, Shriner, Sutin, Van Cleave, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Three.

The minutes of the February 17th meeting were read and approved.

Mr. Brengle, chairman of the membership committee, asked for candidates to be proposed to fill the two vacancies now existing.

The president appointed Mr. Sutin to the Membership Committee, to the place vacated by Rev. Francis.

Lewis R. Sutin read his paper entitled, "On Being a Public Deputy".

The meeting adjourned at 9:00 P.M.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneol
President.

March 2, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building, with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Mackell, Ouweneel, Wade, Welborn, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Three.

The minutes of the February 24th meeting were read and approved.

After some discussion Mr. Wade was directed to investigate the investment of the Foundation Fund, and the secretary was authorized to proceed with the preparation of the papers for permanent binding.

Daniel L. Harmon read his paper entitled, "Benjamin Franklin".

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "Japan, Foe or Friend" by Rabbi Taxay.

The meeting adjourned at 9:15 P.M.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E. Ouweneel
President.

March 9, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allyn, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Kelly, Lord, Ouweneel, Shriner, Sutin, Taxay, Van Cleave, Wade, Weng.

Visitors: Six.

The minutes of the March 2nd meeting were read and approved.

The president reported on prospective speakers for the annual dinner. It was moved, seconded, and carried, "That the president be empowered to choose a speaker for this event".

The standing committees had no report.

Rabbi J. Marshall Taxay read his paper entitled, "The Townsend Planaceah".

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "The Trial of Aaron Burr" by Frank C. Wade.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel

President.

March 16, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Traffic Room of the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Lord, Ouweneel, Shriner, Wade, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Six.

The minutes of the March 9th meeting were read and approved.

Frank C. Wade read his paper entitled, "The Trial of Aaron Burr".

The paper announced for the next meeting was, " About Socialized Medicine" by Dr. D. H. Forsyth.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel

President

March 23, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Lord, Mackell, Ouweneel, Wade, Welborn, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Four.

The minutes of the March 16th meeting were read and approved.

Dr. D. H. Forsyth read his paper entitled: "About Socialized Medicine".

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "The Human Side of Charles W. Eliot" by Dr. E. L. Welborn.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
President.

March 30, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 P.M. in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Cuweneel in the chair.

In the absence of the secretary, Dr. Hickman was appointed to take the roll and keep the minutes of this meeting.

Members present: [illegible]acher, Brengle, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Hickman, Hackell, Mitchell, Cuweneel, Van Cleave, Welborn, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Four.

Dr. Welborn read his paper entitled, " The Human Side of Doctor Charles W. Eliot. "

The paper announced for the next meeting was, "Scraps of Paper" by Dr. Waldo F. Mitchell.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 P.M.

Daniel F. Harmon
Secretary.

W.E.Cuweneel
President

April 6, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM, in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Elder, Ewers, Halberstadt, Harmon, Levin, Lord, Mackell, Mitchell, Ouweneel, Shriner, Sutin, Van Cleave, Welborn, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Four.

The minutes of the March 23rd and March 30th meetings were read and approved.

Dr. Mitchell read his paper entitled, "Scraps of Paper".

There was no paper announced for the next meeting.

The meeting adjourned at 9:45 PM.

Daniel C. Harmon
Secretary,

W.E.Ouweneel
President.

April 20, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:35 PM in the Traffic Room of the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Elder, Ewers, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Ouweneel, Tenny, Wade, Welborn, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Two.

The minutes of the April 6th meeting were read and approved.

Mr. Wade presented a report of his committee which is investigating the investment of the Literary Club Foundation Funds. After some discussion this report was withdrawn by the committee for revision.

The chairman of the committee on the binding of the records made a report in the form of a letter to each member concerning the temporary files of his essays. This report was continued to a later date.

The President appointed Mr. Brengle, Mr. Van Cleave, and Mr. Kelly, as a nominating committee with instructions to report at the May 4th meeting.

Mr. Halberstadt read his second paper of the year entitled, "The Constitution; The Supreme Law of the Land".

There was no paper announced for the next meeting.

The meeting adjourned at 9:30 PM.

Secretary

W.E.Ouweneel

President

May 4, 1936.

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 7:30 PM in the Chamber of Commerce Building with President Ouweneel in the chair.

Members present: Acher, Allen, Brengle, Ewers, Forsyth, Harmon, Hickman, Lord, Markle, Ouweneel, Van Cleave, Weng, Wiedemann.

Visitors: Two.

The minutes of the April 20th meeting were read and approved.

The report of the Nominating Committee was presented. The report was: For President- -Harry E. Elder, for Vice-president- - D. L. Harmon, for Secretary-treasurer- -F. E. Brengle, and for Historical secretary- -A. R. Markle. This report was adopted and the slate of officers for 1936-37 declared elected.

A verbal report made through the secretary in the absence of the chairman of the Foundation Fund committee stated that the fund in the Central Federal Savings and Loan Association were liquid. In the absence of similar information on the other investment it was moved by Dr. Wiedemann that the secretary make application to withdraw our funds from the Mechanics' Building, Loan, and Savings Association in order to force a decision as to the availability of this fund. The motion carried.

The president then reported on the arrangements made for the Annual Banquet to be held May 18th. He had engaged Professor Sears of Purdue University whose subject will be "Conservative Views of the Passing Scene". The decision as to the place was put to a vote and the club chose to hold the banquet at the Womens Residence Hall of the Indiana State Teachers College, at 6:30 PM. The secretary was instructed to notify the membership accordingly.

Mr. A. R. Markle read his paper entitled, "The Public, its Servants and its Utilities".

There was no paper announced for the next meeting.

The meeting adjourned at 9:45 PM.

Daniel L. Harmon
secretary

W.E.Ouweneel
president.

May 18, 1936

The Terre Haute Literary Club met at 6:30 PM, in the Dining Room of the Women's Residence Hall of the Indiana State Teachers College, for the Annual Banquet and final meeting. President Ouweneel was in charge.

After the dinner, a short informal business session was held for the approval of three bills, namely the annual rent on the meeting place, the secretary's incidental expenses, and the honorarium for the guest speaker. President Ouweneel introduced the speaker.

The address was delivered by Dr. L. W. Sears of the Purdue University faculty. His subject was "A Conservative Views the Passing Scene".

Members present: Acher, Brengle, Elder, Forsyth, Halberstadt, Harmon, Hickman, Kelly, Mitchell, Ouweneel, Shriner, Tirey, Van Cleave, Wade, Welborn, Weng, Wisely, Wiedemann.

Visitors present: Fourteen.

The names of the officers for the year 1936-37 were formally announced by the president.

The meeting adjourned at 8:30 PM.

David L. Harmon
Secretary

W. E. Ouweneel
President

# END